XEROX

Xerox University Microfilms

Ann Arbor, Michigan 48106

WESTERN AMERICANA

THE

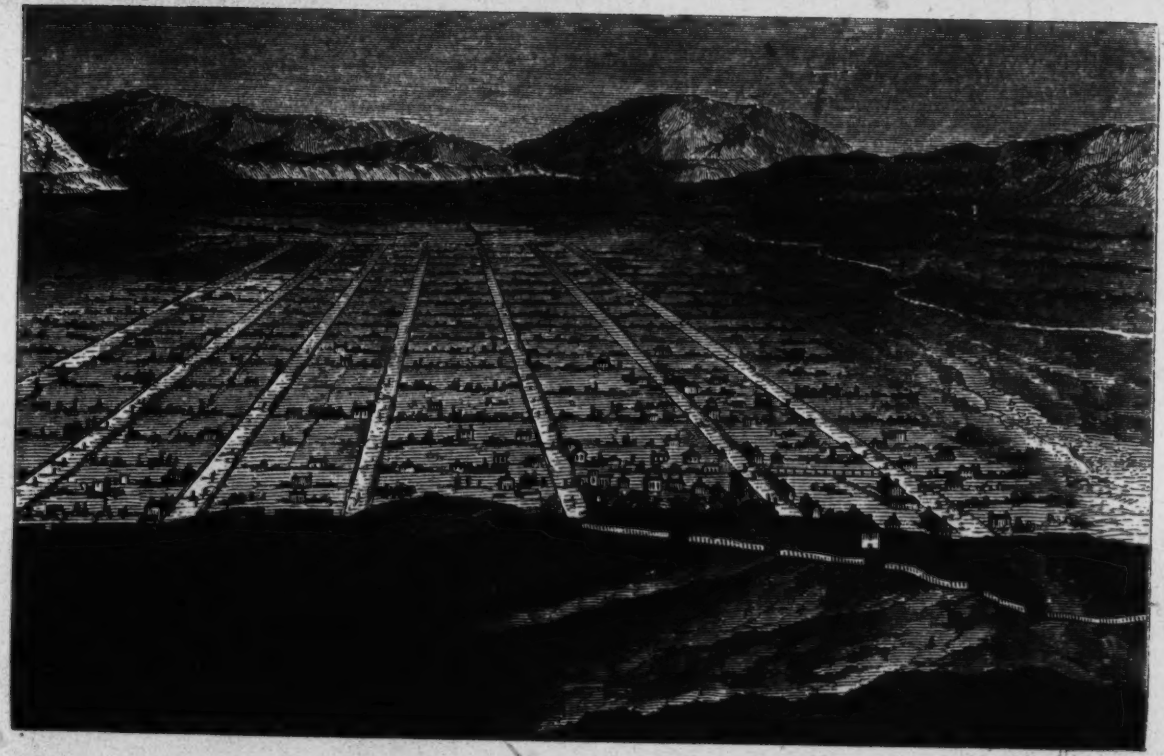
CITY OF THE SAINTS

William Watkins
1862

"Clear your mind of cant"—JOHNSON

"MONTESINOS.—America is in more danger from religious fanaticism. The Government there not thinking it necessary to provide religious instruction for the people in any of the New States, the prevalence of superstition, and that, perhaps, in some wild and terrible shape, may be looked for as one likely consequence of this great and portentous omission. An Old Man of the Mountain might find dupes and foll yers as readily as the All-friend Jemima; and the next Aaron Burr who seeks to carve a kingdom for himself out of the overgrown territories of the Union, may discern that fanaticism is the most effective weapon with which ambition can arm itself; that the way for both is prepared by that immorality which the want of religion naturally and necessarily induces, and that Camp Meetings may be very well directed to forward the designs of Military Prophets. Were there another Mohammed to arise, there is no part of the world where he would find more scope or fairer opportunity than in that part of the Anglo-American Union into which the older States continually discharge the restless part of their population, leaving Laws and Gospel to overtake it if they can, for in the march of modern colonisation both are left behind"

This remarkable prophecy appeared from the pen of Robert Southey, the Poet Laureate, in March, 1829 ("Sir Thomas More; or, Colloquies on the Progress and Prospects of Society," Vol. 1, Part 2, "The Reformation — Dissenters — Methodists")



THE CITY OF THE SAINTS

AND

ACROSS THE ROCKY MOUNTAINS TO CALIFORNIA

BY

RICHARD F. BURTON

AUTHOR OF "A PILGRIMAGE TO EL MEDINAH AND MECCAH"

LONDON

LONGMAN, GREEN, LONGMAN, AND ROBERTS

1861

The right of translation is reserved

LONDON
PRINTED BY SPOTTISWOODE AND CO.
NEW-STREET SQUARE

DEDICATION

TO

RICHARD MONCKTON MILNES

I HAVE PREFIXED YOUR NAME,

DEAR MILNES,

TO

"THE CITY OF THE SAINTS:"

THE NAME OF A LINGUIST, TRAVELLER, POET,

AND ABOVE ALL

A MAN OF INTELLIGENT INSIGHT INTO THE THOUGHTS AND

FEELINGS OF HIS BROTHER MEN

PREFACE.

UNACCUSTOMED, of late years at least, to deal with tales of twice-told travel, I cannot but feel, especially when, as in the present case, so much detail has been expended upon the trivialities of a Diary, the want of that freshness and originality which would have helped the reader over a little lengthiness. My best excuse is the following extract from the Lexicographer's "Journey to the Western Islands," made in company with Mr. Boswell during the year of grace 1773, and upheld even at that late hour as somewhat a feat in the locomotive line.

"These diminutive observations seem to take away something from the dignity of writing, and therefore are never communicated but with hesitation and a little fear of abasement and contempt. But it must be remembered that life consists not of a series of illustrious actions or elegant enjoyments; the greater part of our time passes in compliance with necessities, in the performance of daily duties, in the removal of small inconveniences, in the procurement of petty pleasures, and we are well or ill at ease, as the main stream of life glides on smoothly or is ruffled by small obstacles and frequent interruptions."

True! and as the novelist claims his right to elaborate, in the "domestic epic," the most trivial scenes of household routine, so the traveller may be allowed to enlarge, when copying nature in his humbler way, upon the subject of his little drama, and, not confining himself to the Great, the Good, and the Beautiful, nor suffering himself to be wholly engrossed by the claims of Cotton, Civilisation, and Christianity, Useful Knowledge and

Missionary enterprise, to *desipere in loco* by expatiating upon his bed, his meat, and his drink.

The notes forming the groundwork of this volume were written — on Patent Improved Metallic Pocket-books — in sight of the objects which attracted my attention. The old traveller is again right when he remarks: "There is yet another cause of error not always easily surmounted, though more dangerous to the veracity of itinerary narratives than imperfect mensuration. An observer deeply impressed by any remarkable spectacle does not suppose that the traces will soon vanish from his mind, and having commonly no great convenience for writing,"—Penny and Letts are of a later date—"defers the description to a time of more leisure and better accommodation. He who has not made the experiment, or is not accustomed to require rigorous accuracy from himself, will scarcely believe how much a few hours take from certainty of knowledge and distinctness of imagery; how the succession of objects will be broken, how separate parts will be confused, and how many particular features and discriminations will be found compressed and conglobated with one gross and general idea." Brave words, somewhat pompous and diffused, yet worthy to be written in letters of gold. But though of the same opinion with M. Charles Didier, the Miso-Albion (Séjour chez le Grand-Chérif de la Mekkeh, Preface, p. vi.), when he characterises "un voyage de fantaisie" as "le pire de tous les romans;" and with Admiral Fitzroy (Hints to Travellers, p. 3), that the descriptions should be written with the objects in view, I would avoid the other extreme, viz. that of publishing, as our realistic age is apt to do, mere photographic representations. Byron could not write verse when on Lake Leman, and the traveller who puts forth his narrative without after-study and thought, will produce a kind of Persian picture, pre-Raphaelitic enough, no doubt, but lacking distance and perspective — in artists' phrase, depth and breadth —in fact, a narrative about as pleasing to the reader's mind as the sage and saleratus prairies of the Far West would be to his ken.

In working up this book I have freely used authorities well

known across the water, but more or less rare in England. The books principally borrowed from are "The Prairie Traveller," by Captain Marcy; "Explorations of Nebraska," by Lt. G. A. Warren; and Mr. Bartlett's "Dictionary of Americanisms." To describe these regions without the aid of their first explorers, Messrs. Frémont and Stansbury, would of course have been impossible. If I have not always specified the authority for a statement, it has been rather for the purpose of not wearying the reader by repetitions, than with the view of enriching my pages at the expense of others.

In commenting upon what was seen and heard, I have endeavoured to assume—whether successfully or not the public will decide—the cosmopolitan character, and to avoid the capital error, especially in treating of things American, of looking at them from the fancied vantage-ground of an English point of view. I hold the Anglo-Scandinavian* of the New World to be in most things equal, in many inferior and in many superior, to his cousin in the Old; and that a gentleman, that is to say, a man of education, probity, and honour—not, as I was once told, one who must get *on onner* and *onnest*—is everywhere the same, though living in separate hemispheres. If in the present transition state of the Far West, the broad lands lying between the Missouri River and the Sierra Nevada have occasionally been handled somewhat roughly, I have done no more than I should have permitted myself to do whilst treating of rambles beyond railways through the semi-civilised parts of Great Britain, with their "pleasant primitive populations;" Wales, for instance, or Cornwall.

I need hardly say that this elaborate account of the Holy

* The word is proposed by Dr. Norton Shaw, Secretary to the Royal Geographical Society, and should be generally adopted. Anglo-Saxon is to Anglo-Scandinavian what Indo-Germanic is to Indo-European; both serve to humour the absurd pretensions of claimants whose principal claim to distinction is pretentiousness. The coupling England with Saxony suggests to my memory a toast once proposed after a patriotic and fusional political feed in the Isle of the Knights—"Malta and England united can conquer the world."

City of the West and its denizens would not have seen the light so soon after the appearance of a "Journey to Great Salt Lake City," by M. Jules Remy, had there not been much left to say. The French naturalist passed through the Mormon Settlements in 1855, and five years in the Far West are equal to fifty in less conservative lands; the results of which are, that the relation of my experiences will in no way clash with his, or prove a tiresome repetition to the reader of both.

If in parts of this volume there appear a tendency to look upon things generally in their ludicrous or absurd aspects—from which nothing sublunary is wholly exempt—my excuse must be *sic me natura fecit*. Democritus was not, I believe, a whit the worse philosopher than Heraclitus. The Procreation of Mirth should be a theme far more sympathetic than the Anatomy of Melancholy, and the old Roman gentleman had a perfect right to challenge all objectors with

ridentem dicere verum
Quid vetat?

Finally, I would again solicit forbearance touching certain errors of omission and commission which are to be found in these pages. Her Most Gracious Majesty has been pleased to honour me with an appointment as Consul at Fernando Po, in the Bight of Biafra, and the necessity of an early departure has limited me to a single revise.

14, St. James' Square:
1st July, 1861.

CONTENTS.

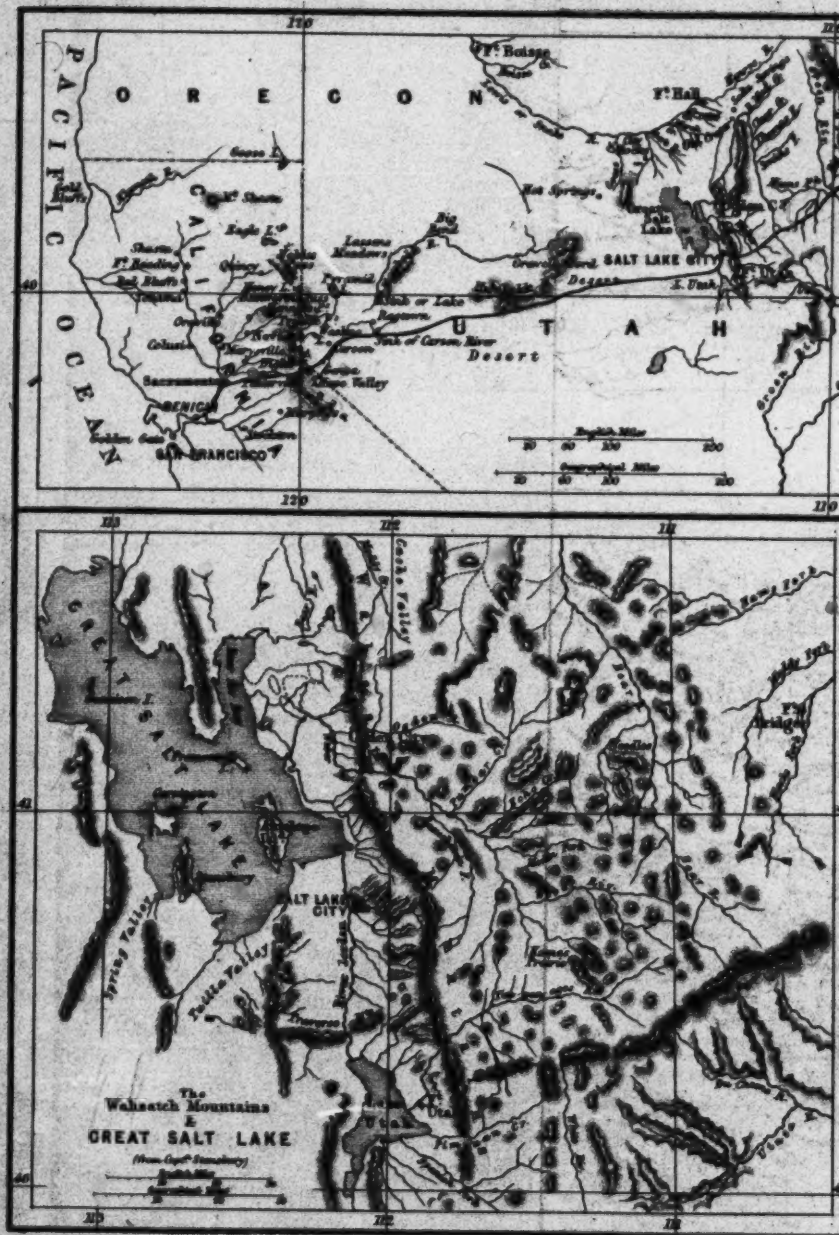
CHAP.		PAGE
I.	— WHY I WENT TO GREAT SALT LAKE CITY. — THE VARIOUS ROUTES. — THE LINE OF COUNTRY TRAVERSED. — DIARIES AND DISQUISITIONS	1
II.	— THE SIOUX OR DAKOTAS	116
III.	— CONCLUDING THE ROUTE TO THE GT. S. L. CITY	161
IV.	— FIRST WEEK AT GT. S. L. CITY. — PRELIMINARIES	249
V.	— SECOND WEEK AT GT. S. L. CITY. — VISIT TO THE PROPHET	290
VI.	— DESCRIPTIVE GEOGRAPHY, ETHNOLOGY, AND STATISTICS OF U. T.	331
VII.	— THIRD WEEK AT GT. S. L. CITY. — EXCURSIONS	390
VIII.	— EXCURSIONS CONTINUED	417
IX.	— LATTER-DAY SAINTS. — OF THE MORMON RELIGION	437
X.	— FURTHER OBSERVATIONS AT GT. S. L. CITY	506
XI.	— LAST DAYS AT GT. S. L. CITY	535
XII.	— TO RUBY VALLEY	538
XIII.	— TO CARSON VALLEY	575
CONCLUSION		602
APPENDICES		607

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

		PAGE
GREAT SALT LAKE CITY FROM THE NORTH	*Frontispiece.*	
ROUTE FROM THE MISSOURI RIVER TO THE PACIFIC	*to face*	1
MAP OF THE WASACH MOUNTAINS AND GREAT SALT LAKE	,,	1
GENERAL MAP OF NORTH AMERICA	,,	1
THE WESTERN YOKE		28
CHIMNEY ROCK		92
SCOTT'S BLUFFS		96
INDIANS	*to face*	116
PLAN OF GREAT SALT LAKE CITY	,,	240
STORES IN MAIN STREET	,,	246
ENDOWMENT HOUSE AND TABERNACLE	,,	271
THE PROPHET'S BLOCK	,,	301
THE TABERNACLE		314
ANCIENT LAKE BENCH-LAND		331
THE DEAD SEA		390
ENSIGN PEAK	*to face*	436
DESERET ALPHABET		510
MOUNT NEBO		538
FIRST VIEW OF CARSON LAKE	*to face*	594
VIRGINIA CITY	,,	602
IN THE SIERRA NEVADA		606

ERRATUM.

Page 226, line 8 from bottom, for '*Pyrios*' read '*Kyrios*'


OREGON
UTAH
PACIFIC OCEAN
Ft. Boise
Ft. Hall
SALT LAKE CITY
Great Salt Lake Desert
Humboldt Valley
SACRAMENTO
SAN FRANCISCO
Cache Valley
Spring Valley
Pueblo Valley
The Wahsatch Mountains & GREAT SALT LAKE

Route from the
MISSOURI RIVER
to the
PACIFIC.
NORTH
AMERICA.
SOUTH
AMERICA
ASIA
Gulf of
Mexico
West Indies
Pacific
Ocean
Atlantic
Ocean
Arctic
Ocean
Behring's
Straits
Hudson's
Bay
Greenland
Iceland
Labrador
Newfoundland
Nova Scotia
Canada
Mississippi R.
Missouri R.
Columbia R.
Colorado R.
Rio Grande
Yellow Stone R.
Platte R.
Arkansas R.
Red R.
Ohio R.
Great Salt L.
Great Bear L.
Great Slave L.
Great Bear R.
Great Slave R.
Athabasca L.
Winnipeg L.
Lake Superior
Lake Michigan
Lake Huron
Lake Erie
Lake Ontario
Lake Champlain
Lake Winnipeg
Lake of the Woods
Hudson's Bay
Baffin's Bay
Davis's Straits
Behring's Straits
Aleutian Islands
Kodiak I.
Queen Charlotte's I.
Vancouver I.
Sandwich I.
Cuba
Jamaica
Hayti
Trinidad
Tierra del Fuego
Cape Horn
Falkland Is.
Terra del Fuego
Tropic of Cancer
Equator
Arctic Circle
Rocky Mts
Blue Mts
Green Mts
White Mts
Alleghany Mts
Andes
Cordilleras
Sierra Madre
Sierra Nevada
Coast Range
Wind River Mts
Black Hills
Big Horn Mts
Pike's Peak
Long's Peak
Fremont's Peak
Independence
Fort Leavenworth
Fort Laramie
Fort Hall
Fort Vancouver
Fort Boise
Fort Walla Walla
Fort Colville
Fort Simpson
Fort Chipewyan
Fort Resolution
Fort Norman
Fort Yukon
Fort Good Hope
Fort Liard
Fort Halkett
Fort Dunvegan
Fort Vermilion
Fort Edmonton
Fort Pitt
Fort Carlton
Fort Ellice
Fort Garry
Fort Alexander
Fort Frances
Fort William
Fort Wayne
Fort Dearborn
Fort Gratiot
Fort Niagara
Fort Erie
Fort Detroit
Fort Mackinac
Fort Brady
Fort Howard
Fort Crawford
Fort Snelling
Fort Union
Fort Pierre
Fort Clark
Fort Mandan
Fort Atkinson
Fort Leavenworth
Fort Gibson
Fort Jesup
Fort Towson
Fort Smith
Fort Scott
Fort Wise
Fort Massachusetts
Fort Bridger
Fort Hall
Fort Boise
Fort Walla Walla
Fort Vancouver

THE CITY OF THE SAINTS.

CHAPTER I.

WHY I WENT TO GREAT SALT LAKE CITY. THE VARIOUS ROUTES. THE LINE OF COUNTRY TRAVERSED. DIARIES AND DISQUISITIONS.

A TOUR through the domains of Uncle Samuel without visiting the wide regions of the Far West, would be, to use a novel simile, like seeing Hamlet with the part of Prince of Denmark, by desire, omitted. Moreover, I had long determined, to add the last new name to the list of "Holy Cities;" to visit the young rival, *soi-disant*, of Memphis, Bonares, Jerusalem, Rome, Mecca; and after having studied the beginnings of a mighty empire "in that New World which is the Old," to observe the origin and the working of a regular go-ahead Western and Columbian revolution. Mingled with the wish of prospecting the City of the Great Salt Lake in a spiritual point of view, of seeing Utah as it is, not as it is said to be, was the mundane desire of enjoying a little skirmishing with the savages, who in the days of Harrison and Jackson had given the pale faces tough work to do, and that failing, of inspecting the line of route which Nature, according to the general consensus of guide-books, has pointed out as the proper, indeed the only practical direction for a railway between the Atlantic and the Pacific. The commerce of the world, the Occidental Press had assured me, is undergoing its grand climacteric: the resources of India and the nearer orient are now well nigh cleared of "loot," and our sons, if they would walk in the paths of their papas, must look to Cipangri and the parts about Cathay for *their* superfluities.

The Man was ready, the Hour hardly appeared propitious for other than belligerent purposes. Throughout the summer of 1860 an Indian war was raging in Nebraska; the Comanches, Kiowas, and Cheyennes were "out;" the Federal Government had despatched three columns to the centres of confusion; intestine feuds amongst the aborigines were talked of; the Dakota or Sioux had threatened to "wipe out" their old foe the Pawnee, both tribes being possessors of the soil over which the road ran. Horrible accounts of murdered postboys and cannibal emigrants, greatly exaggerated, as usual, for private and public purposes, filled the papers, and that nothing might be wanting the following positive assertion (I afterwards found it to be, as Sir Charles Napier characterised one of a Bombay editor's sayings, "a marked and emphatic lie") was copied by full half the press:

"Utah has a population of some fifty-two or fifty-three thousand — more or less — rascals. Governor Cumming has informed the President exactly how matters stand in respect to them. Neither life nor property is safe, he says, and bands of depredators roam unpunished through the territory. The United States judges have abandoned their offices, and the law is boldly defied everywhere. He requests that 500 soldiers may be retained at Utah to afford some kind of protection to American citizens who are obliged to remain here."

"Mormon" had in fact become a word of fear; the Gentiles looked upon the Latter Day Saints much as our crusading ancestors regarded the "Hashshashiyun," whose name indeed was almost enough to frighten them. Mr. Brigham Young was the Shaykh-el-Jebel, the Old Man of the Hill redivivus, Messrs. Kimball and Wells were the chief of his Fidawin, and "Zion on the tops of the mountains" formed a fair representation of Alamut.

"Going amongst the Mormons!" said Mr. M—— to me at New Orleans; "they are shooting and cutting one another in all directions—how can *you* expect to escape?"

Another general assertion was that "White Indians"—these Mormons again!—had assisted the "Washoe," "Pah Utes" and "Bannocks" in the fatal affair near Honey Lake, where Major Ormsby, of the militia, a military frontier-lawyer, and his forty men lost the numbers of their mess.

But sagely thus reflecting that "dangers which loom large from afar generally lose size as one draws near," that rumours of wars might have arisen, as they are wont to do, from the political necessity for another "Indian botheration," as editors call it; that Governor Cumming's name might have been used in vain, that even the President might not have been a Pope, infallible, and that the Mormons might turn out somewhat less black than they were painted: moreover, having so frequently and wilfully risked the chances of an "I told you so" from the lips of friends, those "prophets of the past;" and, finally, having been so much struck with the discovery by some western man of an enlarged truth, viz. that the bugbear approached has more affinity to the bug than to the bear, I resolved to risk the chance of the "red nightcap" from the bloodthirsty Indian and the poisoned bowie-dagger—without my Eleonora or Berengaria—from the jealous Latter Day Saints. I forthwith applied myself to the audacious task with all the recklessness of a "party" from Town precipitating himself for the first time into "foreign parts" about Calais.

And first a few words touching routes.

As all the world knows, there are three main lines proposed for a "Pacific R. R." between the Mississippi and the Western Ocean, the Northern, Central, and Southern.*

The first, or British, was in my case not to be thought of; it involves semi-starvation, possibly a thorough plundering by the Bedouins, and what was far worse five or six months of slow travel. The third, or Southern, known as the Butterfield or American Express, offered to start me in an ambulance from St. Louis, and to pass me through Arkansas, El Paso, Fort Yuma on the Gila River, in fact through the vilest and most desolate portion of the West. Twenty-four mortal days and nights—twenty-five being schedule time—must be spent in that ambulance; passengers becoming crazy by whiskey, mixed with want of sleep, are often obliged to be strapped to their seats; their meals, despatched during the ten minute halts, are simply abominable, the heats are excessive, the climate malarious; lamps may not be used at night for fear of un-existing Indians;

* The following Table showing the lengths, comparative costs, &c., of the several routes explored for a railroad from the Mississippi to the Pacific, is extracted from the Speech of the Hon. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, on the Pacific

briefly, there is no end to this Via Mala's miseries. The line received from the United States Government upwards of half a million of dollars per annum for carrying the mails, and its contract had still nearly two years to run.

There remained therefore the central route, which has two branches. You may start by stage to the gold regions about Denver City or Pike's Peak, and thence, if not accidentally or purposely shot, you may proceed by an uncertain ox-train to Great Salt Lake City, which latter part cannot take less than thirty-five days. On the other hand there is "the great emi-

Railway Bill in the United States Senate, January 1859, and quoted by the Hon. Sylvester Mowry in the "Geography and Resources of Arizona and Sonora."

Routes.	Distance by Railroad.	Distance by Common Road.	Cost of Railroad.	No. of miles of Snow.	Highest Elevation above the Sea.	Altitude above the Sea of the Snow.
	Miles.	Feet.	Dollars.			Feet.
Route near forty-seventh and forty-ninth parallels, from St. Paul to Seattle	1,800	12,554	126,971,000	500	1,600	6,041
Route near forty-seventh and forty-ninth parallels, from St. Paul to Vancouver	1,800	17,543	126,971,000	571	1,600	6,044
Route near forty-first and forty-second parallels, from Rock Island, via South Pass, to Benicia	2,300	19,129*	162,179,000	600	1,600	8,327
Route near thirty-eighth and thirty-ninth parallels, from St. Louis, via Cow-skin Pass, and Walker-pass Pass, to San Francisco	2,300	16,000	Impracticable.	600	1,600	10,000
Route near thirty-eighth and thirty-ninth parallels, from St. Louis, via Cow-skin Pass and Walker Pass, to Benicia	2,300	16,512†	Impracticable.	600	1,600	10,000
Route near thirty-fifth parallel, from Memphis to San Francisco	2,300	16,000‡	113,000,000	600	1,600	7,000
Route near thirty-second parallel, from Memphis to San Pedro	2,300	16,000§	99,000,000	600	1,600	7,000
Route near thirty-second parallel, and Colonel Loading to San Francisco by coast route	2,171	10,000‖	91,000,000	600	1,100	5,777
Route near thirty-second parallel, from Colonel Loading to San Pedro	1,743	10,121‖	73,000,000	600	1,100	5,777
Route near thirty-second parallel, from Colonel Loading to San Diego	1,600	10,454‖	73,000,000	600	1,100	5,777

* The summit and distance between Rock Island and Council Bluffs are not known, and therefore not included in this sum.

† The summit and distance between St. Louis and Westport are not known, and therefore not included in this sum.

‡ The summit and distance between Memphis and Fort Smith are not known, and therefore not included in this sum.

§ The summit and distance between Colonel Loading and Fulton are not known, and therefore not included in this sum.

gration route from Missouri to California and Oregon, over which so many thousands have travelled within the past few years. I quote from a useful little volume, "The Prairie Traveller,"* by Randolph B. Marcy, Captain U.S. Army. "The track is broad, well worn, and cannot be mistaken. It has received the major part of the Mormon emigration, and was traversed by the army in its march to Utah in 1857."

The mail coach on this line was established in 1850, by Colonel Samuel H. Woodson, an eminent lawyer, afterwards an M.C., and right unpopular with Mormondom, because he sacrilegiously owned part of Temple Block, in Independence, Mo., which is the old original New Zion. The following are the rates of contract and the phases through which the line has passed.

1. Colonel Woodson received for carrying a monthly mail, $19,500 (or $23,000?): length of contract 4 years.
2. Mr. F. M'Graw, $13,500, besides certain considerable extras.
3. Messrs. Heber Kimball & Co. (Mormons), $23,000.
4. Messrs. Jones & Co., $30,000.
5. Mr. J. M. Hockaday, weekly mail, $190,000.
6. Messrs. Russell, Majors, & Waddell, army contractors: weekly mail, $190,000.†

Thus it will be seen that in 1856 the transit was in the hands of the Latter Day Saints: they managed it well, but they lost the contracts during their troubles with the Federal Government in 1857, when it again fell into Gentile possession. In those early days it had but three changes of mules, at Forts Bridger, Laramie, and Kearny. In May 1859 it was taken up by the present firm, which expects, by securing the monopoly of the whole line between the Missouri River and San Francisco, and by canvassing at head-quarters for a bi-weekly—which they have now obtained—and even a daily transit, which shall constitutionally extinguish the Mormon community, to insert the fine edge of that wedge which is to open an aperture for the

* Printed by Messrs. Harper Brothers, New York, 1859, and Messrs. Sampson Low, Son, and Co., Ludgate Hill, and amply meriting the honours of a second edition.

† In the American Almanac for 1861 (p. 196), the length of routes in Utah Territory is 1450 miles, 523 of which have no specified mode of transportation, and the remainder, 977, in coaches; the total transportation is thus, 170,873 miles, and the total cost $144,623.

Pacific R. R. about to be. At Saint Joseph (Mo.), better known by the somewhat irreverend abbreviation of St. Jo., I was introduced to Mr. Alexander Majors, formerly one of the contractors for supplying the army in Utah—a veteran mountaineer, familiar with life on the prairies. His meritorious efforts to reform the morals of the land have not yet put forth even the bud of promise. He forbad his drivers and employés to drink, gamble, curse, and travel on Sundays; he desired them to peruse Bibles distributed to them gratis; and though he refrained from a lengthy proclamation commanding his liegos to be good boys and girls, he did not the less expect it of them. Results: I scarcely ever saw a sober driver; as for profanity—the Western equivalent for hard swearing—they would make the blush of shame crimson the cheek of the old Isis bargee; and, rare exceptions to the rule of the United States, they are not to be deterred from evil talking even by the dread presence of a "lady." The conductors and road-agents are of a class superior to the drivers; they do their harm by an inordinate ambition to distinguish themselves. I met one gentleman who owned to three murders, and another individual who lately attempted to ration the mules with wild sage. The company was by no means rich; already the papers had prognosticated a failure, in consequence of the Government withdrawing its supplies, and it seemed to have hit upon the happy expedient of badly entreating travellers that good may come to it of our evils. The hours and halting-places were equally vilely selected: for instance, at Forts Kearny, Laramie, and Bridger, the only points where supplies, comfort, society, are procurable, a few minutes of grumbling delay were granted as a favour, and the passengers were hurried on to some distant wretched ranch*, apparently for the sole purpose of putting a few dollars into the station-master's pockets. The travel was unjustifiably slow, even in this land, where progress is mostly on paper. From St. Jo. to Great Salt Lake City, the mails might easily be landed during the fine weather, without inconvenience to man or beast, in ten

* "Rancho" in Mexico means primarily a rude thatched hut where herdsmen pass the night; the "jacchara" is a sheep walk or cattle run, distinguished from a "hacienda" which must contain cultivation. In California it is a large farm with grounds often measured by leagues, and it applies to any thirty hovel in the Mississippian valley.

days; indeed, the agents have offered to place them at Placerville in fifteen. Yet the schedule time being twenty-one days, passengers seldom reached their destination before the nineteenth—the sole reason given was, that snow makes the road difficult in its season, and that if people were accustomed to fast travel and if letters were received under schedule time, they would look upon the boon as a right.

Before proceeding to our preparations for travel, it may be as well to cast a glance at the land to be travelled over.

The United States territory lying in direct line between the Mississippi River and the Pacific Ocean is now about 1200 miles long from north to south, by 1500 of breadth, in 49° and 32°, N. Lat. about equal to Equatorial Africa, and 1800 in N. Lat. 38°. The great uncultivable belt of plain and mountain region through which the Pacific R. R. must run, has a width of 1100 statute miles near the northern boundary; in the central line, 1200; and through the southern, 1000. Humboldt justly ridiculed the "maddest natural philosopher," who compared the American Continent to a female figure—long, thin, watery, and freezing at the 56th°, the degrees being symbolic of the year at which woman grows old. Such description manifestly will not apply to the 2,000,000 of square miles in this section of the Great Republic—she is every where broader than she is long.

The meridian of 105° north longitude (G.)—Fort Laramie lies in 104° 31′ 26″—divides this vast expanse into two nearly equal parts. The eastern half is a basin or river valley rising gradually from the Mississippi to the Black Hills, and the other outlying ranges of the Rocky Mountains. The average elevation near the northern boundary (49°) is 2500 feet, in the middle latitude (38°) 6000 feet, and near the southern extremity (32°), about 4000 feet above sea level. These figures explain the complicated features of its water-shed. The western half is a mountain region whose chains extend, as far as they are known, in a general N. and S. direction.

The 99th meridian (G.)—Fort Kearny, lies in 98° 58′ 11″—divides the western half of the Mississippian valley into two unequal parts.

The eastern portion, from the Missouri to Fort Kearny—400 to 500 miles in breadth—may be called the "Prairie land." It

is true that passing westward of the 97° meridian, the *mauvaises terres*, or Bad Grounds, are here and there met with, especially near the 42nd parallel, in which latitude they extend further to the east, and that upward to 99° the land is rarely fit for cultivation, though fair for grazing. Yet along the course of the frequent streams there is valuable soil, and often sufficient wood to support settlements. This territory is still possessed by settled Indians, by semi-nomads and by powerful tribes of equestrian and wandering savages, mixed with a few white men, who, as might be expected, excel them in cunning and ferocity.

The western portion of the valley, from Fort Kearny to the base of the Rocky Mountains — a breadth of 300 to 400 miles — is emphatically "the desert," sterile and uncultivable, a dreary expanse of wild sage (artemisia) and saleratus. The surface is sandy, gravelly and pebbly; cactus cardnus and aloes abound; grass is found only in the rare river bottoms where the soils of the different strata are mixed, and the few trees along the borders of streams — fertile lines of wadis, which laborious irrigation and coal mining might convert into oases — are the cottonwood, and willow, to which the mezquite* may be added in the southern latitudes. The desert is mostly uninhabited, unendurable even to the wildest Indian. But the people on its eastern and western frontiers, namely, those holding the extreme limits of the fertile prairie, and those occupying the desirable regions of the western mountains, are, to quote the words of Lieut. Gouverneur K. Warren, U. S. Topographical Engineers, whose valuable reconnaissances and explanations of Nebraska in 1855-56 and '57, were published in the Reports of the Secretary of War, "on the shore of a sea, up to which population and agriculture may advance and no further. But this gives these outposts much of the value of places along the Atlantic frontier, in view of the future settlements to be formed in the mountains, between which and the present frontier a most valuable trade would exist. The western frontier has always been looking to the east for a market, but as soon as the

* Often corrupted from the Spanish to muskeet (*Algarobia glandulosa*), a locust inhabiting Texas, New Mexico, California, &c., bearing, like the carob generally, a long pod full of sweet beans, which pounded and mixed with flour are a favourite food with the S.-Western Indians.

wave of emigration has passed over the desert portion of the plains, to which the discoveries of gold have already given an impetus that will propel it to the fertile valleys of the Rocky Mountains, then will the present frontier of Kansas and Nebraska become the starting point for all the products of the Mississippi Valley, which the population of the mountains will require. We see the effects of it in the benefits which the western frontier of Missouri has received from the Santa Fé tract, and still more plainly in the impetus given to Leavenworth by the operations of the army of Utah in the interior region. This flow of products has, in the last instance, been only in one direction, but when those mountains become settled, as they eventually must, then there will be a reciprocal trade materially beneficial to both."

The mountain region westward of the sage and saleratus desert, extending between the 105th and 111th meridian (G.)— a little more than 400 miles — will in time become sparsely peopled. Though in many parts arid and sterile, dreary and desolate, the long bunch grass (*Festuca*), the short curly buffalo grass (*Sisleria dactyloides*), the mesquit grass (*Stipa spata*), and the Gramma, or rather as it should be called "Gamma" grass (*Chondrosium fœneum*)* which clothe the slopes west of Fort Laramie, will enable it to rear an abundance of stock. The fertile valleys, according to Lieut. Warren, "furnish the means of raising sufficient quantities of grain and vegetable for the use of the inhabitants, and beautiful healthy and desirable locations for their homes. The remarkable freedom here from sickness is one of the attractive features of the region, and will in this respect go far to compensate the settler from the Mississippi valley for his loss in the smaller amount of products that can be taken from the soil. The great want of suitable building material, which now so seriously retards the growth of the west will not be felt there." The heights of the Rocky Mountains rise abruptly from 1000 to 6000 feet over the lowest known passes, computed by the Pacific R. R. surveyors to vary from 4000 to 10,000 feet above sea level. The two chains forming the eastern and western rims of the Rocky

* Some of my informants derived the word from the Greek letter; others make it Hispano-Mexican.

Mountain basin, have the greatest elevation, walling in as it were the other subranges.

There is a popular idea that the western slope of the Rocky Mountains is smooth and regular; on the contrary, the land is rougher, and the ground is more complicated than on the eastern declivities. From the summit of the Wasatch range to the eastern foot of the Sierra Nevada, the whole region, with exceptions, is a howling wilderness, the sole or bed of an inland sweetwater sea, now shrunk into its remnants — the Great Salt and the Utah Lakes. Nothing can be more monotonous than its regular succession of high grisly hills, cut perpendicularly by rough and rocky ravines, and separating bare and barren plains. From the seaward base of the Sierra Nevada to the Pacific — California — the slope is easy, and the land is pleasant, fertile and populous.

After this *aperçu* of the motives which sent me forth, once more a pilgrim, to young Meccah in the west, of the various routes, and of the style of country wandered over, I plunge at once into personal narrative.

Lieut. Dana (U. S. Artillery), my future *compagnon de voyage*, left St. Louis[*], "the turning-back place of English sportsmen," for St. Jo. on the 2nd of August, preceding me by two days. Being accompanied by his wife and child, and bound on a weary voyage to Camp Floyd, Utah Territory, he naturally wanted a certain amount of precise information concerning the route, and one of the peculiarities of this line is that no one knows anything about it. In the same railway car which carried me from St. Louis were five passengers, all bent upon making Utah with the least delay — an unexpected cargo of officials: Mr. P*********, a federal judge with two sons; Mr. W******, a State secretary; and Mr. G****, a State marshal. As the sequel may show, Dana was doubly fortunate in securing places before the list could be filled up by the unusual throng: all we thought of at the time was our good luck in escaping a septidium at St. Jo., whence the stage started on Tuesdays only. We hurried therefore to pay for our tickets — $175 each

[*] St. Louis (Mo.) lies in N. L. 38° 37′ and W. long. (G.) 90° 10′: its elevation above tide water is 461 feet: the latest frost is in the first week of March, the earliest is in the middle of November, giving some 115 days of cold. St. Joseph (Mo.) lies about N. L. 39° 40′, and W. long. (G.) 94° 54′.

being the moderate sum — to reduce our luggage to its minimum approach towards 25lbs. the price of transport for excess being exorbitantly fixed at $1 per lb., and to lay in a few necessaries for the way, tea and sugar, tobacco and cognac. I will not take liberties with my company's "kit"; my own, however, was represented as follows:

One indian-rubber blanket pierced in the centre for a poncho, and garnished along the longer side with buttons, and corresponding elastic loops with a strap at the short end, converting it into a carpet-bag,— a "sine qua non" from the Equator to the Pole. A buffalo-robe ought to have been added as a bed: ignorance however prevented, and borrowing did the rest. With one's coat as a pillow, a robe, and a blanket, one may defy the dangerous "bunks" of the stations.

For weapons I carried two revolvers: from the moment of leaving St. Jo. to the time of reaching Placerville or Sacramento the pistol should never be absent from a man's right side — remember it is handier there than on the other — nor the bowie knife from his left. Contingencies with Indians and others may happen, when the difference of a second saves life; the revolver should therefore be carried with its butt to the fore, and when drawn it should not be levelled as in target practice, but directed towards the object, by means of the right fore-finger laid flat along the cylinder whilst the medius draws the trigger. The instinctive consent between eye and hand, combined with a little practice, will soon enable the beginner to shoot correctly from the hip; all he has to do, is to think that he is pointing at the mark, and pull. As a precaution, especially when mounted upon a kicking horse, it is wise to place the cock upon a capless nipple, rather than trust to the intermediate pins. In dangerous places the revolver should be discharged and reloaded every morning, both for the purpose of keeping the hand in, and to do the weapon justice. A revolver is an admirable tool when properly used; those, however, who are too idle or careless to attend to it, had better carry a pair of "Derringers." For the benefit of buffalo and antelope, I had invested $25 at St. Louis, in a "shooting iron" of the "Hawkins" style,— that enterprising individual now dwells in Denver City,— it was a long top-heavy rifle, it weighed 12lbs., and it carried the smallest ball — 76 to the pound — a combina-

tion highly conducive to good practice. Those, however, who can use light weapons, should prefer the Maynard breechloader, with an extra barrel for small shot; and if Indian fighting is in prospect, the best tool without any exception, is a ponderous double-barrel, 12 to the pound, and loaded as fully as it can bear with slugs. The last of the battery was an air-gun to astonish the natives, and a bag of various ammunition.

Captain Marcy outfits his prairie traveller with a "little blue mass, quinine, opium, and some cathartic medicine put up in doses for adults." I limited myself to the opium, which is invaluable when one expects five consecutive days and nights in a prairie wagon, quinine, and Warburg's drops, without which no traveller should ever face fever, and a little citric acid, which, with green tea drawn off the moment the leaf has sunk, is perhaps the best substitute for milk and cream. The "holy weed Nicotian" was not forgotten; cigars must be bought in extraordinary quantities, as the driver either receives or takes the lion's share: the most satisfactory outfit is a *quantum sufficit* of Louisiana Pirique and Lynchburg goldleaf, — cavendish without its abominations of rum and honey or molasses, — and two pipes, a meerschaum for luxury and a briar-root to fall back upon when the meerschaum shall have been stolen. The Indians will certainly pester for matches; the best lighting apparatus, therefore, is the Spanish mechero, the Oriental sukhtah — agate and cotton match — besides which it offers a pleasing exercise, like billiards, and one at which the British soldier greatly excels, surpassed only by his exquisite skill in stuffing the pipe.

For literary purposes, I had, besides the two books above quoted, a few of the great guns of exploration, Frémont, Stansbury, and Gunnison, with a selection of the most violent Mormon and Anti-Mormon polemicals, sketching materials, — I prefer the "improved metallics" five inches long, and serving for both diary and drawing book — and a tourist's writing case of those sold by Mr. Field (Bible Warehouse, The Quadrant), with but one alteration, a snap lock, to obviate the use of that barbarous invention called a key. For instruments I carried a pocket sextant with a double face, invented by Mr. George, of the R. Geographical Society, and beautifully made by Messrs. Casy, an artificial horizon of black glass, and bubble tubes to level it, night and day compasses, with a portable affair

attached to a watch chain,—a traveller feels nervous till he can "orienter" himself,—a pocket thermometer, and a B. P. ditto. The only safe form for the latter would be a strong neckless tube, the heavy pyriform bulbs in general use never failing to break at the first opportunity. A Stanhope lens, a railway whistle, and instead of the binocular, useful for things of earth, a very valueless telescope—(warranted by the maker to show Jupiter's satellites, and by utterly declining so to do, reading a lesson touching the non-advisability of believing an instrument maker)—completed the outfit.

The prairie traveller is not particular about toilette: the easiest dress is a dark flannel shirt, worn over the normal article; no braces,—I say it, despite Mr. Galton,—but broad leather belt for "six-shooter" and for "Arkansas tooth-pick," a long clasp-knife, or for the rapier of the Western world, called after the hero who perished in the "red butchery of the Alamo." The nether garments should be forked with good buckskin, or they will infallibly give out, and the lower end should be tucked into the boots, after the sensible fashion of our grandfathers, before those ridiculous Wellingtons were dreamed of by our sires. In warm weather, a pair of moccasins will be found easy as slippers, but they are bad for wet places, they make the feet tender, they strain the back sinews and they form the first symptom of the savage mania. Socks keep the feet cold; there are however those who should take six pair. The use of the pocket-handkerchief is unknown in the plains, some people however, are uncomfortable without it; not liking "se emungere" after the fashion of Horace's father.

In cold weather—and rarely are the nights warm—there is nothing better than the old English tweed shooting-jacket made with pockets like a poacher's, and its similar waistcoat, a "stomach warmer" without a roll collar, which prevents comfortable sleep, and with flaps as in the Year of Grace 1760 when men were too wise to wear our senseless vests, whose only property seems to be that of disclosing after exertions a lucid interval of linen or longcloth. For driving and riding, a large pair of buckskin gloves, or rather gauntlets, without which even the teamster will not travel, and leggings—the best are made in the country, only the straps should be passed through and sewn on to the leathers—are advisable, if at least

the man at all regards his epidermis: it is almost unnecessary to bid you remember spurs, but it may be useful to warn you that they will, like riches, make to themselves wings. The head covering by excellence is a brown felt, which, by a little ingenuity, boring, for instance, holes round the brim to admit a ribbon, you may convert into a riding hat or night cap, and wear alternately after the manly slouch of Cromwell and his Martyr, the funny three-cornered spittoon-like "shovel" of the Dutch Georges, and the ignoble cocked-hat, which completes the hideous metamorphosis.

And above all things, as you value your nationality — this is written for the benefit of the home reader — let no false shame cause you to forget your hat-box and your umbrella. I purpose, when a moment of inspiration waits upon leisure and a mind at ease, to invent an elongated portmanteau, which shall be perfection,— portable — solid leather of two colours, for easy distinguishment,— snap-lock — in length about three feet, in fact long enough to contain without creasing, "small clothes," a lateral compartment destined for a hat, and a longitudinal space where the umbrella can repose: its depth —— but I must reserve that part of the secret until this benefit to British humanity shall have been duly made by Messrs. Bengough Brothers and patented by myself.

The dignitaries of the mail coach, acting upon the principle "first come first served," at first decided, maugre all our attempts at "moral suasion," to divide the party by the interval of a week. Presently reflecting, I presume, upon the unadvisability of leaving at large five gentlemen, who being really in no particular hurry might purchase a private conveyance and start leisurely westward, they were favoured with a revelation of "'cuteness." On the day before departure, as, congregated in the Planter's House Hotel, we were lamenting over our "morning glory," the necessity of parting, — in the prairie the more the merrier, and the fewer the worse cheer, — a youth from the office was introduced to tell, Hepe-like, a flattering tale and a tremendous falsehood. This juvenile delinquent stated with unblushing front, over the hospitable cock-tail, that three coaches instead of one had been newly and urgently applied for by the road-agent at Gt. S. L. city, and therefore that we could not only all travel together, but also all travel with the greatest com-

fort. We exulted. But on the morrow only two conveyances appeared, and not long afterwards the two dwindled off to one. "The Prairie Traveller" doles out wisdom in these words, "information concerning the route coming from strangers living or owning property near them, from agents of steamboats and railways, or from other persons connected with transportation companies,"—how carefully he piles up the heap of sorites,—"should be received with great caution and never without corroboratory evidence from disinterested sources." The main difficulty is to find the latter—to catch your hare—to know whom to believe.

I now proceed to my Diary.

THE START.

Tuesday, 7th August, 1860.

Precisely at 8 A.M. appeared in front of the Patee House—the Fifth Avenue Hotel of St. Jo.—the vehicle destined to be our home for the next three weeks. We scrutinised it curiously.

The mail is carried by a "Concord coach," a spring wagon, comparing advantageously with the horrible vans which once dislocated the joints of men on the Suez route. The body is shaped somewhat like an English tax-cart considerably magnified. It is built to combine safety, strength, and lightness, without the slightest regard to appearances. The material is well-seasoned white oak—the western regions and especially Utah, are notoriously deficient in hard woods—and the manufacturers are the well-known coachwrights, Messrs. Abbott of Concord, N. Hampshire; the colour is sometimes green, more usually red, causing the antelopes to stand and stretch their large eyes whenever the vehicle comes in sight. The wheels are five to six feet apart, affording security against capsizing, with little "gather" and less "dish;" the larger have fourteen spokes and seven felloes; the smaller twelve and six. The tyres are of unusual thickness, and polished like steel by the hard dry ground, and the hubs or naves and the metal nave-bands are in massive proportions. The latter not unfrequently fall off as the wood shrinks, unless the wheel is allowed to stand in water; attention must be paid to resetting them, or in the frequent and heavy "sidlins" the spokes may snap off all round like pipe stems. The wagon bed is supported by iron bands or perpendiculars

abutting upon wooden rockers, which rest on strong leather thoroughbraces: these are found to break the jolt better than the best steel springs, which moreover, when injured, cannot readily be repaired. The whole bed is covered with stout osnaburg supported by stiff bars of white oak; there is a sun-shade or hood in front, where the driver sits, a curtain behind which can be raised or lowered at discretion, and four flaps on each side either folded up or fastened down with hooks and eyes. In heavy frost the passengers must be half dead with cold, but they care little for that if they can go fast. The accommodations are as follows:—In front sits the driver with usually a conductor or passenger by his side; a variety of packages, large and small, is stowed away under his leather cushion; when the break must be put on, an operation often involving the safety of the vehicle, his right foot is planted upon an iron bar which presses by a leverage upon the rear wheels,—and in hot weather a bucket for watering the animals hangs over one of the lamps, whose companion is usually found wanting. The inside has either two or three benches fronting to the fore or placed *vis-à-vis*; they are moveable and reversible, with leather cushions and hinged padded backs; unstrapped and turned down they convert the vehicle into a tolerable bed for two persons or two and a half. According to Cocker, the mail bags should be safely stowed away under these seats, or if there be not room enough, the passengers should perch themselves upon the correspondence; the jolly driver, however, is usually induced to cram the light literature between the wagon bed and the platform, or running gear beneath, and thus when ford-waters wash the hubs, the letters are pretty certain to endure ablution. Behind, instead of dicky, is a kind of boot where passengers' boxes are stored beneath a stout canvas curtain with leather sides. The comfort of travel depends upon packing the wagon; if heavy in front or rear, or if the thoroughbraces be not properly "fixed" the bumping will be likely to cause nasal hæmorrhage. The description will apply to the private ambulance, or as it is called in the west "avalanche," only the latter, as might be expected, is more convenient; it is the drooky in which the vast steppes of Central America are crossed by the government employés.

On this line mules are preferred to horses as being more enduring. They are all of legitimate race, the breed between

the horse and the she-ass is never heard of, and the mysterious jumard is not believed to exist. In dry lands where winter is not severe—they inherit the sire's impatience of cold — they are invaluable animals; in swampy ground this American dromedary is the meanest of beasts, requiring when stalled to be hauled out of the mire before it will recover spirit to use its legs. For sureness of foot (during a journey of more than 1000 miles, I saw but one fall and two severe stumbles), sagacity in finding the road, apprehension of danger, and general cleverness, mules are superior to their mothers: their main defect is an unhappy obstinacy derived from the other side of the house. They are great in hardihood, never sick nor sorry, never groomed nor shod even where ice is on the ground; they have no grain, except five quarts per diem when snow conceals the grass; and they have no stable save the open corral. Moreover, a horse once broken down requires a long rest: the mule, if hitched up or ridden for short distances, with frequent intervals to roll and repose, may still, though "*rested*," get over 300 miles in tolerable time. The rate of travel on an average is five miles an hour; six is good: between seven and eight is the maximum, which sinks in hilly countries to three or four. I have made behind a good pair, in a light wagon, forty consecutive miles at the rate of nine per hour, and in California a mule is little thought of if it cannot accomplish 250 miles in forty-eight hours. The price varies from $100 to $130 per head when cheap, rising to $150 or $200, and for fancy animals from $250 to $400. The value, as in the case of the Arab, depends upon size; "rats," or small mules, especially in California, are not esteemed. The "span"— the word used in America for beasts well matched — is of course much more expensive. At each station on this road, averaging twenty-five miles apart — beyond the forks of the Platte they lengthen out by one-third —are three teams of four animals, with two extra, making a total of fourteen, besides two ponies for the express riders. In the East they work beautifully together, and are rarely mulish beyond a certain ticklishness of temper which warns you not to meddle with their ears when in harness, or to attempt encouraging them by preceding them upon the road. In the West, where they run half wild and are lassoed for use once a week, they are fearfully handy with their heels; they flirt out with the hind legs, they rear like goats, breaking the harness and

casting every strap and buckle clean off the body, and they bite their replies to the chorus of curses and blows: the wonder is that more men are not killed. Each fresh team must be ringed half a dozen times before it will start fairly; there is always some excitement in change; some George or Harry, some Julia or Sally disposed to shirk work or to play tricks, some Brigham Young or General Harney—the Trans-Vaal republican calls his worst animal "England"—whose stubbornness is to be corrected by stone-throwing or the lash.

But the waggon still stands at the door. We ought to start at 8.30 A.M.; we are detained an hour whilst last words are said, and adieu—a long adieu—is bidden to joke and julep, to ice and idleness. Our "plunder"* is clapped on with little ceremony; a hat-case falls open—it was not mine, gentle reader—collars and other small gear cumber the ground, and the owner addresses to the clumsy-handed driver the universal G— d—, which in these lands changes from its expletive or chrysalis form to an adjectival development. We try to stow away as much as possible; the minor officials, with all their little faults, are good fellows, civil and obliging; they wink at non-payment for bedding, stores, weapons, and they rather encourage than otherwise the multiplication of whiskey-kegs and cigar-boxes. We now drive through the dusty roads of St. Jo., the observed of all observers, and presently find ourselves in the steam ferry which is to convey us from the right to the left bank of the Missouri River. The "Big Muddy," as it is now called,—the Yellow River of old writers,—venerable sire of snag and sawyer, displays at this point the source whence it has drawn for ages the dirty brown silt which pollutes below their junction the pellucid waters of the "Big Drink."† It runs, like the lower Indus, through deep walls of stiff clayey earth, and, like that river, its supplies when filtered (they have been calculated to contain one-eighth of solid matter) are sweet and wholesome as its brother streams. The Plata of this region, it is the great sewer of the prairies, the main channel and common issue of the water-courses and ravines which have carried on the work of denudation and degradation for days dating beyond the existence of Egypt.

According to Lieutenant Warren, who endures the careful ex-

* In Canada they call personal luggage "duffle."

† A "Drink" is any river: the Big Drink is the Mississippi.

aminations of the parties under Governor Stevens in 1853, the Missouri is a superior river for navigation to any in the country, except the Mississippi below their junction. It has, however, serious obstacles in wind and frost. From the Yellowstone to its mouth the breadth when full varies from one-third to half a mile: in low water the width shrinks, and bars appear. Where timber does not break the force of the winds, which are most violent in October, clouds of sand are seen for miles, forming banks, which, generally situated at the edges of trees on the islands and points, often so much resemble the Indian mounds in the Mississippi Valley, that some of them — for instance, those described by Lewis and Clark at Bonhomme Island — have been figured as the works of the ancient Toltecs. It would hardly be feasible to correct the windage by foresting the land. The bluffs of the Missouri are often clothed with vegetation as far as the debouchure of the Platte River. Above that point the timber, which is chiefly cotton wood, is confined to ravines and bottom lands, varying in width from ten to fifteen miles above Council Bluffs, which is almost continuous to the mouth of the James River. Everywhere, except between the mouth of the Little Cheyenne and the Cannon Ball rivers, there is a sufficiency of fuel for navigation; but, ascending above Council Bluffs, the protection afforded by forest growth on the banks is constantly diminishing. The trees also are injurious; imbedded in the channel by the "caving-in" of the banks, they form the well-known sawyers, or floating timbers, and snags, trunks standing like *chevaux de frise* at various inclinations, pointing down the stream. From the mouth of the James River down to the Mississippi, it is a wonder how a steamer can run: she must lose half her time by laying to at night, and is often delayed for days, as the wind prevents her passing by bends filled with obstructions. The navigation is generally closed by ice at Sioux City on the 10th of November, and at Fort Leavenworth by the 1st of December. The rainy season of the spring and summer commences in the latitude of Kansas, Missouri, Iowa, and Southern Nebraska, between the 15th of May and the 30th of June, and continues about two months. The floods produced by the melting snows in the mountains come from the Platte, the Big Cheyenne, the Yellowstone, and the Upper Missouri, reaching the lower river about the 1st of July, and

lasting a month. Rivers like this, whose navigation depends upon temporary floods, are greatly inferior for ascent than for descent. The length of the inundation much depends upon the snow on the mountains: a steamer starting from St. Louis on the first indication of the rise would not generally reach the Yellowstone before low water at the latter point, and if a miscalculation is made by taking the temporary rise for the real inundation, the boat must lay by in the middle of the river till the water deepens.

Some geographers have proposed to transfer to the Missouri, on account of its superior length, the honour of being the real head of the Mississippi; they neglect, however, to consider the direction and the course of the stream, an element which must enter largely in determining the channels of great rivers. It will, I hope, be long before this great ditch wins the day from the glorious Father of Waters.

The reader will find in Appendix No. I. a detailed itinerary, showing him the distance between camping places, the several mail stations where mules are changed, the hours of travel, and the facilities for obtaining wood and water,—in fact, all things required for the novice, hunter or emigrant. In these pages I shall consider the route rather in its pictorial than in its geographical aspects, and give less of diary than of dissertation upon the subjects which each day's route suggested.

Landing in Bleeding Kansas—she still bleeds*—we fell at once into "Emigration Road," a great thoroughfare, broad and well worn as a European turnpike or a Roman military route, and undoubtedly the best and the longest natural highway in the world. For five miles the line bisected a bottom formed by a bend in the river, with about a mile's diameter at the neck. The scene was of a luxuriant vegetation. A deep tangled wood—rather a thicket or jungle than a forest—of

* And no wonder!—

"I advise you, one and all, to enter every election district in Kansas and vote at the point of the bowie-knife and revolver. Neither give nor take quarter, as our case demands it."

"I tell you, mark every scoundrel among you that is the least infected with free-soilism or abolitionism, and exterminate him. Neither give nor take quarter from them."

(Extracts from speeches of Gen. Stringfellow—happy name!—in the Kansas Legislature.)

oaks and elms, hickory, bass-wood*, and black walnut, poplar and hackberry (*Celtis crassifolia*), box-elder, and the common willow (*Salix longifolia*), clad and festooned, bound and anchored by wild vines, creepers, and huge llianas, and sheltering an undergrowth of white alder and red sumach, whose pyramidal flowers were about to fall, rested upon a basis of deep black mire, strongly suggestive of chills,—fever and ague. After an hour of burning sun and sickly damp, the effects of the late storms, we emerged from the waste of vegetation, passed through a straggling "neck o' the woods," whose yellow inmates reminded me of Mississippian descriptions in the days gone by, and after spanning some very rough ground we bade adieu to the valley of the Missouri, and emerged upon the region of the Grand Prairie†, which we will pronounce "perrairey."

Differing from the card-table surfaces of the formation in Illinois and the lands east of the Mississippi, the Western Prairies are rarely flat ground. Their elevation above sea-level varies from 1000 to 2500 feet, and the plateau's aspect impresses the eye with an exaggerated idea of elevation, there being no object of comparison—mountain, hill, or sometimes even a tree—to give a juster measure. Another peculiarity of the prairie is, in places, its seeming horizontality, whereas it is never level: on an open plain, apparently flat as a man's palm, you cross a long ground-swell which was not perceptible before, and on its further incline you come upon a chasm wide and deep enough to contain a settlement. The aspect was by no means unprepossessing. Over the rolling surface, which, however, rarely breaks into hill and dale, lay a tapestry of thick grass already turning

* The bass-wood (*Tilia americana*) resembles our linden: the trivial name is derived from "bast," its inner bark being used for mats and cordage. From the pliability of the bark and wood, the name of the tree is made synonymous with "dough-face" in the following extract from one of Mr. Brigham Young's sermons:—"I say, as the Lord lives, we are bound to become a sovereign State in the Union, or an independant nation by ourselves; and let them drive us from this place if they can—they cannot do it. I do not throw this out as a banter. You Gentiles, and hickory and *bass-wood* Mormons, can write it down, if you please; but write it as I speak it." The above has been extracted from a "Dictionary of Americanisms" by John Russell Bartlett (London, Trübner and Co., 1859), a glossary which the author's art has made amusing as a novel.

† The word is somewhat indefinite. Hunters apply it generally to the bare lands lying westward of the timbered course of the Mississippi: in fact, to the whole region from the southern Rio Grande to the Great Slave Lake.

to a ruddy yellow under the influence of approaching autumn. The uniformity was relieved by streaks of livelier green in the rich soils of the slopes, hollows, and ravines, where the water gravitates, and, in the deeper "intervales" and bottom lands on the banks of streams and courses, by the graceful undulations and the waving lines of mottes or prairie islands, thick clumps and patches simulating orchards by the side of cultivated fields. The silvery cirri and cumuli of the upper air flecked the surface of earth with spots of dark cool shade, surrounded by a blaze of sunshine, and by their motion, as they trooped and chased one another, gave a peculiar liveliness to the scene; while here and there a bit of hazy blue distance, a swell of the sea-like land upon the far horizon, gladdened the sight — every view is fair from afar. Nothing, I may remark, is more monotonous, except perhaps the African and Indian jungle, than these prairie tracts, where the circle of which you are the centre has but about a mile of radius; it is an ocean in which one loses sight of land. You see as it were the ends of the earth, and look around in vain for some object upon which the eye may rest: it wants the sublimity of repose so suggestive in the sandy deserts, and the perpetual motion so pleasing in the aspect of the sea. No animals appeared in sight where, thirty years ago, a band of countless bisons dotted the plains; they will, however, like the wild aborigine, their congeners, soon be followed by beings higher in the scale of creation. These prairies are preparing to become the great grazing grounds which shall supply the unpopulated East with herds of civilised kine, and perhaps with the yak of Tibet, the llama of South America, and the koodoo and other African antelopes.

As we sped onwards we soon made acquaintance with a traditionally familiar feature, the "pitch-holes," or "chuck-holes" — the ugly word is not inappropriate — which render travelling over the prairies at times a sore task. They are gullies and gutters, not unlike the Canadian "cahues" of snow formation; varying from 10 to 50 feet in breadth, they are rivulets in spring and early summer, and — few of them remain perennial — they lie dry during the rest of the year. Their banks are slightly raised, upon the principle, *in parvo*, that causes mighty rivers, like the Po and the Indus, to run along the crests of ridges, and usually there is in the sole a dry or wet cunette, steep as a step,

and not unfrequently stony; unless the break be attended to, it threatens destruction to wheel and axletree, to hound and tongue. The pitch-hole is more frequent where the prairies break into low hills; the inclines along which the roads run then become a network of these American nullahs.

Passing through a few wretched shanties[9] called Troy—last insult to the memory of hapless Pergamus—and Syracuse (here we are in the third, or classic stage of U. S. nomenclature), we made, at 3 P.M., Cold Springs, the junction of the Leavenworth route. Having taken the northern road to avoid rough ground and bad bridges, we arrived about two hours behind time. The aspect of things at Cold Springs, where we were allowed an hour's halt to dine and to change mules, somewhat dismayed our fine-weather prairie travellers. The scene was the *rale* "Far West." The widow body to whom the shanty belonged lay sick with fever. The aspect of her family was a "caution to snakes:" the ill-conditioned sons dawdled about, listless as Indians, in skin tunics and pantaloons fringed with lengthy tags such as the redoubtable "Billy Bow-legs" wears on tobacco labels; and the daughters, tall young women, whose sole attire was apparently a calico morning-wrapper, colour invisible, waited upon us in a protesting way. Squalor and misery were imprinted upon the wretched log-hut, which ignored the duster and the broom, and myriads of flies disputed with us a dinner consisting of doughnuts, green and poisonous with saleratus, suspicious eggs in a massive greasy fritter, and rusty bacon, intolerably fat. It was our first sight of squatter life, and, except in two cases, it was our worst. We could not grudge 50 cents a head to these unhappies; at the same time we thought it a dear price to pay — the sequel disabused us — for flies and bad bread, worse eggs and bacon.

The next settlement, Valley Home, was reached at 6 P.M. Here the long wave of the ocean land broke into shorter seas, and for the first time that day we saw stones, locally called rocks (a Western term embracing everything between a pebble and a boulder), the produce of nullahs and ravines. A well 10 to 12 feet deep supplied excellent water. The ground was in places so far reclaimed as to be divided off by posts and rails; the scanty crops of corn (Indian corn), however, were wilted and

[9] American authors derive the word from the Canadian *chienti*, a dog-kennel. It is, however, I believe, originally Irish.

withered by the drought, which this year had been unusually long. Without changing mules we advanced to Kennekuk, where we halted for an hour's supper under the auspices of Major Baldwin, whilome Indian agent; the place was clean, and contained at least one charming face.

Kennekuk derives its name from a chief of the Kikapoos, in whose reservation we now are. This tribe, in the days of the Baron la Hontan (1689), a great traveller, but "niblins," as Sir Walter Scott said of his grandmither, "a prodigious story-teller," then lived on the Rivière des Puants, or Fox River, upon the brink of a little lake supposed to be the Winnebago, near the Sakis (Osaki, Sawkis, Sauks, or Sacs)*, and the Pouteoustamies (Potowottomis). They are still in the neighbourhood of their dreaded foes, the Sacs and Foxes†, who are described as stalwart and handsome bands, and they have been accompanied in their southern migration from the waters westward of the Mississippi, through Illinois, to their present southern seats by other allies of the Winnebagoes‡, the Iowas, Nez Percés

* In the days of Major Pike, who, in 1805-6-7, explored, by order of the Government of the U. S., the western territories of N. A., the Sacs numbered 700 warriors and 750 women; they had four villages, and hunted on the Mississippi and its confluents from the Illinois to the Iowa River, and on the western plains that bordered on the Missouri. They were at peace with the Sioux, Osages, Potowottomies, Menomenes or Folles Avoines, Iowas, and other Missourian tribes, and were almost consolidated with the Foxes, with whose aid they nearly exterminated the Illinois, Cahokias, Kaskasias, and Petorians. Their principal enemies were the Ojibwes. They raised a considerable quantity of maize, beans, and melons, and were celebrated for canning in war rather than for courage.

† From the same source we learn that the Ottagamies, called by the French Les Renards, numbered 400 warriors and 500 women; they had three villages near the confluence of the Turkey River with the Mississippi, hunted on both sides of the Mississippi from the Iowa stream below the Prairie du Chien to a river of that name above the same village, and annually sold many hundred bushels of maize. Conjointly with the Sacs the Foxes protected the Iowas, and the three people, since the first treaty of the two former with the U. S., claimed the land from the entrance of the Jauflione on the western side of the Mississippi, up the latter river to the Iowa above the Prairie du Chien, and westward to the Missouri. In 1807 they had ceded their lands lying south of the Mississippi to the U. S., reserving to themselves, however, the privileges of hunting and residing on them.

‡ The Winnebagoes, Winnepegs (turbid water), or Ochangras, numbered, in 1807, 450 warriors and 500 women, and had seven villages on the Wisconsin, Rock, and Fox rivers, and Green Bay: their proximity enabled the tribe to muster in force within four days. They then hunted on the Rock River, and the eastern side of the Mississippi, from Rock River to the Prairie du Chien, on Lake Michigan, on Black River, and in the countries between Lakes Michigan, Huron, and

Ottos, Omahas, Kansas, and Osages. Like the great nations of the Indian territory, the Cherokees, Creeks, Choktaws, and Chikasaws, they form intermediate social links in the chain of civilisation between the outer white settlements and the wild nomadic tribes to the west, the Dakotas and Arapahos, the Snakes and Cheyennes. They cultivate the soil, and rarely spend the winter in hunting buffalo upon the plains. Their reservation is twelve miles by twenty-four; as usual with land set apart for the savages, it is well watered and timbered, rich and fertile: it lies across the path and in the vicinity of civilisation; consequently the people are greatly demoralised. The men are addicted to intoxication, and the women to unchastity; both sexes and all ages are inveterate beggars, whose principal industry is horse-stealing. Those Scottish clans were the most savage that vexed the Lowlands; it is the case here: the tribes nearest the settlers are best described by Col. B——'s phrase, "great liars and dirty dogs." They have wellnigh cast off the Indian attire, and rejoice in the splendours of boiled and ruffled shirts, after the fashion of the whites. According to our host, a stalwart son of that soil which for generations has sent out her best blood westward, Kain-tuk-ee, the Land of the Cane, the Kikapoos number about 300 souls, of whom one-fifth are braves. He quoted a specimen of their facetiousness: when they first saw a crinoline, they pointed to the wearer and cried, "There walks a wigwam." Our "vertugardin" of the 19th century has run the gauntlet of the world's jests, from the refined impertinence of Mr. Punch to the rude grumble of the American Indian and the Kafir of the Cape.

Beyond Kennekuk we crossed the first Grasshopper Creek. Creek, I must warn the English reader, is pronounced "crik," and in these lands, as in the jargon of Australia, means not "an arm of the sea," but a small stream of sweet water, a rivulet; the rivers of Europe, according to the Anglo-American of the West, are "crika." On our line there are many grasshopper creeks; they anastomose with, or debouch into, the Kansas River, and they

Superior. Lieutenant Pike is convinced, "from a tradition among themselves, and their speaking the same language as the Ottos of the Platte River," that they are a tribe who about 150 years before his time had fled from the oppression of the Mexican Spaniards, and had become clients of the Sioux. They have ever been distinguished for ferocity and treachery.

reach the sea *viâ* the Missouri and the Mississippi. This particular Grasshopper was dry and dusty up to the ankles; timber clothed the banks, and slabs of sandstone cumbered the sole. Our next obstacle was the Walnut Creek, which we found, however, provided with a corduroy bridge; formerly it was a dangerous ford, rolling down heavy streams of melted snow, and then crossed by means of the "bouco" or coracle, two hides sewed together, distended like a leather tub with willow rods, and poled or paddled. At this point the country is unusually well populated; a house appears after every mile. Beyond Walnut Creek a dense nimbus, rising ghostlike from the northern horizon, furnished us with a spectacle of those perilous prairie storms which make the prudent lay aside their revolvers and disembarrass themselves of their cartridges. Gusts of raw, cold, and violent wind from the west whizzed overhead, thunder crashed and rattled closer and closer, and vivid lightning, flashing out of the murky depths around, made earth and air one blaze of living fire. Then the rain began to patter ominously upon the carriages; the canvas, however, by swelling, did its duty in becoming water-tight, and we rode out the storm dry. Those learned in the weather predicted a succession of such outbursts, but the prophecy was not fulfilled. The thermometer fell about 6° (F.), and a strong north wind set in, blowing dust or gravel, a fair specimen of "Kansas gales," which are equally common in Nebraska, especially during the month of October. It subsided on the 9th of August.

Arriving about 1 A.M. at Locknan's Station, a few log and timber huts near a creek well feathered with white oak and American elm, hickory and black walnut, we found beds and snatched an hourful of sleep.

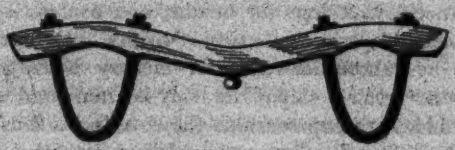
8th August, to Rock Creek.

Resuming, through air refrigerated by rain, our now weary way, we reached at 6 A.M. a favourite camping ground, the "Big Nemehaw" Creek, which, like its lesser neighbour, flows after rain into the Missouri River, *viâ* Turkey Creek, the Big Blue, and the Kansas. It is a fine bottom of rich black soil, whose green woods at that early hour were wet with heavy dew, and scattered over the surface lay pebbles and blocks of quartz,

and porphyritic granites. "Richland," a town mentioned in guide books, having disappeared, we drove for breakfast to Seneca, a city consisting of a few shanties, mostly garnished with tall square lumber fronts, ineffectually, especially when the houses stand one by one, masking the diminutiveness of the buildings behind them. The land, probably in prospect of a Pacific R. R., fetched the exaggerated price of $20 an acre, and already a lawyer has "hung out his shingle" there.

Refreshed by breakfast and the intoxicating air, brisk as a bottle of *veuve Clicquot*,—it is this that gives one the "prairie fever,"—we bade glad adieu to Seneca, and prepared for another long stretch of twenty-four hours. That day's chief study was of wagons, those ships of the great American Sahara which, gathering in fleets at certain seasons, conduct the traffic between the eastern and the western shores of a waste which is everywhere like a sea and which presently will become salt. The white-topped wain,—banished by railways from Pennsylvania, where, drawn by the "Conestoga horse," it once formed a marked feature in the landscape,—has found a home in the far West. They are not unpicturesque from afar, these long winding trains, in early morning like lines of white cranes trooping slowly over the prairie, or in more mysterious evening resembling dim sails crossing a rolling sea. The vehicles are more simple than our Cape wagons, huge beds like punts mounted on solid wheels, with logs for breaks, and contrasting strongly with the emerald plain, white tilts of twilled cotton or osnaburg, supported by substantial oaken or hickory bows. The wain is literally a "prairie ship;" its body is often used as a ferry, and when hides are unprocurable the covering is thus converted into a "bull boat." Two stakes driven into the ground, to mark the length, are connected by a longitudinal keel and ribs of willow rods: cross-sticks are tied with thongs to prevent "caving in," and the canvas is strained over the framework. In this part of the country the wagon is unnecessarily heavy; made to carry 4000 lbs., it rarely carries 3000: westward I have seen many a load of 3½ tons of 2000 lbs. each, and have heard of even 6 tons. The wheels are of northern white oak, well seasoned under pain of perpetual repairs, the best material, "bow-dark" Osage orange wood (*bois d'arc*, or *Maclura aurantiaca*), which shrinks but little, being rarely procurable

about Concord and Troy, the great centres of wagon manufacture. The neap or tongue (pole) is jointed where it enters the hounds, or these will be broken by the heavy jolts; and the perch is often made moveable, so that after accidents a temporary conveyance can be made out of the débris. A long covered wooden box hangs behind: on the road it carries fuel; at the halt it becomes a trough, being preferred to nose-bags, which prevent the animals breathing comfortably; and in the hut, where every part of the wagon is utilised, it acts as a chest for valuables. A bucket swings beneath the vehicle, and it is generally provided with an extra chain for "coralling." The teams vary in number from six to thirteen yoke; they are usually oxen, an "old-country" prejudice operating against the use of cows.* The yoke, of pine or other light wood, is, as everywhere in the States, simple and effective, presenting a curious contrast to the uneasy and uncertain contrivances which still prevail in the antiquated Campagna and other classic parts of Europe. A heavy cross-piece, oak or cotton wood, is bevelled out in two places, and sometimes lined with sheet-lead, to fit the animals' necks, which are held firm in bows of bent hickory passing through the yoke and pinned above. The several pairs of cattle are connected by strong chains and rings projecting from the under part of the woodwork.



THE WESTERN YOKE.

The "ripper," or driver, who is bound to the gold regions of Pike's Peak, is a queer specimen of humanity. He usually hails from one of the old Atlantic cities, — in fact, from settled America, — and, like the civilised man generally, he betrays a remarkable aptitude for facile descent into savagery. His

* According to Mormon rule, however, the full team consists of one wagon (12 ft. long, 3 ft. 4 in. wide, and 18 in. deep), two yoke of oxen, and two milch cows. The Saints have ever excelled in arrangements for travel by land and sea.

dress is a harlequinade, typical of his disposition. Eschewing the chimney-pot or stove-pipe tile of the bourgeois, he affects the "Kossuth," an Anglo-American version of the sombrero, which converts felt into every shape and form, from the jaunty little head-covering of the modern sailor to the tall steeple-crown of the old puritan. He disregards the trichotomy of St. Paul, and emulates St. Anthony and the American aborigines in the length of his locks, whose ends are curled inwards, with a fascinating sausage-like roll not unlike the cockney "aggravator." If a young hand, he is probably in the buckskin mania, which may pass into the squaw mania, a disease which knows no cure: the symptoms are, a leather coat and overalls to match, embroidered if possible, and finished along the arms and legs with fringes cut as long as possible, whilst a pair of gaudy moccasins, resplendent with red and blue porcelain beads, fits his feet tightly as silken hose. I have heard of coats worth $250, vests $100, and pants $150: indeed, the poorest of buckskin suits will cost $75, and if hard-worked it must be renewed every six months. The successful miner or the gambler — in these lands the word is confined to the profession — will add $10 gold buttons to the attractions of his attire. The older hand prefers to buckskin a "wamba" or round-about, a red or rainbow-coloured flannel over a check cotton shirt; his lower garments, garnished *a tergo* with leather, are turned into Hessians by being thrust inside his cowhide Wellingtons; and, when in riding gear, he wraps below each knee a fold of deer, antelope, or cow skin, with edges scalloped where they fall over the feet, and gartered tightly against thorns and stirrup thongs, thus effecting that graceful elephantine bulge of the lower leg for which "Jack ashore" is justly celebrated. Those who suffer from sore eyes wear huge green goggles, which give a crab-like air to the physiognomy, and those who cannot procure them line the circumorbital region with lamp-black, which is supposed to act like the Surma or Kohl of the Orient. A broad leather belt supports on the right a revolver, generally Colt's Navy or medium size (when Indian fighting is expected, the large dragoon pistol is universally preferred); and on the left, in a plain black sheath, or sometimes in the more ornamental Spanish scabbard, is a buckhorn or ivory handled bowie-knife. In the East the driver partially conceals his tools; he has no such affectation in

the Far West: moreover, a glance through the wagon-awning shows guns and rifles stowed along the side. When driving he is armed with a mammoth fustigator, a system of plaited cow-hides cased with smooth leather; it is a knout or an Australian stock-whip, which, managed with both hands, makes the sturdiest ox curve and curl its back. If he trudges along an ox-team, he is a grim and grimy man, who delights to startle your animals with a whip-crack, and disdains to return a salutation: if his charge be a muleteer's you may expect more urbanity; he is then in the "upper-crust" of teamsters, he knows it, and demeans himself accordingly. He can do nothing without whiskey, which he loves to call tarantula-juice, strychnine, red-eye, corn-juice, Jersey-lightning, leg-stretcher, "tangle-leg,"* and many other hard and grotesque names; he chaws tobacco like a horse; he becomes heavier "*on* the shoulder" or "on the shyoot," as, with the Course of Empire, he makes his way westward; and he frequently indulges in a "spree," which in these lands means four acts of drinking-bout, with a fifth of rough-and-tumble. Briefly, he is a post-wagon driver exaggerated.

Each train is accompanied by men on horse or mule back—oxen are not ridden after Cape fashion in these lands.† The equipment of the cavalier excited my curiosity, especially the saddle, which has been recommended by good authorities for military use. The coming days of fast warfare, when "heavies," if not wholly banished to the limbo of things that were, will be used as mounted "beefeaters," only for show, demand a saddle with as little weight as is consistent with strength, and one equally easy to the horse and the rider. In no branch of improvement, except in hat-making for the army, has so little been done as in saddles. The English military or hunting implement still endures without other merit than facility to the beast, and, in the man's case, faculty of falling uninjured with his horse. Unless the rider be copper-lined and iron-limbed,

* For instance, "whiskey is now tested by the distance a man can walk after tasting it. The new liquor called 'Tangle-leg' is said to be made of diluted alcohol, nitric acid, pepper, and tobacco, and will upset a man at a distance of 400 yards from the demijohn."

† Captain Macey, in quoting Mr. Anderson's remarks on ox-riding in South-Western Africa, remarks that "a ring instead of a stick put through the cartilage of the animal's nose would obviate the difficulty of managing it." As in the case of the camel, a ring would soon be torn out by an obstinate beast; a stick resists.

it is little better in long marches than a rail for riding. As far as convenience is concerned, an Arab pad is preferable to Peat's best. But the Californian saddle cannot supply the deficiency, as will, I think, appear in the course of description.

The native Indian saddle is probably the degenerate offspring of the European packsaddle: two short forks, composing the pommel and cantle, are nailed or lashed to a pair of narrow sideboards, and the rude tree is kept in shape by a green skin or hide allowed to shrink on. It remarkably resembles the Abyssinian, the Somal, and the Circassian saddle, which, like the "dug-out" canoe, is probably the primitive form instinctively invented by mankind. It is the sire of the civilised saddle, which in these lands varies with every region. The Texan is known by its circular seat; a string passed round the tree forms a ring: provided with flaps after the European style it is considered easy and comfortable. The Californian is rather oval than circular; borrowed and improved from the Mexican, it has spread from the Pacific to the Atlantic slope of the Rocky Mountains, and the hardy and experienced mountaineer prefers it to all others: it much resembles the Hungarian, and in some points recalls to mind the old French cavalry demi-pique. It is composed of a single tree of light strong wood, admitting a freer circulation of air to the horse's spine—an immense advantage—and, being without iron, it can readily be taken to pieces, cleaned or mended, and refitted. The tree is strengthened by a covering of raw hide carefully sewed on; it rests upon a "sweat-leather," a padded sheet covering the back, and it is finished off behind with an "anchero" of the same material protecting the loins. The pommel is high, like the crutch of a woman's saddle, rendering impossible, under pain of barking the knuckles, that rule of good riding which directs the cavalier to keep his hands low. It prevents the inexperienced horseman being thrown forward, and enables him to "hold on" when likely to be dismounted; in the case of a good rider, its only use is to attach the lariat, riata, or lasso. The great merit of this "unicorn" saddle is its girthing: with the English system, the strain of a wild bull or of a mustang "bucker" would soon dislodge the riding gear. The "sincho" is an elastic horsehair cingle, five to six inches wide, connected with "lariat straps," strong thongs passing round the pommel and cantle; it is

girthed well back from the horse's shoulder, and can be drawn till the animal suffers pain: instead of buckle, the long terminating strap is hitched two or three times through an iron ring. The whole saddle is covered with a machila, here usually pronounced *macheer*, two pieces of thick leather handsomely and fancifully worked or stamped, joined by a running thong in the centre, and open to admit the pommel and cantle. If too long, it draws in the stirrup leathers, and cramps the ankles of any but a bowlegged man. The machila is sometimes garnished with pockets, always with straps behind to secure a valise, and a cloak can be fastened over the pommel, giving purchase and protection to the knees. The rider sits erect, with the legs in a continuation of the body line, and the security of the balance-seat enables him to use his arms freely: the *pose* is that of the French schools in the last century, heels up and toes down. The advantages of this equipment are obvious; it is easier to horse and man probably than any yet invented. On the other hand, the quantity of leather renders it expensive: without silver or other ornaments, the price would vary from $25 at San Francisco to $50 at Gt. S. L. City, and the highly got-up rise to $250=50*l.* for a saddle! If the saddle-cloth slips out, and this is an accident which frequently occurs, the animal's back will be galled. The stirrup-leathers cannot be shortened or lengthened without dismounting, and without leggings the board-like leather *macheer* soon makes the *mollets* innocent of skin. The pommel is absolutely dangerous: during my short stay in the country I heard of two accidents, one fatal, caused by the rider being thrown forward on his fork. Finally, the long seat, which is obligatory, answers admirably with the Californian pacer or canterer, but with the high-trotting military horse it would inevitably lead — as has been proved before the European stirrup-leather was shortened — to hernias and other accidents.

To the stirrups I have but one serious objection — they cannot be made to open in case of the horse falling; when inside the stiff leathern *macheer*, they cramp the legs by bowing them inwards, but habit soon cures this. Instead of the light iron contrivances which before recovered play against the horse's side, which freeze the feet in cold, and which toast them in hot weather, this stirrup is sensibly made of wood. In the

Eastern states it is a lath bent somewhat in the shape of the dragoon form, and has too little weight: the Californian article is cut out of a solid block of wood, mountain mahogany being the best, then maple, and lastly the softer pine and cotton-wood. In some parts of the country it is made so narrow that only the toe fits in, and then the instep is liable to be bruised. For riding through bush and thorns, it is provided in front with zapateros or leathern curtains, secured to the straps above, and to the wood on both sides; they are curiously made, and the size, like that of the Turk's lantern, denotes the owner's fashionableness; dandies may be seen with the pointed angles of their stirrup-guards dangling almost to the ground. The article was borrowed from Mexico — the land of character dresses. When riding through prickly chapparal, the leathers begin higher up, and protect the leg from the knee downwards. I would not recommend this stirrup for Hyde Park, or even Brighton: but in India and other barbarous parts of the British empire, where, on a cold morning's march, men and officers may be seen with wisps of straw defending their feet from the iron, and on African journeys where the bush is more than a match for any texture yet woven, it might, methinks, be advantageously used.

The same may be said of the spurs, which, though cruel in appearance, are really more merciful than ours. The rowels have spikes about two inches long; in fact, are the shape and size of a small starfish; but they are never sharpened, and the tinkle near the animal's sides serves to urge it on without a real application. The two little bell-like pendants of metal on each side of the rowel-hinge serve to increase the rattling, and when a poor rider is mounted upon a tricksy horse, they lock the rowels, which are driven into the sincho, and thus afford another *point-d'appui*. If the rider's legs be long enough, the spurs can be clinched under the pony's belly. Like the Mexican, they can be made expensive; $25 a pair would be a common price.

The bridle is undoubtedly the worst part of the horse's furniture. The bit is long, clumsy, and not less cruel than a Chifney. I have seen the Arab ring which, with sufficient leverage, will break a horse's jaw, and another, not unlike an East Indian invention, with a sharp triangle to press upon the animal's palate, apparently for the purpose of causing it to rear

and fall backwards. It is the offspring of the Mexican manége, which was derived, through Spain, from the Moors.

Passing through Ash-point at 9.30 A.M., and halting for water at Uncle John's Grocery, where hang-dog Indians, squatting, standing, and stalking about, showed that the forbidden luxury — essence of corn — was, despite regulations, not unprocurable there, we spanned the prairie to Guittard's Station. This is a clump of board houses on the far side of a shady, well-wooded creek — the Vermilion, a tributary of the Big Blue River, — so called from its red sandstone bottom, dotted with granitic and porphyritic boulders.

Our conductor had sprained his ancle, and the driver, being in plain English drunk, had dashed like a Phaeton over the "chuck-holes;" we willingly, therefore, halted at 11.30 A.M. for dinner. The host was a young Alsatian, who, with his mother and sister, had emigrated under the excitement of Californian fever, and had been stopped, by want of means, half way. The improvement upon the native was palpable: the house and kitchen were clean, the fences neat; the ham and eggs, the hot rolls and coffee, were fresh and good, and although drought had killed the salad we had abundance of peaches and cream, an offering of French to American taste which, in its simplicity, luxuriates in the curious mixture of lacteal with hydrocyanic acid.

At Guittard's I saw, for the first time, the Pony Express rider arrive. In March 1860, "the great dream of news transmitted from New York to San Francisco (more strictly speaking from St. Joseph to Placerville, California), in eight days, was tested." It appeared, in fact, under the form of an advertisement in the St. Louis "Republican,"* and threw at once into the shade the

* The following is the first advertisement:—

"*To San Francisco in eight days, by the Central Overland California and Pike's Peak Express Company.*

"The first courier of the 'Pony Express' will leave the Missouri river on Tuesday, April the 3rd, at — o'clock, P.M., and will run regularly weekly hereafter, carrying a letter mail only. The point on the Missouri river will be in telegraphic communication with the East, and will be announced in due time.

"Telegraphic messages from all parts of the United States and Canada, in connection with the point of departure, will be received up to 5 o'clock, P.M., of the day of leaving, and transmitted over the Placerville and St. Joseph Telegraph wire to San Francisco, and intermediate points, by the connecting Express, in eight

great Butterfield Mail, whose expedition had been the theme of universal praise. Very meritoriously has the contract been fulfilled. At the moment of writing (Nov. 1860), the distance between New York and San Francisco has been further reduced by the advance of the electric telegraph — it proceeds at the rate of six miles a day — to Fort Kearny from the Mississippi and to Fort Churchill from the Pacific side. The merchant thus receives his advices in six days. The contract of the government with Messrs. Russell, Majors, and Co., to run the mail from St. Joseph to Gt. S. L. City, expired the 30th of November, and it was proposed to continue it only from Julesburg on the crossing of the South Platte, 460 miles west of St. Joseph. Mr. Russell, however, objected, and so did the Western States generally, to abbreviating the mail-service as contemplated by the post-office department. His spirit and energy met with supporters whose interest it was not to fall back on the times when a communication between New York and California could not be secured short of twenty-five or thirty days; and, aided by the newspapers, he obtained a renewal of his contract. The riders are mostly youths, mounted upon active and lithe Indian nags. They ride 100 miles at a time — about eight per hour — with four changes of horses, and return to their stations the next day — of their hardships and perils we shall hear more anon. The letters are carried in leathern bags, which are thrown about carelessly enough when the saddle is changed, and the average postage is $5 = 1l.$ per sheet.

days. The Letter Mail will be delivered in San Francisco in ten days from the departure of the Express. The Express passes through Forts Kearny, Laramie and Bridger, Great Salt Lake City, Camp Floyd, Carson City, the Washoe Silver Mines, Placerville, and Sacramento. And letters for Oregon, Washington Territory, British Columbia, the Pacific Mexican Ports, Russian Possessions, Sandwich Islands, China, Japan, and India, will be mailed in San Francisco.

"Special messengers, bearers of letters, to connect with the Express of the 3rd April, will receive communications for the Courier of that day at No. 481 Tenth street, Washington City, up to 2.45 P.M. on Friday, March 30th; and in New York, at the office of J. H. Simpson, Room No. 8, Continental Bank Building, Nassau street, up to 6.30 A.M., of 31st March.

"Full particulars can be obtained on application at the above places, and Agents of the Company.

"W. H. Russell, President.

"Leavenworth City, Kansas, March, 1860.

"*Office, New York.*—J. H. Simpson, Vice-President: Samuel and Allen, Agents, St. Louis, Mo.: H. J. Spaulding, Agent, Chicago."

Beyond Guittard's the prairies bore a burnt-up aspect. Far as the eye could see the tintage was that of the Arabian Desert, sere and tawny as a jackal's back. It was still, however, too early; October is the month for those prairie fires which have so frequently exercised the western author's pen. Here, however, the grass is too short for the full development of the phenomenon, and beyond the Little Blue River there is hardly any risk. The fire can easily be stopped, *ab initio*, by blankets, or by simply rolling a barrel; the African plan of beating down with boughs might also be used in certain places; and when the conflagration has extended, travellers can take refuge in a little Zoar by burning the vegetation to windward. In Texas and Illinois, however, where the grass is tall and rank, and the roaring flames leap before the wind with the stride of maddened horses, the danger is imminent, and the spectacle must be one of awful sublimity.

In places where the land seems broken with bluffs, like an iron-bound coast, the skeleton of the earth becomes visible; the formation is a friable sandstone, overlying fossiliferous lime, which is based upon beds of shale. These undergrowths show themselves at the edges of the ground-waves and in the dwarf precipices, where the soil has been degraded by the action of water. The yellow-brown humus varies from forty to sixty feet deep in the most favoured places, and erratic blocks of porphyry and various granites encumber the dry watercourses and surface drains. In the rare spots where water then lay, the herbage was still green, forming oases in the withering waste, and showing that irrigation is its principal if not its only want.

Passing by Marysville, in old maps Palmetto City, a county-town which thrives by selling whiskey to ruffians of all descriptions, we forded before sunset the "Big Blue," a well-known tributary of the Kansas River. It is a pretty little stream, brisk and clear as crystal, about forty or fifty yards wide by 2·50 feet deep at the ford. The soil is sandy and solid, but the banks are too precipitous to be pleasant when a very drunken driver hangs on by the lines of four very weary mules. We then stretched once more over the "divide"—the ground, generally rough or rolling, between the fork or junction of two streams, in fact, the Indian Doab—separating the Big Blue from its tributary the Little Blue. At 6 P.M. we changed our jaded

animals for fresh, and the land of Kansas for Nebraska, at Cottonwood Creek, a bottom where trees flourished, where the ground had been cleared for corn, and where we detected the prairie wolf watching for the poultry. The fur of our first coyote was light yellow brown, with a tinge of red, the snout long and sharp, the tail bushy and hanging, the gait like a dog's, and the manner expressive of extreme timidity; it is a far more cowardly animal than the larger white buffalo-wolf and the black wolf of the woods, which are also far from fierce. At Cottonwood Station we took "on board" two way-passengers, "lady" and "gentleman," who were drafted into the wagon containing the judiciary. A weary drive over a rough and dusty road, through chill night air and clouds of mosquitoes, which we were warned would accompany us to the Pacific slope of the Rocky Mountains, placed us about 10 P.M. at Rock, also called Turkey Creek—surely a mismomer, no turkey ever haunted so villainous a spot! Several passengers began to suffer from fever and nausea; in such travel the second night is usually the crisis, after which a man can endure for an indefinite time. The "ranch" was a nice place for invalids, especially for those of the softer sex. Upon the bedded floor of the foul "doggery" lay, in a seemingly promiscuous heap, men, women, children, lambs, and puppies, all fast in the arms of Morpheus, and many under the influence of a much jollier god. The *employés*, when aroused pretty roughly, blinked their eyes in the atmosphere of smoke and mosquitoes, and declared that it had been "merry in hall" that night—the effects of which merriment had not passed off. After half an hour's dispute about who should do the work, they produced cold scraps of mutton and a kind of bread which deserves a totally distinct generic name. The strongest stomachs of the party made tea, and found some milk which was not more than one quarter flies. This succulent meal was followed by the usual douceur. On this road, however mean or wretched the fare, the station-keeper, who is established by the proprietor of the line, never derogates by lowering his price.

The Valley of the Little Blue, 9th August.

A little after midnight we resumed our way, and in the state which Mohammed described when he made his famous night journey to heaven,—*bayni 'l naumi wa 'l yakzán*,—we crossed

the deep shingles, the shallow streams, and the heavy vegetation of the Little Sandy, and five miles beyond it we forded the Big Sandy. About early dawn we found ourselves at another station, better than the last only as the hour was more propitious. The colony of Patlanders rose from their beds without a dream of ablution, and clearing the while their lungs of Cork brogue, prepared a neat *déjeûner à la fourchette* by hacking "fids" off half a sheep suspended from the ceiling, and frying them in melted tallow. Had the action occurred in Central Africa, among the Esquimaux, or the Araucanians, it would not have excited my attention: mere barbarism rarely disgusts; it is the unnatural cohabitation of civilisation with savagery that makes the traveller's gorge rise.

Issuing from Big Sandy Station at 6.30 A.M., and resuming our route over the divide that still separated the valleys of the Big Blue and the Little Blue, we presently fell into the line of the latter and were called upon by the conductor to admire it. It is pretty, but its beauties require the cosmetic which is said to act unfailingly in the case of fairer things,—the viewer should have lately spent three months at sea, out of sight of rivers and women. Averaging two miles in width, which shrinks to one quarter as you ascend, the valley is hedged on both sides by low rolling bluffs or terraces, the boundaries of its ancient bed and modern debordements. As the hills break off near the river, they show a diluvial formation; in places they are washed into a variety of forms, and being white, they stand out in bold relief. In other parts they are sand mixed with soil enough to support a last-year's growth of wheat-like grass, weed-stubble, and dead trees, that look like old cornfields in new clearings. One could not have recognised, at this season, Col. Frémont's description written in the month of June—the "hills with graceful slopes looking uncommonly green and beautiful." Along the bluffs the road winds, crossing at times a rough projecting spur, or dipping into some gully washed out by the rains of ages. All is barren beyond the garden-reach which runs along the stream; there is not a tree to a square mile,—in these regions the tree, like the bird in Arabia and the monkey in Africa, signifies water,—and animal life seems well nigh extinct. As the land sinks towards the river bottom it becomes less barren. The wild sun-flower (*Helianthus*)—it seldom, however,

turns towards the sun—now becomes abundant; it was sparse near the Missouri; it will wax even more plentiful around Gt. S. L. City, till walking through the beds becomes difficult. In size it greatly varies according to the quality of the soil; 6 feet is perhaps the maximum. It is a growth of some value. The oleaginous seeds form the principal food of half-starved Indians, while the stalks supply them with a scanty fuel: being of rapid growth, it has been used in the States to arrest the flow of malaria, and it serves as house and home to the rattlesnake. Conspicuous by its side is the sumach, whose leaf, mixed with kinnikinki, the peel of the red willow, forms the immemorial smoking material of the Wild Man of the North. Equally remarkable for their strong odour, are large beds of wild onions; they are superlatively wholesome, but they affect the eater like those of Tibet. The predominant colours are pink and yellow, the former a lupine, the latter a shrub, locally called the rabbit-bush. The blue lupine also appears with the white mallow, the eccentric putoria, and the taraxacum (dandelion), so much used as salad in France and in the Eastern States. This land appears excellently adapted for the growth of manioc or cassava. In the centre of the bottom flows the brownish stream, about twenty yards wide, between two dense lines of tall sweet cottonwood. The tree which was fated to become familiar to us during our wanderings, is a species of poplar (*P. moniliferu*), called by the American-Spaniards, and by the people of Texas and New Mexico, "Alamo:" resembling the European aspen, without its silver lining, the colour of the leaf, in places, appears of a dull burnished hue, in others bright and refreshingly green. Its trivial name is derived, according to some, from the fibrous quality of the bark, which, as in Norway, is converted into food for cattle and even man; according to others, from the cotton-like substance surrounding the seeds. It is termed "sweet" to distinguish it from a different tree with a bitter bark, also called a cottonwood or narrow-leaved cottonwood (*Populus angustifolia*), and by the Canadians *liard amère*. The timber is soft and easily cut; it is in many places the only material for building and burning, and the recklessness of the squatters has already shortened the supply.

This valley is the Belgium of the adjoining tribes, the once

terrible Pawnees, who here met their enemies, the Dakotas and the Delawares: it was then a great buffalo ground; and even twenty years ago it was well stocked with droves of wild horses, turkeys, and herds of antelope, deer, and elk. The animals have of late migrated westward, carrying off with them the "bones of contention." Some details concerning the present condition of these bands and their neighbours may not be uninteresting—these poor remnants of nations which once kept the power of North America at bay, and are now barely able to struggle for existence.

In 1853, the government of the United States, which has ever acted paternally towards the Indians, treating with them—Great Britain did the same with the East Indians—as though they were a civilised people, availed itself of the savages' desire to sell lands encroached upon by the whites, and set apart for a general reservation 181,171 square miles. Here, in the far west, were collected into what was then believed to be a permanent habitation, the indigenes of the land, and the various bands once lying east of the Mississippi. This "Indian's home" was bounded, in 1853, on the north by the North-western Territory and Minnesota; on the south by Texas and New Mexico; to the east lay Iowa, Missouri, and Arkansas; and to the west, Oregon, Utah, and New Mexico.

The savages' reservation was then thus distributed. The eastern portion nearest the river was stocked with tribes removed to it from the eastern states, namely, the Iowas, Sacs and Foxes, Kikapoos, Delawares, Potowottomis, Wyandots, Quapaws, Senecas, Cherokees, Seminoles, Creeks, Choctaws, Chickasaws, Miamis, and Ottawas. The west and part of the north-east—poor and barren lands—were retained by the aboriginal tribes, Ponkahs, Omahas or Mahas, Pawnees, Ottos, Kansas or Konzas, and Osages. The central and the remainder of the western portion—wild countries abounding in buffalo—were granted to the Western Pawnees, the Arikaris, Arapahos, Cheyennes, Kiowas, Comanches, Utahs, Grosventres, and other nomads.

It was somewhat a confusion of races. For instance, the Pawnees form an independent family, to which some authors join the Arikari; the Sacs (Sauk) and Foxes, Winnebagos, Ottos, Kaws, Omahas, Cheyennes, Mississippi Dakotas, and Mis-

souri Dakotas, belong to the Dakotan family; the Choctaws, Creeks, and Seminoles are Appalachians; the Wyandots, like the Iroquois, are Hodenaunians; and the Ottawas, Delawares, Shawnees, Potowottomis, Peorians, Mohekuneuks, Kaskasias, Piankashaws, Weaws, Miamis, Kikapoos, and Menomenes, are, like the Ojibwes, Algonquins.

The total number of Indians on the prairies and the Rocky Mountains was estimated roughly at 63,000.

Still the resistless tide of emigration swept westward: the Federal Government was as powerless to stem it, as was General Fitzroy of New South Wales to prevent, in 1852, his subjects flocking to the "gold diggings." Despite all orders, reckless whites would squat upon, and thoughtless reds, bribed by whiskey, tobacco, and gunpowder, would sell off, the lands. On the 20th May, 1854, was passed the celebrated "Kansas-Nebraska Bill," an act converting the greater portion of the "Indian Territory," and all the "North-Western Territory," into two new territories—Kansas, north of the 37th parallel, and Nebraska, north of the 40th. In the passage of this bill, the celebrated "Missouri Compromise" of 1828, prohibiting negro slavery north of 36° 30′, was repealed, under the presidency of General Pearce.* It provided that the rights and properties of

* The "Missouri Compromise" is an important event in Anglo-American history; it must be regarded as the great parent of the jangles and heart burnings which have disunited the United States. The great Jefferson prophesied in these words, "the Missouri question is a breaker on which we lose the Missouri country by revolt, and what more God only knows. From the battle of Bunker's Hill to the treaty of Paris, we never had so ominous a question."

The origin of the trouble was this. In 1817 the Eastern half of the Mississippi territory became the territory of Alabama, and—in those days events had wings—the 14th Dec. 1819 witnessed the birth of Alabama as a free sovereign and independent slave State. The South, strong in wealth and numbers, thereupon moved towards legalising slavery in the newly acquired territory of Missouri, and when Mo. claimed to be admitted as a State, demanded that it should be admitted as a slave State. The Free-soilers, or opposite party, urged two reasons why Missouri should be a free State. Firstly, Since the date of the union eight new States had been admitted, four slave and four free. Alabama the last, was a slave State, therefore it was the turn for a free State. Secondly,—and here was the rub,—that "Slavery ought not to be permitted in any State or territory where it could be prohibited." This very broad principle involved, it is manifest, the ruin of the slave-ocracy. From the days of Mr. Washington to those of Mr. Lincoln, the northern or labour states have ever aimed at the ultimate abolition of servitude by means of non-extension. The contest about Missouri began in 1818, and raged for three years, complicated by a new feature, namely, Maine separating herself from

the Indians, within their shrunken possessions, should be respected. By degrees the Indians sold their lands for whiskey, as of old, and retired to smaller reservations. Of course, they suffered in the bargain; the savage ever parts with his birth-right for the well-known mess of pottage. The Osages, for instance, cancelled $4000, claimed by unscrupulous traders, by a cession of two million acres of arable land. The Potowottomis fared even worse; under the influence of liquor, *ἀν λόγουν*, their chiefs sold 100,000 acres of the best soil on the banks of the Missouri for a mere song. The tribe was removed to a bald smooth prairie, sans timber and consequently sans game; many fled to the extreme wilds, and the others, like the Acadians of yore, were marched about till they found homes—many of them six feet by two—in Fever Patch, on the Kaw or Kansas River. Others were more fortunate. The Ottos, Omahas, and Kansas, had permanent villages near the Missouri and its two tributaries, the Platte and the Kansas. The Osages, formerly a large nation in Arkansas, after ceding 10,000,000 of acres for a stipend of $52,000 for thirty years, were settled in a district on the west bank of the Neosho or White-water—the Grand River. They are described as the finest and largest men of the semi-nomad races, with well-formed heads and symmetrical figures, brave, warlike, and well disposed to the whites. Early in June, after planting their maize, they move in mounted bands to the prairies, feast upon the buffalo for months, and bring home stores of smoked and jerked meat. When the corn is in milk

Massachusetts, and balancing the admission of Alabama, by becoming a free State. The lower House several times voted to exclude the "peculiar institution" from the new State, and the conservative Senate—in which the southern element was ever predominant—as often restored it. Great was the war of words amongst the rival legislators; at length, after repeated conferences, both Senate and House agreed upon a bill admitting Missouri, after her constitution should be formed, free of restriction, but prohibiting slavery north of 36° 30'. Missouri acknowledged the boon by adopting a constitution which denied the rights of citizens even to free negroes. She was not finally admitted until the 10th August, 1821, when her legislature had solemnly covenanted to guarantee the rights of citizenship to "the citizens of either of the States." Such is an outline of the far-famed "Missouri Compromise." The influence of the southern slave-holders caused it to be repealed, as a slip of Texas happened to lie north of the prohibitative latitude, and the late Mr. S. A. Douglas did it to death in 1858. The free-soilers of course fought hard against the "sad repeal," and what they now fight about, forty years afterwards, is to run still further south the original line of limitation. *How the luckyone!*

they husk and sun-dry it; it is then boiled, and is said to be better flavoured and more nutritious than the East Indian "butah," or the American hominy. After the harvest in October, they return to the game country, and then pass the winter under huts or skin lodges. Their chief scourge is small-pox: apparently, all the tribes carry some cross. Of the settled races the best types are the Choctaws and the Cherokees; the latter have shown a degree of improvability, which may still preserve them from destruction; they have a form of government, churches, theatres, and schools; they read and write English; and George Guess, a well-known chief, like the negro inventor of the Vai syllabarium in West Africa, produced an alphabet of sixty-eight characters, which, improved and simplified by the missionaries, is found useful in teaching the vernacular.

Upon the whole, however, the philanthropic schemes of the government have not met with brilliant success. The chiefs are still bribed, and the people cheated, by white traders, and poverty, disease, and debauchery, rapidly thin the tribesmen. Sensible heads have proposed many schemes for preserving the race. Apparently the best of these projects is to introduce the Moravian discipline. Of all missionary systems, I may observe, none have hitherto been crowned with important results, despite the blood and gold so profusely expended upon them, except two — those of the Jesuits and the United Brethren. The fraternity of Jesus spread the gospel by assimilating themselves to the heathen; the Unitas Fratrum by assimilating the heathen to themselves. The day of Jesuitism, like that of protection, is going by. The advance of Moravianism, it may safely be prophesied, is to come. These civilisation-societies have as yet been little appreciated, because they will not minister to that ignorant enthusiasm which extracts money from the pockets of the many. Their necessarily slow progress is irksome to ardent propagandists. We naturally wish to reap as well as to sow; and man rarely invests capital in schemes of which only his grandson will see the results.

The American philanthropist proposes to wean the Indian savage from his nomad life by turning his lodge into a log tent, and by providing him with cattle instead of buffalo, and the

domestic fowl instead of grasshoppers. The hunter become a herdsman would thus be strengthened for another step—the agricultural life, which necessarily follows the pastoral. Factors would be appointed instead of vicious traders—*coureurs des bois*, as the Canadians call them; titles to land would be granted in fee simple, practically teaching the value of property in severalty, alienation into white hands would be forbidden, and, if possible, a cordon militaire would be stretched between the races. The agricultural would lead to the mechanical stage of society. Agents and assistant craftsmen would teach the tribes to raise mills and smithies (at present there are mills without millers, stock without breeders, and similar attempts to make civilisation run before she can walk), and a growing appreciation for the peace, the comfort, and the luxuries of settled life would lay the nomad instinct for ever.

The project labours only under one difficulty—the one common to philanthropic schemes. In many details it is somewhat visionary—utopian. It is, like peace on earth, a "dream of the wise." Under the present system of Indian agencies, as will in a future page appear, it is simply impossible. It has terrible obstacles in the westward gravitation of the white race, which, after sweeping away the aborigines—as the grey rat in Europe expelled the black rat—from the east of the Mississippi in two centuries and a half, threatens, before a quarter of that time shall have elapsed, to drive in its advance towards the Pacific, the few survivors of now populous tribes either into the inhospitable regions north of the 49th parallel, or into the anarchical countries south of the 32nd. And where, I may ask, in the history of the world do we read of a people learning civilisation from strangers instead of working it out for themselves, through its several degrees of barbarism, feudalism, monarchy, republicanism, despotism? Still it is a noble project: mankind would not willingly see it die.

The Pawnees were called by the French and Canadian traders Les Loups, that animal being their totem, and the sign of the tribe being an imitation of the wolf's ears, the two fore fingers of the right hand being stuck up on the side of the head. They were in the last generation a large nation, containing many clans—Minnikajus, the Sans Arc, the Loup Fork, and others. Their territory embraced both sides of the Platte River, espe-

cially the northern lands; and they rendered these grounds terrible to the trapper, trader and traveller. They were always well mounted. Old Mexico was then, and partially is still, their stable, and a small band has driven off horses by hundreds. Of late years they have become powerless. The influenza acts as a plague amongst them, killing off 400 or 500 in a single season, and the nation now numbers little more than 300 braves, or rather warriors, the latter, in correct parlance, being inferior to the former, as the former are subservient to the chief. A treaty concluded between them and the United States, in the winter of 1857, sent them to a reserve on the Loup Fork, where their villages were destroyed by the Sioux. They are Ishmaelites, whose hand is against every man. They have attempted, after the fashion of declining tribes, to strengthen themselves by alliances with their neighbours, but have always failed in consequence of their propensity to plunder developing itself even before the pow-wow was concluded. They and the northern Dakotas can never be trusted. Most Indian races, like the Bedouin Arabs, will show hospitality to the stranger who rides into their villages, though no point of honour deters them from robbing him after he has left the lodge-shade. The Pawnees, African-like, will cut the throat of a sleeping guest. They are easily distinguished from their neighbours by the scalp-lock protruding from a shaven head. After killing white men, they have insulted the corpse in a manner familiar to those who served in the Affghan war. They have given up the practice of torturing prisoners, saying that the "Great Spirit," or rather, as the expression should be translated, the "Great Father" no longer wills it. The tradition is, that a few years ago a squaw of a hostile tribe was snatched from the stake by a white trader, and the action was interpreted as a decree of heaven. It is probably a corruption of the well-known story of the rescue of the Itean woman by Petalesharoo, the son of the "Knife Chief." Like the southern and western Indians generally, as is truly remarked by Captain Mayne Reid *, "They possess more of that cold continence and chivalrous delicacy than characterise the red men of the forest." They are too treacherous to be used as soldiers. Like most

* The Scalp-hunters, chap. xlii.

pedestrian Indians, their arms and bodies are light and thin, and their legs are muscular and well developed. They are great in endurance. I have heard of a Pawnee who, when thoroughly "stampeded" by his enemies, "loped" from Fort Laramie to Kearny — 300 miles — making the distance as fast as the mail. This bad tribe is ever at war with their hereditary enemies the Sioux. They do not extend westward of Fort Kearny. The principal subtribe is the Arikari, or Ree, called Pedani by the Dakota, who attacked and conquered them. Their large villages, near the mouth of the Grand River, were destroyed by the expedition sent in 1825–26, under Colonel Leavenworth, to chastise the attack upon the trading party of General Ashley.

A more interesting people than the Pawnee is the Delaware, whose oldest tradition derives him from the region west of the Mississippi. Thence the tribe migrated to the Atlantic shores, where they took the title of Lenno Lenape, or men, and the neighbouring races in respect called them "uncle." William Penn and his followers found this remnant of the great Algonquin confederacy in a depressed state: subjugated by the Five Nations, they had been compelled to take the name of "Iroquois Squaws." In those days they felt an awe of the white man, and looked upon him as a something godlike. Since their return to the west their spirit has revived, their war-path has reached through Utah to the Pacific Ocean, to Hudson's Bay on the north, and southwards to the heart of Mexico. Their present abodes are principally near Fort Leavenworth upon the Missouri, and in the Choctaw territory near Fort Arbuckle, upon the eastern Colorado or Canadian river. They are familiar with the languages, manners, and customs of their pale-faced neighbours; they are so feared as rifle shots, that a host of enemies will fly from a few of their warriors, and they mostly lead a vagrant life, the wandering Jews of the west, as traders, hunters, and trappers amongst the other Indian tribes. For 185 years the Shawnees have been associated with them in intermarriage, yet they are declining in numbers; here and there some are lost, one by one, in travel or battle; they have now dwindled to about a hundred warriors, and the extinction of the tribe appears imminent. As hunters and guides, they are preferred to all others by the whites, and it is believed

that they would make as formidable partisan soldiers as any on this continent. When the government of the United States, after the fashion of France and England, begins to raise "Irregular Native Corps," the loss of the Delawares will be regretted.

Changing mules at Kiowa, about 10 A.M., we pushed forward through the sun, which presently was mitigated by heavy nimbi, to Liberty Farm, where a station supplied us with the eternal eggs and bacon of these *mangeurs de lard*. It is a dish constant in the great West, as the omelet and pigeon in the vetturini days of Italy, when, prompted by the instincts of self-preservation, the inmates of the dovecot, unless prevented in time, are said to have fled their homes at the sight of Milordo's travelling carriage, not to return until the portent had disappeared. The Little Blue ran hard by, about fifty feet wide by three or four deep, fringed with emerald-green oak groves, cotton-wood, and long-leaved willow: its waters supply catfish, suckers, and a soft shelled turtle, but the fish are full of bones, and taste, as might be imagined, much like mud. The country showed vestiges of animal life, the prairie bore signs of hare and antelope: in the valley coyotes, wolves, and foxes, attracted by the carcasses of cattle, stared us in the face, and near the stream, plovers, jays, the blue bird (sialia), and a kind of starling called the swamp or redwinged blackbird, twittered a song of satisfaction. We then resumed our journey over a desert, waterless save after rain, for twenty-three miles; it is the divide between the Little Blue and the Platte rivers, a broken table land rising gradually towards the west, with, at this season, a barren soil of sand and clay. As the evening approached, a smile from above lit up into absolute beauty the homely features of the world below. The sweet commune with nature in her fairest hours denied to the sons of cities — who must contemplate her charms through a vista of brick wall, or over a foreground of chimney-pots — consoled us amply for all the little hardships of travel. Strata upon strata of cloud-banks, burnished to golden red in the vicinity of the setting sun, and polished to dazzling silvery white above, lay piled half way from the horizon to the zenith, with a distinct strike towards a vanishing point in the west, and dipping into a gateway through which the orb of day slowly retired. Overhead floated in a sea of amber and yellow, pink and green, heavy purple nimbi, ap-

parently turned upside down,—their convex bulges below, and their horizontal lines high in the air,—whilst, in the East, black and blue were so curiously blended, that the eye could not distinguish whether it rested upon darkening air or upon a lowering thundercloud. We enjoyed these beauties in silence, not a soul said "look there!" or "how pretty!"

At 9 P.M., reaching "Thirty-two Mile Creek," we were pleasantly surprised to find an utter absence of the Irishry. The station-master was the head of a neathanded and thrifty family from Vermont; the rooms, such as they were, looked cosy and clean, and the chickens and peaches were plump and well "fixed." Soldiers from Fort Kearny loitered about the adjoining store, and from them we heard past fights and rumours of future wars which were confirmed on the morrow. Remounting at 10.30 P.M., and before moonrise, we threaded the gloom without other accident than the loss of a mule that was being led to the next station. The amiable animal, after breaking loose, coquetted with its pursuers for a while, according to the fashion of its kind, and when the cerne or surround was judged complete, it dashed through the circle and gave leg-bail, its hoofs ringing over the stones till the sound died away in the distant shades.

The Platte River and Fort Kearny, August 10.

After a long and chilly night,—extensive evaporation making 40° F. feel excessively cold,—lengthened by the atrocity of the mosquitoes, which sting even when the thermometer stands below 45°, we awoke upon the hill sands divided by two miles of level green savannah, and at 4 A.M. reached Kearny station, in the valley of La Grande Platte, seven miles from the fort of that name. The first aspect of the stream was one of calm and quiet beauty, which, however, it owed much to its accessories: some travellers have not hesitated to characterise it as "the dreariest of rivers." On the south is a rolling range of red sandy and clayey hillocks, sharp towards the river—the "coasts of the Nebraska." The valley, here two miles broad, resembles the ocean deltas of great streams, it is level as a carpet, all short green grass without sage or bush. It can hardly be called a bottom, the rise from the water's edge being, it is calculated, about 4 feet per 1000. Under a bank, from half a yard to a

yard high, through its two lawns of verdure, flowed the stream straight towards the slanting rays of the rising sun, which glittered upon its broad bosom and shed rosy light over half the heavens. In places it shows a sea horizon, but here it was narrowed by Grand Island, which is fifty-two miles long, with an average breadth of one mile and three quarters, and sufficiently elevated above the annual flood to be well timbered.

Without excepting even the Missouri, the Platte is doubtless the most important western influent of the Mississippi. Its valley offers a route scarcely to be surpassed for natural gradients, requiring little beyond the superstructure for light trains; and by following up its tributary—the Sweetwater—the engineer finds a line laid down by nature to the foot of the South Pass of the Rocky Mountains, the dividing ridge between the Atlantic and the Pacific water-beds. At present the traveller can cross the 300 or 400 miles of desert between the settlements in the east and the populated parts of the western mountains by its broad highway, with never-failing supplies of water, and, in places, fuel. Its banks will shortly supply coal to take the place of the timber that has thinned out.

The Canadian voyageurs first named it La Platte, the Flat River, discarding, or rather translating after their fashion, the musical and picturesque aboriginal term, "Nebraska," the "shallow stream:" the word has happily been retained for the territory. Springing from the eastern slope of the Rocky Mountains, it has, like all the valley streams westward of the Mississippi, the Niobrara, or Eau qui court*, the Arkansas, and the Canadian River, a declination to the south-east. From its mouth to the junction of its northern and southern forks, the river valley is mostly level, and the scenery is of remarkable sameness: its singularity in this point affects the memory. There is not a tributary, not a ravine, in places not a tree to distract attention from the grassy intermediate bottom, which, plain as a prairie, extends from four to five and even twelve miles in width, bounded on both sides by low, rolling, sandy hills, thinly vegetated, and in few places showing dwarf bluffs. Between the Forks and Fort Laramie the ground is more accented, the land near its banks often becomes precipitous, the road must

* For an accurate geographical description of this little-known river, the reader is referred to Lieut. Warren's report, published by the Secretary of War, U. S.

sometimes traverse the tongues and ridges which project into the valley, and in parts the path is deep with sand. The stream averages about a mile in breadth, and sometimes widens out into the semblance of an estuary, flowing in eddies where holes are, and broken by far-reaching sand-bars and curlew shallows. In places it is a labyrinth of inlets, variously shaped and of all sizes, from the long tongue which forms a vista to the little bouquet of cool verdure, grass, young willows, and rose bushes. The shallowness of the bed causes the water to be warm in summer; a great contrast to the clear, cool springs on its banks. The sole is treacherous in the extreme, full of quicksands and gravel shoals, channels and cuts, which shift, like those of the Indus, with each year's flood; the site being nearly level, the river easily swells, and the banks, here of light there of dark-coloured silt, based, like the floor, on sand, are, though vertical, rarely more than two feet high. It is a river wilfully wasted by nature. The inundation raises it to about six feet throughout: this freshet, however, is of short duration, and the great breadth of the river causes a want of depth which renders it unfit for the navigation of a craft more civilised than the Indian's birch or the Canadian fur-boat. Col. Frémont failed to descend it in September with a boat drawing only four inches. The water, like that of the Missouri, and for the same reason, is surcharged with mud drained from the prairies; carried from afar, it has usually a dark tinge; it is remarkably opaque after floods, if a few inches deep, it looks bottomless, and finally, it contains little worth fishing for. From the mouth to Fort Kearny, beyond which point timber is rare, one bank, and one only, is fringed with narrow lines of well-grown cottonwood, red willows, and cedars, which are disappearing before the emigrant's axe. The cedar now becomes an important tree. It will not grow on the plains, owing to the dryness of the climate and the excessive cold; even in the sheltered ravines the wintry winds have power to blight all the tops that rise above prairie level, and where the locality is better adapted for plantations, firs prevail. An interesting effect of climate upon the cedar is quoted by travellers on the Missouri River. At the first Cedar Island (43° north latitude) large and straight trees appear in the bottom lands, those on the bluffs being of inferior growth; higher up the stream they diminish, seldom being seen in any

number together above the mouth of the Little Cheyenne (45° north latitude), and there they are exceedingly crooked and twisted. In the lignite formations above the Missouri and the Yellowstone, the cedar, unable to support itself above ground, spreads over the hill sides and presents the appearance of grass or moss.

Beyond the immediate banks of the Platte the soil is either sandy, quickly absorbing water, or it is a hard, cold, unwholesome clay, which long retains muddy pools, black with decayed vegetation, and which often in the lowest levels becomes a mere marsh. The wells deriving infiltration from the higher lands beyond are rarely more than three feet deep; the produce is somewhat saline, and here and there salt may be seen efflorescing from the soil around them. In the large beds of prêle (an equisetum), scouring rush, and other aquatic plants which garnish the banks, myriads of mosquitoes find a home. Flowers of rich, warm colour appear, we remark, in the sandy parts: the common wild helianthus and a miniature sunflower like chamomile, a thistle (*carduus leucographus*), the cactus, a peculiar milkplant (*asclepias syriva*), a spurgewort (*asclepias tuberosa*), the amorpha, the tradescantia, the putoria and the artemisia or prairie sage. The richer soils and ravines produce in abundance the purple aster — violet of these regions — a green plant, locally known as "Lamb's Quarters," a purple flower with bulbous root, wild flax with pretty blue blossoms, besides mallow, digitalis, anemone, streptanthis, and a honeysuckle. In parts the valley of the Platte is a perfect parterre of wild flowers.

After satisfying hunger with vile bread and viler coffee, — how far from the little forty-berry cup of Egypt! — for which we paid $0·75, we left Kearny Station without delay. Hugging the right bank of our strange river, at 8 A.M. we found ourselves at Fort Kearny, so called, as is the custom, after the gallant officer, now deceased, of that name.

Every square box or blockhouse in these regions is a fort; no misnomer, however, can be more complete than the word applied to the military cantonments on the frontier. In former times the traders to whom these places mostly belonged erected quadrangles of sundried brick with towers at the angles; their forts still appear in old books of travels: the War Department, however, has been sensible enough to remove them. The

position usually chosen is a river bottom, where fuel, grass, and water are readily procurable. The quarters are of various styles; some, with their low verandahs, resemble Anglo-Indian bungalows or comfortable farmhouses, others are the storied houses with the "stoop" or porch of the Eastern States in front, and low, long, peat-roofed tenements are used for magazines and outhouses. The best material is brown adobe or unburnt brick; others are of timber, whitewashed and clean-looking, with shingle roofs, glass windows, and gay green frames,—that contrast of colours which the New Englander loves. The habitations surround a cleared central space for parade and drill; the ground is denoted by the tall flagstaff, which does not, as in English camps, distinguish the quarters of the commanding officer. One side is occupied by the officers' bungalows, the other, generally that opposite, by the adjutant's and quartermaster's offices, and the square is completed by low ranges of barrack and commissariat stores, whilst various little shops, stables, corrals for cattle, a chapel, perhaps an artillery park, and surely an ice-house—in this point India is far behind the wilds of America—complete the settlement. Had these cantonments a few more trees and a far more brilliant verdure, they would suggest the idea of an out-station in Guzerat, the Deccan, or some similar Botany Bay for decayed gentlemen who transport themselves.

Whilst at Washington I had resolved—as has already been intimated—when the reports of war in the West were waxing loud, to enjoy a little Indian fighting. The meritorious intention—for which the severest "wig," concluding with something personally offensive about volunteering in general, would have been its sole result in the "fast-anchored isle"—was most courteously received by the Hon. John B. Floyd, Secretary of War, who provided me with introductory letters addressed to the officers commanding various "departments"*—"divisions," as

* The following is a list of the military departments into which the United States are divided:—

MILITARY COMMANDS.

Department of the East.—The country east of the Mississippi River; headquarters at Troy, N. Y.

Department of the West.—The country west of the Mississippi River, and east of the Rocky Mountains, except that portion included within the limits of the departments of Texas and New Mexico; head quarters at St. Louis, Mo.

they would be called by Englishmen — in the West. The first tidings that saluted my ears on arrival at Fort Kearny acted as a quietus: an Indian action had been fought, which signified that there would be no more fighting for some time. Captain Sturgis, of the 1st Cavalry, U.S., had just attacked, near the Republican Fork of Kansas River, a little south of the fort, with six companies (about 350 men) and a few Delawares, a considerable body of the enemy, Comanches, Kiowas, and Cheyennes, who apparently had forgotten the severe lesson administered to them by Colonel — now Brigadier-General — Edwin V. Sumner, 1st Cavalry, in 1857, and killed twenty-five with only two or three of his own men wounded. According to details gathered at Fort Kearny, the Indians had advanced under a black flag, lost courage, as wild men mostly will, when they heard the *pas de charge*, and, after making a running fight, being well mounted as well as armed, had carried off their "cripples" lashed to their horses. I had no time to call upon Captain Sully, who remained in command at Kearny with two troops (here called companies) of dragoons, or heavy cavalry, and one of infantry; the mail wagon would halt there but a few minutes. I therefore hurriedly chose the alternative of advancing, with the hope of seeing "independent service" on the road. Intelligence of the fight had made even the conductor look grave; fifty or sixty miles is a flea-bite to a mounted war party, and disappointed Indians upon the war path are especially dangerous — even the most friendly cannot be trusted when they have lost, or have not succeeded in taking, a few scalps. We subsequently heard that they had crossed our path,

Department of Texas.—The State of Texas, and the territory north of it to the boundaries of New Mexico, Kansas, and Arkansas, and the Arkansas River, including Fort Smith. Fort Bliss, in Texas, is temporarily attached to the department of New Mexico; head-quarters at San Antonio, Texas.

Department of New Mexico. — The territory of New Mexico; head-quarters at Santa Fé, New Mexico.

Department of Utah. — The territory of Utah, except that portion of it lying west of the 117th degree of west longitude; head-quarters, Camp Floyd, U. T.

Department of the Pacific. — The country west of the Rocky Mountains, except those portions of it included within the limits of the departments of Utah and New Mexico, and the district of Oregon; head-quarters at San Francisco, California.

District of Oregon. — The territory of Washington and the State of Oregon, excepting the Rogue River and Umpqua districts in Oregon; head-quarters at Fort Vancouver, Washington Territory.

but whether the tale was true or not is an essentially doubtful matter. If this chance failed, remained the excitement of the buffalo and the Mormon, both were likely to show better sport than could be found in riding wildly about the country after runaway braves.

We all prepared for the "gravity of the situation" by discharging and reloading our weapons, and bade adieu, about 9-30 A.M., to Fort Kearny. Before dismissing the subject of forts, I am disposed to make some invidious remarks upon the army system of outposts in America.

The War Department of the United States has maintained the same system which the British, much to their loss,—I need scarcely trouble the reader with a list of evils done to the soldier by outpost duty,—adopted and pertinaciously kept up for so long a time in India; nay, even maintain to the present day, despite the imminent danger of mutiny. With the Anglo-Scandinavian race, the hate of centralisation in civil policy extends to military organisation, of which it should be the vital principle. The French, gifted with instinct for war, and being troubled with scant prejudice against concentration, civil as well as military, soon abandoned, when they found its futility, the idea of defending their Algerian frontier by extended lines, blockhouses, and feeble entrenched posts. They wisely established, at the centres of action, depôts, magazines, and all the requisites for supporting large bodies of men, making them pivots for expeditionary columns, which by good military roads could be thrown in overwhelming numbers, in the best health and in the highest discipline, wherever an attack or an insurrectionary movement required crushing.

The necessity of so doing has long occurred to the American Government, in whose service at present "a regiment is stationed to-day on the borders of tropical Mexico; to-morrow the war whoop, borne on a gale from the north-west, compels its presence to the frozen latitudes of Puget's Sound." The objections to altering their present highly objectionable system are two: the first is a civil consideration, the second a military one.

As I have remarked about the centralisation of troops, so it is with their relation to civilians; the Anglo-Scandinavian blood shows similar manifestations in the old and in the new country. The French, a purely military nation, pet their army, raise it to the highest pitch, send it in for glory, and when it fails are to its

faults a little blind. The English and Anglo-Americans, essentially a commercial and naval people, dislike the red coat; they look upon, and from the first they looked upon, a standing army as a necessary nuisance; they ever listen open-eared to projects for cutting and curtailing army expenditure; and when they have weakened their forces by a manner of atrophy, they expect them to do more than their duty, and if they cannot command success, abuse them. With a commissariat, transport and hospitals — delicate pieces of machinery, which cannot run smoothly when roughly and hurriedly put together — unaccustomed to and unprepared for service, they land an army 3000 miles from home, and then make the world ring with their disappointment, and their complainings anent fearful losses in men and money. The fact is that, though no soldiers in the world fight with more bravery and determination, the Anglo-Scandinavian race, with their present institutions, are inferior to their inferiors in other points, as regards the art of military organisation. Their fatal wants are order and economy, combined with the will and the means of selecting the best men — these belong to the emperor, not to the constitutional king or the president — and most of all, the habit of implicit subjection to the commands of an absolute dictator. The end of this long preamble is that the American Government apparently thinks less of the efficiency of its troops than of using them as escorts to squatters, as police of the highway. Withal they fail, emigrants will not be escorted, women and children will struggle when they please, even in an Indian country, and every season has its dreadful tales of violence and starvation, massacre and cannibalism. In France the emigrants would be ordered to collect in bodies at certain seasons to report their readiness for the road to the officers commanding stations, to receive an escort, as he should deem proper, and to disobey at their peril.

The other motive of the American outpost system is military, but also of civilian origin. Concentration would necessarily be unpalatable to a number of senior officers, who now draw what in England would be called command allowances, at the several stations.* One of the principles of a republic is to pay a man

* The aggregate of the little regular army of the United States in 1860 amounted to 18,093. It was dispersed into eighty military posts, viz. thirteen in the Department of the east, nine in the west, twenty in Texas, twelve in the Depart-

only whilst he works; pensions, like sinecures, are left to governments less disinterested. The American army — it would hardly be believed — has no pensions, sale of commissions, off-reckonings, nor retiring-list. A man hopelessly invalided, or in his second childhood, must hang on by means of furloughs and medical certificates to the end. The colonels are mostly upon the sick-list,—one died lately aged ninety-three, and dating from the days of Louis XVI.,—and I heard of an officer who, though practising medicine for years, was still retained upon the cadre of his regiment. Of course, the necessity of changing such an anomaly has frequently been mooted by the legislature; the scandalous failure, however, of an attempt at introducing a pension-list into the United States navy so shocked the public that no one will hear of the experiment being renewed, even *in corpore vili*, the army.

To conclude the subject of outpost system. If the change be advisable in the United States, it is positively necessary to the British in India. The peninsula presents three main points, not to mention the detached heights that are found in every province, as the great pivots of action, the Himalayas, the Deccan, and the Nilgherry Hills, where, until wanted, the Sepoy and his officer, as well as the white soldier — the latter worth 100*l.* a head — can be kept in health, drilled, disciplined, and taught the hundred arts which render an "old salt" the most handy of men. A few years ago the English soldier was fond of Indian service; hardly a regiment returned home without leaving hundreds behind it. Now, long, fatiguing marches, scant fare, the worst accommodation, and the various results of similar hardships, make him look upon the land as a Golgotha; it is with difficulty that he can be prevented from showing his disgust. Both in India and America, this will be the greatest benefit of extensive railroads: they will do away with single stations, and enable the authorities to carry out a system of concentration most beneficial to the country and to the service which, after many years of sore drudgery, may at last discern the good time coming.

In the United States, two other measures appear called for by circumstances. The Indian race is becoming desperate, wild-

ment of New Mexico, two in Utah (Fort Bridger and Camp Floyd), eleven in Oregon, and thirteen in the Department of California. They each would have an average of about 225 men.

beast like, hemmed in by its enemies that have flanked it on the east and west, and are gradually closing in upon it. The tribes can no longer shift ground without inroads into territories already occupied by neighbours, who are, of course, hostile; they are, therefore, being brought to final lay.

The first is a camel corps. At present, when disturbances on a large scale occur in the far West—the spring of 1862 will probably see them—a force of cavalry must be sent from the East, perhaps also infantry. "The horses, after a march of 500 or 600 miles, are expected to act with success"—I quote the sensible remarks of a "late captain of infantry" (Captain Patterson, U.S. army)—against scattered bands of mounted hunters, with the speed of a horse and the watchfulness of a wolf or antelope, whose faculties are sharpened by their necessities; who, when they get short of provisions, separate and look for something to eat, and find it in the water, in the ground, or on the surface; whose bill of fare ranges from grass-seed, nuts, roots, grasshoppers, lizards, and rattlesnakes, up to the antelope, deer, elk, bear, and buffalo, and who having a continent to roam over, will neither be surprised, caught, conquered, overawed, or reduced to famine by a rumbling, bugle-blowing, drum-beating town passing through their country on wheels, at the speed of a loaded waggon." But the camel would in these latitudes easily march sixty miles per diem for a week or ten days, amply sufficient to tire out the sturdiest Indian pony; it requires water only after every fifty hours, and the worst soil would supply it with ample forage in the shape of wild sage, rabbit bush, and thorns. Each animal would carry two men, with their arms and ammunition, rations for the time required, bedding and regimental necessaries, with material to make up a *tente d'abri* if judged necessary. The organisation should be that of the Sindh Camel Corps, which, under Sir Charles Napier, was found so efficient against the frontier Beloch. The best men for this kind of fighting would be the Mountaineers, or Western Men, of the caste called "Pikes;" properly speaking, Missourians, but popularly any "rough" between St. Louis and California. After a sound flogging, for the purpose of preparing their minds to admit the fact that all men are *not* equal, they might be used by sea or land, whenever hard, downright fighting is required. It is

understood that hitherto the camel, despite the careful selection by Mr. De Leon, the excellent Consul-General of the United States in Egypt, and the valuable instructions of Hekekyan Bey, has proved a failure in the western world. If so, want of patience has been the sole cause; the animal must be acclimatised, by slow degrees, before heavy loading to test its powers of strength and speed. Some may deem this amount of delay impossible. I confess my belief that the Anglo-Americans can, within any but the extremest limits, accomplish anything they please — except unity.

The other necessity will be the raising of native regiments. The French in Africa have their Spahis, the Russians their Cossacks, and the English their Sepoys. The American Government has often been compelled, as in the case of the creek battalion, which did good service during the Seminole campaign, indirectly to use their wild aborigines; but the public sentiment, or rather prejudice, which fathers upon the modern Pawnee the burning and torturing tastes of the ancient Mohawk, is strongly opposed to pitting Indian against Indian in battle. Surely this is a false as well as a mistaken philanthropy. If war must be, it is better that Indian instead of white blood should be shed. And invariably the effect of enlisting savages and barbarians, subjecting them to discipline, and placing them directly under the eye of the civilised man, has been found to diminish their ferocity. The Bashi Buzuk, left to himself, roasted the unhappy Russian; in the British service he brought his prisoner alive into camp with a view to a present or promotion. When talking over the subject with the officers of the United States regular army, they have invariably concurred with me in the possibility of the scheme, provided that the public animus could be turned pro instead of con; and I have no doubt but that they will prove as leaders of Irregulars, — it would be invidious to quote names, — equal to the best of the Anglo-Indians, Skinner, Beatson, and Jacob. The men would receive about ten dollars per man, and each corps number 300. They would be better mounted and better armed than their wild brethren, and they might be kept, when not required for active service, in a buffalo country, their favourite quarters, and their finest field for soldierlike exercises.

The main point to be avoided is the mistake committed by the British in India, that of appointing too many officers to their Sepoy corps.

We left Kearny at 9·30 A.M., following the road which runs forty miles up the valley of the Platte. It is a broad prairie, plentifully supplied with water in wells two to four feet deep; the fluid is cool and clear, but it is said not to be wholesome. Where the soil is clayey pools abound; the sandy portions are of course dry. Along the southern bank near Kearny are few elevations; on the opposite or northern side appear high and wooded bluffs. The road was rough with pitchholes, and for the first time I remarked a peculiar gap in the ground like an East Indian sun-crack,—in these latitudes you see none of the deep fissures which scar the face of mother earth in tropical lands,—the effect of rain streams and snow water acting upon the clay. Each succeeding winter lengthens the head and deepens the sole of this deeply gashed water-cut, till it destroys the road. A curious mirage appeared, doubling to four the strata of river and vegetation on the banks. The sight and song of birds once more charmed us after a desert where animal life is as rare as upon the plains of Brazil. After fifteen miles of tossing and tumbling, we made "Seventeen Mile Station," and halted there to change mules. About twenty miles above the fort the southern bank began to rise into mounds of tenacious clay, which, worn away into perpendicular and precipitous sections, composes the columnar formation called O'Fallon's Bluffs. At 1·15 P.M. we reached Plum Creek, after being obliged to leave behind one of the conductors, who had become delirious with the "shakes." The establishment, though new, was already divided into three; the little landlady, though she worked so manfully, was, as she expressed it, "enjoying bad health," in other words, suffering from a "dumb chill." I may observe that the Prairie Traveller's opinions concerning the power of encamping with impunity upon the banks of the streams in this country must not be applied to the Platte. The whole line becomes with early autumn a hotbed of febrile disease. And generally throughout this season the stranger should not consider himself safe on any grounds save those defended from the southern trade wind, which, sweeping directly from the Gulf of Mexico, bears with it noxious exhalations.

About Plum Ranch the soil is rich, clayey, and dotted with swamps and "slews," by which the English traveller will understand sloughs. The drier portions were a Gulistan of bright red blue and white flowers, the purple aster, and the mallow, with its parsnip-like root, eaten by the Indians, the gaudy yellow helianthus—we remarked at least three varieties—the snowy mimulus, the graceful flax, sometimes four feet high, and a delicate little euphorbia, whilst in the damper ground appeared the polar plant, that prairie compass, the plane of whose leaf ever turns towards the magnetic meridian. This is the "weed-prairie," one of the many divisions of the great natural meadows; grass prairie, rolling prairie, motte prairie, salt prairie, and soda prairie. It deserves a more poetical name, for

> "These are the gardens of the desert, these
> The unshorn fields, boundless and beautiful,
> For which the speech of England has no name."

Buffalo herds were behind the hills, but we were too full of sleep to follow them. The plain was dotted with blanched skulls and bones, which would have made a splendid bonfire. Apparently the expert voyageur has not learned that they form good fuel; at any rate, he has preferred to them the "chips" of which it is said that a steak cooked with them requires no pepper.*

We dined at Plum Creek on buffalo, probably bull beef, the worst and driest meat, save elk, that I have ever tasted; indeed, without the assistance of pork fat, we found it hard to swallow. As every one knows, however, the two-year old cow is the best eating, and at this season the herds are ever in the worst condition. The animals calve in May and June, consequently they are in August completely out of flesh. They are fattest about Christmas, when they find it difficult to run. All agree in declaring that there is no better meat than that of the young buffalo: the assertion, however, must be taken *cum grano salis*. Wild flesh was never known to be equal to tame, and that monarch did at least one wise thing

* The chip corresponds with the bois de vache of Switzerland, the tesek of Armenia, the arghol of Thibet, and the gobar of India. With all its faults, it is at least superior to that used in Sindh.

who made the loin of beef Sir Loin. The voyageurs and travellers who cry up the buffalo as so delicious, have been living for weeks on rusty bacon and lean antelope; a rich hump with its proper menstruum, a cup of *café noir* as strong as possible, must truly be a "tit bit." They boast that the fat does not disagree with the eater; neither do three pounds of heavy pork with the English ploughboy, who has probably taken less exercise than the Canadian hunter. Before long, buffalo flesh will reach New York, where I predict it will be held as inferior to butcher's meat as is the antelope to park-fed venison. Whilst hunting, Indians cut off the tail to test the quality of the game, and they have acquired by habit a power of judging on the run between fat and lean.

Resuming our weary ride, we watered at "Willow Island Ranch," and then at "Cold Water Ranch,"—drinking shops all—five miles from Midway Station, which we reached at 8 P.M. Here, whilst changing mules, we attempted with sweet speech and smiles to persuade the landlady, who showed symptoms of approaching maternity, into giving us supper. This she sturdily refused to do, for the reason that she had not received due warning. We had, however, the satisfaction of seeing the *employés* of the line making themselves thoroughly comfortable with bread and buttermilk. Into the horrid wagon again, and "a rollin:" lazily enough the cold and hungry night passed on.*

To the Forks of the Platte. 11th August.

Precisely at 1·35 in the morning we awoke, as we came to a halt at Cotton Wood Station. Cramped with a four days' and four nights' ride in the narrow van, we entered the foul tenement, threw ourselves upon the mattresses, averaging three to each, and ten in a small room, every door, window, and cranny being shut,—after the fashion of these western folks, who make up for

* According to Colonel Frémont, the total amount of buffalo robes purchased by the several companies, American, Hudson's Bay, and others, was an annual total of 90,000, from the eight or ten years preceding 1843. This is repeated by the Abbé Domenech, who adds, that the number does not include those slaughtered in the southern regions by the Comanches and other tribes of the Texan frontier, nor those killed between March and November, when the skins are unfit for tanning. In 1847, the town of St. Louis received 110,000 buffalo robes, stags', deer, and other skins, and twenty-five salted tongues.

a day in the open air by perspiring through the night in unventilated log-huts,—and, despite mosquitoes, slept.

The morning brought with it no joy. We had arrived at the westernmost limit of the "gigantic Leicestershire" to which buffalo at this season extend, and could hope to see no trace of them between Cotton Wood Station and the Pacific. I cannot, therefore, speak *ex cathedrâ* concerning this, the noblest "venerie" of the West: almost every one who has crossed the prairies, except myself, can. Captain Stansbury* will enlighten the sportsman upon the approved method of bryttling the beasts, and elucidate the mysteries of the "game-beef," marrow-bone and depuis, tongue and tenderloin, base and hump, hump-rib and liver, which latter, by-the-bye, is not unfrequently eaten raw, with a sprinkling of gall†, by the white hunter emulating his wild rival, as does the European in Abyssinia. The Prairie Traveller has given, from experience, the latest observations concerning the best modes of hunting the animal. All that remains to me, therefore, is to offer to the reader a few details collected from reliable sources, and which are not to be found in the two works above alluded to.

The bison (*bison Americanus*) is trivially known as the Prairie Buffalo, to distinguish it from a different and a larger animal, the Buffalo of the Woods, which haunts the Rocky Mountains. The "Monarch of the Prairies," the "most gigantic of the indigenous mammalia of America," has, it is calculated, receded westward ten miles annually for the last 150 years. When America was discovered, the buffalo extended down to the Atlantic shore. Thirty years ago, bands grazed upon the banks of the Missouri River. The annual destruction is variously computed at from 200,000 to 300,000 head—the American Fur Company receive per annum about 70,000 robes, which are all cows,—and of these not more than 5000 fall by the hands of white men. At present there are three well-known bands, which split up, at certain seasons, into herds of 2000 and 3000 each. The first family is on the head-waters of the Mississippi; the second haunts the vast crescent-shaped valley of the Yellowstone; whilst the third occupies the prairie country

* Exploration and Survey, &c., chap. ix.

† "Prairie bitters"—made of a pint of water and a quarter of a pill of buffalo gall—are considered an elixir vitæ by old voyageurs.

between the Platte and the Arkansas. A fourth band, westward of the Rocky Mountains, is quite extinct. Fourteen to fifteen years ago, buffalo was found in Utah Valley, and later still upon the Humboldt River: according to some, they emigrated northwards, through Oregon and the lands of the Blackfeet. It is more probable, however, that they were killed off by the severe winter of 1845, their skulls being still found scattered in heaps, as if a sudden and general destruction had come upon the doomed tribe.

The buffalo is partially migratory in its habits: it appears to follow the snow, which preserves its food from destruction. Like the antelope of the Cape, when on the "trek," the band may be reckoned by thousands. The grass, which takes its name from the animal, is plentiful in the valley of the Big Blue; it loves the streams of little creeks that have no bottom land, and shelters itself under the sage. It is a small, moss-like gramen, with dark seed, and, when dry, it has been compared by travellers to twisted grey horsehair. Smaller herds travel in Indian file; their huge bodies, weighing 1500 lbs., appear, from afar, like piles erected to bridge the plain. After calving, the cows, like the African koodoo and other antelopes, herd separately from the males, and for the same reason, timidity and the cares of maternity. As in the case of the elephant and the hippopotamus, the oldsters are driven by the young ones, *en charivari*, from the band, and a compulsory bachelorhood souring their temper, causes them to become "rogues." The albino, or white buffalo, is exceedingly rare; even veteran hunters will confess never to have seen one. The same may be said of the glossy black accident called the "silk robe," supposed by western men to be a cross between the parent and the offspring. The buffalo calf has been tamed by the Flatheads and others: I have never, however, heard of its being utilised.

The Dakotas and other prairie tribes will degenerate, if not disappear, when the buffalo is "rubbed out." There is a sympathy between them, and the beast flies not from the barbarian and his bow as it does before the face of the white man and his hot-mouthed weapon. The aborigines are unwilling to allow travellers, sportsmen, or explorers to pass through the country whilst they are hunting the buffalo, that is to say, preserving the game till their furs are ready for robes. At these times no one is per-

mitted to kill any but stragglers, for fear of stampeding the band; the animal not only being timid, but also in the habit of hurrying away cattle and stock, which often are thus irretrievably lost. In due season the savages surround one section, and destroy it; the others remaining unalarmedly grazing within a few miles of the scene of slaughter. If another tribe interferes, it is a *casus belli*, death being the punishment for poaching. The white man, whose careless style of *battue* is notorious, will be liable to the same penalty, or, that failing, to be plundered, by even "good Indians;" and I have heard of an English gentleman who, for persisting in the obnoxious practice, was very properly threatened with prosecution by the Government agent.

What the cocoa-nut is to the East Indian, and the plantain and the calabash to various tribes of Africans, such is the "boss" to the carnivorous son of America. No part of it is allowed to waste. The horns and hoofs make glue for various purposes, especially for feathering arrows; the brains and part of the bowels are used for curing skins; the hide clothes the tribes from head to foot; the calf-skins form their apishamores, or saddle-blankets; the sinews make their bowstrings, thread, and finer cord; every part of the flesh, including the fœtus and placenta, is used for food. The surplus hides are reserved for market. They are prepared by the squaws, who, curious to say, will not touch a bearskin till the age of maternity has passed; and they prefer the spoils of the cow, as being softer than those of the bull. The skin, after being trimmed with an iron or bone scraper — this is not done in the case of the "parfleche," or thick sole-leather — and softened with brain or marrow, is worked till thoroughly pliable with the hands. The fumigation, which gives the finishing touch, is confined to buckskins intended for garments. When the hair is removed, the hides supply the place of canvas, which they resemble in whiteness and facility of folding. Dressed with the hair, they are used, as their name denotes, for clothing; they serve also for rugs and bedding. In the prairies, the price ranges from $1 to $1·50 in kind; in the Eastern States, from $5 to $10. The fancy specimens, painted inside, decorated with eyes, and otherwise adorned with split porcupine-quills dyed a gamboge-yellow, fetch from $8 to $35. A "buffalo" (*cubandi* robe) was shown to me, painted with curious figures, which, according to

my Canadian informant, were a kind of hieroglyph or *aide-mémoire*, even ruder than the Mexican picture-writing.

The Indians generally hunt the buffalo with arrows. They are so expert in riding, that they will, at full speed, draw the missile from the victim's flank before it falls. I have met but one officer, Captain Heth, of the 10th Regiment, who ever acquired the art. The Indian hog-spear has been used to advantage. Our predecessors in Eastern conquest have killed with it the tiger and nylgau; there is, therefore, no reason why it might not be efficiently applied to the buffalo. Like the Bos Caffre, the bison is dull, surly, and stupid, as well as timid and wary; it requires hard riding, with the chance of a collar-bone broken by the horse falling into a prairie-dog's home; and when headed or tired an old male rarely fails to charge.

The flies chasing away the mosquitoes — even as Aurora routs the lingering shades of night — having sounded our *reveillée* at Cotton Wood station, we proceeded by means of an "eye-opener," which even the abstemious judge could not decline, and the use of the "skillet," to prepare for a breakfast composed of various abominations, especially cakes of flour and grease, molasses and dirt, disposed in pretty equal parts. After paying the usual $0.50, we started in the high wind and dust, with a heavy storm brewing in the north, along the desert valley of the dark, silent Platte, which here spread out in broad basins and lagoons, picturesquely garnished with broad-leafed dock and beds of *prêle*, flags and water-rushes, in which, however, we saw nothing but traces of Monsieur Maringouin. On our left was a line of subconical buttes, red, sandy-clay pyramids, semi-detached from the wall of the rock behind them, with smooth flat faces fronting the river, towards which they slope at the natural angle of 45°. The land around, dry and sandy, bore no traces of rain; a high wind blew, and the thermometer stood at 78° (F.), which was by no means uncomfortably warm. Passing Junction House Ranch and Frémont Slough — whiskey-shops both — we halted for "dinner," about 11 A. M., at Frémont Springs, so called from an excellent little water behind the station. The building is of a style peculiar to the south, especially Florida, — two huts connected by a roof-work of thatched timber, which acts as the best and coolest of verandahs. The station-keeper, who receives from the proprietors of the line $30 per month, had been there only

three weeks; and his wife, a comely young person, uncommonly civil and smiling for a "lady," supplied us with the luxuries of pigeons, onions, and light bread, and declared her intention of establishing a poultry-yard.

An excellent train of mules carried us along a smooth road at a slapping pace, over another natural garden even more flowery than that passed on the last day's march. There were beds of lupins, a brilliant pink and blue predominating, the green plant locally known as "Lamb's Quarters" (*Chenopodium album*); the streptanthis; the milk-weed, with its small white blossoms; the anemone; the wild flax, with its pretty blue flowers, and growths which appeared to be clematis, chamomile and digitalis. Distant black dots — dwarf cedars, which are yearly diminishing,— lined the bank of the Platte and the long line of River Island; they elicited invidious comparisons from the Pennsylvanians of the party. We halted at Half-way House, near O'Fallon's Bluffs, at the quarters of Mr. M——, a *compagnon de voyage* who had now reached his home of twenty years, and therefore insisted upon "standing drinks." The business is worth $16,000 per annum; the contents of the store somewhat like a Parsee's shop in Western India—everything from a needle to a bottle of champagne. A sign-board informed us that we were now distant 400 miles from St. Jo., 120 from Fort Kearny, 68 from the upper, and 40 from the lower crossing of the Platte. As we advanced the valley narrowed, the stream shrank, the vegetation dwindled, the river islands were bared of timber, and the only fuel became buffalo chip and last year's artemisia. This hideous growth which is to weary our eyes as far as central valleys of the Sierra Nevada, will require a few words of notice.

The artemisia, absinthe, or wild sage, differs much from the panacea concerning which the Salernitan school rhymed:

"Cur moriatur homo cui Salvia crescit in horto."

Yet it fills the air with a smell that caricatures the odour of the garden plant, causing the traveller to look round in astonishment; and when used for cooking it taints the food with a taste between camphor and turpentine. It is of two kinds. The smaller or white species (*A. filifolia*) rarely grows higher than a foot. Its fetor is less rank, and at times of scarcity it forms

tolerable fodder for animals. The Western men have made of it, as of the "red root," a tea, which must be pronounced decidedly inferior to corn coffee. The Indians smoke it, but they are not particular about what they inhale: like that perverse p——n of Ludlow, who smoked the bell-ropes rather than not smoke at all, or like schoolboys who break themselves in upon rattan, they use even the larger sage as well as a variety of other graveolent growths. The second kind (*A. tridentata*) is to the family of shrubs what the prairie-cedar is to the trees—a gnarled, crooked, rough-barked deformity. It has no pretensions to beauty except in earliest youth and in the dewy hours when the breeze turns up its leaves that glitter like silver in the sun, and its constant presence in the worst and most desert tracks teaches one to regard it, like the mangrove in Asia and Africa, with aversion. In size it greatly varies; in some places it is but little larger than the white species; near the Red Buttes its woody stem often attains the height of a man and the thickness of his waist. As many as fifty rings have been counted in one wood, which, according to the normal calculation, would bring its age up to half a century. After its first year, stock will eat it only when threatened with starvation. It has, however, its use; the traveller, despite its ugliness, hails the appearance of its stiff, wiry clumps at the evening halt: it is easily uprooted, and by virtue of its essential oil it makes a hot and lasting fire, and ashes over. According to Colonel Frémont, "it has a small fly accompanying it through every change of elevation and latitude." The same eminent authority also suggests that the respiration of air so highly impregnated with aromatic plants, may partly account for the favourable effect of the climate upon consumption.

At 5 P.M., as the heat began to mitigate, we arrived at Alkali Lake Station and discovered some "exiles from Erin," who supplied us with antelope meat and the unusual luxury of ice taken from the Platte. We attempted to bathe in the river, but found it flowing liquid mire. The Alkali Lake was out of sight; the driver, however, consoled me with the reflection that I should "glimpse" alkali lakes till I was sick of them.

Yesterday and to-day we have been in a line of Indian "removes." The wild people were shifting their quarters for grass; when it becomes a little colder they will seek some winter abode

on the banks of a stream which supplies fuel and where they can find meat, so that with warmth and food, song and chat — they are fond of talking nonsense as African negroes — and smoke and sleep, they can while away the dull and dreary winter. Before describing the scene, which might almost serve for a picture of Bedouin or gipsy life — so similar are the customs of all savages — I have something to say about the Red Man.

This is a country of misnomers. America should not, according to the school books, have been named America, consequently the Americans should not be called Americans. A geographical error, pardonable in the fifteenth century, dubbed the old tenants of these lands Indians*, but why we should still call them the Red Men cannot be conceived. I have now seen them in the north, south, east and west of the United States, yet never, except under the influence of ochre or vermilion, have I seen the Red Man red. The real colour of the skin, as may be seen under the leggings, varies from a dead pale olive to a dark dingy brown. The parts exposed to the sun are slightly burnished, as in a Tartar or an Affghan after a summer march. Between the two extremes above indicated there are, however, a thousand shades of colour, and often the skin has been so long grimed in with pigment, grease, and dirt that it suggests a brickdust tinge which a little soap or soda would readily remove. Indeed the colour and the complexion, combined with the lank hair, scant beard, and similar peculiarities, renders it impossible to see this people for the first time without the strongest impression that they are of that Turanian breed which in prehistoric ages passed down from above the Himalayas as far south as Cape Comorin.

Another mistake touching the Indian is the present opinion concerning him and his ancestors. He now suffers in public esteem from the reaction following the highflown descriptions of Cooper and the herd of minor romancers, who could not

* Columbus and Vespucius both died in the conviction that they had only discovered portions of Asia. Indeed, as late as 1532, the astronomer Schöner maintained that Mexico was the Quinsai of Marco Polo. The early navigators called the aborigines of the New World "Indians," believing that they inhabited the eastern portion of "India," a term then applied to the extremity of Oriental Asia. Until the present century the Spaniards applied the names India and Indios to their possessions in America.

but make their heroes heroes. Moreover, men acquainted only with the degenerate Pawnees or Diggers, extend their evil opinions to the noble tribes now extinct—the Iroquois and Algonquins, for instance, whose remnants, the Delawares and Ojibwes, justify the high opinion of the first settlers. The exploits of King Philip, Pontiac, Gurister Sego, Tecumseh Keokuk, Ietan, Captain J. Brant, Black Hawk, Red Jacket, Osceola, and Billy Bowlegs, are rapidly fading away from memory, whilst the failures of such men as Little Thunder, and those like him, stand prominently forth in modern days. Besides the injustice to the manes and memories of the dead, this depreciation of the Indians tends to serious practical evils. Those who see the savage lying drunk about stations, or eaten up with disease, expect to beat him out of the field by merely showing their faces; they fail, and pay the penalty with their lives—an event which occurs every year in some parts of America.

The remove of the village presented an interesting sight,—an animated, shifting scene of bucks and braves, squaws and papooses, ponies dwarfed by bad breeding and hard living, dogs and puppies straggling over the plains westward. In front, singly or in pairs, rode the men, not gracefully, not according to the rules of Mexican *manège*, but like the Abyssinian eunuch, as if born upon and bred to become part of the animal. Some went barebacked, others rode, like the ancient chiefs of the Western Islands, upon a saddle-tree, stirrupless, or provided with hollow blocks of wood: in some cases the saddle was adorned with bead hangings, and in all a piece of buffalo hide with the hair on was attached beneath to prevent chafing. The cruel ringbit of the Arabs is not unknown. A few had iron curbs, probably stolen; for the most part they managed their nags with a hide thong lashed round the lower jaw and attached to the neck. A whip, of various sizes and shapes, sometimes a round and tattooed ferule, more often a handle like a butcher's tally-stick, flat, notched, one foot long, and provided with two or three thongs, hung at the wrist. Their nags were not shod with parflèche, as amongst the horse-Indians of the south. Their long, lank, thick, brownish-black hair, ruddy from the effects of weather, was worn parted in the middle, and depended from the temples confined with a long twist of otter or beaver's skin

in two queues, or pig-tails reaching to the breast: from the poll, and distinct from the remainder of the hair, streamed the scalp-lock. This style of hair-dressing, doubtless, aids in giving to the coronal region that appearance of depression which characterises the North American Indians as a race of "Flat heads," and which probably being considered a beauty, led to the artificial deformities of the Peruvian and the Aztec. The parting in men, as well as in women, was generally coloured with vermilion, and plates of brass or tin, with beveled edges, varying in size from a shilling to half-a-crown, were inserted into the front hair. The scalp-lock — in fops the side-locks also — was decorated with tin or silver plates often twelve in number, beginning from the head and gradually diminishing in size as they approached the heels; a few had eagle's, hawk's, and crow's feathers stuck in the hair, and sometimes, grotesquely enough, crownless Kossuth hats, felt broadbrims, or old military casquettes, surmounted all this finery. Their scanty beard was removed; they compare the bushy-faced European to a dog running away with a squirrel in its mouth. In their ears were rings of beads, with pendants of tin plates or mother o' pearl, or huge circles of brass wire not unlike a Hindu tailor's; and their fore-arms, wrists, and fingers were, after an African fashion, adorned with the same metals, which the savage ever prefers to gold or silver. Their other decorations were cravats of white or white and blue, oval beads, and necklaces of plates like those worn in the hair. The body dress was a tight sleeved waistcoat of dark drugget, over an American cotton shirt; others wore tattered flannels, and the middle was wrapped round with a common blanket, presented by the government agent, — scarlet and blue being the colours preferred, white rare: — a better stuff is the coarse broadcloth manufactured for the Indian market in the United States. The leggings were a pair of pantaloons without the body part — in their palmy days the Indians laughed to scorn their future conquerors for tightening the hips so as to impede activity — looped up at both hanuches with straps to a leathern girdle, and all wore the breech cloth, which is the common Hindu languti or T-bandage. The cut of the leggings is a parallelogram, a little too short and much too broad for the limb; it is sewn so as to fit tight, and the projecting edges, for which the light coloured list or bordering is usually preserved,

answers the effect of a military stripe. When buckskin leggings are made the outside edges are fringed, producing that feathered appearance which distinguishes in our pictures the nether limbs of the Indian brave. The garb ends with moccasins*, the American brogues, which are made in two ways. The simplest are of one piece, a cylinder of skin cut from above and below the hock of some large animal — moose, elk, or buffalo — and drawn on before shrinking, the joint forming the heel, whilst the smaller end is sewn together for a toe. This rough contrivance is little used but as a *pis-aller*. The other kind is made of tanned hide in two pieces; a sole and an upper leather, sewn together at the junction; the last is a bit of board rounded off at the end. They are open over the instep, where also they can be laced or tied, and they fit as closely as the Egyptian mizz or under-slipper, which they greatly resemble. They are worn by officers in the far West as the expatriated Anglo-Indian adopts the "Juti." The greatest inconvenience to the novice is the want of heel; moreover, they render the feet uncomfortably tender, and unless soled with parfléche or thick leather, they are scant defence against stony ground; during dry weather they will last fairly, but they become, after a single wetting, even worse than Bombay-made Wellingtons. A common pair will cost $2; when handsomely embroidered with bead-work by the squaws they rise to $15.

The braves were armed with small tomahawks or iron hatchets, which they carried with the powder horn, in the belt, on the right side, while the long tobacco-pouch of antelope skin hung by the left. Over their shoulders were leather targes, bows and arrows, and some few had rifles; both weapons were defended from damp in deerskin cases, and quivers with the inevitable bead-work, and the fringes which every savage seems to love. These articles reminded me of those in use amongst the Bedouins of El Hejaz. Their nags were lean and ungroomed; they treat them as cruelly as do the Somal; yet nothing — short of whiskey — can persuade the Indian warrior, like the man of Nejd, to part with a favourite steed. It is his all in all, his means of livelihood, his profession, his pride; he is an excellent judge of horseflesh, though ignoring the mule and ass; and if he offers an animal for

* This Algonquin word is written moccasson or mocassin, and is pronounced moksin.

which he has once refused to trade, it is for the reason that an Oriental takes to market an adult slave — it has become useless. Like the Arab he considers it dishonourable to sell a horse; he gives it to you, expecting a large present, and if disappointed he goes away grumbling that you have "swallowed" his property. He is fond of short races, — spurts they are called, — as we had occasion to see; there is nothing novel nor interesting in the American as there is in the Arabian hippology; the former learnt all its arts from Europeans, the latter taught them.

Behind the warriors and braves followed the baggage of the village. The lodge-poles, in bundles of four and five, had been lashed to pads or packsaddles, girthed tight to the ponies' backs, the other ends being allowed to trail along the ground, like the shafts of a truck; the sign easily denotes the course of travel. The wolf-like dogs were also harnessed in the same way; more lupine than canine, they are ready when hungry to attack man or mule; and, sharp-nosed and prick-eared, they not a little resemble the Indian pariah dog. Their equipments, however, were of course on a diminutive scale, a little pad girthed round the barrel, with a breastplate to keep it in place, enabled them to drag two short light lodge-poles tied together at the smaller extremity. One carried only a hawk on its back — yet falconry has never, I believe, been practised by the Indian. Behind the ponies the poles were connected by cross sticks, upon which were lashed the lodge covers, the buffalo robes, and other bulkier articles. Some had strong frames of withes or willow basket-work, two branches being bent into an oval, garnished below with a network of hide thongs for a seat, covered with a light wicker canopy, and opening, like a cage, only on one side; a blanket or a buffalo robe defends the inmate from sun and rain. These are the litters for the squaws when weary, the children, and the puppies, which are part of the family till used for feasts. It might be supposed to be a rough conveyance; the elasticity of the poles, however, alleviates much of that inconvenience. A very ancient man, wrinkled as a last year's walnut, and apparently crippled by old wounds, was carried, probably by his great-grandsons, in a rude sedan. The vehicle was composed of two pliable poles, about ten feet long, separated by three cross bars, twenty inches or so apart; a blanket had been secured to the foremost

and hindermost, and under the centre-bit lay Senex secured against falling out. In this way the Indians often bear the wounded back to their villages; apparently they have never thought of a horse-litter, which might be made with equal facility and would certainly save work.

Whilst the rich squaws rode the poorer followed their pack-horses on foot, eyeing the more fortunate as the mercer's wife regards what she terms the "carriage lady." The women's dress not a little resembles their lords'; the unaccustomed eye often hesitates between the sexes. In the fair, however, the waistcoat is absent, the wide-sleeved shift extends below the knees, and the leggings are of somewhat different cut. All wore coarse shawls, or white, blue, and scarlet cloth-blankets round their bodies. Upon the upper Platte we afterwards saw them dressed in cotton gowns, after a semi-civilised fashion, and with bowie knives by their sides. The grandmothers were fearful to look upon, horrid excrescences of nature, teaching proud man a lesson of humility, and a memento of his neighbour in creation, the "humble ape;" — it is only civilisation that can save the aged woman from resembling the gorilla. The middle-aged matrons were homely bodies, broad and squat like the African dame after she has become *mère de famille*; their hands and feet were notably larger from work than those of the men, and the burdens upon their backs caused them to stoop painfully. The young squaws — pity it is that all our household Indian words, papoose, for instance, tomahawk, wigwam, and powwow, should have been naturalised out of the Abenaki and other harsh dialects of new England — deserved a more euphonious appellation. The belle savage of the party had large and languishing eyes and dentists' teeth that glittered, with sleek, long black hair like the ears of a Blenheim spaniel, justifying a natural instinct to stroke or pat it, drawn straight over a low broad Quadroon-like brow. Her figure had none of the fragility which distinguishes the higher race, who are apparently too delicate for human nature's daily food — porcelain, in fact, when pottery is wanted; — nor had she the square corpulency which appears in the negro woman after marriage. Her ears and neck were laden with tinsel ornaments, brass wire rings adorned her wrists and fine arms, a bead-work sash encircled her waist, and scarlet leggings, fringed and tasselled, ended in equally costly moccasins. When addressed by

the driver in some terms to me unintelligible, she replied with a soft clear laugh — the principal charm of the Indian as of the smooth-throated African woman — at the same time showing him the palm of her right hand as though it had been a looking-glass. The gesture would have had a peculiar significance in Sindh; here, however, I afterwards learned, it simply conveys a refusal. The maidens of the tribe, or those under six, were charming little creatures, with the wildest and most piquant expression, and the prettiest doll-like features imaginable; the young coquettes already conferred their smiles as if they had been of any earthly value. The boys once more reminded me of the East; they had black beady eyes, like snakes, and the wide mouths of young caymans. Their only dress, when they were not in "birth-day suit," was the Indian languti. None of the braves carried scalps, finger bones, or notches on the lance, which serve like certain marks on saw-handled pistols further east, nor had any man lost a limb. They followed us for many a mile, peering into the hinder part of our travelling wigwam, and ejaculating "How! How!" the normal salutation. It is supposed to mean "good," and the Western man, when he drinks to your health, says "Here, how!" and expects a return in kind. The politeness of the savages did not throw us off our guard; the Dakota of these regions are expert and daring kleptomaniacs; they only laughed, however, a little knowingly as we raised the rear curtain, and they left us after begging pertinaciously — Bakhshish is an institution here as on the banks of the Nile — for tobacco, gunpowder, ball, copper caps, lucifers and what not? The women, except the pretty party, looked, methought, somewhat scowlingly, but one can hardly expect a smiling countenance from the human biped trudging ten or twenty miles under a load fit for a mule. A great contrast with these Indians was a train of "Pikespeakers," who, to judge from their grim looks, were returning disappointed from the new gold-diggings. I think that if obliged to meet one of the two troops by moonlight alone, my choice would have fallen upon "messieurs les sauvages."

At 6 P.M. we resumed our route, with a good but fidgetty train, up the Dark Valley, where mosquitoes and sultry heat combined to worry us. Slowly travelling and dozing the while, we arrived about 9·15 P.M. at Diamond Springs, a bright little water much frequented by the "lightning-bug" and the big-eyed

"Devil's darning-needle,"* where we found whiskey and its usual accompaniment, soldiers. The host related an event which he said had taken place but a few days before. An old mountaineer, who had married two squaws, was drinking with certain Cheyennes, a tribe famous for ferocity and hostility to the whites. The discourse turning upon topics stoical, he was asked by his wild boon-companions if he feared death? The answer was characteristic: "You may kill me if you like!" Equally characteristic was their acknowledgment; they hacked him to pieces, and threw the corpse under a bank. In these regions the opposite races regard each other as wild beasts; the white will shoot an Indian as he would a coyote. He expects to go under whenever the "all-fired, red-bellied varmints"—I speak, O reader, occidentally—get the upper hand, and *vice versâ*.

The Platte river divides at N. lat. 40° 05′ 05″, and W. long. (G.) 101° 21′ 24″. The northern, by virtue of dimensions, claims to be the main stream. The southern, which is also called in obsolete maps Padouca, from the Pawnee name for the Ietans, whom the Spaniards term Comanches†, averages 600 yards, about 100 less than its rival in breadth, and according to the prairie people affords the best drinking. Hunters often ford the river by the Lower Crossing, twenty-eight miles above the bifurcation. Those with heavily-loaded wagons prefer this route, as by it they avoid the deep loose sands on the way to the Upper Crossing. The mail coach must endure the four miles of difficulty, as the road to Denver City branches off from the western ford.

At 10 P.M., having "caught up" the mules, we left Diamond Springs and ran along the shallow river which lay like a thin sheet of shimmer broken by clumps and islets that simulated under the imperfect light of the stars, houses and towns, hulks and ships, wharfs and esplanades. On the banks large bare spots

* The first is the fire fly, the second is the dragon-fly, called in country parts of England "the Devil's needle."

† The Kaumainah (Comanche) a warlike and independent race, who, with the Apaches, have long been the bane of New Spain, were in the beginning of this century entirely erratic, without any kind of cultivation, subsisting, in fact, wholly by the chase and plunder. They were then bounded westward by New Mexico, where they have laid waste many a thriving settlement: eastward by the Pawnees and Osages; northwards by the Utahs, Kiowas, and Shoshones; and southwards by the nations on the Lower Red River.

white with salt glistened through the glooms, the land became so heavy that our fagged beasts groaned, and the descents, watercuts and angles were so abrupt that holding on constituted a fair gymnastic exercise. The air was clear and fine. My companions snored whilst I remained awake enjoying a lovely aurora, and Epicurean-like reserving sleep for the Sybaritic apparatus, which, according to report, awaited us at the grand *établissement* of the Upper Crossing of La Grande Platte.

This was our fifth night in the mail wagon. I could not but meditate upon the difference between travel in the pure prairie air, despite an occasional "chill," and the perspiring miseries of an East Indian dawk, or of a trudge in the miasmatic and pestilential regions of Central Africa. Much may be endured when, as was ever the case, the highest temperature in the shade does not exceed 98° F.

12th August.—We cross the Platte.

Boreal aurora glared brighter than a sunset in Syria. The long streamers were intercepted and mysteriously confused by a massive stratum of dark cloud, through whose narrow rifts and jagged chinks the splendours poured in floods of magic fire. Near the horizon the tint was an opalline white,—a broad band of calm steady light,—supporting a tender rose colour, which flushed to crimson as it scaled the upper firmament. The mobility of the spectacle was its chiefest charm. The streamers either shot out or shrank from full to half-length; now they flared up, widening till they filled the space between Lucifer rising in the east and Aries setting in the west, then they narrowed to the size of a span; now they stood like a red arch with steadfast legs and oscillating summit, then, broadening at the apex, they apparently revolved with immense rapidity; at times the stars shone undimmed through the veil of light, then they were immersed in its exceeding brilliancy. After a full hour of changeful beauty, paling in one place and blushing in another, the northern lights slowly faded away with a blush which made the sunrise look colder than its wont. It is no wonder that the imaginative Indian, looking with love upon these beauties, connects them with the ghosts of his ancestors.

Cramped with cold and inaction,—at 6 A.M. the thermometer

showed only 56° F. in the sun;—hungry, thirsty, and by no means in the mildest of humours, we hear with a gush of joy, at 3·15 A.M. the savage Yep! yep! yep! with which the driver announces our approach. The plank lodgings soon appear; we spring out of the ambulance, a qualm comes over us, all is dark and silent as the grave; nothing is prepared for us; the wretches are all asleep. A heavy kick opens the door of the soon-found restaurant, when a pheesy, drowsy voice from an inner room asks us, in German-English, — so strong is the causality, the crapulousness of why and wherefore in this "divided, erudite race!"— "And how se komen in?" Without attempting to gratify his intellectual cravings, we ordered him out of bed, and began to talk of supper, refreshment, and repose. But the "critter" had waxed surly after securing for himself a compound epithet, of which "hunds—" is the first syllable, and his every negative answer concluded with a faint murmur of "petampt." I tried to get his bed for Mrs. Dana, who was suffering severely from fatigue. He grumbled out that his "lady and bebé" were occupying it. At length I hit upon the plan of placing the cushions and cloaks upon the table, when the door opened for a second dog-Teuton, who objected to that article of furniture being used otherwise than for his morning meal. *Excédés*, and mastering with pain our desire to give these villain "sausage-eaters" "particular fits," we sat down, stared at the fire, and awaited the vile food. For a breakfast cooked in the usual manner, coffee boiled down to tannin (ever the first operation), meat subjected to half sod, half stew, and lastly, bread raised with sour milk corrected with soda, and so baked that the taste of the flour is ever prominent, we paid these German rascals $0·75, a little dearer than at the Trois Frères.

At the Upper Crossing of the South Fork there are usually tender adieux; the wenders towards Mormonland bidding farewell to those bound for the perilous gold regions of Denver City and Pike's Peak. If "fresh," they take leave of one another with sincere commiseration for one another's dooms, each deeming of course his own the brighter. The wagons were unloaded, thus giving us the opportunity of procuring changes of raiment and fresh caps—our felts had long disappeared under the influence of sleeping on the perch. By some means we retained our old ambulance, which after five days

and nights we had learned to look upon as a home; the Judiciary, however, had to exchange theirs for one much lighter and far less comfortable. Presently those bound to Denver City set out upon their journey. Conspicuous among them was a fair woman who had made her first appearance at Cotton Wood Creek—fit place for the *lune de miâsse*—with an individual, apparently a well-to-do drover, whom she called "Tom" and "husband." She had forgotten her "fixins" which, according to a mischievous and scandalous driver, consisted of a reticule containing a "bishop," a comb, and a pomatum pot, a pinch-beck watch, and a flask of "Bawme,"—not of Meccah. Being a fine young person of Scotch descent, she had, till dire suspicions presented themselves, attracted the attentions of her fellow travellers, who pronounced her to be "all sorts of a gal." But virtue is rabid in these lands, and the purity of the ermine must not be soiled. It was fortunate for Mr. and Mrs. Mann, the names were *noms de voyage*, that they left us so soon. In a certain southern city I heard of a high official, who during a trip upon one of the floating palaces of the Mississippi, had to repeat "deprendi miserum est;" the fond, frail pair was summarily ejected with bag and baggage to furnish itself with a down stream passage on board a lumber raft.

We crossed the "Padouca" at 6·30 A.M., having placed our luggage and the mails for security in an ox cart. The South Fork is here 600 to 700 yards broad; the current is swift, but the deepest water not exceeding 250 feet the teams are not compelled to cross diagonally. The channel was broken with sandbanks and islets, the bed was dark, and gravelly, the water, though dark as hotel coffee, was clear, not as described by Captain Stansbury "perfectly opake, with thick yellow mud," and the earthbanks which rise to five feet are never inundated. The half-broken mules often halted, and seemed inclined to lie down; a youth waded on the lower side of the team, shouting and swinging his arms to keep them from turning their heads down stream; the instinct of animals to find an easy ford ended with a few desperate struggles up the black oozy mire. Having reloaded on the left bank, and cast one last look of hatred upon the scene of our late disappointment, we set out at 7 A.M. to cross the divide separating the Northern and Southern Forks of the Platte.

We had now entered upon the outskirts of the American wilderness, which has not one feature in common with the deserts of the Old World. In Arabia and Africa there is majesty in its monotony: those awful wastes so brightly sunburnished that the air above them appears by contrast black: one vast and burning floor, variegated only by the mirage-reek, with nothing below the firmament to relieve or correct the eye. Here it is a brown smooth space, insensibly curving out of sight, wholly wanting "second distance," and scarcely suggesting the idea of immensity; we seem in fact to be travelling for twenty miles over a convex, treeless hill-top. The air became sultry, white clouds shut in the sky, and presently arose the high south wind, which at this season blows a gale between 10 A.M. and 3 P.M. The ground, bleached where sandy, was thinly scattered here and there with wiry grass, dun and withered, and with coarse and sunburnt shrubs, amongst which the "leadplant" (*Amorpha canescens*) was the characteristic. A dwarf aloetic vegetation became abundant; vegetation was fast going the way of all grass; after rain, however, it is doubtless fresh and copious. The buffalo grass sought the shade of the wild sage. A small euphorbia, the cottonweed, a thistle haunted by the Cynthia cardui, that butterfly common to the eastern and western hemispheres, and a bright putoria mingled with mushrooms, like huge bulbs. The cactus was of two kinds; the flat leaved species is used by white men to filter water, and by the savages, who peel and toast it, as provaunt*: there is another globular variety (an *echinocactus*) lying stalkless, like a half melon, with its brilliant flowers guarded by a panoply of spines. We pursued a sandy tract, broken by beds of nullahs and fiumaras, between two ridges of hillocks, draining to the right into a low bottom denoted by a

* There is another kind of cactus called by the whites "whiskey-root," and by the Indian "peioke," used like the intoxicating mushroom of Siberia. "It grows in Southern Texas, in the range of sand-hills bordering on the Rio Grande, and in gravelly, sandy soil. The Indians eat it for its exhilarating effect on the system, producing precisely the same excitement as alcoholic drinks. It is sliced as you would a cucumber, the small piece is chewed and swallowed, and in about the same time as comfortably tight cocktails would 'stir the divinity within' you, this indicates itself; only its effects are what I might term a little *h-a-v-o-r-i-n-g*, giving rather a wilder scope to the imagination and actions." (A Correspondent of the *New Orleans Picayune*, quoted by Mr. Bartlett).

lively green, with bays and bends of lush, reedlike grass. This is the well known Lodge Pole Creek or Fork, a mere ditch, the longest and narrowest of its kind, rising from a mountain lakelet near the "New Bayou" or "Park," in the Black Hills, and falling into the South Fork of the Platte, about seventy miles west of the bifurcation. By following up this water along the Cherokee trail to its head in the Cheyenne Pass of the Rocky Mountains, instead of describing the arc *viâ* Fort Laramie, the mail would gain 61 miles: emigrants, indeed, often prefer the short cut. Moreover, from the Cheyenne Pass to Gt. S. L. City, there is, according to accounts, a practicable road south of the present line which, as it would also save time and labour, has been preferred for the mail line.

In the American Sahara animal life began to appear. The coyote turned and stared at us as though we were trespassing upon his property. This is the jackal of the western world, the small prairie-wolf, the *canis latrans*, and the old Mexican coyotl, best depicted by the old traveller, Abbé Clavigero, in these words: "It is a wild beast, voracious like the wolf, cunning like the fox, in form like the dog, and in some qualities like the jackal." The animal has so often been described that there is little new to say about it. The mountain men are all agreed upon one thing, namely, that the meat is by no means bad; most of them have tried "wolf-mutton" in hard times, and may expect to do so again. The civilizee shudders at the idea of eating wolf from a food-prejudice, whose consideration forms a curious chapter in human history. It is not very easy, says Dr. Johnson, to fix the principles upon which mankind have agreed to eat some animals and reject others; and as the principle is not evident, so it is not uniform. Originally invented for hygienic purposes, dietetic laws soon became tenets of religion, and passed far beyond their original intention: thus pork, for instance, injurious in Syria, would not be eaten by a Jew in Russia. An extreme arbitrariness marks the modern systems of civilised people: the Englishman, for instance, eats oysters, periwinkles, shrimps, and frogs, whilst he is nauseated by the snails, robins, and crows which the Frenchman uses; the Italian will devour a hawk, whilst he considers a rabbit impure, and has refused to touch potatoes even in a famine; and all delight in that foul feeder, the duck, whilst they reject the meat of the

cleanly ass. The Mosaic law seems still to influence the European world, causing men to throw away much valuable provision because unaccustomed to eat it or to hear of its being eaten. The systems of China and Japan are far more sensible for densely populated countries, and the hippophagists have shown, at least, that one animal has been greatly wasted. The terrible famines, followed by the equally fearful pestilences, which have scourged mankind, are mainly owing to the prevalence of these food-prejudices, which, as might be expected, are the most deeply rooted in the poorer classes, who can least afford them.

I saw to-day, for the first time, a prairie-dog village. The little beast, hardly as large as a guinea-pig, belongs to the family of squirrels and the group of marmots — in point of manner it somewhat resembles the monkey. "Wish-ton-Wish"* — an Indian onomatoplasm — was at home, sitting posted like a sentinel upon the roof, and sunning himself in the mid-day glow. It is not easy to shoot him; he is out of doors all day; but, timid and alert, at the least suspicion of danger he plunges with a jerking of the tail, and a somersault, quicker than a shy young rabbit's, into the nearest hole, peeping from the ground, and keeping up a feeble little cry (wish! ton! wish!), more like the note of a bird than a bark. If not killed outright, he will manage to wriggle into his home. The villages are generally on the brow of a hill, near a creek or pond, thus securing water without danger of drowning. The earth burrowed out whilst making the habitations is thrown up in heaps, which serve as sitting places in the wet season, and give a look-out upon the adjacent country; it is more dangerous to ride over them than to charge a field of East Indian "T'hur," and many a broken leg and collar-bone have been the result. The holes, which descend in a spiral form, must be deep, and they are connected by long galleries, with sharp angles, ascents and descents, to puzzle the pursuer. Lieutenant Pike had 140 kettles of water poured into one, without dislodging the occupant. The village is always cleared of grass, probably by the necessities of the tenants, who, though

* The name will recall to mind one of Mr. Fennimore Cooper's admirable fictions, the "Wept of Wish-ton-Wish," which was, however, a bird, the "Whip-poor-Will," or American night hawk.

they enjoy insects, are mainly graminivorous, and rarely venture half a mile from home. The limits are sometimes three miles square, and the population must be dense, as a burrow will occur every few paces. The *Cynomys Ludovicianus* prepares for winter by stopping the mouth of its burrow, and constructing a deeper cell, in which it hybernates till spring appears. It is a graceful little animal, dark brown above and white below, with teeth and nails, head and tail somewhat like the grey sciurus of the States. The Indians and trappers eat this American marmot, declaring its flesh to be fatter and better than that of the squirrel. Some travellers advise exposing the meat for a night or two to the frost, by which means the rankness of subterranean flavour is corrected. It is undoubted that the rattlesnake — both of the yellow and black species — and the small white burrowing-owl (*Strix cunicularia*) are often found in the same warren with this rodent, a curious happy family of reptile, bird, and beast, and in some places he has been seen to associate with tortoises, rattlesnakes, and horned frogs (*Phrynosoma*). According to some naturalists, however, the fraternal harmony is not so perfect as it might be: the owl is accused of occasionally gratifying his carnivorous lusts by laying open the skull of Wish-ton-Wish with a smart stroke of the beak. We sighted, not far from the prairie-dog village, an animal which I took to be a lynx; but the driver, who had often seen the beast in Minnesota and Old "Ouisconsine," declared that they are not to be found here.

At 12.45 P.M., travelling over the uneven barren, and in a burning Sciroccо, we reached Lodge-pole Station, where we made our "noonin." The hovel fronting the creek was built like an Irish shanty, or a Beloch hut, against a hill side, to save one wall, and it presented a fresh phase of squalor and wretchedness. The mud walls were partly papered with "Harper's Magazine," "Frank Leslie," and the "New York Illustrated News;" the ceiling was a fine festoon-work of soot, and the floor was much like the ground outside, only not nearly so clean. In a corner stood the usual "bunk,"* a mass of mingled rags and buffalo

* American writers derive this word from the Anglo-Saxon *bone*, whence the modern English "bench." It means a wooden case used in country taverns and in offices, and serving alike for a seat during the day and a bed at night. In towns it is applied to the tiers of standing bed peculiar to the lowest class of lodging-houses. In the West it is a frame-work, in size and shape like a berth on board ship, sometimes single, sometimes double or treble.

robes; the centre of the room was occupied by a ricketty table, and boxes, turned-up on their long sides, acted as chairs. The unescapable stove was there, filling the interior with the aroma of meat. As usual, the materials for ablution, a "dipper" or cup, a dingy tin skillet of scanty size, a bit of coarse gritty soap, and a public towel, like a rag of gunny bag, were deposited upon a ricketty settle outside.

There being no "lady" at the station on Lodge-pole Creek, milk was unprocurable. Here, however, began a course of antelope venison, which soon told upon us with damaging effect. I well knew the consequences of this heating and bilious diet in Asia and Africa; but thinking it safe to do at Rome as the Romans do, I followed in the wake of my companions, and suffered with them. Like other wild meats, bear, deer, elk, and even buffalo, antelope will disagree with a stranger; it is, however, juicy, fat, and well-flavoured, especially when compared with the hard, dry, stringy stuff which the East affords; and the hunter and trapper, like the Indian, are loud in its praise.

The habitat of the prong-horn antelope (*Antelocapra Americana*, called "le cabris" by the Canadian, and "the goat" by the unpoetic mountain man) extends from the plains west of the Missouri to the Pacific Ocean — it is also abundant on Minnesota and o nthe banks of the Red River; its southern limit is Northern Mexico, whence it ranges to 53° north lat. on the Saskatchewan. It is about the size of a small deer, the male weighing 65 lbs. in good condition. The coat is coarse and wiry, yellow dun on the back, with dull white under the belly, and the tanned skin is worth three dollars. It is at once the fleetest and the wariest animal on the prairies, and its sense of hearing as acute as its power of smell. The best time for "still hunting" (i.e. stalking) is at early dawn, when the little herds of four or five are busy grazing. They disappear during the midday heats of summer, and in the evening, as in India and Arabia, they are wild and wary. They assemble in larger bodies near the Rocky Mountains, where pasturage — not sage, which taints the meat — abounds, and the Indian savages kill them by surrounds, especially in winter, when the flesh is fattest. White men usually stalk them. During the migration season few are seen near the road; at other times they are often sighted. They are gifted, like the hippopotamus, with a truly feminine curiosity;

they will stand for minutes to stare at a red wagon-bed, and despite their extreme wariness, they will often approach, within shot, a scarlet kerchief tied to a stick, or any similar decoy. In manner they much resemble the Eastern gazelle. When the herd is disturbed, the most timid moves off first, followed by the rest; the walk gradually increases from a slow trot to a bounding gallop. At times they halt, one by one, and turn to gaze, but they presently resume flight, till they reach some prominent place where their keen vision can command the surrounding country. When well roused, they are thoroughly on the alert; the hunter will often find that, though he has moved towards them silently, up the wind and under cover, they have suspected sinister intentions and have shifted ground.

Besides the antelope, there are three species of deer in the regions east of the Rocky Mountains. Perhaps the most common is the red deer of the Eastern States (*Cervus Virginianus*; *le chevreuil*): it extends almost throughout the length of the continent, and is seemingly independent of altitude as of latitude. The venison is not considered equal to that of the antelope; travellers, however, kill off the deer to save butchers' bills, so that it is now seldom "glimpsed" from the line of route. The black-tailed or long-eared deer (*Cervus macrotis*) is confined to the higher ground; it has similar habits to the red variety, and is hunted in the same way. The long-tailed, or jumping deer (*Cervus leucurus*, vulgarly called the roebuck), affects, like the black-tailed, the Rocky Mountains. The elk (*Cervus Canadensis*) is found in parts of Utah Territory and forty miles north of the mail-road, near the Wind River Mountains—a perfect paradise for sportsmen. It is noble shooting, but poor eating as the Indian sambar.* The moose (*Cervus Alces*), the giant of the deer kind, sometimes rising seventeen hands high, and weighing 1200 lbs., is an inhabitant of higher latitudes,—Nova Scotia, Canada, Maine, and other parts of New England.

At Lodge-pole Station, the mules, as might be expected from animals allowed to run wild every day in the week except

* The elk is being domesticated in the State of New York; it is still, however, doubtful whether the animals will fatten well or supply milk, or serve for other than ornamental purposes.

one, were like newly-caught mustangs.* The herdsman—each station boasts of this official—mounted a nag barebacked, and, jingling a bell, drove the cattle into the corral, a square of twenty yards, formed by a wall of loose stones, four to five feet high. He wasted three quarters of an hour in this operation, which a well-trained shepherd's dog would have performed in a few minutes. Then two men entering with lassos or lariats, thongs of flexible plaited or twisted hide, and provided with an iron ring at one end to form the noose—the best are made of hemp, Russian, not Manilla—proceeded, in a great "mum" on a small scale, to secure their victims. The lasso† in their hands was by no means the "unerring necklace" which the Mexican *vaquéro* has taught it to be: they often missed their aim, or caught the wrong animal. The effect, however, was magical: a single haul at the noose made the most stiffnecked mule tame as a costermonger's ass. The team took, as usual, a good hour to trap and hitch up: the latter was a delicate operation, for the beasts were comically clever with their hoofs.

At 3 P. M., after a preliminary ringing, intended to soothe the fears of Madame, we set out *au grand galop*, with a team that had never worked together before. They dashed down the cahues with a violence that tossed us as in a blanket, and nothing could induce them, while fresh, to keep the path. The yawing of the vehicle was ominous: fortunately, however, the road, though self-made, was excellent; the sides were smooth, and the whole country fit to be driven over. At first the view was sadly monotonous. It was a fair specimen of the rolling prairie, in nowise differing from any other land, except in the absence of trees. According to some travellers, there is in

* The mustang is the Spanish mestefio. The animal was introduced by the first colonists, and allowed to run at large. Its great variety of coat proves the mustang's degeneracy from the tame horse; according to travellers, cream-colour, dun-bald, and piebald, being not uncommon. "Sparing in diet, a stranger to grain, easily satisfied whether on growing or dead grass, inured to all weathers, and capable of great labour," the mustang-pony is a treasure to the prairie-man.

† According to Mr. Bartlett, the lasso (Span. "lazo") is synonymous with "lariat" (Span. "lariata"). In common use, however, the first word is confined to the rope with which buffalos, mustangs, or mules are caught; the second, which in the West is popularly pronounced "lariet," or "lariette," more generally means the article with which animals are picketed. Many authors, however, have made "lariat" the equivalent of "lasso." The Texans use, instead of the hide lasso, a hair rope called "cabresa," from the Spanish "cabestro," a halter.

several places an apparently progressive decay of the timber; showing that formerly it was more extensive than it is now. Others attribute the phenomenon to the destruction of forests in a former era by fires or by the aborigines. It is more satisfactory to account for it by a complication of causes, —a want of proper constituents, an insufficiency of rain, the depth of the water below the surface, the severity of the eight months of winter snow, the fierce winds—the hardiest growths that present their heads above the level of the prairies have dead tops,—the shortness of the summers, and last, but not least, the clouds of grasshoppers. According to Lieutenant Warren, whose graphic description is here borrowed, these insects are "nearly the same as the locusts of Egypt; and no one who has not travelled on the prairie, and seen for himself, can appreciate the magnitude of the swarms. Often they fill the air for many miles of extent, so that an inexperienced eye can scarcely distinguish their appearance from that of a shower of rain or the smoke of a prairie fire. The height of their flight may be somewhat appreciated, as Mr. E. James saw them above his head, as far as their size would render them visible, while standing on the top of a peak of the Rocky Mountains, 8,500 feet above the plain, and an elevation of 14,500 above that of the sea, in the region where the snow lies all the year. To a person standing in one of these swarms as they pass over and around him, the air becomes sensibly darkened, and the sound produced by their wings resembles that of the passage of a train of cars on a railroad when standing two or three hundred yards from the track. The Mormon settlements have suffered more from the ravages of these insects than probably all other causes combined. They destroyed nearly all the vegetables cultivated last year at Fort Randall, and extended their ravages east as far as Iowa."

As we advanced, the horizon, everywhere within musket-shot—a wearying sight!—widened out, and the face of the country notably changed. A scrap of blue distance and high hills—the "Court-house" and others—appeared to the north-west. The long, curved lines, the gentle slopes and the broad hollows of the divide facing the South Fork changed into an abrupt and precipitous descent, "gullied" like the broken ground of subranges attached to a mountain chain. Deep ravines were parted by long narrow ridges, sharp-crested and water-washed, exposing

ribs and backbones of sandstone and silicious lime, like the vertebræ of some huge saurian: scatters of kunker, with a detritus of quartz and granite, clothed the ground, and, after passing Lodge-pole Creek, which bears away to the west, the rocky steps required the perpetual application of the break. Presently we saw a dwarf cliff enclosing in an elliptical sweep a green amphitheatre, the valley of our old friend the Platte. On the far bank of its northern fork lay a forty-mile-stretch of sandy, barren, glaring, heat-reeking ground, not unlike that which the overland traveller looking southwards from Suez sees.* We left far to the right a noted spot, Ash Hollow, situated at the mouth of the creek of the same prenomen. It is described as a pretty bit in a barren land, about twenty acres, surrounded by high bluffs, well timbered with ash and cedar, and rich in clematis and other wild flowers. Here, in 1855, the doughty General Harney, with 700 to 800 men, "gave Jessie" to a large war-party of Brulé Sioux under their chief Little Thunder, of whom more anon, killing 150, and capturing 60 squaws and children, with but seven or eight casualties in his own force.

Descending into the bed of a broad "arroyo,"† at this season bone dry, we reached, at 5.45 P.M., Mud Spring Station, which takes its name from a little run of clear water in a black miry hollow. A kind of cress grows in it abundantly, and the banks are bright with the "morning glory" or convolvulus. The station-house was not unlike an Egyptian Fellah's hut. The material was sod, half peat with vegetable matter; it is taken up in large flakes after being furrowed with the plough, and is cut to proper lengths with a short-handled spade. Cedar timber‡, brought from the neighbouring hills, formed the roof. The only accommodation was an open shed, with a sort of doorless dormitory by its side. We dined in the shed, and amused ourselves with feeding the little brown-speckled swamp-

* According to Lieut. Warren, the tract called the Sandhills occupies an area, north of the Platte, not less than 20,000 square miles; from between the Niobrara and White Rivers to the north, probably beyond the Arkansas in the south.

† The Arabo-Spanish "arroyo," a word almost naturalised by the Anglo-Americans, strictly corresponds with the Italian "fiumara," and the Indian nullah.

‡ The word "cedar," in the United States, is applied to various genera of the pine family. The red cedar (*J. Virginiana*) is a juniper. The "white cedar" of the southern swamps is a cypress.

blackbirds that hopped about us tame and "peert" as wrens, and when night drew near we sought shelter from the furious southern gale, and heard tales of Mormon suffering which made us think lightly of our little hardships.* Dreading the dormitory — if it be true that the sultan of fleas inhabits Jaffa and his wazir Grand Cairo, it is certain that his vermin officials have settled *pro tem.* on Emigration Road — I cast about for a quieter retreat. Fortune favoured me by pointing out the body of a dismantled wagon, an article — like the Tyrian keels which suggested the magalia — often used as a habitation in the Far West, and not unfrequently honoured by being converted into a bridal-chamber after the short and sharp courtship of the "Perraries." The host, who was a kind, intelligent, and civil man, lent me a "buffalo" by way of bedding; the waterproof completed my outfit, provided with which I bade adieu for a while to this weary world. The thermometer sank before dawn to 62° (F.). After five nights more or less in the tramping wagon it might be supposed that we should have enjoyed the unusual rest; on the contrary, we had become inured to the exercise, we could have kept it up for a month, and we now grumbled only at the loss of time.

Past the Court House and Scott's Bluffs. August 18th.

At 8 A.M., after breaking our fast upon a tough antelope-steak, and dawdling whilst the herdsman was riding wildly about in search of his runaway mules — an operation now to become of daily occurrence — we dashed over the Sandy Creek

* The Mormon emigrants usually start from Council Bluffs, on the left bank of the Missouri River, in north lat. 41° 18′ 60″, opposite Kanesville, otherwise called Winter Quarters. According to the "Overland Guide," Council Bluffs is the natural crossing of the Missouri River, as the route destined by nature for the great thoroughfare to the Pacific. This was the road selected by "nature's civil engineers," the buffalo and the elk, for their western travel. The Indians followed them in the same trail; then the travellers; next the settlers came. After ninety-four miles' marching, the Mormons are ferried across Loup Fork, a stream thirteen rods wide, full of bars, with banks and a bottom all quicksand. Another 180 miles takes them to the Platte River, where they find good camping-places with plenty of water, buffalo-chips, and grass. Eighty-two miles beyond that point (a total of 306), they arrive at "Last Timber," a station so called because, for the next 200 miles on the north side of the Platte, the only sign of vegetation is "Lone Tree." Many emigrants avoid this dreary "spell" by crossing the Platte opposite Ash Hollow. Others pass it at Platte River Ferry, a short distance below the mouth of Laramie River, whilst others keep the old road to the north.

with an *élan* calculated to make timid passengers look "skeery," and began to finish the rolling divide between the two Forks. We crossed several arroyos and "criks" heading in the line of clay highlands to our left, a dwarf sierra which stretches from the northern to the southern branch of the Platte. The principal are Omaha Creek, more generally known as "Little Punkin,"* and Lawrence Fork.† The latter is a pretty bubbling stream, running over sand and stones washed down from the Court-house Ridge; it bifurcates above the ford, runs to the north-east through a prairie four to five miles broad, and swells the waters of old Father Platte: it derives its name from a Frenchman slaughtered by the Indians, murder being here, as in Central Africa, ever the principal source of nomenclature. The heads of both streams afford quantities of currants, red, black, and yellow, and cherry-sticks which are used for spears and pipe-stems.

After twelve miles' drive we fronted the Court-house, the remarkable portal of a new region, and this new region teeming with wonders will now extend about 100 miles. It is the *mauvaises terres*, or Bad lands, a tract about 60 miles wide and 150 long, stretching in a direction from the north-east to the south-west, or from the Mankisitah (White Earth) River, over the Niobrara (*Eau qui court*) and Loup Fork to the south banks of the Platte: its eastern limit is the mouth of the Keya Paha. The term is generally applied by the trader to any section of the prairie country where the roads are difficult, and by dint of an ill name the Bad lands have come to be spoken of as a Golgotha, white with the bones of man and beast. American travellers, on the contrary, declare that near parts of the White River "some as beautiful valleys are to be found as anywhere in the far West," and that many places "abound in the most lovely and varied forms in endless variety, giving the most striking and pleasing effects of light and shade." The formation is the pliocene and miocene tertiary, uncommonly rich in vertebrate remains: the *mauvaises terres* are composed

* Punkin (*i. e.* pumpkin) and corn (*i. e.* sea maize) are, and were from their introduction, the great staples of native American agriculture.

† According to Webster, "forks" (in the plural)—the point where a river divides, or rather where two rivers meet and unite in one stream. Each branch is called a "fork." The word might be useful to English travellers.

of nearly horizontal strata, and "though diversified by the effects of denuding agencies, and presenting in different portions striking characteristics, yet they are, as a whole, a great uniform surface, gradually rising towards the mountains, at the base of which they attain an elevation varying between 3000 and 5500 feet above the level of the sea."

The Court-house, which had lately suffered from heavy rain, resembled anything more than a court-house; that it did so in former days we may gather from the tales of many travellers, old Canadian voyageurs, who unanimously accounted it a fit place for Indian spooks, ghosts, and hobgoblins to meet in pow-wow, and to "count their coups" delivered in the flesh. The Court-house lies about eight miles from the river, and three from the road; in circumference it may be half a mile, and in height 300 feet; it is, however, gradually degrading, and the rains and snows of not many years will lay it level with the ground. The material is a rough conglomerate of hard marl; the mass is apparently the flank or shoulder of a range forming the southern buttress of the Platte, and which, being composed of softer stuff, has gradually melted away, leaving this remnant to rise in solitary grandeur above the plain. In books it is described as resembling a gigantic ruin, with a huge rotunda in front, windows in the sides, and remains of roofs and stages in its flanks: verily potent is the eye of imagination! To me it appeared in the shape of an irregular pyramid, whose courses were inclined at an ascendable angle of 36°, with a detached outwork composed of a perpendicular mass based upon a slope of 45°; in fact, it resembled the rugged earthworks of Sakkara, only it was far more rugged. According to the driver the summit is a plane upon which a wagon can turn. My military companion remarked that it would make a fine natural fortress against Indians, and perhaps, in the old days of romance and Colonel Bonneville, it has served as a refuge for the harried fur-hunter. I saw it when set off by weather to advantage. A blazing sun rained fire upon its cream-coloured surface—at 11 A.M. the glass showed 95° in the wagon;—and it stood boldly out against a purple-black nimbus which overspread the southern skies, growling distant thunders, and flashing red threads of "chained lightning."

I had finished a hasty sketch, when suddenly appeared to us

a most interesting sight,—a neat ambulance*, followed by a fourgon and mounted soldiers, from which issued an officer in uniform, who advanced to greet Lieutenant Dana. The traveller was Captain, or rather Major, Marcy, who was proceeding westward on leave of absence. After introduction, he remembered that his vehicle contained a compatriot of mine. The compatriot, whose length of facial hair at once told his race,—for

"The larger the whisker the greater the Tory,"—

was a Mr. A——, British vice-consul at * * *'s, Minnesota. Having lately tried his maiden hand upon buffalo, he naturally concluded that I could have no other but the same object. Pleasant estimate, forsooth, of a man's brain, that it can find nothing in America worthy of its notice but bison-shooting! However, the supposition had a *couleur locale*. Every week the New York papers convey to the New World the interesting information that some distinguished Britisher has crossed the Atlantic and half crossed the States to enjoy the society of the "monarch of our prairies." Americans consequently have learned to look upon this Albionic eccentricity as "the thing." That unruly member the tongue was upon the point of putting in a something about the earnest, settled purpose of shooting a prairie-dog, when the reflection that it was hardly fair so far from home to "chaff" a compatriot evidently big with the paternity of a great exploit, with bit and bridle curbed it fast.

Shortly after "liquoring up" and shaking hands, we found ourselves once more in the valley of the Platte, where a lively green relieved eyes which still retained retina-pictures of the barren, Sindh-like divide. The road, as usual, along the river-side was rough and broken, and puffs of Simum raised the sand and dust

* The price of the strong light travelling-waggon called an ambulance, in the West is about $250; in the East it is much cheaper. With four mules it will vary from $750 to $900; when resold, however, it rarely fetches half that sum. A journey between St. Joseph and Gt. S. L. City can easily be accomplished in an ambulance within forty days. Officers and sportsmen prefer it, because they have their time to themselves, and they can carry stores and ammunition. On the other hand, "strikers,"—soldier-helps,—or Canadian *voyageurs*, are necessary; and the pleasure of travelling is by no means enhanced by the nightly fear that the stock will "bolt," not to be recovered for a week, if then.

in ponderous clouds. At 12.30 P.M. we nooned for an hour at a little hovel called a ranch, with the normal corral; and I took occasion to sketch the far-famed Chimney Rock. The name is not, as is that of the Court-house, a misnomer: one might almost expect to see smoke or steam jetting from the summit. Like most of these queer malformations, it was once the knuckle-end of the main chain which bounded the Platte Valley; the

CHIMNEY ROCK.

softer adjacent strata of marl and earthy limestone were disintegrated by wind and weather, and the harder material, better resisting the action of air and water, has gradually assumed its present form. Chimney Rock lies two and a half miles from the south bank of the Platte. It is composed of a friable yellowish marl, yielding readily to the knife. The shape is a thin shaft, perpendicular and quasi conical. Viewed from the south-east it is not unlike a giant jackboot based upon a high pyramidal mound, which, disposed in the natural slope, rests upon the plain. The neck of sandstone connecting it with the adjacent hills has been distributed by the floods around the base, leaving an ever-widening gap between. This "Pharos of the prairie-sea" towered in former days 150 to 200 feet above the apex of its foundation*, and was a land-

* According to M. Preuss, who accompanied Colonel Frémont's expedition, "travellers who visited it some years since placed its height at upwards of 500 feet," though in his day (1842) it had diminished to 200 feet above the river.

mark visible for 40 to 50 miles: it is now barely 35 feet in height. It has often been struck by lightning; *imber edax* has gnawed much away, and the beginning of the end is already at hand. It is easy to ascend the pyramid; but whilst Pompey's Pillar, Peter Botte, and Ararat have all felt the Anglo-Scandinavian foot, no venturous scion of the race has yet trampled upon the top of Chimney Rock. Around the waist of the base runs a white band which sets off its height and relieves the uniform tint. The old sketches of this curious needle now necessarily appear exaggerated; moreover those best known represent it as a column rising from a confused heap of boulders, thus conveying a completely false idea. Again the weather served us: nothing could be more picturesque than this lone pillar of pale rock lying against a huge black cloud, with the forked lightning playing over its devoted head.

After a frugal dinner of biscuit and cheese we remounted and pursued our way through airy fire, which presently changed from our usual pest—a light dust-laden breeze—into a Punjaubian dust-storm, up the valley of the Platte. We passed a ranch called "Robidoux' Fort," from the well-known Indian trader of that name*; it is now occupied by a Canadian or a French creole,

* From the *St. Joseph* (Mo.) *Gazette*:—"Obituary.—Departed this life, at his residence in this city, on Wednesday, the 29th day of August, 1860, after a long illness, Antoine Robidoux, in the sixty-sixth year of his age. Mr. Robidoux was born in the city of St. Louis, in the year 1794. He was one of the brothers of Mr. Joseph Robidoux, founder of the city of St. Joseph. He was possessed of a sprightly intellect and a spirit of adventure. When not more than twenty-two years of age he accompanied Gen. Atkinson to the then very wild and distant region of the Yellow Stone. At the age of twenty-eight he went to Mexico, and lived there fifteen years. He then married a very interesting Mexican lady, who returned with him to the States. For many years he traded extensively with the Navajoes and Apaches. In 1840 he came to this city with his family, and has resided here ever since. In 1845 he went out to the mountains on a trading expedition, and was caught by the most terrible storms, which caused the death of one or two hundred of his horses, and stopped his progress. His brother Joseph, the respectable founder of this city, sent to his relief and had him brought in, or he would have perished. He was found in a most deplorable condition, and saved. In 1846 he accompanied Gen. Kearny, as interpreter and guide, to Mexico. In a battle with the Mexicans he was lanced severely in three places, but he survived his wounds, and returned to St. Joseph in 1849. Soon after that he went to California, and remained until 1854. In 1855 he removed to New Mexico with his family, and in 1856 he went to Washington, and remained there a year, arranging some business with the government. He then returned to St.

who, as usual with his race in these regions, has taken to himself a wife in the shape of a Sioux squaw, and has garnished his quiver with a multitude of whitey-reds. The driver pointed out the grave of a New-Yorker who had vainly visited the prairies in search of a cure for consumption. As we advanced the storm increased to a tornado of north wind, blinding our cattle till it drove them off the road. The gale howled through the pass with all the violence of a Khamsin, and it was followed by lightning and a few heavy drops of rain. The threatening weather caused a large party of emigrants to "fort themselves" in a corral near the base of Scott's Bluffs.

The corral, a Spanish and Portuguese word, which, corrupted to "kraal," has found its way through Southern Africa, signifies primarily a square or circular pen for cattle, which may be made of tree-trunks, stones, or any other convenient material. The corral of wagons is thus formed. The two foremost are brought near and parallel to each other, and are followed by the rest, disposed salant, so that the near fore wheel of the hinder touches the off hind wheel of that preceding it, and *vice versâ* on the other side. The "tongues," or poles, are turned outwards, for convenience of yoking, when an attack is not expected, otherwise they are made to point inwards, and the gaps are closed by ropes and yoke and spare chains. Thus a large oval is formed with a single opening fifteen to twenty yards across; some find it more convenient to leave an exit at both ends. In dangerous places the passages are secured at night either by cords or by wheeling round the near wagons; the

Joseph, and has remained here ever since. Mr. Robidoux was a very remarkable man. Tall, slender, athletic, and agile, he possessed the most graceful and pleasing manners, and an intellect of a superior order. In every company he was affable, graceful, and highly pleasing. His conversation was always interesting and instructive, and he possessed many of those qualities which, if he remained in the States, would have raised him to positions of distinction. He suffered for several years before his death with a terrible soreness of the eyes, which defied the curative skill of the doctors; and for the past ten years he has been afflicted with dropsy. A week or two ago he was taken with a violent hemorrhage of the lungs, which completely prostrated him, and from the effects of which he never recovered. He was attended by the best medical skill, and his wife and many friends were with him to the hour of his dissolution, which occurred on Monday morning, at four o'clock, at his residence in this city. He will be long remembered as a courteous, cultivated, agreeable gentleman, whose life was one of great activity and public usefulness, and whose death will be long lamented."

cattle are driven in before sundown, especially when the area of the oval is large enough to enable them to graze, and the men sleep under their vehicles. In safer travel the tents are pitched outside the corral with their doors outwards, and in front of these the camp-fires are lighted. The favourite spots with teamsters for corraling are the re-entering angles of deep streams, especially where these have high and precipitous banks, or the crests of abrupt hills and bluffs — the position for nighting usually chosen by the Australian traveller — where one or more sides of the encampment is safe from attack, and the others can be protected by a cross fire. As a rule Indians avoid attacking strong places; this, however, must not always be relied upon; in 1844 the Utah Indians attacked Uintah Fort, a trading post belonging to M. A. Robidoux, then at St. Louis, slaughtered the men, and carried off the women. The corral is especially useful for two purposes: it enables the wagoners to yoke up with ease, and it secures them from the prairie traveller's prime dread—the stampede. The Western savages are perfectly acquainted with the habits of animals, and in their marauding expeditions they instinctively adopt the system of the Bedouins, the Gallas, and the Somal. Providing themselves with rattles and other implements for making startling noises, they ride stealthily up close to the cattle, and then rush by like the whirlwind with a volley of horrid whoops and screams. When the "cavallard" flies in panic fear, the plunderers divide their party; some drive on the plunder, whilst the others form a rear-guard to keep off pursuers. The prairie-men provide for the danger by keeping their fleetest horses saddled, bridled, and ready to be mounted at a moment's notice. When the animals have stampeded, the owners follow them, scatter the Indians, and drive, if possible, the madriña, or bell-mare, to the front of the herd, gradually turning her towards the camp, and slacking speed as the familiar objects come in sight. Horses and mules appear peculiarly timorous upon the prairies. A band of buffalo, a wolf, or even a deer, will sometimes stampede them; they run to great distances, and not unfrequently their owners fail to recover them.

"Scott's Bluffs," situated 285 miles from Fort Kearny and 51 from Fort Laramie, was the last of the great marl formations which we saw on this line, and was of all by far the

most curious. In the dull uniformity of the prairies it is a striking and attractive object, far excelling the castled crag of Drachenfels or any of the beauties of romantic Rhine. From a distance of a day's march it appears in the shape of a large blue mound, distinguished only by its dimensions from the detached fragments of hill around. As you approach within four or five miles, a massive mediæval city gradually defines itself, clustering, with a wonderful fulness of detail, round a colossal fortress, and crowned with a royal castle. Buttress and barbican, bastion, demilune and guardhouse, tower, turret, and donjon-keep, all

SCOTT'S MIRAGE.

are there: in one place parapets and battlements still stand upon the crumbling wall of a fortalice like the giant ruins of Château Gaillard, the "Beautiful Castle on the Rock;" and, that nothing may be wanting to the resemblance, the dashing rains and angry winds have cut the old line of road at its base into a regular moat with a semicircular sweep, which the mirage fills with a mimic river. Quaint figures develop themselves; guards and sentinels in dark armour keep watch and ward upon the slopes, the lion of Bastia crouches unmistakably overlooking the road; and as the shades of an artificial evening, caused by the dust-storm, close in, so weird is its aspect that one might almost expect to see some spectral horseman

with lance and pennant go his rounds about the deserted streets, ruined buildings, and broken walls. At a nearer aspect again, the quaint illusion vanishes: the lines of masonry become yellow layers of boulder and pebble imbedded in a mass of stiff, tamped, bald marly clay; the curtains and angles change to the gashings of the rains of ages, and the warriors are metamorphosed into dwarf cedars and dense shrubs, scattered singly over the surface. Travellers have compared this glory of the *mauvaises terres* to Gibraltar, to the Capitol at Washington, to Stirling Castle. I could think of nothing in its presence but the Arabs' "City of Brass," that mysterious abode of bewitched infidels, which often appears at a distance to the wayfarer toiling under the burning sun, but ever eludes his nearer search.

Scott's Bluffs derive their name from an unfortunate fur-trader there put on shore in the olden time by his boat's crew, who had a grudge against him: the wretch in mortal sickness crawled up the mound to die. The politer guide-books call them "Capitol Hills:" methinks the first name, with its dark associations, must be better pleasing to the *genius loci*. They are divided into three distinct masses. The largest, which may be 800 feet high, is on the right, or nearest the river. To its left lies an outwork, a huge detached cylinder whose capping changes aspect from every direction; and still further to the left is a second castle, now divided from, but once connected with, the others. The whole affair is a spur springing from the main range, and closing upon the Platte so as to leave no room for a road.

After gratifying our curiosity we resumed our way. The route lay between the right-hand fortress and the outwork, through a degraded bed of softer marl, once doubtless part of the range. The sharp, sudden torrents which pour from the heights on both sides, and the draughty winds — Scott's Bluffs are the permanent head-quarters of hurricanes — have cut up the ground into a labyrinth of jagged gulches steeply walled in. We dashed down the drains and pitchholes with a violence which shook the nave-bands from our sturdy wheels.*

* The dry heat of the prairies in summer causes the wood to warp by the percolation of water which the driver restores by placing the wheels for a night to stand in some stream. Paint or varnish is of little use. Moisture may be drawn out, even through a nail hole, and exhaust the whole interior of the woodwork.

Ascending, the driver showed a place where the skeleton of an "elephant" had been lately discovered. On the summit, he pointed out, far over many a treeless hill and barren plain, the famous Black Hills and Laramie Peak, which has been compared to Ben Lomond, towering at a distance of eighty miles. The descent was abrupt, with sudden turns round the head of earth-cracks deepened to ravines by snow and rain; and one place showed the remains of a wagon and team which had lately come to grief. After galloping down a long slope of twelve miles, with ridgelets of sand and gravel somewhat raised above the bottom, which they cross on their way to the river, we found ourselves at 5.30 P.M. once more in the valley of the Platte. I had intended to sketch the Bluffs more carefully from the station, but the western view proved to be disappointingly inferior to the eastern. After the usual hour's delay we resumed our drive through alternate puffs of hot and cold wind, the contrast of which was not easy to explain. The sensation was as if Indians had been firing the prairies — an impossibility at this season, when whatever herbage there is, is still green. It may here be mentioned that although the meteorology of the earlier savans, namely, that the peculiar condition of the atmosphere, known as the Indian summer*, might be produced by the burning of the plain-vegetation, was not thought worthy of comment, their hypothesis is no longer considered trivial. The smoky canopy must produce a sensible effect upon the temperature of the season. "During a still night, when a cloud of this kind is overhead, no dew is produced; the

* These remarks are borrowed from a paper by Professor Joseph Henry, Secretary of the Smithsonian Institution, entitled "Meteorology in its connection with Agriculture."

The Indian summer is synonymous with our St. Martin's or Allhallows summer, so called from the festival held on the 11th November. "The Indians avail themselves of this delightful time for harvesting their corn; and the tradition is that they were accustomed to say they always had a second summer of nine days before the winter set in. It is a bland and genial time, in which the birds, insects, and plants feel a new creation, and enjoy a short-lived summer ere they shrink finally from the rigours of the winter's blast. The sky, in the meantime, is generally filled with a haze of orange and gold, intercepting the direct rays of the sun, yet possessing enough of light and heat to prevent sensations of gloom or chill, while the nights grow sharp and frosty, and the scenery first give cheerful forecast of the social winter evenings near at hand."—*The National Intelligencer*, Nov. 26th, 1857, quoted by Mr. Bartlett.

heat which is radiated from the earth is reflected or absorbed, and radiated back again by the particles of soot, and the coating of the earth necessary to prevent the deposition of water in the form of dew or hoar frost is prevented." According to Professor Henry of Washington, "it is highly probable that a portion of the smoke or fog-cloud, produced by the burning of one of the Western Prairies, is carried entirely across the eastern portion of the continent to the ocean."

Presently we dashed over the Little Kiowa Creek, forded the Horse Creek, and, enveloped in a cloud of villainous mosquitoes, entered at 8.30 P.M. the station in which we were to pass the night. It was tenanted by one Reynal, a French creole — the son of an old soldier of the Grand Armée, who had settled at St. Louis — a companionable man, but an extortionate; he charged us a florin for every "drink" of his well-watered whiskey. The house boasted of the usual squaw, a wrinkled old dame, who at once began to prepare supper, when we discreetly left the room. These hard-working, but sorely ill-favoured beings, are accused of various horrors in cookery, such as grinding their pinole, or parched corn, in the impurest manner, kneading dough upon the floor, using their knives for any purpose whatever, and employing the same pot, unwashed, for boiling tea and tripe. In fact, they are about as clean as those Eastern Pariah servants who make the knowing Anglo-Indian hold it an abomination to sit at meat with a new arrival or with an officer of a "home regiment." The daughter was an usually fascinating half-breed, with a pale face and Franco-American features. How comes it that here, as in Hindostan, the French half-caste is pretty, graceful, amiable, coquette, whilst the Anglo-Saxon is plain, coarse, gauche, and ill-tempered? The beauty was married to a long, lean Down-Easter, who appeared most jealously attentive to her, occasionally hinting at a return to the curtained bed, where she could escape the admiring glances of strangers. Like her mother, she was able to speak English, but she could not be persuaded to open her mouth. This is a truly Indian prejudice, probably arising from the savage, childish sensitiveness which dreads to excite a laugh; even a squaw married to a white man, after uttering a few words in a moment of *épanchement*, will hide her face under the blanket.

The half-breed has a bad name in the land. Like the negro, the Indian belongs to a species, sub-species, or variety — whichever the reader pleases — that has diverged widely enough from the Indo-European type to cause degeneracy, physical as well as moral, and often, too, sterility in the offspring. These half-breeds are, therefore, like the mulatto, quasi-mules. The men combine the features of both races; the skin soon becomes coarse and wrinkled, and the eye is black, snaky, and glittering like the Indian's. The mongrels are short-lived, peculiarly subject to infectious diseases, untrustworthy, and disposed to every villainy. The half-bred women, in early youth, are sometimes attractive enough, uniting the figure of the mother to the more delicate American face; a few years, however, deprive them of all litheness, grace, and agility. They are often married by whites, who hold them to be more modest and humble, less capricious and less exacting, than those of the higher type: they make good wives and affectionate mothers, and, like the quadroons, they are more "ambitious" — that is to say, of warmer temperaments — than either of the races from which they are derived. The so-called red is a higher ethnic type than the black man; so in the United States, where all admixture of African blood is deemed impure, the aboriginal American entails no disgrace — some of the noblest of the land are descended from "Indian princesses." The half-breed girls resemble their mothers in point of industry, and they barter their embroidered robes and moccasins, and mats and baskets, made of bark and bulrush, in exchange for blankets, calicoes, glass beads, — an indispensable article of dress, — mirrors, needles, rings, vermilion, and other luxuries. The children, with their large black eyes, wide mouths, and glittering teeth, flattened heads and remarkable agility of motion, suggest the idea of little serpents.

The day had been fatiguing, and our eyes ached with the wind and dust. We lost no time in spreading on the floor the buffalo robes borrowed from the house, and in defying the smaller tenants of the Ranch. Our host, M. Reynal, was a study, but we deferred the lesson till the next morning.

To Fort Laramie, 14th August.

M. Reynal had been an Indian trader in his youth. Of this race there were in his day two varieties: the regular trader and

the *coureur des bois*, or unlicensed pedlar, who was subject to certain pains and penalties. The former had some regard for his future; he had a permanent interest in the Indians, and looked to the horses, arms, and accoutrements of his *protégés*, so that hunting might not flag. The *bois brûlé* pedlar, having—like an English advertising firm—no hope of dealing twice with the same person, got all he could for what he could. These men soon sapped the foundation of the Indian's discipline. One of them, for instance, would take protection with the chief, pay presents, and by increasing the wealth, enhance the importance of his protector. Another would place himself under the charge of some ambitious aspirant to power, who was thus raised to a position of direct rivalry. A split would ensue, the weaker would secede with his family and friends, and declare independence; a murder or two would be the result, and a blood-feud would be bequeathed from generation to generation. The licensed traders have ever strenuously opposed the introduction of alcohol; a keg of which will purchase from the Indian everything that is his, his arms, lodge, horses, children, and wives. In olden times, however, the Maine Liquor Law was not, as now, in force through the territories. The *coureur des bois*, therefore, entered the country through various avenues, from the United States and from Mexico, without other stock in trade but some kegs of whiskey, which he retailed at the modest price of $36 per gallon. He usually mixed one part of fire with five of pure water, and then sold a pint-canful for a buffalo robe. "Indian liquor" became a proverbial term. According to some travellers, a barrel of "pure Cincinnati," even after running the gauntlet of railroad and lake travel, has afforded a hundred barrels of "good Indian liquor." A small bucketful is poured into a washtub of water; a large quantity of "dog-leg" tobacco and red pepper is then added, next a bitter root common in the country is cut up into it, and finally it is coloured with burnt sugar;—a nice recipe for a morning's headache! The only drawback to this traffic is its danger. The Indian when intoxicated is ready for any outrageous act of violence or cruelty; vinosity brings out the destructiveness and the utter barbarity of his character; it makes him thirst tiger-like for blood. The *coureur des bois*, therefore, who in those days was highly respected, was placed in the Trader's Lodge, a

kind of public house, like the Iwanza of Central Africa, and the village chief took care to station at the door a guard of sober youths, sometimes habited like Europeans, ready to check the unauthorised attempts of ambitious clansmen upon the whiskey-vendor's scalp. The western men, who will frequently be alluded to in these pages, may be divided like the traders into two classes. The first is the true mountaineer, whom the platitude and tame monotony of civilised republican life has in early youth driven, often from an honoured and wealthy family, to the wilds and wolds, to become the forlorn hope in the march of civilisation. The second is the offscouring and refuse of the eastern cities, compelled by want, fatuity, or crime to exile himself from all he most loves. The former, after passing through the preliminary stage greenhorn, is a man in every sense of the term: to more than Indian bravery and fortitude, he unites the softness of woman, and a child-like simplicity, which is the very essence of a chivalrous character; you can read his nature in his clear blue eyes, his sun-tanned countenance, his merry smile, and his frank fearless manner. The latter is a knave or a fool; it would "make bad blood," as the Frenchman says, to describe him.

M. Reynal's history had to be received with many grains of salt. The western man has been worked by climate and its consequences, by the huge magnificence of nature and the violent contrasts of scenery, into a remarkable resemblance to the wild Indian. He hates labour—which poet and divine combine to deify in the settled States—as the dire effect of a primæval curse; "loaf" he must and will; to him one hour out of the twenty-four spent in honest industry is *satis superque*. His imagination is inflamed by scenery and climate, difficulty and danger; he is as superstitious as an old man-o'-war's man of the olden school; and he is a transcendental liar, like his prototype the aborigin, who in this point yields nothing to the African negro. I have heard of a man riding eighty miles—forty into camp and forty out—in order to enjoy the sweet delights of a lie. His yarns and stories about the land he lives in have become a proverbial ridicule; he will tell you that the sun rises north of what it did *ab puero*; he has seen mountains of diamonds and gold nuggets scattered like rocks over the surface of our general mother. I have been gravely told of a herd of

bison which arrested the course of the Platte River, causing its waters, like those of the Red Sea, to stand up, wall fashion, whilst the animals were crossing. Of this western order is the well-known account of a ride on a buffalo's horns, delivered for the benefit of a gaping world by a popular author of the yellow-binding category. In this age, however, the western man has become sensitive to the operation of "smoking." A popular Joe Miller anent him is this:—A traveller, informed of what he might educe by "querying," asked an old mountaineer, who shall be nameless, what difference he observed in the country since he had first settled in it.

"Wal, stranger, not much!" was the reply; "only when I fust come here, that 'ere mountain," pointing to the tall Uintah range, "was a hole!"

Disembarrassing M. Reynal's recital of its masque of improbabilities and impossibilities, remained obvious the naked fact, that he had led the life of a confirmed *coureur des bois*. The French Canadian and Creole both, like the true Français de France, is loth to stir beyond the devil-dispelling sound of his chapel-bell; once torn from his *chez lui*, he apparently cares little to return, and like the Englishman, to die at home in his own land. The adventurous Canadians—in whom extremes meet—have wandered through the length and breadth of the continent; they have left their mark even upon the rocks in Utah territory. M. Reynal had quitted St. Louis at an early age as trader, trapper, everything in short, provided with a little outfit of powder, ball, and whiskey. At first he was unfortunate. In a war between the Sioux and the Pawnees, he was taken prisoner by the latter, and with much ado preserved, by the good aid of his squaw, that useful article his scalp. Then fickle fortune turned in his favour. He married several wives, identified himself with the braves, and became a little brother of the tribe, whilst his whiskey brought him in an abundance of furs and peltries. After many years, waxing weary of a wandering life, he settled down into the somewhat prosaic position in which we had the pleasure of finding him. He was garrulous as a veteran soldier upon the subject of his old friends the trappers, that gallant advance guard who, sixty years ago, unconsciously fought the fight of civilisation for the pure love of fighting; who battled with the Indian in his own

way, surpassing him in tracking, surprising, ambuscading and shooting, and never failing to raise the enemy's hair. They are well nigh extinct, those old pioneers, wild, reckless, and brave as the British tar of a century past; they live but in story; their place knows them no longer, it is now filled by the "prospector." Civilisation and the silk hat have exterminated them. How many deeds of stern fight and heroic endurance have been ignored by this world, which knows nothing of its greatest men, *carent quia vate sacro!* We talk of Thermopylæ and ignore Texas; we have all thrilled at the account of the Mameluke Bey's leap; but how many of us have heard of Major Macculloch's spring from the cliff?

Our breakfast was prepared in the usual prairie style. First the coffee—three parts burnt beans—which had been duly ground to a fine powder and exposed to the air, lest the aroma should prove too strong for us, was placed on the stove to simmer till every noxious principle was duly extracted from it. Then the rusty bacon, cut into thick slices, was thrown into the fry-pan; here the gridiron is unknown, and if known would be little appreciated, because it wastes the "drippings," which form with the staff of life a luxurious sop. Thirdly, antelope steak, cut off a corpse suspended for the benefit of flies outside, was placed to stew within influence of the bacon's aroma. Lastly came the bread, which of course should have been "cooked" first. The meal is kneaded with water and a pinch of salt; the raising is done by means of a little sour milk, or more generally by the deleterious yeast-powders of the trade. The carbonic acid gas evolved by the addition of water must be corrected and the dough must be expanded by saleratus or prepared carbonate of soda or alkali, and other vile stuff, which communicates to the food the green-yellow tinge, and suggests many of the properties of poison. A hundred-fold better, the unpretending chapati, flap-jack, scone, or, as the Mexicans prettily called it, "tortilla"! The dough after being sufficiently manipulated upon a long, narrow smooth board is divided into "biscuits" and "dough nuts,"* and finally it is

* The western "biscuit" is English roll: "cracker" is English biscuit. The "dough-nut" is, properly speaking, a "small roundish cake, made of flour, eggs, and sugar, moistened with milk and boiled in lard" (Webster). On the prairies, where so many different materials are unprocurable, it is simply a diminutive loaf, like the hot roll of the English passenger steamer.

placed to be half cooked under the immediate influence of the rusty bacon and graveolent antelope. "Uncle Sam's stove," be it said with every reverence for the honoured name it bears, is a triumph of convenience, cheapness, unwholesomeness and nastiness—excuse the word, nice reader. This travellers' bane has exterminated the spit and gridiron, and makes everything taste like its neighbour: by virtue of it, mutton borrows the flavour of salmon-trout, tomatos resolve themselves into greens.—I shall lose my temper if the subject is not dropped.

We set out at 6 A.M. over a sandy bottom, from which the mosquitoes rose in swarms. After a twelve mile stretch the driver pointed out on the right of the road, which here runs between high earth banks, a spot still infamous in local story. At this place, in 1854, five Indians, concealing themselves in the bed of a dwarf arroyo, fired upon the mail wagon, killing two drivers and one passenger, and then plundered it of 20,000 dollars. "Long-chin," the leader, and the other murderers when given up by the tribe, were carried to Washington, D.C., where—with the ultra-philanthropy which has of modern days distinguished the "Great Father's" government of his "Poor Children of the Plains"—the villains were liberally rewarded and restored to their homes.* To cut off a bend of the Platte we once more left the valley, ascended sundry slopes of sand and clay deeply cut by dry creeks, and from the summit enjoyed a pretty view. A little to the left rose the aerial blue cone of that noble land-mark, Laramie Peak, based like a mass of solidified air upon a dark wall, the Black Hills, and lit up with the roseate hues of the morning. The distance was about sixty miles; you would have guessed twenty. On the right lay a broad valley, bounded by brown rocks and a plain-coloured distance, with the stream winding through it like a thread of quicksilver; in places it was hidden from sight by thickets of red willow, cypress clumps, and dense cool cottonwoods. All

* An United States official, fresh from Columbia, informed me that the Indians there think twice before they murder a King George's man (Briton), whilst they hardly hesitate to kill a Boston man or American citizen. He attributed this peculiarity principally to the over-lenity of his own Government, and its want of persistency in ferretting out and punishing the criminal. Under these circumstances, it is hardly to be wondered at if the trader and traveller in Indian countries take the law in their own hands. This excessive clemency has acted evilly in "either Ind." We may hope that its day is now gone by.

was not still life; close below us rose the white lodges of the Ogalala tribe.

These Indian villages are very picturesque from afar when dimly seen dotting the verdure of the valleys, and when their tall white cones, half hidden by willow clumps, lie against a blue background. The river side is the savages' favourite site; next to it the hill foot, where little groups of three or four tents are often seen from the road, clustering mysteriously near a spring. Almost every prairie-band has its own way of constructing lodges, encamping and building fires, and the experienced mountaineer easily distinguishes them.

The Osages make their lodges in the shape of a wagon-tilt, somewhat like our gipsies' tents, with a framework of bent willow rods planted in the ground, and supporting their blankets, skins, or tree-basts.

The Kikapoos build dwarf hay-stack huts, like some tribes of Africans, setting poles in the earth, binding them over and lashing them together at the top; they are generally covered with clothes or bark.

The Wichetas, Wakos, Towakamis, and Tonkowas are described by the "Prairie Traveller" as erecting their hunting lodges of sticks put up in the form of the frustrum of a cone, and bushed over like "bowéries."

All these tribes leave the framework of their lodges standing when they shift ground, and thus the particular band is readily recognised.

The Sacs, Foxes, Winnebagos and Menomenes build lodges in the form of an ellipsis, some of them 30—40 feet long, by 14—15 wide, and large enough to shelter twenty people permanently, and sixty temporarily.* The covering is of plaited rush-mats, bound to the poles, and a small aperture in the lodge acts as chimney.

The Delawares and Shawnees, Cherokees and Choktaws prefer the Indian pal, a canvass covering thrown like a *tente d'abri*, over a stick supported by two forked poles.

The Sioux, Arapahos, Cheyennes, Utahs, Snakes, Blackfeet, and Kiowas use the Comanche lodge covered with bison skins,

* The wigwams, huts, or cabins of the eastern American tribes were like these, large, solid, and well roofed with skins. The word "lodge" is usually applied to the smaller and less comfortable habitations of the Prairie Indians.

which by dressing become flexible as canvas. They are usually of a shining white, save where smoke-stained near the top; the lodges of great chiefs are sometimes decorated with horizontal stripes of alternate black and white, and ornamented with figures human and bestial, crosses, circles, and arabesques. The lodge is made of eight to twenty-four straight peeled poles or saplings of ash, pine, cedar, or other wood, hard and elastic if possible, about 20 feet long; the largest marquees are 30 feet in diameter by 35 feet high, and are comprised of 26 — 30 buffalo skins; and they are sometimes planted round a "basement" or circular excavation two or three feet deep. When pitching, three poles lashed to one another with a long line, somewhat below the thinner points, are raised perpendicularly, and the thicker ends are spread out in a tripod to the perimeter of the circle which is to form the lodge floor; the rest of the poles are then propped against the three first and disposed regularly and equi-distantly to make a steady and secure conical framework. The long line attached to the tripod is then wound several times round the point where the poles touch, and the lower end is made fast to the base of the lodge, thus securing the props in position. The covering of dressed, hairless, and waterproof cow-buffalo hide,—traders prefer Osnaburg,—cut and sewn to fit the frame like an envelope, and sometimes pinned together with skewers, is either raised at first with the tripod, or afterwards hoisted with a perch and spread round the complete structure. It is pinned to the ground with wooden pegs, and a narrow space forms a doorway, which may be closed with a blanket suspended from above and spread out with two small sticks. The apex is left open with a triangular wing or flap, like a lateen sail, and is prevented from closing by a pole inserted into a pocket at the end. The aperture points to windward when ventilation is required, and, drawing like a wind sail, it keeps the interior cool and comfortable; when smoke is to be carried off, it is turned to leeward, thus giving draught to the fire and making the abode warm in the severest weather, whilst in lodges of other forms, you must lie down on the ground to prevent being asphyxiated. By raising the lower part so as freely to admit the breeze, it is kept perfectly free from mosquitoes, which are unable to resist the strong draught. The squaws are always the tent-pitchers, and they equal orientals in dexterity

and judgment. Before the lodge of each warrior stands his light spear, planted Bedouin-fashion in the ground, near or upon a tripod of thin, cleanly-scraped wands, seven to eight feet long, which support his spotless white buffalo-skin targe, sometimes decorated with his "totem"—we translate the word "crest"—and guarded by the usual prophylactic, a buckskin sack containing medicine. Readers of "Ivanhoe"—they are now more numerous in the New than in the Old Country—ever feel "a passing impulse to touch one of these spotless shields with the muzzle of the gun, expecting a grim warrior to start from the lodge and resent the challenge." The fire, as in the old Hebridean huts, is built in the centre of the hard dirt floor, a strong stick planted at the requisite angle supports the kettle, and around the walls, are berths divided by matted screens; the extremest uncleanliness, however, is a feature never absent. In a quiet country these villages have a simple and patriarchal appearance. The tents, which number from fifteen to fifty, are disposed round a circular central space, where animals can be tethered. Some have attached to them corrals of wattled canes, and a few boast of fields where corn and pumpkins are raised.

The Comanche lodge is the favourite tenement of the Canadian and Creole voyageurs, on account of its coolness or warmth when wanted, its security against violent winds, and its freedom from mosquitoes. Whilst travelling in an Indian country they will use no other. It has been simplified by Major H. H. Sibley, of the U. S. army, who has changed the pole framework for a single central upright, resting upon an iron tripod, with hooks for suspending cooking utensils over the fire; when folded up, the tripod admits the upright between its legs, thereby reducing the length to one half—a portable size. The "Sibley tent" was the only shelter of the U. S. army at Fort Scott, in Utah Territory during the hard winter of 1857-8, and gave universal satisfaction. The officers still keep to the old wall-tent. This will, however, eventually be superseded by the new form, which can accommodate comfortably twelve, but not seventeen, the usual number allotted to it. Captain Marcy is of opinion that of the tents used in the different armies of Europe, "none in point of convenience, comfort, and economy, will compare with the 'Sibley tent,' for campaigning in cold weather." In summer, however, it has, like all conical tents, many disadvantages; there is

always a loss of room; and for comfortably disposing kit — chair, table and camp couch — there is nothing equal to the wall-tent. The price of a "Sibley," when made of good material, is from $40 to $50 (£8 — £10), and it can be procured from Baltimore, Philadelphia, and New York.

At 10.20 A.M. we halted to change mules at Badeau's Ranch, or as it is more grandiloquently called, "Laramie City." The "city," like many a western "town," still appertains to the category of things about to be: it is at present represented by a single large "store," with outhouses full of small half-breeds. The principal articles of traffic are liquors and groceries for the whites, and ornaments for the Indians, which are bartered for stock (*i. e.* animals) and peltries. The prices asked for the skins were from $1 — $1.30 for a fox or a coyote, $3 for wolf, bear, or deer, $6 — $7 for an elk, $5 for a common buffalo, and from $8 to $35 for the same painted, pictograph'd, and embroidered. Some of the party purchased moccasins, for which they paid $1 — $2; the best articles are made by the Snakes, and when embroidered by white women rise as high as $25. I bought, for an old friend who is insane upon the subject of pipes, one of the fine marble-like sandstone bowls brought from the celebrated Côteau (slope) des Prairies, at the head of Sioux River —

> "On the mountains of the Prairie,
> On the Great Red Pipestone Quarry."

This instrument is originally the gift of Gitche Manitou, who, standing on the precipice of the Red Pipe-stone Rock, broke off a fragment and moulded it into a pipe, which finished with a reed he smoked over his children to the north, south, east, and west. It is of queer shape, not unlike the clay and steatite articles used by the Abyssinians and the Turi or Sinaitic Bedouins. The length of the stick is 23 inches, of the stem 9·50, and of the bowl 5 inches; the latter stands at a right angle upon the former, both are circular, but the 2·75 inches of stem, which project beyond the bowl, are bevelled off so as to form an edge at the end. The peculiarity of the form is in the part where the tobacco is inserted; the hole is not more than half an inch broad, and descends straight without a bulge, whilst the aperture in the stem is exactly similar. The red colour soon mottles and the bowl clogs, if smoked with

tobacco: in fact, it is fit for nothing but the "kinnikinik" of the Indians. To prepare this hard material with the rude tools of a savage, must be a work of time and difficulty; also the bowls are expensive and highly valued: for mine I paid $5, and further west I could have exchanged it for an Indian pony.

Having finished our *empilettes* at M. Badeau's, we set out at 11.30 P.M. over a barren and reeking bit of sandy soil. Close to the station, and a little to the right of the road, we passed the barrow which contains the remains of Lieut. Grattan and his thirty men. A young second-lieutenant of Irish origin and fiery temper, he was marching westward with an interpreter, a small body of men, and two howitzers, when a dispute arose, it is said, about a cow, between his party and the Brûlés or Burnt-thigh Indians. The latter were encamped in a village of 450 to 500 lodges, which, reckoning five to each, gives a total of 2200 to 2500 souls. A fight took place, the whites imprudently discharged both their cannons, over-shooting the tents of the enemy: their muskets, however, did more execution, killing Matriya "the Scattering Bear," who had been made chief of all the Sioux by Colonel Mitchell of the Indian bureau. The savages, seeing the fall of Ursa Major, set to in real earnest: about 1200 charged the soldiers before they could reload, the little detachment broke, and not a man survived to tell the tale. The whites in the neighbourhood narrowly preserved their scalps,—M. Badeau owned that he owed his to his Sioux squaw,—and amongst other acts of violence, was the murder and highway robbery, which has already been recounted. Both these events occurred in 1854. As has been said, in 1855, Gen. W. S. Harney, who, whatever may be his faults as a diplomatist, is the most dreaded "Minahaska"* in the Indian country, punished the Brûlés severely at Ash Hollow. They were led by their chosen chief Little Thunder, who, not liking the prospect, wanted to palaver: the general replied by a charge, which, as usual, scattered the "chivalry of the prairies" to the four winds. "Little Thunder" was solemnly deposed, and Mato Chigukesa, "Bear's

* "Longknife." The whites have enjoyed this title since 1758, when Captain Gibson cut off with his sabre the head of Little Eagle, the great Mingo or Chief, and won the title of Big Knife Warrior. Savages in America as well as Africa who ignore the sword always look upon that weapon with horror. The Sioux call the Americans Wasichi, or bad men.

Rib," was ordered to reign in his stead: moreover, in 1856, a treaty was concluded, giving to whites, amongst other things, the privilege of making roads along the Platte and White Earth Rivers (Mankisita Wakpa—Smoking-earth Water) to Forts Pierre and Laramie, and to pass up and down the Missouri in boats. Since that time, with the exception of plundering an English sportsman, Sir G—— G——, opposing Lieut. Warren's expedition to the Black Hills, and slaughtering a few traders and obscure travellers, the Brûlés have behaved tolerably to their pale-face rivals.

As we advanced, the land became more barren; it sadly wanted rain: it suffers from drought almost every year, and what vegetable matter the soil will produce the grasshopper will devour. Dead cattle cumbered the way side, the flesh had disappeared, the bones were scattered over the ground, but the skins, mummified, as it were, by the dry heat, lay life-like and shapeless, as in the Libyan Desert, upon the ground. This phenomenon will last till we enter the humid regions between the Sierra Nevada and the Pacific Ocean, and men tell wonderful tales of the time during which meat can be kept. The road was a succession of steep ascents and jumps down sandy ground. A Sioux "buck," mounted upon a neat nag, and wrapped up, despite sun and glare, as if it had been the depth of winter, passed us, sedulously averting his eyes. The driver declared that he recognised the horse, and grumbled certain western facetiæ concerning "hearty-chokes and caper sauce."

In these lands, the horse thief is the great enemy of mankind, for him there is no pity, no mercy; Lynch-law is held almost too good for him; to shoot him *in flagrante delicto* is like slaying a man-eating Bengal royal tiger, — it entitles you to the respect and gratitude of your species. I asked our conductor whether dandiness was at the bottom of the "buck's" heavy dress. "'Guess," was the reply, "what keeps cold out, keeps heat out tew!"

At 12.15 P.M. Crossing Laramie's Fork, a fine clear stream about forty yards broad, we reached Fort Laramie,— another "fort" by courtesy, or rather by order,— where we hoped to recruit our exhausted stores.

The straggling cantonment requires no description: it has

the usual big flag, barracks, store-houses, officers' quarters, guard-houses, sutlers' stores, and groceries, which doubtless make a good thing by selling deleterious "strychnine" to passing trains who can afford to pay $6 per gallon.

Fort Laramie, called Fort John in the days of the American Fur Company, was used by them as a store-house for the bear and buffalo skins, which they collected in thousands. The old adobe *enceinte*, sketched and described by Frémont and Stansbury, soon disappeared after the place was sold to the U. S. Government. Its former rival was Fort Platte, belonging in 1842 — when the pale-face first opened this road — to Messrs. Sybille, Adams, and Co., and situated immediately on the point of land at the junction of Laramie Fort with the Platte. The climate here is arid and parching in summer, but in winter tolerably mild, considering the altitude, — 4470 feet, — and the proximity of the Black Hills: yet it has seen hard frost in September. It is also well defended from the warm, moist, and light winds, which, coming from the Mexican Gulf, cause "calentures" on the lower course of the river. The soil around the settlement is gravelly and sterile, the rocks are sand, lime, and clay, and there is a solitary, desolate look upon everything but the bright little stream that bubbles from the dark heights. The course is from S. W. to N. E.: about half way it bifurcates, with a right fork to the west and main fork east, and near Laramie it receives its main influent, the Chugwater.

My companion kindly introduced me to the officer commanding the fort, Colonel B. Alexander, 10th infantry, and we were at once made at home. The amiable mistress of the house must find charitable work enough to do in providing for the wants of way-worn friends who pass through Laramie from east to west. We rested and dined in the cool comfortable quarters, with only one qualm at heart — we were so soon to leave them. On these occasions the driver seems to know by instinct that you are enjoying yourself, whilst he, as an outsider, is not. He becomes therefore unusually impatient to start; perhaps, also, time runs more rapidly than it is wont. At any rate, after a short two hours, we were compelled to shake hands with our kind and considerate hosts, and to return to limbo — the mail wagon.

From Fort Laramie westward the geological formation

changes: the great limestone deposits disappear, and are succeeded by a great variety of sandstones, some red, argillaceous, and compact; others grey or yellow, ferruginous, and coarse. Pudding stones or conglomerates also abound, and the main chain of the Laramie Mountains is supposed to be chiefly composed of this rock.

Beyond the fort there are two roads. The longer leads to the right, near the Platte River. It was formerly, and perhaps is still, a favourite with emigrants. We preferred the left, which, crossing the edges of the Black Hills, is rough and uneven, but is "some shorter," as the guide-book says, than the other. The weather began to be unusually disagreeable with heat and rain drops from a heavy nimbus, that forced us to curtain up the rattling vehicle; perhaps, too, we were a little cross, contrasting the present with the past, — civilised society, a shady bungalow, and wonderfully good butter. At 4 P.M., following the Platte Valley, after two hours' drive, we halted to change mules at Ward's Station, *alias* the "Central Star," where several whites were killed by the Sioux in 1855, amongst them M. Montalan, a Parisian.

Again we started for another twenty-five miles at 4 P.M. The road was rough, and the driver had a curious proclivity for losing the way. I have often found this to be the case after passing through a station. There was little to remark, except that the country was poor and bad, that there was clear water in a ravine to the right, and that we were very tired and surly. But as sorrow comes to an end as well as joy, so at 9.30 P.M. we drove in somewhat consoled to Horse-shoe Station,—the old *Fer à Cheval*,—where one of the road agents, Mr. Slade, lived, and where we anticipated superior comfort.

We were *entichés* by the aspect of the buildings, which were on an extensive scale—in fact, got up regardless of expense. An ominous silence, however, reigned around. At last, by hard knocking, we were admitted into a house with the Floridan style of verandah previously described, and by the pretensions of the room we at once divined our misfortune—we were threatened with a "lady." The "lady" will, alas! follow us to the Pacific: even in hymns we read,—

"Now let the Prophet's heart rejoice,
His noble lady's too."

Our mishap was really worse than we expected — we were exposed to two "ladies," and of these one was a Bloomer. It is only fair to state that it was the only hermaphrodite of the kind that ever met my eyes in the United States: the great founder of the order has long since subsided into her original obscurity, and her acolytes have relapsed into the weakness of petticoats. The Bloomer was an uncouth being, her hair, cut level with her eyes, depended with the graceful curl of a drake's tail around a flat Tartarian countenance, whose only expression was sullen insolence. The body-dress, glazed brown calico, fitted her somewhat like a soldier's tunic, developing haunches which would be admired only in venison; and — curious *inconsequence* of woman's nature! — all this sacrifice of appearance upon the shrine of comfort did not prevent her wearing that kind of crinoline depicted by *Mr. Punch* upon "our Mary Hanne." The pantalettes of glazed brown calico, like the vest, tunic, blouse, shirt, or whatever they may call it, were in peg-top style, admirably setting off a pair of thin-soled Frenchified patent-leather bottines, with elastic sides, which contained feet large, broad, and flat as a negro's in Unyamwezi. The dear creature had a husband: it was hardly safe to look at her, and as for sketching her, I avoided it, as men are bidden by the poet to avoid the way of Slick of Tennessee. The other "lady," though more decently attired, was like women in this wild part of the world generally — cold and disagreeable in manner, full of "proper pride," with a touch-me-not air, which reminded me of a certain

"Miss Baxter,
Who refused a man before he axed her."

Her husband was the renowned Slade: —

"Of gougers fierce, the eyes that pierce, the fiercest gouger he."

His was a noted name for "deadly strife;" he had the reputation of having killed his three men; and a few days afterwards the grave that concealed one of his murders was pointed out to me. This pleasant individual "for an evening party" wore the revolver and bowie-knife here, there, and everywhere. He had lately indeed had a strong hint not to forget his weapon. One M. Jules, a French trader, after a quarrel which took place at dinner, walked up to him and fired a pistol, wounding him in the breast. As he rose to run away Jules discharged a second,

which took effect upon his back, and then without giving him time to arm, fetched a gun and favoured him with a dose of slugs somewhat larger than revolver bullets. The fiery Frenchman had two narrow escapes from Lynch-lawyers: twice he was hung between wagons, and as often he was cut down. At last he disappeared in the farther West, and took to lodge and squaw. The avenger of blood threatens to follow him up, but as yet he has taken no steps.

It at once became evident that the station was conducted upon the principle of the western hotel-keeper of the last generation, and of continental Europe about A.D. 1500—the innkeeper of "Anne of Geierstein"—that is to say, for his own convenience; the public there was the last thing thought of. One of our party who had ventured into the kitchen was fiercely ejected by the "ladies." In asking about dormitories we were informed that "lady travellers" were admitted into the house, but that the ruder sex must sleep where it could—*or* not sleep at all if it preferred. We found a barn outside; it was hardly fit for a decently brought-up pig; the floor was damp and knotty; there was not even a door to keep out the night breeze, now becoming raw, and several drunken fellows lay in different parts of it. Two were in one bunk, embracing maudlingly, and freely calling for drinks of water. Into this disreputable hole we were all thrust for the night: amongst us, it must be remembered, was a federal judge, who had officiated for years as minister at a European court. His position, poor man! procured him nothing but a broken-down pallet. It was his first trip to the Far West, and yet, so easily are Americans satisfied, and so accustomed are they to obey the ridiculous jack-in-office who claims to be one of the powers that be, he scarcely uttered a complaint. I for one grumbled myself to sleep. May gracious Heaven keep us safe from all "ladies" in future!—better a hundred times the squaw with her uncleanliness and civility.

We are now about to leave the land of that great and dangerous people, the Sioux, and before bidding adieu to them it will be advisable to devote a few pages to their ethnology.

CHAP. II.

THE SIOUX OR DAKOTAS.

THE Sioux belong essentially to the savage, in opposition to the Astecan peoples of the New World. In the days of Major Pike (1805–1807), they were the dread of all the neighbouring tribes, from the confluence of the Mississippi and the Missouri to the Raven River on the latter. According to Lieut. Warren, they are still scattered over an immense territory extending from the Mississippi on the east, to the Black Hills on the west, and from the forks of the Platte on the south, to Minni Wakan or the Devil's Lake on the north. Early in the winter of 1837, they ceded to the United States all their lands lying east of the Mississippi which became the territory of Minnesota. They are to the North American tribes what the great Anizeh race is amongst the Bedouins of Arabia. Their vernacular name, Dakota, which some pronounce Lakota, and others Nakota, is translated "leagued" or, "allied," and they sometimes speak of themselves as Osheti Shakowin, or the "Seven Council Fires." The French call them "les Coupes-gorges," from their sign or symbol, and the whites generally know them as the Sues or Sioux, from the plural form of Nadonaisi, which in Ojibwe means an enemy. The race is divided into seven principal bands, viz.:

1. Mdewakantonwan (Minowa Kantonga* or Gens du Lac) meaning "village of the Mdewakan,"—Mille Lacs or Spirit Lake. They formerly extended from Prairie du Chien to Prairie des Français, thirty-five miles up the St. Peter's River. They have now moved further west. This tribe, which includes seven bands, is considered the bravest of the Sioux, and has even

* The first is the correct, the second is the old and incorrect form of writing the name.

INDIANS.

The Western Scout. The Sioux. The old Shoshonee. The Arapaho. Jake the Shoshonee. The Crow.

waged an internecine war with the Folles Avoines* or Menomenes, who are reputed the most gallant of the Ojibwes (Chippeways), and who, inhabiting a country intersected by lakes, swamps, water-courses, and impenetrable morasses, long bade defiance to all their neighbours. They have received annuities since 1838, and their number enrolled in 1850 was 2000 souls.

2. Wahpekute (Washpeconte, translated Gens de Feuilles-tirées, and by others, the "Leaf Shooters"). Their habitation lies westward of the Des Moines, Cannon, and Blue Earth Rivers. According to Major Pike, they were like the Bedouin Ghuzw, a band of vagabonds formed of refugees, who for some bad deed had been expelled their tribes. The meaning of their name is unknown; in 1850 they numbered 500 or 600 souls.

3. Sisitonwan (Sussitongs, or the Village of the Marsh). This band used to hunt over the vast prairies lying eastward of the Mississippi, and up that stream as high as Raven River. They now plant their corn about Lake Traverse (Lac Travers) and on the Côteau des Prairies, and numbered in 1850 about 2,500 souls.

4. Wahpetonwans (Washpetongs, Gens des Feuilles, because they lived in woods), the "Village in the Leaves." They have moved from their old home about the little rapids of the Minnesota River, to Lac qui Parle, and Big Stone Lake. In

* The Folles Avoines are a small tribe esteemed by the whites and respected by their own race; their hunting grounds are the same as those of the Winnebagos. They speak a peculiar dialect. But all understand the copious and sonorous but difficult and complicated Algonquin or Ojibwe—the language of some of the old New England races, Pequots, Delawares, Mohicans, Abenaki, Narragansetts, Penobscots, and the tribes about the Lake regions, and the head waters of the Mississippi, viz. Ottowa, Pottowotomie, Menomene, Kenistenoo or Cree, Sak, Kikapoo, Maskigo, Shawnee, Miami, Kaskasia, &c. The other great north-eastern language is that of the Mohawk, spoken by the Oneida, Onondaga, Seneca, Cayuga, Tuscarora, Wyandot, and Cherokee.

"Folles Avoines" is the Canadian French for the wild rice (*Zizania aquatica*), a tall tubular reedy water-plant, plentiful on the marshy margins of the northern lakes, and in the pleshy waters of the Upper Mississippi. Its leaves and spikes, though much larger, resemble those of oats. Millions of migrating water-fowl fatten on it, before their autumnal flights to the south; while in autumn it furnishes the northern savages and the Canadian traders and hunters with their annual supply of grain. It is used for bread by most of the tribes to the north-west.

1850 they numbered 1000 to 1200 souls. They plant corn, have substituted the plough for the hoe, and, according to the missionaries, have made some progress in reading and writing their own language.

The above four constitute the Mississippi and Minnesota Sioux, and are called by those on the Missouri, "Isanti," from Isanati or Isanyati, because they once lived near Isantamde, one of the Mille Lacs. They number, according to Major Pike, 5775 souls, according to Lieut. Warren, about 6200, and many of those on the Mississippi have long since become semi-civilised by contact with the white settlements, and have learned to cultivate the soil. Others again follow the buffalo in their primitive wildness, and have of late years given much trouble to the settlers of Northern Iowa.

5. Ihanktonwans (Yanctongs, meaning "Village at the End"), also sometimes called Wichiyela, or First Nation. They are found at the mouth of the Big Sioux, between it and the Missouri River, as high up as Fort Lookout, and on the opposite bank of the Missouri. In 1851, they were set down at 240 lodges = 2400 souls; they have since increased to 360 lodges and 2880 souls, of whom 576 are warriors. Distance from the buffalo country has rendered them poor; the proximity of the pale face has degenerated them, and the United States have purchased most of their lands.

6. Ihanktonwannas (Yanctannas), one of the "end village" bands. They range between the James and the Missouri Rivers, as far north as Devil's Lake. The Dakota Mission numbered them at 400 lodges = 4000 souls; subsequent observers at 800 lodges = 6400 souls, and 1280 warriors; and being spirited and warlike, they give much trouble to settlers in the Dakota territory. A small portion live in dirt lodges during the summer. This band suffered severely from small-pox in the winter of 1856–1857. They are divided into the Hunkpatidans (of unknown signification), Pabakse or Cut-heads, and Kiyuksa, deriders or breakers of law. From their subtribe the Wazikute, or Pine Shooters, sprang, it is said, the Assiniboin tribe of the Dakotas. Major Pike divides the "Yanctongs" into two grand divisions, the Yanctongs of the north and the Yanctongs of the south.

7. Titonwan (Teton, "Village of the Prairies"), inhabit-

ing the trans-Missourian prairies, and extending westward to the dividing ridge between the Little Missouri and Powder River, and thence south on a line near the 106° meridian. They constitute more than one half of the whole Dakota nation. In 1850 they were numbered at 1250 lodges = 12,500 souls, but that number was supposed to be over-estimated. They are allied by marriage with the Cheyennes and Arikari, but are enemies of the Pawnees and Crows. The Titonwan, according to Major Pike, are, like the Yanctongs, the most erratic and independent not only of the Sioux, but "of all the Indians in the world." They follow the buffalo as chance directs, clothing themselves with the robes, and making their lodges, saddles, and bridles, of the same material; the flesh of the animal furnishing their food. None but the few families connected with the whites have planted corn. Possessing an innumerable stock of horses, they are here this day and five hundreds of miles off in a week, moving with a rapidity scarcely to be imagined by the inhabitants of the civilised world: they find themselves equally at home in all places. The Titonwan are divided into seven principal bands, viz.:

The Hunkpapa, "they who camp by themselves" (?). They roam from the Big Cheyenne up to the Yellowstone, and west to the Black Hills, and number 365 lodges, 2920 souls, and 584 warriors.

The Sisshapa or Blackfeet live with Hunkpapa, and like them have little reverence for the whites; they number 165 lodges, 1321 souls, and 264 warriors.

The Itazipko, Sans Arc, or "No Bows;" a curious name,—like the Sans Arc Pawnees, they are good archers,—perhaps given to them in olden times, when, like certain tribes of negroes, they used the spear to the exclusion of other weapons: others however translate the word "Bow-pith." They roam over nearly the same lands as the Hunkpapa, number about 170 lodges, 1360 souls, and 272 warriors.

The Minnikanye-woshipu, "those who plant by the water," dwell between the Black Hills and the Platte. They number about 200 lodges, 1600 inmates, and 320 warriors: they are favourably disposed towards the whites.

The Ogalala or Okandanda are generally to be found on or about the Platte, near Fort Laramie, and are the most friendly

of all the Titonwan towards the whites. They number about 460 lodges, 3680 souls, and 736 warriors.

The Sichangu, Brûlés or Burnt Thighs, living on the Niobrara and White-earth Rivers, and ranging from the Platte to the Cheyenne, number about 380 lodges, containing 3680 inmates.

The Oohenonpa "Two Boilings" or "Two Kettle-band," are much scattered amongst other tribes, but are generally to be found in the vicinity of Fort Pierre. They number about 100 lodges, 800 inmates, and 160 warriors.

The author of the above estimate, allotting eight to ten inmates to a lodge, of whom between one-fifth and one-sixth are warriors, makes an ample allowance. It is usual to reckon in a population between one-fourth, one-fifth and one-sixth — according to the work — as capable of bearing arms, but the civilised rule will not apply to the N. A. Indian. The grand total of the number of the Sioux nations, including the Isánti, would amount to 30,200 souls. Half a century ago, it was estimated by Major Pike at 21,675, and in 1850, the Dakota Mission set them down at 25,000. It is the opinion of many that, notwithstanding the ravages of cholera and smallpox, the Dakota nation, except when mingled with the frontier settlements, rather increases than diminishes. It has been observed by missionaries, that whenever an account of births and deaths has been kept in a village the former usually exceed the latter. The original numbers of the Prairie Indians have been greatly over-estimated both by themselves and by strangers; the only practicable form of census is the rude proceeding of counting their "Tipi" or skin tents. It is still a moot question how far the Prairie Indians have diminished in numbers, which cannot be decided for some years.*

The Dakotas are mostly a purely hunting tribe in the lowest condition of human society? they have yet to take the first step, and to become a pastoral people. The most civilised are the Mdewakantonwans who, even at the beginning of the present century, built log huts and "stocked" land with corn, beans, and pumpkins. The majority of the bands hunt the buffalo

* At the time of the first settlement of the country by the English no certain estimate was made; at the birth of the thirteen original States, the Indians, according to Dr. Trumbull, did not exceed 150,000. In 1860, the number of Indians within the limits of the United States, was estimated by the Commissioner of Indian Affairs at 350,000.

within their own limits throughout the summer, and in the winter pitch their lodges in the clumps or fringes of tree and underwood along the banks of the lakes and streams. The bark of the cottonwood furnishes fodder for their horses during the snowy season, and to obtain it the creeks and branches have been thinned or entirely denuded of their beautiful groves. They buy many animals from the southern Indians, who have stolen them from New Mexico, or trapped them on the plains below the Rocky Mountains. Considerable numbers are also bred by themselves. The Dakota nation is one of the most warlike and numerous in the U. S. territory. In single combat on horseback they are described as having no superiors; a skill acquired by constant practice, enables them to spear their game at full speed, and the rapidity with which they discharge their arrows, and the accuracy of their aim, rival the shooting which may be made with a revolver. They are not, however, formidable warriors; want of discipline and of confidence in one another render them below their mark. Like the Moroccans in their last war with Spain, they never attack when they should, and they never fail to attack when they should not.

The Dakotas, when first visited by the whites, lived around the head waters of the Mississippi and the Red River of the north. They have gradually migrated towards the west and south-west, guarded by their allies the Cheyennes, who have given names successively to the Cheyenne of Red River, to the Big Cheyenne of the Missouri, and to the section of the country between the Platte and the Arkansas which they now occupy. The Dakota first moved to the land now occupied by the Ojibwe, (anciently known as Chippeways, Orechipewa, or Sauteurs*), which tribe inhabited the land between Sault† St. Marie and Lake Winnepeg, whilst their allies the Crees occupied the country from Lake Winnepeg to the Kisiskadjiwan and Assinniboin Rivers. The plains lying southward of the

* The Rev. Peter Jones (Kahkewaquody) in his history of the Ojibwe Indians makes "Chippeway" a corrupted word, signifying the "Puckered Moccasin People;" the Abbé Domenech ("Seven Years Residence in the Great Deserts of North America"—a mere compilation) draws an unauthorised distinction between Chippeways and Ojibbeways, but cannot say what it is. He explains Ojibwe, the form of Ojidwa, to mean "a singularity in the voice or pronunciation."

† Pronounced "Soo:" the word is old French, still commonly used in Canada and the North, and means rapids.

latter river were the fields of many a fierce and bloody fight between the Dakotas and the other allied two tribes, until a feud caused by jealousy of the women arose amongst the former, and made a division which ended in their becoming irreconcileable enemies, as they are indeed to the present day. The defeated party fled to the craggy precipices of the Lake of the Woods, and received from the Ojibwe the name of Assinniboin or Dakota of the Rocks, by which they are now universally known to the whites. They retain, however, amongst themselves the term Dakota, although their kinsmen universally when speaking of them, called them "hohe" or enemies, and they still speak the Sioux language. After this feud the Assinniboins strengthened themselves by alliance with the Ojibwe and Cree tribes, and drove the Dakota from all the country north of the Cheyenne River, which is now regarded as the boundary line. The three races are still friendly and so hostile to the Dakota that no lasting peace can be made between them; in case of troubles with either party, the Government of the U. S. might economically and effectually employ one against the other. The common war-ground is the region about Lake Minitwakan, where they all meet when hunting buffalo. The Assinniboin tribe now extends from the Red River westward along the Missouri as far as the mouth of Milk River: a large portion of their lands, like those of the Cree, is British territory. They suffered severely from smallpox in 1856–1857, losing about 1500 of their tribe, and now number about 450 lodges, or 3600 souls. Having comparatively few horses, they rely mainly upon the dog for transportation, and they use its flesh as food.

The Dakota, according to Lieut. Warren, are still numerous, independent, warlike, and powerful, and have the means of prolonging an able resistance to the advance of the western settlers. Under the present policy of the United States Government—this is written by an American—which there is no reason to believe likely to be changed, encroachments will continue, and battle and murder will be the result. There are many inevitable causes at work to produce war with the Dakota before many years.* The conflict will end in the

* Lieut. Warren considered the greatest point of his explorations to be the knowledge of the proper routes by which to invade their country and to conquer them. The project may be found in the Report of the Secretary of War. I quote Mr.

discomfiture of the natives, who will then fast fall away. Those dispossessed of their lands cannot, as many suppose, retire further west; the regions lying beyond one tribe are generally occupied by another, with whom deadly animosity exists. Even when the white settlers advance their frontier, the natives linger about till their own poverty and vice consign them to oblivion, and the present policy adopted by the Government is the best that could be devised for their extermination. It is needless to say that many of the Sioux look forward to the destruction of their race with all the feelings of despair with which the civilised man would contemplate the extinction of his nationality. How indeed, poor devils, are they to live when the paleface comes with his pestilent firewater and small-pox, followed up with paper and pen work, to be interpreted under the gentle auspices of fire and steel?

The advance of the settlements is universally acknowledged by the people of the United States to be a political necessity in the national development, and on that ground only is the displacement of the rightful owners of the soil justifiable. But the Government, instead of preparing the way for settlements by wise and just purchases from those in possession, and proper support and protection for the indigent and improvident race thus dispossessed, is sometimes behind its obligations. There are instances of Congress refusing or delaying to ratify the treaties made by its duly authorised agents. The settler and pioneer are thus precipitated into the Indian country, without the savage having received the promised consideration, and he often, in a manner that enlists the sympathies of mankind, takes up the tomahawk and perishes in the attempt. It frequently happens that the western settlers are charged with bringing about these wars; they are now, however, fighting the battles of civilisation exactly as they were fought three centuries ago upon the Atlantic shore, under circumstances that command equal admiration and approval. Whilst, therefore, we sympathise with the savage, we cannot but feel for the unhappy squatter, whose life is sacrificed to the Indian's vengeance by the errors or dilatoriness of those whose duty it is to protect him.

Warren's opinion concerning the future of the Dakotas as a contrast to that of the Dakota Mission. My own view will conclude the case in p. 124.

The people of the United States, of course, know themselves to be invincible by the hands of these half-naked savages. But the Indians, who on their own ground still outnumber the whites, are by no means so convinced of the fact. Until the army of Utah moved westward, many of them had never seen a soldier. At a grand council of the Dakota, in the summer of 1857, on the North Fork of the Platte River, they solemnly pledged themselves to resist the encroachments of the whites, and if necessary to "whip" them out of the country. The appearance of the troops has undoubtedly produced a highly beneficial effect; still, something more is wanted. Similarly in Hindustan, though the natives knew that the British army numbered hundreds of thousands, every petty independent prince thought himself fit to take the field against the intruder, till the failure of the attempt suggested to him some respect for *les gros bataillons*.

The Sioux differ greatly in their habits from the Atlantic tribes of times gone by. The latter lived in wigwams or villages of more stable construction than the lodge, they cultivated the soil, never wandered far from home, made their expeditions on foot, having no horses, and rarely came into action unless they could "tree" themselves. They inflicted horrid tortures on their prisoners, as every English child has read; but, Arab-like, they respected the honour of their female captives. The Prairie tribes are untamed and untamable savages, superior only to the "Arab" hordes of great cities, who appear destined to play in the history of future ages, the part of Goth and Vandal, Scythian, Bedouin, and Turk. Hitherto the *rôle* which these hunters have sustained in the economy of nature has been to prepare, by thinning off its wild animals, a noble portion of the world for the higher race about to succeed them. Captain Mayne Reid somewhere derides the idea of the Indian's progress towards extinction. A cloud of authorities bear witness against him. East of the Mississippi the savage has virtually died out, and few men allow him two prospective centuries of existence in the West, unless he be left, which he will not be, to himself.

"Wolves of women born," the Prairie Indians despise agriculture as the Bedouin does. Merciless free-booters, they delight in roaming; like all equestrian and uncivilised people, they are perfect horsemen, but poor fighters when dismounted,

and they are nothing without their weapons. As a rule they rarely torture their prisoners, except when an old man or woman is handed over to the squaws and papooses "pour les amuser," as a Canadian expressed it. Near and west of the Rocky Mountains, however, the Shoshones and the Yutas (Utahs) are as cruel as their limited intellects allow them to be. Moreover, all the prairie tribes never fail to subject women to an ordeal worse than death. The best character given of late years to the Sioux was by a traveller in 1845, who writes that "their freedom and power have imparted to their warriors some gentlemanly qualities; they are cleanly, dignified and graceful in manners, brave, proud, and independent in bearing and deed."

The qualities of the Sioux, and of the Prairie Tribes generally, are little prized by those who have seen much of them. They ignore the very existence of gratitude; the benefits of years cannot win their affections. After boarding and lodging with a white for any length of time, they will steal his clothes; and, after receiving any number of gifts, they will haggle for the value of the merest trifle. They are inveterate thieves and beggars; the Western settlers often pretend not to understand their tongue for fear of exposing themselves to perpetual pilfering and persecution; and even the squaws, who live with the pale faces, annoy their husbands by daily applications for beads and other coveted objects; they are cruel to one another as children. The obstinate revengefulness of their vendetta is proverbial; they hate with the "hate of Hell;" and, like the Highlanders of old, if the author of an injury escape them, they vent their rage upon the innocent, because he is of the same clan or colour. If struck by a white man, they must either kill him or receive damages in the shape of a horse; and after the most trivial injury they can never be trusted. Their punishments are Draconic; for all things death, either by shooting or burning. Their religion is a low form of Fetissism. They place their women in the most degraded position. The squaw is a mere slave, living a life of utter drudgery; and when the poor creature wishes, according to the fashion of her sex, to relieve her feelings by a domestic "scene," followed by a "good cry," or to use her knife upon a sister squaw, as the Trastevarina mother uses her bodkin, the husband, after squatting muffled up, in hope that the breeze will blow over, enforces

silence with a cudgel. The warrior, considering the chase an ample share of the labour-curse, is so lazy that he will not rise to saddle or unsaddle his pony: he will sit down and ask a white man to fetch him water, and only laugh if reproved. Like a wild beast he cannot be broken to work: he would rather die than employ himself in honest industry—a mighty contrast to the Negro, whose only happiness is in serving. He invariably attributes an act of kindness, charity, or forbearance, to fear. Ungenerous, he extols, like the Bedouin, generosity to the skies. He never makes a present, except for the purpose of receiving more than its equivalent; and an "Indian gift" has come to be a proverb, meaning anything reclaimed after being given away. Impulsive as the African, his mind is blown about by storms of unaccountable contradictions. Many a white has suddenly seen the scalping-knife restored to its sheath instead of being buried in his flesh; whilst others have been as unexpectedly assaulted and slain by those from whom they expected kindness and hospitality. The women are mostly cold and chaste. The men have vices which cannot be named: their redeeming points are fortitude, and endurance of hardship; moreover, though they care little for their wives, they are inordinately fond of their children. Of their bravery, Indian fighters do not speak highly: they are notoriously deficient in the civilised quality called moral courage, and though a brave will fight single-handed stoutly enough, they rarely stand up long in action. They are great at surprises, ambuscades, and night attacks: as with the Arabs and Africans, their favourite hour for onslaught is that before dawn, when the enemy is most easily terrified,—they know that there is nothing which tries man's nerve so much as an unexpected night attack,—and when the cattle can be driven off to advantage. In some points their characters have been, it is now granted, greatly misunderstood. Their forced gravity and calmness—purely "company manners"—were not suspected to cloak merriment, sociability, and a general fondness of feasts and fun. Their apathy and sternness, which were meant for reserve and dignity among strangers, gave them an air of ungeniality which does not belong to their mental constitutions. Their fortitude and endurance of pain is the result, as in the prize-fighter, of undeveloped brain.

The Sioux are tall men, straight, and well-made: they are never deformed, and are rarely crippled, simply because none but the able-bodied can live. The shoulders are high and somewhat straight; the figure, is the reverse of the sailor's, that is to say, whilst the arms are smooth, feeble, and etiolated, the legs are tolerably muscular; the bones are often crooked or bowed in the equestrian tribes; they walk as if they wanted the ligamentum teres; there is a general looseness of limb, which promises, however, lightness, endurance, and agility, and which, contrasted with the Caucasian race, suggests the gait of a wild compared with that of a tame animal. Like all savages, they are deficient in corporeal strength: a civilised man finds no difficulty in handling them: on this road there is only one Indian (a Shoshone) who can whip a white in a "rough and tumble." The temperament is usually bilious-nervous; the sanguine is rare, the lymphatic rarer, and I never knew or heard of an albino. The hands, especially in the higher tribes, are decidedly delicate, but this is more observable in the male than in the female; the type is rather that of the Hindu than of the African or the European. The feet being more used than the other extremities, and unconfined by boot or shoe, are somewhat splay, spreading out immediately behind the toes, whilst the heel is remarkably narrow. In consequence of being carried straight to the fore,— the only easy position for walking through grass, — they tread, like the anteater, more heavily on the outer than on the inner edge. The sign of the Indian is readily recognised by the least experienced tracker.

It is erroneously said that he who has seen a single Indian has seen them all. Of course there is a great similarity amongst savages and barbarians of the same race and climate. The same pursuits, habits, and customs naturally produce an identity of expression which, as in the case of husband and wife, parent and child, moulds the features into more or less of likeness. On the other hand, a practised eye will distinguish the Indian individually or by bands as easily as the shepherd, by marks invisible to others, can swear to his sheep. I have little doubt that to the savages all white men look alike.

The prairie Indian's hair and complexion have already been described. According to some savages the build of the former differs materially from that of the European and the Asiatic.

The animal development varies in the several races: the Pawnee's and Yuta's scalp-lock rarely exceeds eighteen inches in length; while that of the Crow, like the East Indian Jatawala's, often sweeps the ground. There are salient characteristics in the cranium which bear testimony to many phrenological theories. The transverse diameter of the rounded skull between the parietal bones, where Destructiveness and Secretiveness are placed, is enormous, sometimes exceeding the longitudinal line from sinciput to occiput, the direct opposite of the African Negro's organisation. The region of the cerebellum is deficient and shrunken, as with the European in his second childhood: it sensibly denotes that the subject wants "vim." The coronal region, where the sentiments are supposed to lie, is rather flat than arched; in extreme cases the face seems to occupy two thirds instead of half the space between poll and chin. The low conical forehead recedes, as in Robespierre's head, from the region of benevolence, and rises high at the apex where firmness and self-esteem reside: a common formation amongst wild tribes, as every traveller in Asia and Africa has remarked. The facial angle of Camper varies, according to phrenologists, between 70° and 80°. The projecting lower brow, is strong, broad, and massive, showing that development of the perceptions, which is produced by the constant and minute observation of a limited number of objects. The well-known Indian art of following the trail is one result of this property. The nose is at once salient and dilated, in fact, partaking of the Caucasian and African types. The nostrils are broad and deeply whorled; the nasal orifice is wide, and, according to osteologists, the bones that protect it are arched and expanded; the eyebrows are removed, like the beard and moustache, by vellication, giving a dull and bald look to the face; the lashes, however, grow so thickly that they often show a sooty black line, suggesting the presence of the Oriental Kohl or Surma. The orbits are large and square: largeness and squareness are, in fact, the general character of the features: it doubtless produces that peculiar besotted look which belongs to the Indian as to the Mongolian family. The conjunctival membrane has the whiteness and clearness of the European and the Asiatic; it is not, as in the African, brown, yellow, or red. The pupil, like the hair, is of different shades between black and

brown: when the organ is blue—an accident which leads to a suspicion of mixed blood—the owner generally receives a name from the peculiarity. Travellers, for the most part, describe the organ as "black and piercing, snaky and venomous;" others as "dull and sleepy;" whilst some detect in its colour a mingling of black and grey. The only peculiarity which I observed in the pupil was its similarity to that of the gipsy. The Indian first fixes upon you a piercing glance, which seems to look below the surface. After a few seconds, however, the eye glazes as though a film passed over it, and gazes, as it were, on vacancy. The look would at once convict him of Jettatura and Malocchio in Italy, and of El Ayn, or the Evil Eye, in the East. The mouth is at once full and compressed; it opens widely; the lips are generally *bordés* or everted,—decidedly the most unpleasant fault which that feature can have,—the corners are drawn down as if by ill temper, and the two seams which spring from the ala of the nostrils are deeply traced. This formation of the oral, combined with the fullness of the circumoral regions, and the length and fleshiness of the naked upper lip, communicates a peculiar animality to the countenance. The cheek bones are high and bony; they are not, however, expanded or spread backwards, nor do they, as in the Chinese, alter the appearance of the eyes by making them oblique. The cheeks are rather lank and falling in than full or oval. The whole maxillary organ is projecting and ponderous. The wide condyles of the lower jaw give a remarkable massiveness to the jowl, whilst the chin—perhaps the most characteristic feature—is long, bony, large, and often parted in the centre. The teeth are faultless, full-sized and white, even and regular, strong and lasting; and they are vertical, not sloping forward like the African's. To sum up, the evanishing of the forehead, the compression of the lips, the breadth and squareness of the jaw and the massiveness of the chin, combine to produce a normal expression of harshness and cruelty, which, heightened by red and black war-paint, locks like horsehair, plumes, and other savage decorations, form a "rouge dragon" whose *tout-ensemble* is truly revolting.

The women when in their teens have often that *beauté du diable*, which may be found even amongst the African negresses; nothing, however, can be more evanescent. When full grown

the figure becomes dumpy and *trapu*; and the face though sometimes not without a certain comeliness, has a Turanian breadth and flatness. The best portrait of a sightly Indian woman is that of Pocahontas, the Princess, published by M. Schoolcraft. The drudgery of the tent and field renders the squaw cold and unimpassioned; and, like the coarsest-minded women in civilised races, her eye and her heart mean one and the same thing. She will administer "squaw medicine," a love philter, to her husband, but rather for the purpose of retaining his protection than his love. She has all the modesty of a savage, and is not deficient in sense of honour. She has no objection to a white man, but, Affghan-like, she usually changes her name to "John" or some other alias. Her demerits are a habit of dunning for presents, and a dislike to the virtue that ranks next to godliness, which nothing but the fear of the rod will subdue. She has literally no belief, not even in the rude Fetissism of her husband, and consequently she has no religious exercises. As she advances in years, she rapidly descends in *physique* and *morale*: there is nothing on earth more fiend-like than the vengeance of a cretin-like old squaw.

The ancient Persians taught their progeny archery, riding, and truth-telling; the Prairie Indian's curriculum is much the same, only the last of the trio is carefully omitted. The Indian, like other savages, never tells the truth; verity is indeed rather an intellectual than an instinctive virtue, which, as children prove, must be taught and made intelligible; except when "counting his coups," in other words, recounting his triumphs, his life is therefore one system of deceit, the strength of the weak. Another essential part of education is to close the mouth during sleep: the Indian has a superstition that all disease is produced by inhalation. The children "born like the wild ass's colts" are systematically spoiled with the view of fostering their audacity; the celebrated apophthegm of the Wise King — to judge from his notable failure at home, he probably did not practice what he preached — which has caused such an expenditure of birch and cane in higher races, would be treated with contempt by the Indians. The fond mother when chastening her child never goes beyond dashing a little cold water in its face, — for which reason to besprinkle a man is a mortal insult, — a system which, perhaps, might be na-

turalised with advantage in some parts of Europe. The son is taught to make his mother toil for him, and openly to disobey his sire; at seven years of age he has thrown off all parental restraint; nothing keeps him in order but the fear of the young warriors. At ten or twelve, he openly rebels against all domestic rule, and does not hesitate to strike his father: the parent then goes off rubbing his hurt, and boasting to his neighbours of the brave boy whom he has begotten.

The religion of the North American Indians has long been a subject of debate. Some see in it traces of Judaism, others of Sabeanism; M. Schoolcraft detects a degradation of Guebrism. His faith has, it is true, a suspicion of duality; Hormuzd and Ahriman are recognisable in Gitche Manitou and Mujhe Manitou, and the latter, the Bad-god, is naturally more worshipped, because more feared, than the Good-god. Moreover, some tribes show respect for and swear by the sun, and others for fire: there is a north-god and a south-god, a wood-god, a prairie-god, an air-god and a water-god: but — they have not risen to monotheism — there is not one God. None however appear to have that reverence for the elements which is the first article of the Zoroastrian creed; the points of difference are many, whilst those of resemblance are few and feeble, and it is hard to doubt that the instincts of mankind have been pressed by controversialists into the service of argument as traditional tenets.

To judge from books and the conversation of those who best know the Indians, he is distinctly a Fetissist like the African negro, and indeed like all the child-like races of mankind.* The medicine-man is his Mganga, Angekok, sorcerer, prophet, physician, exorciser, priest and rain-doctor; only, as he is rarely a cultivator of the soil, instead of heavy showers and copious crops, he is promised scalps, salmon-trout, and buffalo-beef in plenty. He has the true Fetissist's belief — invariably found in tribes who live dependent upon the powers of Nature — in the younger brothers of the human family, the bestial creation: he holds to a metamorphosis like that of

* The reader who cares to consult my studies upon the subject of Fetissism in Africa, where it is and ever has been the national creed, is referred to "The Lake Regions of Central Africa," chap. xix. The modes of belief, and the manners and customs of savage and barbarous races are so similar that a knowledge of the African is an excellent introduction to that of the American.

Abyssinia, and to speaking animals. Every warrior chooses a totem, some quadruped, bird or fish, to which he prays, and which he will on no account kill or eat. Dr. Livingstone shows (chap. i.) that the same custom prevails in its entirety amongst the Kafir Bechwana, and opines that it shows traces of addiction to animal-worship, like the ancient Egyptians;—in the prophecies of Israel the tribes are compared with animals, a true Totemic practice. The word totem also signifies a subclan or subtribe; and some nations, like the African Somal, will not allow marriage in the same totem. The medicine-men give away young children as an atonement, when calamities impend: they go clothed, not in sackcloth and ashes, but in coats of mire, and their macerations and self-inflicted tortures rival those of the Hindus: a fanatic has been known to drag about a buffalo skull with a string cut from his own skin till it is torn away. In spring time the braves and even the boys repairing to lonely places and hill-tops, their faces and bodies being masked, as if in mourning, with mud, fast and pray, and sing rude chants to propitiate the ghosts for days consecutively. The Fetissist is ever grossly superstitious; and the Indians, as might be expected, abound in local rites. Some tribes, as the Cheyennes, will not go to war without a medicine-man, others without sacred war-gourds* containing the tooth of the drum-head fish. Children born with teeth are looked upon as portents, and when grey at birth the phenomenon is attributed to evil ghosts.

I cannot but think that the two main articles of belief which have been set down to the credit of the Indian—namely, the Great Spirit or Creator, and the Happy Hunting-Grounds in a future world—are the results of missionary teaching, the work of Fathers Hennepin, Marquette, and their noble army of martyred Jesuit followers. In later days they served chiefly to inspire the Anglo-American muse, *e. g.*—

> "By midnight moons o'er moistening dews,
> In vestments for the chase arrayed,
> The hunter still the deer pursues—
> The hunter and the deer, a shade!

* This gourd or calabash is the produce of the *Cucurbita lagenaria* or calabash vine. In Spanish, Central and Southern America, Cuba and the West Indies, they use the large round fruit of the *Crescentia cujete*.

And long shall timorous fancy see
The painted chief and pointed spear,
And Reason's self shall bow the knee
To shadows and delusions here."

My conviction is, that the English and American's popular ideas upon the subject are unreliable, and that their embodiment, beautiful poetry, "Lo the poor Indian," down to "his faithful dog shall bear him company," are but a splendid myth. The North American aborigine believed, it is true, in an unseen power, the Manitou, or, as we are obliged to translate it, "Spirit," residing in every heavenly body, animal, plant, or other natural object. This is the very essence of that form of Fetisism which leads to Pantheism and Polytheism. There was a Manitou, as he conceived, which gave the spark from the flint, lived in every blade of grass, flowed in the streams, shone in the stars, and thundered in the waterfall; but in each example — a notable instance of the want of abstractive and generalising power — the idea of the Deity was particular and concrete. When the Jesuit Fathers suggested the unity of the Great Spirit pervading all beings, it was very readily recognised; but the generalisation was not worked out by the Indian mind. He was, therefore, like all savages, atheistic in the literal sense of the word. He had not arrived at the first step, Pantheism, which is so far an improvement that it opens out a grand idea, the omnipresence, and consequently the omnipotence, of the Deity. In most North American languages the Theos is known, not as the "Great Spirit," but as the "Great Father," a title also applied to the President of the United States, who is, I believe, though sometimes a step-father, rather the more reverenced of the twain. With respect to the happy hunting-grounds, it is a mere corollary of the monotheistic theorem above proved. It is doubtful whether these savages ever grasped the idea of a human soul. The Chicury of New England, indeed, and other native words so anglicised, appear distinctly to mean the African Pepo — ghost or larva.

Certain missionaries have left us grotesque accounts of the simple good sense with which the Indians of old received the Glad Tidings. The strangers were courteously received, the calumet was passed round, and they were invited to make known their wants in a "big talk." They did so by producing

a synopsis of their faith, beginning at Adam's apple and ending at the Saviour's cross. The patience of the Indian in enduring long speeches, sermons, and harangues, has ever been exemplary and peculiar as his fortitude in suffering lingering physical tortures. The audience listened with a solemn demeanour, not once interrupting what must have appeared to them a very wild and curious story. Called upon to make some remark these antipomologists simply ejaculated—

"Apples are not wholesome, and those who crucified Christ were bad men!"

In their turn, some display of oratory was required. They avoided the tedious long drawn style of argument, and spoke, as was their wont, briefly to the point. "It is good of you," said they, "to cross the big water, and to follow the Indian's trail, that ye may relate to us what ye have related. Now listen to what our mothers told us. Our first father, after killing a beast, was roasting a rib before the fire, when a spirit, descending from the skies, sat upon a neighbouring bluff. She was asked to eat. She ate fat meat. Then she arose and silently went her way. From the place where she rested her two hands grew corn and pumpkin; and from the place where she sat sprang tobacco!"

The missionaries listened to the savage tradition with an excusable disrespect, and, not unnaturally, often interrupted it. This want of patience and dignity, however, drew upon them severe remarks. "Pooh!" observed the Indians. "When you told us what your mothers told you we gave ear in silence like men. When we tell you what our mothers told us ye give tongue like squaws. Go to! Ye are no medicine-men, but silly fellows!"

Besides their superstitious belief in ghosts, spirits, or familiars, and the practice of spells and charms, love-philters, dreams and visions, war-medicine, hunting-medicine, self-torture, and incantations, the Indians had, it appears to me, but three religious observances, viz. dancing, smoking, and scalping.

The war-dances, the corn-dances, the buffalo-dances, the scalp-dances, and the other multiform and solemn saltations of these savages, have been minutely depicted and described by many competent observers. The theme also is beyond the limits of an essay like this.

Smoking is a boon which the Old owes to the New World. It is a heavy call upon our gratitude, for which we have naturally been very ungrateful.

"Non epulis tantum, non Bacchi pascimur usu,
Pascimur et fumis, ingeniosa gula est."

We began by calling our new gift, the "holy herb;" it is now, like the Balm of Gilead, entitled, I believe, a weed. Amongst the North American Indians even the spirits smoke; the "Indian Summer" is supposed to arise from the puffs that proceed from the pipe of Nanabozhoo, the Ojibwe Noah. The pipe may have been used in the East before the days of tobacco, but if so it was probably applied to the inhalation of cannabis and other intoxicants.* On the other hand the Indian had no stimulants. He never invented the beer of Osiris, though maize grew abundantly around him†; the Koumiss of the Tartar was beyond his mental reach, and though "Jimsen weed"‡ overruns the land, he neglected its valuable intoxicating properties. His is almost the only race that has ever existed wholly without a stimulant; the fact is a strong proof of its autochthonic origin. It is indeed incredible that man having once learned should ever forget the means of getting drunk. Instead of the social cup the Indian smoked. As tobacco does not grow throughout the continent he invented kinnikinik. This Indian word has many meanings. By

* The word tobacco (West Indian, tobago or tobacco, a peculiar pipe) which has spread through Europe, Asia, and Africa, seems to prove the origin of the nicotiana and the non-mention of smoking in the "Arabian Nights" disproves the habit of inhaling any other nasedaneum.

† It has long been disputed whether maize was indigenous to America or to Asia; learned names are found on both sides of the question. In Central Africa the cereal is now called as in English, "Indian corn," proving that in that Continent it first was introduced from Hindostan. The Italians have named it Gran' Turco, showing whence it was imported by them. The word maiz, maya, maize or mahiz, is a Carib word introduced by the Spaniards into Europe; in the United States, where "corn" is universally used, maize is intelligible only to the educated.

‡ Properly Jamestown weed, the *Datura stramonium*, the English thorn-apple, unprettily called in the northern States of America "stinkweed." It found its way into the higher latitudes from Jamestown (Virginia), where it was first observed springing on heaps of ballast and other rubbish discharged from vessels. According to Beverly ("Hist. of Virginia;" book ii., quoted by Mr. Bartlett), it is "one of the greatest coolers in the world;" and in some young soldiers who ate plentifully of it as a salad, to pacify the troubles of bacon, the effect was "a very pleasant remedy, for they turned natural fools upon it for several days."

the hunters and settlers it is applied to a mixture of half and half, or two-thirds tobacco and one of red willow bark; others use it for a mixture of tobacco, sumach leaves, and willow rind; others, like Ruxton ("Life in the Far West," p. 116), for the cortex of the willow only. This tree grows abundantly in copses near the streams and water-courses. For smoking, the twigs are cut when the leaves begin to redden. Some tribes, like the Sioux, remove the outer and use only the highly coloured inner bark; others again, like the Shoshones, employ the external as well as the internal cuticle. It is scraped down the twig in curling ringlets, without, however, stripping it off; the stick is then planted in the ground before the fire, and when sufficiently parched, the material is bruised, comminuted, and made ready for use. The taste is pleasant and aromatic, but the effect is that of the puerile rattan, rather than the manly tobacco. The Indian, be it observed, smokes like all savages, by inhaling the fumes into the lungs, and returning them through the nostrils; he finds pure tobacco, therefore, too strong and pungent. As has been said, he is catholic in his habits of smoking; he employs indifferently rose-bark (*Rosa blanda?*)* and the cuticle of a cornus, the lobelia†, the larb, a vaccinium, a Daphne-like plant, and many others. The Indian smokes incessantly, and the "calumet‡" is an important part of his household goods. He has many superstitions about the practice. It is a sacred instrument, and its red colour typifies the smoker's flesh. The Western travellers mention offerings of tobacco to, and smoking of pipes in honour of, the Great Spirit. Some men will vow never to use the pipe in public, others to abstain on particular days. Some will not smoke with their moccasins on, others

* The wild rose is everywhere met with growing in bouquets on the prairies.

† The *lobelia inflata* or Indian tobacco is corrupted by the ignorant Western man to low bells in contradistinction to high bells, better varieties of the plant.

‡ The calumet, a word introduced by the old French, is the red sand-stone pipe, described in a previous page, with a long tube, generally a reed, adorned with feathers. It is the Indian symbol of hatred or amity; there is a calumet of war, as well as a calumet of peace. To accept the calumet is to come to terms; to refuse it is to reject them. The same is expressed by burying and digging up the tomahawk or hatchet. The tomahawk and calumet are sometimes made of one piece of stone; specimens, however, have become very rare since the introduction of the iron axe. The "Song of Hiawatha" (Canto I. The Peace Pipe) and the interesting "Letters and Notes on the Manners, Customs and Conditions of the North American Indians" (vol. ii. p. 160), have made the Red Pipe Stone Quarry familiar to the Englishman.

with steel about their persons; some are pledged to abstain inside, others outside, the wigwam, and many scatter buffalo chip over their tobacco. When beginning to smoke there are certain observances; some, *exempli gratiâ*, direct, after the fashion of Gitche Manitou, the first puff upwards or heavenwards, the second earthwards, and the third and fourth over the right and left shoulders, probably in propitiation of the ghosts, who are being smoked for in proxy; others, before the process of inhaling, touch the ground with the heel of the pipe-bowl, and turn the stem upwards and averted.

According to those who, like Pennant, derive the North American from the Scythians, scalping is a practice that originated in High and North-Eastern Asia. The words of the Father of History are as follows:—"Of the first enemy a Scythian sends down, he quaffs the blood; he carries the heads of all that he has slain in battle to the king; for when he has brought a head, he is entitled to a share of the booty that may be taken—not otherwise; to skin the head, he makes a circular incision from ear to ear, and then, laying hold of the crown shakes out the skull; after scraping off the flesh with an ox's rib, he rumples it between his hands, and having thus softened the skin makes use of it as a napkin; he appends it to the bridle of the horse he rides, and prides himself on this, for the Scythian that has most of these skin napkins is adjudged the best man, &c. &c. They also use the entire skins as horse-cloths, also the skulls for drinking cups." ("Melpomene," iv. 64, Laurent's Trans.) The underlying idea is doubtless the natural wish to preserve a memorial of a foeman done to death; and at the same time to dishonour his hateful corpse by mutilation. Fashion and tradition regulate the portions of the human frame preferred.

Scalping is generally but falsely supposed to be a peculiarly American practice. The Abbé Em. Domenech ("Seven Years' Residence in the Great Deserts of North America," chap. xxxix.) quotes the *decalvare* of the ancient Germans, the *capillos et cutem detrahere* of the code of the Visigoths, and the annals of Flude, which prove that the "Anglo-Saxons" and the Franks still scalped about A.D. 879. And as the modern American practice is traceable to Europe and Asia, so it may be found in Africa, where aught of ferocity is rarely wanting.

"In a short time after our return," says Mr. Duncan ("Travels in Western Africa in 1845 and 1846") "the Apadomey Regiment passed, on their return, in single file, each leading in a string a young male or female slave, carrying also the dried scalp of one man supposed to have been killed in the attack. On all such occasions when a person is killed in battle, the skin is taken from the head and kept as a trophy of valour. It must not be supposed that these female warriors kill according to the number of scalps presented; the scalps are the accumulation of many years. If six or seven men are killed during one year's war it is deemed a great thing; one party always run away in these slave-hunts; but where armies meet the slaughter is great. I counted 700 scalps pass in this manner." But mutilation, like cannibalism, tattooing, and burying in barrows, is so natural under certain circumstances to man's mind that we distinctly require no traditional derivation.

Scalp-taking is a solemn rite. In the good old times braves scrupulously awaited the wounded man's death before they "raised his hair;" in the laxity of modern days, however, this humane custom is too often disregarded. Properly speaking the trophy should be taken after fair fight with a hostile warrior; this also is now neglected. When the Indian sees his enemy fall he draws his scalp-knife — the modern is of iron, formerly it was of flint, obsidian, or other hard stone — and twisting the scalp-lock, which is left long for that purpose, and boastfully braided or decorated with some gaudy ribbon or with the war-eagle's plume, round his left hand, makes with the right two semicircular incisions, with and against the sun, about the part to be removed. The skin is next loosened with the knife point, if there be time to spare and if there be much scalp to be taken. The operator then sits on the ground, places his feet against the subject's shoulders by way of leverage, and holding the scalp-lock with both hands he applies a strain which soon brings off the spoils with a sound which, I am told, is not unlike "flop." Without the long lock it would be difficult to remove the scalp; prudent white travellers, therefore, are careful before setting out through an Indian country to "shingle off" their hair as closely as possible; the Indian moreover hardly cares for a half-fledged scalp. To judge from

the long love-locks affected by the hunter and mountaineer, he seems to think lightly of this precaution, to hold it, in fact, a point of honour that the savage should have a fair chance. A few cunning men have surprised their adversaries with wigs. The operation of scalping must be exceedingly painful; the sufferer turns, wriggles, and "squirms" upon the ground like a scotched snake. It is supposed to induce brain fever; many instances, however, are known of men and even women recovering from it, as the former do from a more dreadful infliction in Abyssinia and Galla-land; cases are of course rare, as a disabling wound is generally inflicted before the bloodier work is done.

After taking the scalp, the Indian warrior—proud as if he had won a *médaille de sauvetage*—prepares for return to his village. He lingers outside for a few days, and then, after painting his hands and face lamp-black, appears slowly and silently before his lodge. There he squats for awhile; his relatives and friends, accompanied by the elders of the tribe, sit with him dumb as himself. Presently the question is put; it is answered with truth, although these warriors at other times will lie like Cretans. The "coup" is recounted, however, with abundant glorification; the Indians, like the Greek and Arab of their classical ages, are allowed to vent their self-esteem on such occasions without blame, and to enjoy a treat for which the civilised modern hero longs ardently, but in vain. Finally the "green scalp," after being dried and mounted, is consecrated by the solemn dance, and becomes then fit for public exhibition. Some tribes attach it to a long pole used as a standard, and others their horses' bridles, others to their targes, whilst others ornament with its fringes the outer seams of their leggings: in fact, its uses are many. The more scalps the more honour; the young man who cannot boast of a single murder or show the coveted trophy is held in such scant esteem as the English gentleman who contents himself with being passing rich on a hundred pounds a year. Some great war chiefs have collected a heap of these honourable spoils. It must be remembered by "curio" hunters that only one scalp can come off one head: namely, the centre lock or long tuft growing upon the coronal apex, with about three inches in diameter of skin. This knowledge is the more needful as the western men are in the habit of manufacturing half a dozen cut from

different parts of the same head; they sell readily for $50 each, but the transaction is not considered reputable. The connoisseur, however, readily distinguishes the real article from "false scalping" by the unusual thickness of the cutis, which is more like that of a donkey than of a man. Set in a plain gold circlet it makes a very pretty brooch. Moreover each tribe has its own fashion of scalping derived from its forefathers. The Sioux, for instance, when they have leisure to perform the operation, remove the whole head-skin, including a portion of the ears; they then sit down and dispose the ears upon the horns of a buffalo skull, and a bit of the flesh upon little heaps of earth or clay, disposed in quincunx, apparently as an offering to the manes of their ancestors, and they smoke ceremoniously, begging the Manitou to send them plenty more. The trophy is then stretched upon a willow twig hoop into an oval shape, and lined with two semi-ovals of black or blue and scarlet cloth. The Yutas and the Prairie tribes generally, when pressed for time, merely take off the poll skin that grows the long tuft of hair, while the Chyuagers or Nez Percés prefer a long strip about two inches wide, extending from the nape to the commissure of the hair and forehead. The fingers of the slain are often reserved for sévignés and necklaces. Indians are aware of the aversion with which the pale faces regard this barbarity. Near Alkali Lake, where there was a large Dakota "Tipi" or encampment of Sioux, I tried to induce a tribesman to go through the imitative process before me; he refused with a gesture indignantly repudiating the practice. A glass of whiskey would doubtless have changed his mind, but I was unwilling to break through the wholesome law that prohibits it.

It is not wonderful that the modern missionary should be unable to influence such a brain as the Prairie Indian's. The old propagandists, Jesuits and Franciscans, became medicine-men: like the great fraternity in India, they succeeded by the points of resemblance which the savages remarked in their observances, such as their images and rosaries, which would be regarded as totems, and their fastings and prayers, which were of course supposed to be spells and charms. Their successors have succeeded about as well with the Indian as with the African; the settled tribes have given ear to them, the Prairie wanderers have not; and the Europeanization of the Indian generally is

hopeless as the Christianisation of the Hindu. The missionaries usually live under the shadow of the different agencies, and even they own that nothing can be done with the children unless removed from the parental influence. I do not believe that an Indian of the plains ever became a Christian. He must first be humanised, then civilised, and lastly Christianised; and, as has been said before, I doubt his surviving the operation.

As might be expected of the Indian's creed, it has few rites and ceremonies; circumcision is unknown, and it ignores the complicated observances which, in the case of the Hindu Pantheist, and in many African tribes, wait upon gestation, parturition and allactation. The child is seldom named.* There are but five words given in regular order to distinguish one from another. There are no family names. The man, after notable exploits, are entitled by their tribes to assume the titles of the distinguished dead, and each fresh deed brings a new distinction. Some of the names are poetical enough, the "Black Night," for instance, the "Breaker of Arrows," or the "War Eagle's Wing;" others are coarse and ridiculous, such as "Squash-head," "Bull's-tail," "Dirty-saddle," and "Steam from a Cow's Belly;" not a few bear a whimsical likeness to those of the African negroes, as "His Great Fire," "The Water Goes in the Path," and "Buffalo Chips"—the "Mavi yá Gnombe" of Unyamwesi. The son of a chief succeeding his father usually assumes his name, so that the little dynasty, like that of the Pharaohs, the Romuli, or the Numas, is perpetuated. The women are not unfrequently called after the parts and properties of some admired or valued animal, as the White Martin, the Young Mink †, or the Muskrat's Paw. In the north there have been men with as many as seven wives, all "Martins." The Prairie Indians form the names of the women like those of men, adding the feminine suffix, as Cloud-woman, Red-earth-woman, Black-day-woman. The white stranger is ever offending Indian

* The Ojibwa and other races have the ceremony of a burst offering when the name is given.

† Putorius vison, a pretty dark chesnut-coloured animal of the weasel kind, which burrows in the banks of streams near mills and farmhouses, where it preys upon the poultry like the rest of the family. It swims well and can dive for a long time. Its food is small fish, mussels, and insects, but it will also devour rats and mice.

etiquette by asking the savage "What's your name?"—the person asked looks aside for a friend to assist him; he has learned in boyhood that some misfortune will happen to him if he discloses his name. Even husbands and wives never mention each other's names. The same practice prevails in many parts of Asia.

Marriage is a simple affair with them. In some tribes the bride, as amongst the Australians, is carried off by force. In others the man who wants a wife courts her with a little present, and pickets near the father's lodge the number of horses which he supposes to be her equivalent. As amongst all savage tribes the daughter is a chattel, an item of her father's goods, and he will not part with her except for a consideration. The men are of course polygamists; they prefer to marry sisters, because the tent is more quiet, and much upon the principle with which marriage with a deceased wife's sister is advocated in England. The women, like the Africans, are not a little addicted to suicide. Before espousal the conduct of the weaker sex in many tribes is far from irreproachable. The "bundling" of Wales and of New England in a former day* is not unknown to them, and many think little of that *propylæa matrimonii* which, in the eastern parts of the New World, goes by the name of Fanny Wrightism and Free-loveism. Several tribes make trial, like the Highlanders before the reign of James the Fifth, of their wives for a certain time—a kind of "hand-fasting," which is to Morality what Fetishism is to Faith. There are few nations in the world amongst whom this practice, originating in a natural desire not to "make a leap in the dark," cannot be traced. Yet after marriage they will live like

* Traces of this ancient practice may be found in the four quarters of the globe. Mr. Burton in his instructive volume quotes the Rev. Samuel Pike ("General History of Connecticut," London, 1781), who quaintly remarks: "Notwithstanding the great modesty of the females is such that it would be accounted the greatest rudeness for a gentleman to speak before a lady of a garter or a leg, yet it is thought but a piece of civility to ask her to bundle." The learned and pious historian endeavoured to prove that bundling was not only a Christian, but a very polite and prudent practice. So the Rev. Andrew Burnaby, who travelled in New England in 1759-60, thinks that though bundling may "at first appear the effect of grossness of character, it will, upon deeper research, be found to proceed from simplicity and innocence."

the Spartan matrons a life of austerity in relation to the other sex. In cases of divorce, the children, being property, are divided, and in most tribes the wife claims the odd one. If the mother takes any care to preserve her daughter's virtue it is only out of regard to its market value. In some tribes the injured husband displays all the philosophy of Cato and Socrates. In others the wife is punished, like the native of Hindostan, by cutting, or more generally by biting off, the nose-tip. Some slay the wife's lover; others accept a pecuniary compensation for their dishonour, and take as damages skins or horses. Elopement, as amongst the Arabs, prevails in places. The difference of conduct on the part of the women of course depends upon the bearing of the men. "There is no adulteress without an adulterer"—meaning that the husband is ever the first to be unfaithful—is a saying as old as the days of Mohammed. Amongst the Arapahos, for instance, there is great looseness; the Cheyennes on the contrary are notably correct. Truth demands one unpleasant confession, viz. on the whole chastity is little esteemed amongst those Indians who have been corrupted by intercourse with whites.

The dignity of chief denotes in the Indian language a royal title. It is hereditary as a rule, but men of low birth sometimes attain it by winning a name as warriors or medicine-men. When there are many sons it often happens that each takes command of a small clan. Personal prowess is a necessity in Sagamore and Sachem: an old man therefore often abdicates in favour of his more vigorous son, to whom he acts as guide and counsellor. There is one chief to every band, with several sub-chiefs. The power possessed by the ruler depends upon his individual character, and the greater or lesser capacity for discipline in his subjects. Some are obeyed grudgingly, as the Shaykh of a Bedouin tribe. Others are absolute monarchs, who dispose of the lives and properties of their followers without exciting a murmur. The counteracting element to despotism resides in the sub-chief and in the council of warriors, who obstinately insist upon having a voice in making laws, raising subsidies, declaring wars and ratifying peace.

Their life is of course simple: they have no regular hours for meals or sleep. Before eating they sometimes make a heave-

offering of a bit of food towards the heavens, where their forefathers are, and a second towards Earth, the mother of all things: the pieces are then burned. They are not cannibals, except when a warrior after slaying a foe, eats, porcupine-like, the heart or liver, with the idea of increasing his own courage. The women rarely sit at meals with the men. In savage and semi-barbarous societies the separation of the sexes is the general rule, because, as they have no ideas in common, each prefers the society of its own. They are fond of adoption and of making brotherhoods, like the Africans, and so strong is the tie that marriage with the sister of an adopted brother, is within the prohibited degrees. Gambling is a passion with them: they play at cards, an art probably learnt from the Canadians, and the game is that called in the States "matching" on the principle of dominoes or beggar-my-neighbour. When excited they ejaculate: Will! Will!—sharp and staccato—it is possibly a conception of the English well! But it often comes out in the place of bad, as the Sepoy orderly in India, reports to his captain "Ramnak Jamnak dead, Joti Prasad very sick—all well!" The savages win and lose with the stoicism habitual to them, rarely drawing the "navajon," like the Mexican "lepero," over a disputed point; and when a man has lost his last rag, he rises in rude dignity and goes home. Their language ignores the violent and offensive abuse of parents and female relatives, which distinguishes the Asiatic and the African from the European Billingsgate: the worst epithets that can be applied to a man, are miser, coward, dog, woman. With them good temper is good breeding—a mark of gentle blood. A brave will stand up and harangue his enemies, exulting how he scalped their sires and squaws and sons, without calling forth a grunt of irritation. Ceremony and manners, in our sense of the word, they have none, and they lack the profusion of salutations which usually distinguishes barbarians. An Indian appearing at your door, rarely has the civility to wait till beckoned in: he enters the house, with his quiet catlike gait and his imperturbable countenance, saying, if a Sioux: "How!" or "How! How!" meaning Well? shakes hands, to which he expects the same reply, if he has learned "paddling with the palms" from the whites,—this however, is only expected by the chiefs and braves,—and squats upon his hams in the Eastern way, I

had almost said the natural way, but to man, unlike all other animals, every way is equally natural, the chair or the seat upon the ground. He accepts a pipe, if offered to him, devours what you set before him — those best acquainted with the savage, however, avoid all unnecessary civility or generosity: Milesian-like he considers a benefit his due, and if withheld, he looks upon his benefactor as a "mean man,"— talks or smokes as long as he pleases, and then rising stalks off without a word. His ideas of time are primitive. The hour is denoted by pointing out the position of the sun; the days, or rather the nights, are reckoned by sleeps; there are no weeks; the moons, which are literally new, the old being nibbled away by mice, form the months, and suns do duty for years. He has, like the Bedouin and the Esquimaux, sufficient knowledge of the heavenly bodies, to steer his course over the pathless Sage-sea. Night-work, however, is no favourite with him except in cases of absolute necessity. Counting is done upon man's first abacus, the fingers, and it rarely extends beyond ten. The value of an article was formerly determined by beads and buffaloes: dollars however, are now beginning to be generally known.

The only arts of the Indians are medicine and the use of arms. They are great in the knowledge of simples and tisanes. The leaves of the white willow are the favourite emetic; wounds are dressed with astringent herbs, and inflammations are reduced by scarification and the actual cautery. Amongst some tribes, the Hammam or Turkish bath is invariably the appendage to a village. It is an oven sunk in the earth, with room for about a score of persons, and a domed roof of tamped and timber-propped earth,—often mistaken for a bulge in the ground,— pierced with a little square window for ventilation when not in use. A fire is kindled in the centre, and the patient, after excluding the air, sits quietly in this rude caldarium till half roasted and stifled by the heat and smoke. Finally, like the Russian peasant, he plunges into the burn that runs hard by and feels his ailments dropping off him with the dead cuticle. The Indians associating with the horse have learned a rude farriery which often succeeds where polite practice would fail. I heard of one who cured the bites of rattlesnakes and copper-heads by scarifying the wounded beast's face, plastering the place with damped gunpowder paste and setting it on fire.

Amongst the prairie tribes are now to be found individuals provided not only with the old muskets formerly supplied to them, but with Yägers*, Sharp's breechloaders, alias "Beecher's Bibles," Colt's revolvers, and other really good fire-arms. Their shooting has improved with their tools: many of them are now able to "draw a bead" with coolness and certainty. Those who cannot afford shooting-irons, content themselves with their ancient weapons, the lance and bow. The former is a poor affair, a mere iron spike from two to three inches long, inserted into the end of a staff about as thick as a Hindostani's bamboo lance; it is whipped round with sinew for strength, decorated with a few bunches of gaudy feathers, and defended with the usual medicine bag. The bow varies in dimensions with the different tribes. On the prairies, for convenient use on horseback, it seldom exceeds three feet in length: amongst the Southern Indians its size doubles, and in parts of South America it is like that of the Andamans, a gigantic weapon with an arrow six feet long, and drawn by bringing the aid of the feet to the hands. The best bows amongst the Sioux and Yutas are of horn, hickory being unprocurable; an inferior sort is made of a reddish wood, in hue and grain not unlike that called "mountain mahogany." A strip of raw hide is fitted to the back for increase of elasticity, and the string is a line of twisted sinew. When not wanted for use the weapon is carried in a skin case slung over the shoulder. It is drawn with the two forefingers — not with the forefinger and thumb, as in the East — and generally the third or ring finger is extended along the string to give additional purchase. Savage tribes do little in the way of handicraft, but that little they do patiently, slowly, and therefore well. The bow and arrow are admirably adapted to their purpose. The latter is either a reed or a bit of arrow-wood (*Viburnum dentatum*) whose long, straight, and tough stems are used by the fletcher from the Mississippi to the Pacific. The piles are triangles of iron, agate, flint, chalcedony, opal, or other hard stone: for war purposes they are barbed, and bird-bolts tipped with hard wood are used for killing small game. Some tribes poison their shafts: the material is the juice of a buffalo's, or an antelope's liver when it has become green and decomposed

* An antiquated sort of German rifle, formerly used by the Federal troops.

after the bite of a rattlesnake: at least this is the account which all the hunters and mountaineers give of it. They have also, I believe, vegetable poisons. The feathers are three in number; those preferred are the hawk's and the raven's; and some tribes glue, whilst others whip, them on with tendon-thread. The stele is invariably indented from the feathers to the tip with a shallow spiral furrow: this vermiculation is intended, according to the traders, to hasten death by letting air into or letting blood out of the wound. It is probably the remnant of some superstition now obsolete, for every man does it, whilst no man explain why or wherefore. If the Indian works well, he does not work quickly; he will expend upon half a dozen arrows as many months. Each tribe has its own mark; the Pawnees, for instance, make a bulge below the notch. Individuals also have private signs which enable them to claim a disputed scalp or buffalo-robe. In battle or chase the arrows are held in the left hand and are served out to the right with such rapidity that one long string of them seems to be cleaving the air. A good Sioux archer will, it is said, discharge nine arrows upwards before the first has fallen to the ground. He will transfix a bison and find his shaft upon the earth on the other side; and he shows his dexterity by discharging the arrow up to its middle in the quarry and by withdrawing it before the animal falls. Tales are told of a single warrior killing several soldiers; and as a rule, at short distances, the bow is considered by the whites a more effectual weapon than the gun. It is related that when the Sioux first felt the effects of Colt's revolver, the weapon, after two shots, happened to slip from the owner's grasp; when he recovered it and fired a third time all fled, declaring that a white was shooting them with buffalo chips. Wonderful tales are told of the Indians' accuracy with the bow: they hold it no great feat to put the arrow into a key-hole at the distance of forty paces. It is true that I never saw anything surprising in their performances, but the savage will not take the trouble to waste his skill without an object.

The Sioux tongue, like the Pawnee, is easily learnt: government officials and settlers acquire it as the Anglo-Indian does Hindostani. They are assisted by the excellent grammar and dictionary of the Dakota language, collated by the members of

the Dakota Mission, edited by the Rev. S. R. Riggs, M.A., and accepted for publication by the Smithsonian Institution, December 1851. The Dakota-English part contains about 16,000 words, and the bibliography (spelling-books, tracts and translations) numbered ten years ago eighteen small volumes. The work is compiled in a scholar-like manner. The orthography, though rather complicated, is intelligible, and is a great improvement upon the old and unartistic way of writing the polysynthetic Indian tongues, syllable by syllable, as though they were monosyllabic Chinese; the superfluous *h* (as Dakotah for Dakota), by which the broad sound of the terminal *a* is denoted, has been justly cast out. The peculiar letters *ch*, *p*, and *t*, are denoted by a dot beneath the simple sound; similarly the *h* (or Arabic *hat*), the *gh* (the Semitic *ghain*) and the *kh* (*khá*), which, as has happened in Franco-Arabic grammars, was usually expressed by an *R*. An apostrophe (*a'a*) denotes the hiatus, which is similar to the Arab's hamzah.

Vater long ago remarked that the only languages which had a character, if not similar, at any rate analogous to the American, are the Basque and the Congo, that is the South African or Kafir family. This is the case in many points: in Dakota, for instance, as in Kiswahili, almost every word ends in a pure or a nasalised vowel. But the striking novelty of the African tongues, the inflexion of words by an initial, not, as with us, by a terminal change and the complex system of euphony, does not appear in the American, which in its turn possesses a dual unknown to the African. The Dakota, like the Kafir, has no gender, it uses the personal and impersonal, which is an older distinction in language. It follows the primitive and natural arrangement of speech: it says, for instance, "aguyapi maku ye," bread to me give; as in Hindostani, to quote no other, "roti hamko do." So in logical argument it begins with the conclusion and proceeds to the premisses, which renders it difficult for a European to think in Dakota. Like other American tongues, it is polysynthetic, which appears to be the effect of arrested development. Human speech begins with inorganic sounds, which represent symbolism by means of arrows pointed in a certain direction, bent trees, crossed rods and other similar contrivances. Its first step is monosyllabic, which corresponds with the pictograph, the earliest attempt at writing amongst the un-

civilised.* The next advance is polysynthesis, which is apparently built upon monosyllabism, as the ideograph of the Chinese upon a picture or glyph. The last step is the syllabic and inflected, corresponding with the Phœnico-Arabian alphabet, which gave rise to the Greek, the Latin, and their descendants. The complexity of Dakota grammar is another illustration of the phenomenon that man in most things, in language especially, begins with the most difficult and works on towards the facile. Savages, who have no mental exercise but the cultivation of speech, and semi-barbarous people, who still retain the habit, employ complicated and highly elaborate tongues, *e.g.* Arabic, Sanskrit, Latin, Greek, Kafir, and Anglo-Saxon. With time these become more simple; the *modus operandi* appears to be admixture of race.

The Dakotas have a sacred language, used by medicine-men, and rendered unintelligible to the vulgar, by words borrowed from other Indian dialects, and by synonyms, *e.g.* biped for man, quadruped for wolf. A chief, asking for an ox or cow, calls it a dog, and a horse, moccasins: possibly, like Orientals, he superstitiously avoids direct mention and speaks of the object wanted by a humbler name. Poetry is hardly required in a language so highly figurative: a hi-hi-hi-hi-hi occasionally interrupted by a few words composes their songs. The Rev. Mr. Pond gives the following specimen of "Blackboy's" Mourning Song for his Grandson, addressed to those of Ghostland:

Friend, pause, and look this way;
Friend, pause, and look this way;
Friend, pause, and look this way;
Say ye:
A grandson of Blackboy is coming.

Their speech is sometimes metaphorical to an extent which conveys an opposite meaning: "Friend, thou art a fool: thou hast let the Ojibwe strike thee," is the highest form of eulogy to a brave who has killed and scalped a foe; possibly a Malocchio-like fear, the dread of praise, which, according to Pliny, kills in India, underlies the habit.

The funerals differ in every tribe: the Sioux expose their

* A Kafir girl wishing to give a hint to a friend of mine drew a setting sun, a tree, and two figures standing under it; intelligible enough, yet the Kafirs ignore syllabarium.

dead, wrapped in blankets or buffalo robes upon tall poles — a custom that reminds us of the Parsee's "Tower of Silence." The Yutas make their graves high up the kanyons, usually in clefts of rock. Some bury the dead at full length; others sitting or doubled up; others on horseback, with a barrow or tumulus of earth heaped up over their remains. The absence of graveyards in an Indian country is remarkable as in the African interior; thinness of population and the savage's instinctive dislike to any *memento mori* are the causes. After deaths the "keening" is long, loud, and lasting: the women and often the men, cut their hair close, not allowing it to fall below the shoulders, and not unfrequently gash themselves and amputate one or more fingers. The dead man, especially a chief, is in almost all tribes provided with a viaticum, dead or alive, of squaws and boys — generally those taken from another tribe — horses and dogs; his lodge is burned, his arms, cooking utensils, saddles and other accoutrements are buried with him, and a goodly store of buffalo meat or other provision is placed by his side, that his ghost may want nothing which it enjoyed in the flesh. Like all savages, the Indian is unable to separate the idea of man's immaterial spirit from man's material wants: an impalpable and invisible form of matter,—called "spirit" because it is not cognisable to the senses, which are the only avenues of all knowledge,—is as unintelligible to them as to a Latter Day Saint, or, indeed, as to the mind of man generally. Hence the Indian's smoking and offerings over the graves of friends. Some tribes mourn on the same day of each moon till grief is satisfied; others for a week after the death.

A remarkable characteristic of the Prairie Indian is his habit of speaking, like the deaf and dumb, with his fingers. The pantomime is a system of signs, some conventional, others instinctive or imitative, which enables tribes who have no acquaintance with each other's customs and tongues to hold limited but sufficient communication. An interpreter who knows all the signs, which, however, are so numerous and complicated, that to acquire them is the labour of years, is preferred by the whites even to a good speaker. Some writers, as Captain H. Stansbury, consider the system purely arbitrary; others, Captain Marcy, for instance, hold it to be a natural language similar to the gestures which surd-mutes use spontaneously. Both views are true, but

not wholly true: as the following pages will, I believe, prove, the pantomimic vocabulary is neither quite conventional nor the reverse.

The sign-system doubtless arose from the necessity of a communicating medium between races speaking many different dialects, and debarred by circumstances from social intercourse. Its area is extensive: it prevails amongst many of the Prairie tribes, as the Hapsaroke, or Crows, the Dakota, the Cheyenne and the Shoshone, the Pawnees, Yutas, and Shoshoko or Diggers, being vagrants and outcasts, have lost or never had the habit. Those natives who, like the Arapahos, possess a very scanty vocabulary, pronounced in a quasi-unintelligible way, can hardly converse with one another in the dark: to make a stranger understand them they must always repair to the camp fire for "pow-wow." A story is told of a man, who, being sent amongst the Cheyennes to qualify himself for interpreting, returned in a week, and proved his competence: all that he did, however, was to go through the usual pantomime with a running accompaniment of grunts. I have attempted to describe a few of the simpler signs: the reader, however, will readily perceive that without diagrams the explanation is very imperfect, and that in half an hour, with an Indian or an interpreter, he would learn more than by a hundred pages of print.

The first lesson is to distinguish the signs of the different tribes, and it will be observed that the French voyageurs and traders have often named the Indian nations from their totemic or masonic gestures.

The Pawnees (Les Loups) imitate a wolf's ears with the two forefingers — the right hand is always understood unless otherwise specified * — extended together, upright, on the left side of the head.

The Arapahos, or Dirty Noses, rub the right side of that organ with the forefinger: some call this bad tribe the Smellers, and make their sign to consist of seizing the nose with the thumb and forefinger.

The Comanches (Les Serpents) imitate by the waving of the hand or forefinger the forward crawling motion of a snake.

The Cheyennes, Paikanavos, or Cut Wrists, draw the lower

* The left, as a rule, denotes invention or contradiction.

edge of the hand across the left arm as if gashing it with a knife.

The Sioux (Les Coupe-gorges), by drawing the lower edge of the hand across the throat: it is a gesture not unknown to us, but forms a truly ominous salutation considering those by whom it is practised; hence the Sioux are called by the Yutas, Pimpe Chyimlos, or Hand-cutters.

The Hapauroke (Les Corbeaux), by imitating the flapping of the birds' wings with the two hands — palms downwards — brought close to the shoulders.

The Kiowas or Prairie-men, make the signs of the prairie, and of drinking water. These will presently be described.

The Yutas, "they who live on mountains," have a complicated sign which denotes "living in mountains;" these will be explained under "sit" and "mountains."

The Blackfoot, called by the Yutas, Paike or Goers, pass the right hand, beat spoon fashion, from the heel to the little toe of the right foot.

The following are a few preliminaries, indispensable to the prairie traveller:—

Halt! — Raise the hand, with the palm in front, and push it backward and forwards several times — a gesture well known in the East.

I don't know you! — Move the raised hand, with the palm in front, slowly to the right and left.

I am angry! — Close the fist, place it against the forehead, and turn it to and fro in that position.

Are you friendly? — Raise both hands, grasped, as if in the act of shaking hands, or lock the two forefingers together while the hands are raised.

These signs will be found useful upon the prairie in case of meeting a suspected band. The Indians, like the Bedouin and N. African Moslem, do honour to strangers and guests by putting their horses to speed, couching their lances and other pacific little which would readily be dispensed with by gentlemen of peaceful pursuits and shaky nerves. If friendly, the band will halt when the hint is given and return the salute; if surly, they will disregard the command to stop, and probably will make the sign of anger. Then — ware scalp!

Come!—Beckon with the forefinger, as in Europe, not as is done in the East.

Come back!—Beckon in the European way, and draw the forefinger towards yourself.

Go!—Move both hands edgeways (the palms fronting the breast) towards the left with a rocking-horse motion.

Sit!—Make a motion towards the ground, as if to pound it with the fervent of the closed hand.

Lie down!—Point to the ground and make a motion as if of lying down.

Sleep!—Ditto, closing the eyes.

Look!—Touch the right eye with the index and point it outwards.

Hear! Tap the right ear with the index tip.

Colours are expressed by a comparison with some object in sight. Many things, as the blowing of wind, the cries of beasts and birds, and the roaring of the sea are imitated by sound.

See!—Strike out the two forefingers forward from the eyes.

Smell!—Touch the nose tip. A bad smell is expressed by the same sign, ejaculating at the same time "pooh!" and making the sign of bad.

Taste!—Touch the tongue tip.

Eat!—Imitate the action of conveying food with the fingers to the mouth.

Drink!—Scoop up with the hand imaginary water into the mouth.

Smoke!—With the crooked index describe a pipe in the air, beginning at the lips; then wave the open hand from the mouth to imitate curls of smoke.

Speak!—Extend the open hand from the chin.

Fight!—Make a motion with both fists to and fro, like a pugilist of the eighteenth century who preferred a high guard.

Kill!—Smite the sinister palm earthwards with the dexter fist sharply, as sign of "going down;" or strike out with the dexter fist towards the ground, meaning to "shut down;" or pass the dexter index under the left forefinger, meaning to "go under."

To show that fighting is actually taking place, make the gestures as above described: tap the lips with the palm like an Oriental woman when "keening," screaming the while O-a! O-a! to imitate the war song.

Wash!—Rub the hand as with invisible soap in imperceptible water.

Think!—Pass the forefinger sharply across the breast from right to left.

Hide!—Place the hand inside the clothing of the left breast. This means also to put away or to keep secret. To express "I won't say," make the signs of "I" and "no" (which see) and hide the hand as above directed.

Love!—Fold the hands crosswise over the breast, as if embracing the object, assuming at the same time a look expressing the desire to carry out the operation. This gesture will be understood by the dullest squaw.

Tell truth!—Extend the forefinger from the mouth ("one word").

Tell lie!—Extend the two first fingers from the mouth ("double tongue," a significant gesture).

Steal!—Seize an imaginary object with the right hand from under the left fist. To express horse-stealing they saw with the right hand down upon the extended fingers of the left, thereby denoting rope-cutting.

Trade or exchange!—Cross the forefingers of both hands before the breast—"diamond cut diamond."

This sign also denotes the Americans, and indeed any white men, who are generically called by the Indians west of the Rocky Mountains "Shwop," from our swap or swop, an English Romany word for barter or exchange.

The pronouns are expressed by pointing to the person designated. For "I," touch the nose-tip, or otherwise indicate self with the index. The second and third persons are similarly made known.

Every animal has its precise sign, and the choice of gesture is sometimes very ingenious. If the symbol be not known, the form may be drawn on the ground, and the strong perceptive faculties of the savage enable him easily to recognise even rough draughts. A cow or a sheep denotes white men, as if they were their totems. The Indian's high development of locality also enables him to map the features of a country readily and correctly upon the sand. Moreover, almost every grand feature has a highly significant name, Flintwater, for instance, and nothing is easier than to combine the signs.

The *bear* is expressed by passing the hand before the face to mean ugliness, at the same time grinning and extending the fingers like claws.

The *buffalo* is known by raising the forefingers crooked inwards, in the semblance of horns on both sides of the head.

The *elk* is signified by simultaneously raising both hands with the fingers extended on both sides of the head to imitate palmated horns.

For the *deer*, extend the thumbs and the two forefingers of each hand on each side of the head.

For the *antelope*, extend the thumbs and forefingers along the sides of the head to simulate ears and horns.

Mountain sheep are denoted by placing the hands on a level with the ears, the palms facing backwards and the fingers slightly reversed to imitate the ammonite-shaped horns.

For the *beaver*, describe a parenthesis, *e. g.* () with the thumb and index of both hands, and then with the dexter index imitate the wagging of the tail.

The *dog* is shown by drawing the two forefingers slightly opened horizontally across the breast, from right to left. This is a highly appropriate and traditional gesture: before the introduction of horses, the dog was taught to carry the tent poles, and the motion expressed the lodge-trail.

To denote the *mule* or *ass*, the long ears are imitated by the indices on both sides and above the head.

For the *crow*, and indeed any bird, the hands are flapped near the shoulders. If specification be required, the cry is imitated or some peculiarity is introduced. The following will show the ingenuity with which the Indian can convey his meaning under difficulties. A Yuta wishing to explain that the torpedo or gymnotus eel is found in Cottonwood Kanyon Lake, took to it thus: he made the body by extending his sinister index to the fore, touched it with the dexter index at two points on both sides to show legs, and finally sharply withdrew his right forefinger to convey the idea of an electric shock.

Some of the symbols of relationship are highly appropriate, and not ungraceful or unpicturesque. Man is denoted by a sign which will not admit of description; woman, by passing the hand down both sides of the head as if smoothing or stroking the long hair. A son or daughter is expressed by making with the hand a movement denoting issue from the loins: if the child be small, a bit of the index held between the antagonised thumb and medius is shown. The same sign of issue expresses both parents, with additional explanations:—To say, for instance, "*my mother*," you would first pantomime "*I*," or, which is the

same thing, "*my*," then "*woman*," and, finally, the symbol of parentage. "*My grandmother*" would be conveyed in the same way, adding to the end clasped hands, closed eyes, and like an old woman's bent back. The sign for brother and sister is perhaps the prettiest:—the two first finger tips are put into the mouth, denoting that they fed from the same breast. For the wife—squaw is now becoming a word of reproach amongst the Indians—the dexter forefinger is passed between the extended thumb and index of the left.

Of course there is a sign for every weapon. The *knife*—scalp or other—is shown by cutting the sinister palm with the dexter ferient downward and towards oneself: if the cuts be made upward with the palm downwards, meat is understood. The *tomahawk*, hatchet, or axe is denoted by chopping the left hand with the right; the *sword* by the motion of drawing it; the *bow* by the movement of bending it; and a *spear* or *lance* by an imitation of darting it. For the *gun*, the dexter thumb and fingers are flashed or scattered, i. e. thrown outwards and upwards to denote fire. The same movement made lower down expresses a *pistol*. The *arrow* is expressed by nocking it upon an imaginary bow, and by "mapping" with the index and medius. The *shield* is shown by pointing with the index over the left shoulder, where it is slung ready to be brought over the breast when required.

The following are the most useful words:—

Yes.—Wave the hands straight forwards from the face.

No.—Wave the hand from right to left, as if motioning away. This sign also means, "I'll have nothing to do with you." Done slowly and insinuatingly it informs a woman that she is *charmante*—"not to be touched" being the idea.

Good.—Wave the hand from the mouth, extending the thumb from the index and closing the other three fingers. This sign means also "I know." "I don't know" is expressed by waving the right hand with the palm outwards before the right breast; or by moving about the two forefingers before the breast, meaning "two hearts."

Bad.—Scatter the dexter fingers outwards, as if spirting away water from them.

Now (*at once*).—Clap both palms together sharply and repeatedly; or make the sign of "to-day."

Day.—Make a circle with the thumb and forefinger of both, in sign of the sun. The *hour* is pointed out by showing the luminary's place

in the heavens. The *moon* is expressed by a crescent with the thumb and forefinger: this also denotes a month. For a *year* give the sign of rain or snow.

Many Indians ignore the quadripartite division of the seasons, which seems to be an invention of European latitudes;—the Persians, for instance, know it, but the Hindus do not. They have, however, distinct terms for the month, all of which are pretty and descriptive, appropriate and poetical; *e. g.* the moon of light nights, the moon of leaves, the moon of strawberries, for April, May, and June. The Ojibwe have a queer quaternal division, called Of sap, Of abundance, Of fading, and Of freezing. The Dakota reckon five moons to winter and five to summer, leaving one to spring and one to autumn; the year is lunar, and as the change of season is denoted by the appearance of sore eyes and of raccoons, any irregularity throws the people out.

Night.—Make a closing movement as if of the darkness by bringing together both hands with the dorsa upwards and the fingers to the fore: the motion is from right to left, and at the end the two indices are alongside and close to each other. This movement must be accompanied by bending forward with bowed head, otherwise it may be misunderstood for the freezing over of a lake or river.

To-day.—Touch the nose with the index tip, and motion with the fist towards the ground.

Yesterday.—Make with the left hand the circle which the sun describes from sunrise to sunset, or invert the direction from sunset to sunrise with the right hand.

To-morrow.—Describe the motion of the sun from east to west. Any number of days may be counted upon the fingers. The latter, I need hardly say, are the only numerals in the pantomimic vocabulary.

Among the Dakotas, when they have gone over the fingers and thumbs of both hands, one is temporarily turned down for one ten; at the end of another ten a second finger is turned down, and so on, as amongst children who are learning to count. "Opawinge," one hundred, is derived from "pawinge," to go round in circles, as the fingers have all been gone over again for their respective tens; "Kektopawinge" is from "ake," and "opawinge,"—"hundred again,"—being about to recommence the circle of their fingers already completed in hundreds. For numerals above a thousand there is no method of computing.

There is a sign and word for one half of a thing, but none to denote any smaller aliquot part.

Peace.—Intertwine the fingers of both hands.

Friendship.—Clasp the left with the right hand.

Glad (pleased).—Wave the open hand outwards from the breast, to express "good heart."

A Cup.—Imitate its form with both hands, and make the sign of drinking from it. In this way any utensil can be intelligibly described—of course provided that the interlocutor has seen it.

Paint.—Daub both the cheeks downwards with the index.

Looking-glass.—Place both palms before the face, and admire your countenance in them.

Bead.—Point to a bead, or make the sign of a necklace.

Wire.—Show it, or where it ought to be, in the ear-lobe.

Whiskey.—Make the sign of "bad" and "drink" for "bad water."

Blanket or Clothes.—Put them on in pantomime.

A Lodge.—Place the fingers of both hands ridge-fashion before the breast.

Fire.—Blow it, and warm the hands before it. To express the boiling of a kettle, the sign of fire is made low down, and an imaginary pot is eaten from.

It is cold.—Wrap up, shudder, and look disagreeable.

Rain.—Scatter the fingers downwards. The same sign denotes snow.

Wind.—Stretch the fingers of both hands outward, puffing violently the while.

A Storm.—Make the rain sign; then, if thunder and lightning are to be expressed, move, as if in anger, the body to and fro, to show the wrath of the elements.

A Stone.—If light, act as if picking it up: if heavy, as if dropping it.

A Hill.—Close the finger-tips over the head: if a mountain is to be expressed, raise them high. To denote an ascent on rising ground, pass the right palm over the left hand, half doubling up the latter, so that it looks like a ridge.

A Plain.—Wave both the palms outwards and low down.

A River.—Make the sign of drinking, and then wave both the palms outwards. A rivulet, creek, or stream is shown by the drinking sign, and by holding the index tip between the thumb and medius; an arroyo (dry water-course), by covering up the tip with the thumb and middle finger.

A Lake.—Make the sign of drinking, and form a basin with both hands. If a large body of water is in question, wave both palms outwards as in denoting a plain. The prairie savages have never seen the sea, so it would be vain to attempt explanation.

A Book.—Place the right palm on the left palm, and then open both before the face.

A Letter.—Write with the thumb and dexter index on the sinister palm.

A Waggon.—Roll hand over hand, imitating a wheel.

A Waggon-road.—Make the waggon sign, and then wave the hand along the ground.

Grass.—Point to the ground with the index, and then turn the fingers upwards to denote growth. If the grass be long, raise the hand high; and if yellow, point out that colour.

The pantomime, as may be seen, is capable of expressing detailed narratives. For instance, supposing an Indian would tell the following tale:—"Early this morning, I mounted my horse, rode off at a gallop, traversed a kanyon or ravine, then over a mountain to a plain where there was no water, sighted bison, followed them, killed three of them, skinned them, packed the flesh upon my pony, remounted and returned home"—he would symbolise it thus:—

Touches nose—"*I.*"

Opens out the palms of his hand—"*this morning.*"

Points to east—"*early.*"

Places two dexter forefingers astraddle over sinister index—"*mounted my horse.*"

Moves both hands upwards and rocking-horse fashion towards the left—"*galloped.*"

Passes the dexter hand right through thumb and forefinger of the sinister, which are widely extended—"*traversed a kanyon.*"

Closes the finger-tips high over the head, and waves both palms outwards—"*over a mountain to a plain.*"

Scoops up with the hand imaginary water into the mouth, and then waves the hand from the face to denote "no"—"*where there was no water.*"

Touches eye—"*sighted.*"

Raises the forefingers crooked inwards on both sides of the head—"*bison.*"

Smites the sinister palm downwards with the dexter fist—"*killed.*"

Shows three fingers—"*three of them.*"

Scrapes the left palm with the edge of the right hand—"*skinned them.*"

Places the dexter on the sinister palm, and then the dexter palm on the sinister dorsum—"*packed the flesh upon my pony.*"

Straddles the two forefingers on the index of the left—"*remounted;*" and finally,

Beckons towards self—"returned home."

To conclude, I can hardly flatter myself that these descriptions have been made quite intelligible to the reader. They may, however, serve to prepare his mind for a vivâ voce lesson upon the prairies, should fate have such thing in store for him.

After this digression, I return to my prosaic Diary.

CHAP. III.

CONCLUDING THE ROUTE TO THE GREAT SALT LAKE CITY.

"Along the Black Hills to Bear River, 15th August.

I AROSE "between two days," a little before 4 A.M., and watched the dawn, and found in its beauties a soothing influence which acted upon stiff limbs and discontented spirit as if it had been a spell.

The stars of the Great Bear — the prairie night-clock — first began to pale without any seeming cause, till presently a faint streak of pale light — *dum i gurg*, or the wolf's tail, as it is called by the Persian — began to shimmer upon the eastern verge of heaven. It grew and grew through the dark-blue air: one unaccustomed to the study of the "grey-eyed morn" would have expected it to usher in the day, when, gradually as it had struggled into existence, it faded, and a deeper darkness than before once more invaded the infinitude above. But now the unrisen sun is more rapidly climbing the gloomy walls of Koh i Kaf — the mountain rim which encircles the world, and through whose lower gap the False Dawn had found its way — preceded by a warm flush of light, which chases the shades till, though loth to depart, they find neither on earth nor in the firmament a place where they can linger. Warmer and warmer waxes the heavenly radiance, gliding up to the keystone of the vault above; fainter and fainter grows the darkness, till the last stain disappears behind the Black Hills to the west, and the stars one by one, like glow-worms, "pale their ineffectual fires" — the "Pointers" are the longest to resist — retreat backwards, as it were, and fade away into endless space. Slowly, almost imperceptibly, the marvellous hues of "glorious morn," here truly a fresh "birth of heaven and earth," all gold and

sapphire, acquire depth and distinctness, till at last a fiery flush ushers from beneath the horizon the source of all these splendours,

"Robed in flames and amber light;"

and another day, with its little life of joys and sorrows, of hopes and fears, is born to the world.

Though we all rose up early, packed, and were ready to proceed, there was an unusual *vis inertiæ* on the part of the driver: Indians were about; the mules of course had bolted; but that did not suffice as explanation. Presently the "wonder leaked out;" our companions were transferred from their comfortable vehicle to a real "shandridan," a Rocky-Mountain bone-setter. They were civil enough to the exceedingly drunken youth — a runaway new Yorker — who did us the honour of driving us: for *quand on a besoin du diable on lui dit, "Monsieur."* One cannot expect, however, the *diable* to be equally civil: when we asked him to tidy our vehicle a little, he simply replied, that he'd be darned if he did. Long may be the darning needle and sharp to him! But tempers seriously soured must blow up or burst, and a very pretty little quarrel was the result: it was settled bloodlessly, because one gentleman, who to do him justice showed every disposition to convert himself into a target, displayed such perfect unacquaintance with the weapons — revolvers — usually used on similar occasions, that it would have been mere murder to have taken pistol in hand against him.

As we sat very disconsolate in the open verandah, five Indians stalked in, and the biggest and burliest of the party, a middle-aged man, with the long straight Indian hair, high harsh features, and face bald of eyebrows and beard, after offering his paw to Mrs. Dana and the rest of the party, sat down with a manner of natural dignity, somewhat trenching upon the impertinent. Presently, diving his hand into his breast, the old rat pulled out a thick fold of leather, and after much manipulation, disclosed a dirty-brown, ragged-edged sheet of paper, certifying him to be "Little Thunder," and signed by "General Harney." This, then, was the chief who showed the white-feather at Ash Hollow, and of whom some military poet sang:

"We didn't make a blunder,
We rubbed out Little Thunder,
And we sent him to the other side of Jordan."

Little Thunder did not look quite rubbed out; but for poesy fiction is, of course, an element far more appropriate than fact. I remember a similar effusion of the Anglo-Indian muse, which consigned "Akbar Khan the Yaghi" to the tune and fate of the King of the Cannibal Isles, with a contempt of actualities quite as refreshing. The Western Indians are as fond of these testimonials as the East Indians; they preserve them with care as guarantees of their good conduct, and sometimes, as may be expected, carry about certificates in the style of Bellerophons' letters. Little Thunder was *en route* to Fort Laramie, where he intended to lay a complaint against the Indian agent, who embezzled, he said, half the rations and presents intended for his tribe. Even the whites owned that the "Majo's" lean gut more sugar than all the Indians put together.

Nothing can be worse, if the *vox populi occidentalis* be taken as the *vox Dei*, than the modern management of the Indian Bureau at Washington. In former times, the agencies were in the hands of the military authorities, and the officer commanding the department was responsible for malversation of office. This was found to work well; the papers signed were signed on honour. But in the United States, the federal army, though well paid, is never allowed to keep any appointment that can safely be taken away from it. The Indian department is now divided into six superintendencies, viz. Northern, Central, Southern, Utah, New Mexico, Washington, and Oregon Territory, who report to the Indian Office or Bureau of the Commissioners of Indian affairs at Washington, under the charge of the department of the Interior. The bond varies from $50,000 to $75,000, and the salary from $3000 to $2500 per annum. The northern superintendency contains four agencies, the central fourteen, the southern five, the Utah three, New Mexico six, and the miscellaneous, including Washington, eight. The grand total of agents, including two specials for Indians in Texas, is forty-two. Their bond is between $5000 and $75,000, and the salary between $1000 and $1550. There are also various sub-agencies, with pay of $1000 each, and giving in bonds $1000. There ought to be no perquisites; an unscrupulous man, however, finds many opportunities of making free with the presents; and the reflection that his office tenure shall expire after the fourth

year would make him but the more reckless. As fifty or sixty appointments = 50 or 60 votes, × 20 in President election-earing, fitness for the task often becomes quite a subordinate consideration; the result is, necessarily, peculation producing discontent among the Indians, and the finale, death to the whites. To become a good Indian agent a man requires the variety of qualifications which would fit him for the guardianship of children, experience and ability, benevolence and philanthropy; it would be difficult to secure such phœnix for $200 per annum, and it is found easier not to look for it. The remedy of these evils is not far from the surface—the restoration of the office into the hands of the responsible military servant of the state, who would keep it *quamdiu se bene gesserit*, and become better capable of serving his masters, the American people, by the importance which the office would give him in the eyes of his *protégés*. This is the system of the French Bureau Arabe, which, with its faults, I love still. But the political mind would doubtless determine the cure to be worse than the disease. After venting his grievances, Little Thunder arose, and, accompanied by his braves, remounted and rode off towards the east.

Whilst delayed by the mules and their masters, we may amuse ourselves and divert our thoughts from the battle, and, perhaps, murder and sudden death, which may happen this evening, by studying the geography of the Black Hills. The range forms nearly a right angle, the larger limb—ninety miles—running east to west with a little southing along the Platte, the shorter leg—sixty miles—trending from north to south with a few degrees of easting and westing. Forming the easternmost part of the great Trans-Mississippian mountain-region, in the 44th parallel and between the 103rd and 105th meridians, these masses cover an area of 6000 square miles. They are supposed to have received their last violent upheaval at the close of the cretaceous period; their bases are elevated from 2500 to 3500 feet—the highest peaks attaining 6700 feet—above river level, whilst their eastern is from 2000 to 3000 feet below the western foundation. Their materials, as determined by Lieut. Warren's exploration, are successively metamorphosed azoic rock, including granite, lower Silurian (Potsdam sandstone), Devonian (?), carboniferous, Permian, Jurassic, and cretaceous. Like Ida,

they are "abundant in springs and flowing streams," which shed mainly to the north-east and the south-east, supplying the Indians with trout and salmon-trout, catfish (*Pimelodus*), and pickerel. They abound in small rich valleys, well grown with grass, and wild fruits, choke-cherries (*P. Virginiana*), currants, sand-buttes fruit (*C. pumila?*) and buffalo-berries (*Shepherdia argentea*, or graine de bœuf). When irrigated, the bottoms are capable of high cultivation. They excel in fine timber for fuel and lumber, covering an area of 1500 square miles; in carboniferous rock of the true coal measures; and in other good building material. As in most of the hill ranges which are offsets from the Rocky Mountains, they contain gold in valuable quantities, and doubtless a minute examination will lead to the discovery of many other useful minerals. The Black Hills are appropriately named: a cloak of gloomy forest, pine and juniper, apparently springing from a rock denuded of less hardy vegetation, seems to invest them from head to foot. The Laramie Hills are subranges of the higher ridge, and the well-known Peak, the pharos of the prairie mariner, rises about 1° due west of Fort Laramie to the height of 6500 feet above sea level. Beyond the meridian of Laramie the country totally changes. The broad prairie lands, unencumbered by timber, and covered with a rich pasturage, which highly adapts them for grazing, are now left behind. We are about to enter a dry, sandy, and sterile waste of sage, and presently of salt, where rare spots are fitted for rearing stock, and this formation will continue till we reach the shadow of the Rocky Mountains.

At length, the mules coming about 10·45, A.M. we hitched up, and nothing loth, bade adieu to Horseshoe Creek and the "ladies." The driver sentimentally informed us that we were to see no more specimens of ladyhood for many days—gladdest tidings to one of the party at least. The road, which ran out of sight of the river, was broken and jagged; a little labour would have made it tolerable, but what could the good pastor of Oberlin do with a folk whose only thought in life is dram-drinking, tobacco-chawing, trading, and swopping?* The country was

* The civilised Anglo-Americans are far more severe upon their half-barbarous brethren than any stranger; to witness, the following.

A Hoosier (native of Indiana) was called upon the stand, away out west, to testify to the character of a brother Hoosier. It was as follows:—

out with creeks and arroyos, which separated the several bulges of ground, and the earth's surface was of a dull brick-dust red, thinly scrubbed over with coarse grass, ragged sage, and shrublets fit only for the fire. After a desolate drive, we sighted below us the creek La Bonté,—so called from a French *voyageur*,—green and bisected by a clear mountain stream whose banks were thick with self-planted trees. In the labyrinth of paths we chose the wrong one: presently we came to a sheer descent of four or five feet, and after deliberation as to whether the vehicle would "take it" or not, we came to the conclusion that we had better turn the restive mules to the right about. Then cheered by the sight of our consort, the other waggon, which stood temptingly shaded by the grove of cotton-wood, willows, box elder (*Negundo acerodes*) and wild cherry, at the distance of about half a mile, we sought manfully the right track; and the way in which the driver charged the minor obstacles was "a caution to mules." We ought to have arrived at 2.45 P.M.; we were about an hour later. The station had yet to be built; the whole road was in a transition state at the time of our travel; there was, however, a new corral for "forting" against Indians, and a kind of leafy arbour, which the officials had converted into a "cottage near a wood."

A little after 4 P.M. we forded the creek painfully, with our new cattle,—three rats and a slug. The latter was pronounced by our driver, when he condescended to use other language than anathemata, "the meanest cuss he ever seed." We were careful, however, to supply him at the shortest intervals, with whiskey-drams, which stimulated him, after breaking his whip, to perform a tattoo with clods and stones, kicks and stamps, upon the reverse animals' haunches, and by virtue of these we accom-

"How long have you known Bill Buckwheat?"

"Ever since he war born."

"What is his general character?"

"Letter A. No. 1.—'bove par a very great way."

"Would you believe him on oath?"

"Yes, Sirree, on or off, or any other way!"

"What is your opinion on his qualifications to good conduct?"

"He's the best shot on the prairies, or in the woods; he can shave the eye-lashes off a wolf as far as a shootin'-iron 'll carry a ball; he can drink a quart of grog any day, and he chaws tobacker like a horse."

So Bill Buckwheat gained master.—*N. Y. Spirit of the Times.*

plished our twenty-five miles in tolerable time. For want of other pleasantries to contemplate, we busied ourselves in admiring the regularity and accuracy with which our consort waggon secured for herself all the best teams. The land was a red waste, such as travellers find in Eastern Africa, which after rains sheds streams like blood. The soil was a decomposition of ferruginous rock, here broken with rugged hills, precipices of ruddy sandstone 200 feet high, shaded or dotted with blackish green cedars, there cumbered by huge boulders; the mazy-like water-courses which cut the road showed that after heavy rains a net-work of torrents must add to the pleasures of travelling, and the vegetation was reduced to the dull green artemisia, the azalia, and the jaundiced potentilla. After six miles we saw on the left of the path a huge natural pile or burrow of primitive boulders, about 200 feet high and called "Brigham's Peak," because, according to Jehu's whiskeyfied story, the prophet, revelator, and seer of the Latter Day Saints had there, in 1857 (!), pronounced a 4th of July oration in the presence of 200 or 300 fair devotees.

Presently we emerged from the Red Region into the normal brown clay, garnished with sage as moors are with heather, over a road which might have suggested the nursery rhyme:—

"Here we go up, up, up,
There we go down, down, down."

At last it improved, and once more, as if we never were to leave it, we fell into the valley of the Platte. About eight miles from our destination we crossed the sandy bed of the La Prêle River, an arroyo of twenty feet wide, which, like its brethren, brims in spring with its freight of melted snow. In the clear shade of evening we traversed the "timber" or well wooded lands lying upon Box Elder Creek,—a beautiful little stream, about eight feet broad; and at 9 P.M. arrived at the station. The master, Mr. Wheeler, was exceptionally civil and communicative, he lent us buffalo robes for the night, and sent us to bed after the best supper the house could afford. We were not however to be baulked of our proper pleasure, a "good grumble," so we hooked it on to another peg. One of the road-agents had just arrived from Gt. S. L. City in a neat private ambulance after a journey of three days, whilst we

could hardly expect to make it under treble that time. It was agreed on all sides that such conduct was outrageous; that Messrs. Russell and Co. amply deserved to have their contract taken from them, and—on these occasions your citizen looks portentous, and deals darkly in threatenings, as if his single vote could shake the spheres—we came to a mutual understanding that that firm should never enjoy our countenance or support. We were unanimous; all, even the mortal quarrel, was "made up" in the presence of the general foe, the Mail Company. Briefly we retired to rest, a miserable Public, and soothed by the rough lullaby of the coyote, whose shrieks and screams perfectly reproduced the Indian jackal, we passed into the world of dreams.

To Platte Bridge, August 16th.

At 8·30 A.M., we were once more under way along the valley of Father Platte, whose physiognomy had now notably changed for the better. Instead of the dull, dark, silent stream of the lower course, whose muddy monotonous aspect made it a grievance to behold, we descried with astonishment a bright little river, hardly a hundred yards wide—one's ideas of potamology are enlarged with a witness by American travel! a mirrory surface, and waters clear and limpid as the ether above them. The limestones and marls which destroy the beauty of the Lower Platte, do not extend to the upper course. The climate now became truly delicious. The height above sea-level—5000 feet—subjects the land to the wholesome action of gentle winds, which, about 10—11 A.M., when the earth has had time to air, set in regularly as the sea-breezes of tropical climes, and temper the keen shine of day. These higher grounds, where the soil is barren rather for want of water than from the character of its constituents, are undoubtedly the healthiest part of the plains: no noxious malaria is evolved from the sparse growth of tree and shrub upon the banks of the river; and beyond them the plague of beetle (sand flies), and mosquitoes is unknown; the narrowness of the bed also prevents the shrinking of the stream in autumn, at which season the lower Platte exposes two broad margins of black infected mire. The three great elements of unhealthiness, heavy and clammy dews,

moisture exhaled from the earth's surface, and the overcrowding of population — which appears to generate as many artificial diseases as artificial wants — are here unknown: the soil is never turned up, and even if it were, it probably would not have the deleterious effect which climatologists have remarked in the damp hot regions near the equator. The formation of the land begins to change from the tertiary and cretaceous to the primary, — granites and porphyries, — warning us that we are approaching the Rocky Mountains.

On the road, we saw for the first time, a train of Mormon waggons, twenty-four in number, slowly wending their way towards the Promised Land. The "Captain" — those who fill the dignified office of guides are so designated, and once a captain always a captain is the far western rule — was young Brigham Young, a nephew of the prophet; a *blondin*, with yellow hair and beard, an intelligent countenance, a six-shooter by his right, and a bowie-knife by his left side. It was impossible to mistake, even through the veil of freckles and sunburn with which a two months' journey had invested them, the nationality of the emigrants; "British-English" was written in capital letters upon the white eyelashes and tow-coloured curls of the children, and upon the sandy brown hair and staring eyes, heavy bodies, and ample extremities of the adults. One young person concealed her facial attractions under a manner of mask. I thought that perhaps she might be a Sultana, reserved for the establishment of some very magnificent Mormon bashaw; but the driver, when appealed to, responded with contempt, "'Guess old Briggy wont stampede many o' that 'ere lot!" Though thus homely in appearance, few showed any symptoms of sickness or starvation; in fact, their condition first impressed us most favourably with the excellence of the Perpetual Emigration Funds' travelling arrangements.

The Mormons who can afford such luxury generally purchase for the transit of the plains an emigrant's waggon, which in the West seldom costs more than $185. They take a full week before well *en route*, and endeavour to leave the Mississippi in early May, when "long forage" is plentiful upon the prairies. Those prospecting parties who are bound for California, set out in March or April, feeding their animals with grain till the new

grass appears; after November the road over the Sierra Nevada being almost impassable to way-worn oxen. The ground in the low parts of the Mississippi Valley becomes heavy and muddy after the first spring-rains, and by starting in good time the worst parts of the country will be passed before the travel becomes very laborious. Moreover, grass soon disappears from the higher and less productive tracts; between Scott's Bluffs and Gt. S. L. City, we were seldom out of sight of starved cattle, and on one spot I counted fifteen skeletons. Travellers, however, should not push forward early, unless their animals are in good condition and are well supplied with grain; the last year's grass is not quite useless, but cattle cannot thrive upon it as they will upon the gramineæ, festucæ, and buffalo clover (*Trifolium reflexum*) of Utah and New Mexico. The journey between St. Jo and the Mormon capital usually occupies from two to three months. The Latter Day Saints march with a quasi-military organisation. Other emigrants form companies of fifty to seventy armed men, — a single waggon would be in imminent danger from rascals like the Pawnees, who, though fonder of bullying than of fighting, are ever ready to cut off a straggler, — elect their "Cap.," who holds the office only during good conduct, sign and seal themselves to certain obligations, and bind themselves to stated penalties in case of disobedience or defection. The "Prairie Traveller" strongly recommends this systematic organisation, without which indeed no expedition, whether emigrant, commercial, or exploratory, ought ever or in any part of the world to begin its labours; justly observing that, without it, discords and dissensions sooner or later arise which inevitably result in breaking up the company.

In this train I looked to no purpose for the hand-carts with which the poorer Saints add to the toils of earthly travel, a semi-devotional work of supererogation expected to win a proportionate reward in heaven.*

* The following estimate of outfit was given to me by a Mormon elder, who has frequently travelled over the Utah route. He was accompanied by his wife and family and help — six persons in total; and having money to spare, he invested it in a speculation which could hardly fail at least to quadruple his outlay at the end of the march: the stove, for instance, bought at $28, would sell for $90 to $120. The experienced emigrant, it may be observed, carries with him a little of everything that may or might be wanted; such as provisions, clothing, furniture,

After ten miles of the usual number of creeks, "Deep," "Small," "Snow," "Muddy," &c., and heavy descents, we reached at 10 A.M. Deer Creek, a stream about thirty feet wide, said to abound in fish. The station boasts of an Indian agent, Major Twine, a post-office, a store, and of course a grog-shop. M. Bissonette, the owner of the two latter and an old Indian trader, was the usual creole, speaking a French not unlike that of the Channel Islands, and wide awake to the advantages derivable from travellers: the large straggling establishment seemed to produce in abundance large squaws and little half-breeds. Fortunately stimulants are not much required on the plains: I wish my enemy no more terrible fate than to drink excessively with M. Bissonette of M. B.'s liquor. The good creole, when asked to join us, naïvely refused: he reminded me of certain wine merchants in more civilised lands, who, when dining with their pratique, sensibly prefer small-beer to their own concoctions.

A delay of fifteen minutes and then we were hurried forwards. The ravines deepened; we were about entering the region of kanyons.* Already we began to descry bunch-grass

drugs, lint, stationery, spices, ammunition, and so forth: above all things he looks to his weapons as likely to be at a pinch his best friends:—

2 yoke oxen	at $150 to $200	100 lbs. ham and bacon	$14
1 cow (milch)	25	150 lbs. sundries (see biscuits)	13·13
1 waggon	37·20	100 lbs. sugar	9·50
1 double cover	8·50	25 lbs. crystallised ditto	3
2 ox-yokes	6	24 lbs. raisins	4
1 ox chain	1·65	20 lbs. currants	3
1 tar-bucket	1	25 lbs. rice	2·25
1 large tent ($9 for smaller sizes)	15	1 bushel dried apples	6
Camp equipment, axes, spades, shovels, triangles for flies, &c.	10	1 „ „ peaches	4·50
		1 „ beans	2
600 lbs. flour	12·50	1 stove	35
		Grand total	$490·98

* The Spanish cañon—ill-contained to kanyon—signifies, primarily, a cannon or gun barrel, secondarily, a tube, shaft of a mine or a ravine of peculiar form, common in this part of America. The word is loosely applied by the Western men, but properly, it means those gorges through a line of mountains, whose walls are high and steep, even to a tunnel-like overhanging, whilst their sides which afford passages to streams are almost flat. In northern Mexico the kanyon becomes of stupendous dimensions; it is sometimes a crack in the plains 2000 feet deep, ex-

clothing the hills. This invaluable and anomalous provision of nature is first found, I believe, about fifty miles westward of the meridian of Fort Laramie, and it extends to the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada. On the Pacific watershed it gives way to the wild oats (*Avena fatua*), which are supposed to have been introduced into California by the Spaniards. The festuca is a real boon to the land, which, without it, could hardly be traversed by cattle. It grows by clumps, as its name denotes, upon the most unlikely ground, the thirsty sand and the stony hills: in fact, it thrives best upon the poorest soil. In autumn, about September, when all other grasses turn to hay, and their nutriment is washed out by the autumnal rains; the bunch-grass, after shedding its seed, begins to put forth a green shoot within the apparently withered sheath. It remains juicy and nutritious, like winter wheat in April, under the snows, and, contrary to the rule of the *gramineæ*, it pays the debt of nature, drying and dying about May; yet, even when in its corpse-like state, a light yellow straw, it contains abundant and highly flavoured nutriment; it lasts through the summer, retiring up the mountains, again becomes grass in January, thus feeding cattle all the year round. The small dark pyriform seed, about half the size of an oat, is greedily devoured by stock, and has been found to give an excellent flavour to beef and mutton. It is curious how little food will fatten animals upon the elevated portions of the prairies, and in the valleys of the Rocky Mountains. I remarked the same thing in Somali-land, where, while far as the eye could see the country wore the semblance of one vast limestone ledge, white with desolation, the sheep and bullocks were round and plump as stall-fed animals. The idea forces itself upon one's mind that the exceeding purity and limpidity of the air, by perfecting the processes of digestion and assimilation must stand in lieu of quantity. I brought back with me a small packet of the bunch-grass seed, in the hope that it may be acclimatised: the sandy lands about Aldershott, for instance, would be admirably fitted for the growth.

We arrived at a station, called the "Little Muddy Creek," after a hot drive of twenty miles. It was a wretched place,

paring all the leaves that clothe earth's core, with a stream at the bottom, in sight, but impossible for the traveller dying of thirst to drink at.

built of "dry stones," viz. slabs without mortar, and the interior was garnished with certain efforts of pictorial art, which were rather *lustus* than otherwise. The furniture was composed of a box and a trunk, and the negative catalogue of its supplies was extensive,—whiskey forming the only positive item.

We were not sorry to resume our journey at 1·15 P.M. After eight miles we crossed the vile bridge which spans "Snow Creek," a deep water, and hardly six feet wide. According to the station men, water here was once perennial, though now reduced to an occasional freshet after rain: this phenomenon, they say, is common in the country, and they attribute it to the sinking of the stream in the upper parts of the bed, which have become porous, or have given way. It is certain that in the Sinaitic regions many springs, which within a comparatively few years supplied whole families of Bedouins, have unaccountably dried up; perhaps the same thing happens in the Rocky Mountains.

After about two hours of hot sun, we debouched upon the bank of the Platte, at a spot where once was the Lower Ferry.* The river bed is here so full of holes and quicksands, and the stream is so cold and swift, that many have been drowned when bathing, more when attempting to save time by fording it. A wooden bridge was built at this point some years ago, at an expense of $26,000, by one Ragshaw, who, if report does not belie him, has gained and lost more fortunes than a Wall Street professional "lame-duck." We halted for a few minutes at the indispensable store,—the *tête de pont*,—and drank our whiskey with ice, which, after so long a disuse, felt unenjoyably cold. Remounting, we passed a deserted camp, where in times gone by two companies of infantry had been stationed: a few stumps of crumbling wall, broken floorings, and depressions in the ground, were the only remnants which the winds and rains had left. The banks of the Platte were stained with coal: it has been known to exist for some years, but has only lately been worked. Should the supply prove sufficient for the wants of

* The first ferry, according to the old guide books, was at Deer Creek: the second was at this place, thirty-one miles above the former; and the third was four miles still further on.

the settlers, it will do more towards the civilisation of these regions than the discovery of gold.

The lignite tertiary of Nebraska extends north and west to the British line: the beds are found throughout this formation sometimes six and seven feet thick, and the article would make good fuel. The true coal measures have been discovered in the south-eastern portion of the Nebraska prairies, and several small seams at different points of the Platte Valley. Dr. F. V. Hayden, who accompanied Lieut. Warren as geologist, appears to think that the limestones which contain the supplies, though belonging to the true coal measures, hold a position above the workable beds of coal, and deems it improbable that mines of any importance will be found north of the southern line of Nebraska. But as his examination of the ground was somewhat hurried, there is room to hope that this unfavourable verdict will be cancelled. The coal as yet discovered is all, I believe, bituminous. That dug out of the Platte bank runs in a vein about six feet thick, and is as hard as cannel coal: the texture of the rock is a white limestone. The banks of the Deer and other neighbouring creeks are said also to contain the requisites for fuel.

Our station lay near the upper crossing or second bridge, a short distance from the town. It was also built of timber at an expense of $40,000, about a year ago, by Louis Guinot, a Canadian, who has passed the last twelve years upon the plains. He appeared very downcast about his temporal prospects, and handed us over, with the *insouciance* of his race, to the tender mercies of his venerable squaw. The usual toll is $0.50, but from trains, especially of Mormons, the owner will claim $5; in fact, as much as he can get without driving them to the opposition lower bridge, or to the ferry boat. It was impossible to touch the squaw's supper; the tin cans that contained the coffee were slippery with grease, and the bacon looked as if it had been dressed side by side with "boyaux." I lighted my pipe, and sir-cane in hand, sallied forth to look at the country.

The heights behind the station were our old friends the Black Hills, which, according to the Canadian, extend with few breaks, as far as Denver city. They are covered with dark green pine; at a distance it looks black, and the woods shelter

a variety of wild beasts, the grizzly bear amongst the number. In the more grassy spaces mustangs, sure-footed as mountain goats, roam unsought; and at the foot of the hills the slopes are well stocked with antelope, deer, and hares, here called rabbits. The principal birds are the sage-hen (*Tetrao urophasianus*) and the prairie-hen (*T. proteseis*). The former, also called the cock of the plains, is a fine strong-flying grouse, about the size of a full-grown barn-door fowl, or when younger of a European pheasant, which indeed the form of the tail, as the name denotes, greatly resembles, and the neck is smooth like the partridge of the Old World.* Birds of the year are considered good eating; after their first winter the flesh is so impregnated with the intolerable odour of wild sage, that none but a starving man can touch it. The prairie-hen, also called the "heath-hen," and the "pinnated grouse," affects the plains of Illinois and Missouri, and is rarely found so far west as the Black Hills; it is not a migratory bird. The plume from which it derives its name are little wing-like tufts on both sides of the neck, small in the female, large in the male. The cock, moreover, has a stripe of skin running down the neck, which changes its natural colour towards pairing time, and becomes of a reddish yellow; it swells like a turkey cock's wattles, till the head seems buried between two monstrous protuberances, the owner spreading out its tail, sweeping the ground with its wings, and booming somewhat like a bittern. Both of these birds, which are strong on the wing, and give good sport, might probably be naturalised in Europe, and the "Société d'Acclimatisation" would do well to think of it.

Returning to the station I found that a war-party of Arapahoes had just alighted in a thin copse hard by. They looked less like warriors than like a band of horse-stealers; and though they had set out with the determination of bringing back some Ynteh scalps and fingers†, they had not succeeded. On these

* The trivial names for organic nature are so confused and confusing in America as in India, in consequence of the old country terms applied, perforce at random, to new country growths: for instance, the spruce grouse is the Canadian partridge; the ruffed grouse is the partridge of New England and New York, and the pheasant of New Jersey and the Southern States; whilst in the latter the common quail (*O. Virginiana*) is called "partridge."

† The enemy's fore or other finger, crooked and tied with two bits of the skin which are attached to the wrist or the forehead, is a favourite and picturesque

consulting, the young braves are generally very sulky,—a fact which they take care to show by short speech and rude gestures, throwing about and roughly handling, like spoiled children, whatever comes in their way. At such times one must always be prepared for a word and a blow; and, indeed, most Indian fighters justify themselves in taking the initiative, as, of course, it is a great thing to secure first chances. However we may yearn towards our "poor black brother," it is hard not to sympathise with the whites in many aggressions against the ferocious and capricious so-called red man. The war party consisted of about a dozen warriors, with a few limber lither-looking lads. They had wealthy lean sore-backed nags, which were presently turned out to graze. Dirty rags formed the dress of the band; their arms were the usual light lances, garnished with leather at the handles, with two cropped tufts and a long loose feather dangling from them. They had bows shaped like the Grecian Cupid's, strengthened with sinews and tipped with wire, and arrows of light wood, with three feathers,—Captain Marcy says, two intersecting at right angles; but I have never seen this arrangement,—and small triangular iron piles. Their shields were plain targes,—double folds of raw buffalo hide, apparently unstuffed, and quite unadorned. They carried mangy buffalo robes; and scattered upon the ground was a variety of belts, baldrichs, and pouches, with split porcupine quills dyed a saffron yellow.

The Arapahos, generally pronounced 'Rapahos,—called by their Shoshone neighbours Shâretikeh, or dog-eaters, and by the French Gros Ventres,—are a tribe of thieves living between the South Fort of the Platte and the Arkansas Rivers. They are bounded north by the Sioux, and hunt in the same grounds with the Cheyennes. This breed is considered fierce, treacherous, and unfriendly to the whites, who have debauched and diseased them, while the Cheyennes are comparatively chaste and uninfected. The Arapaho is distinguished from the Dakota by the superior gauntness of his person, and the boldness of his look; there are also minor points of difference in the moccasins, arrow-marks, and weapons. His language, like that of the Cheyennes, has never, I am told, been thoroughly learned by a stranger;

ornament. That falling the bear's (especially the grizzly's) talons, bored at the base, and strung upon their sinews, are considered highly honourable.

It is said to contain but a few hundred words, and these being almost all explosive growls, or guttural grunts, are with difficulty acquired by the civilised ear. Like the Cheyennes, the Arapahoe have been somewhat tamed of late by the transit of the United States army in 1857.

Amongst the Prairie Indians, when a war chief has matured the plans for an expedition, he habits himself in the garb of battle. Then, mounting his steed, and carrying a lance adorned with a flag and eagle's feathers, he rides about the camp chaunting his war-song. Those disposed to volunteer join the parade also on horseback, and, after sufficiently exhibiting themselves to the admiration of the village, return home. This ceremony continues till the requisite number is collected. The war-dance, and the rites of the medicine-man, together with perhaps private penances and propitiations, are the next step. There are also copious pow-wows, in which, as in the African parlance, the chiefs, elders, and warriors sit for hours in grim debate, solemn as if the fate of empires hung upon their words, to decide the momentous question whether Jack shall have half a pound more meat than Jim. Neither the chief nor the warriors are finally committed by the procession to the expedition; they are all volunteers, at liberty to retire; and jealousy, disappointment, and superstition often interpose between themselves and glory.

The war-party when gone is thoroughly gone; once absent they love to work in mystery, and look forward mainly to the pleasure of surprising their friends. After an absence which may extend for months, a loud, piercing, peculiar cry suddenly announces the vanguard courier of the returning braves. The camp is thrown at once from the depths of apathy to the height of excitement, which is also the acme of enjoyment for those whose lives must be spent in forced inaction. The warriors enter with their faces painted black, and their steeds decorated in the most fantastic style; the women scream and howl their exultation, and feasting and merriment follow with the ceremonious scalp-dance. The braves are received with various degrees of honour according to their deeds. The highest merit is to ride single-handed into the enemy's camp, and to smite a lodge with lance or bow. The second is to take a

warrior prisoner. The third is to strike a dead or fallen man—an idea somewhat contrary to the Englishman's fancies of fair play, but intelligible enough where it is the custom, as in Hindostan, to lie upon the ground "playing 'possum," and waiting the opportunity to hamstring or otherwise disable the opponent. The least of great achievements is to slay an enemy in hand-to-hand fight. A Pyrrhic victory, won even at an inconsiderable loss is treated as a defeat; the object of the Indian guerilla chief is to destroy the foe with as little risk to himself and his men as possible; this is his highest boast, and in this are all his hopes of fame. Should any of the party fall in battle, the relatives mourn by cutting off their hair and the manes and tails of their horses, and the lugubrious lamentations of the women introduce an ugly element into the triumphal procession.

In the evening, as Mrs. Dana, her husband, and I, were sitting outside the station, two of the warriors came and placed themselves without ceremony upon the nearest stones. They were exceedingly unprepossessing with their small gipsy eyes, high rugged cheek bones, broad flat faces, coarse sensual mouths everted as to the lips, and long heavy chins; they had removed every sign of manhood from their faces, and their complexions were a dull oily red, the result of vermilion, ochre, or some such pigment, of which they are as fond as Hindus, grimed-in for years. They watched every gesture, and at times communicated their opinions to each other in undistinguishable gruntings with curious attempts at cachinnation. It is said that the wild dog is unable to bark and that the tame variety has acquired the faculty by attempting to imitate the human voice; it is certain that as a rule, only the civilised man can laugh loudly and heartily. I happened to mention to my fellow-travellers the universal dislike of savages to anything like a sketch of their physiognomies; they expressed a doubt that the Indians were subject to the rule. Pencil and paper were at hand, so we proceeded to proof. The savage at first seemed uneasy under the operation, as the Asiatic or African will do, averting his face at times, and shifting position to defeat my purpose. When I passed the caricature round it excited some merriment; the subject forthwith rising from his seat made a sign that he also wished to see it. At the sight, however, he screwed up his features with an expres-

sion of intense disgust, and managing to "smudge" over the sketch with his dirty thumb, he left us with a "pooh!" that told all his outraged feelings.

Presently the warriors entered the station to smoke and tacitly beg for broken victuals. They squatted in a circle, and passed round the red sandstone calumet with great gravity, puffing like steam tugs, inhaling slowly and lingeringly, swallowing the fumes, and with upturned faces exhaling them through the nostrils. They made no objections to being joined by us, and always before handing the pipe to a neighbour, they wiped the reed mouth-piece with the cushion of the thumb. The contents of their calumet were kinnikinik, and though they accepted tobacco, they preferred replenishing with their own mixture. They received a small present of provisions, and when the station people went to supper they were shut out.

We are now slipping into Mormon land; one of the station keepers belonged to the new religion. The "madam" on entering the room had requested him to depose a cigar which tainted the air with a perfume like that of greens-water; he took the matter so coolly that I determined he was not an American, and, true enough, he proved to be a cabinet-maker from Birmingham. I spent the evening reading poor Albert Smith's "Story of Mont Blanc"—Mont Blanc in sight of the Rocky Mountains!—and admiring how the prince of entertainers led up the reader to what he called the crowning glory of his life, the unperilous ascent of that monarch of the Alps, [illegible] to the same spirit with which one would have addressed [illegible] and independent voters of some well-bribed English [illegible]ugh.

We are now about to quit the region which nature has prepared, by ready-made roads and embankments, for a railway; all beyond this point difficulties are so heaped upon difficulties—as the sequel will prove—that we must hope against hope to see the "iron-horse" (I believe he is so called) holding his way over the mountains.

"17th August.—To the Valley of the Sweetwater.

The morning was bright and clear, cool and pleasant. The

last night's abstinence had told upon our squeamishness: we managed to secure a fowl, and with its aid we overcame our repugnance to the massive slices of egg-less bacon. At 8·30 A. M. we hitched up, crossed the ricketty bridge at a slow pace, and proceeded for the first time to ascend the left bank of the Platte. The valley was grassy, the eternal sage, however, haunted us; the grouse ran before us, and the prairie dogs squatted upon their house-tops, enjoying the genial morning rays. After ten miles of severe ups and downs, which, by-the-bye, nearly brought our consort, the official's waggon, to grief, we halted for a few minutes at an old-established trading-post, called "Red Buttes."* The feature from which it derives its name lies on the right bank of, and about five miles distant from, the river, which here cuts its way through a ridge. These bluffs are a fine bold formation, escarpments of ruddy argillaceous sandstones, and shells, which dip towards the west: they are the eastern wall of the mass that hems in the stream, and rear high above it their conical heads and fantastic figures. The ranch was on the margin of a cold clear spring, of which we vainly attempted to drink. The banks were white, as though by hoar-frost, with nitrate and carbonate of soda efflorescing from the dark mould. Near Red Buttes the water is said to have a chalybeate flavour, but of that we were unable to judge.

Having allowed the squaws and half-breeds a few minutes to gaze, we resumed our way, taking off our caps in token of adieu to old father Platte, our companion for many a weary mile. We had traced his course upwards, through its various phases and vicissitudes, from the dignity and portliness of his later course as a full-grown river to his small and humble youth as a mountain rivulet, and—interest, either in man or stream, often results from the trouble we take about them—I looked upon him

* This French word is extensively used in the Rocky Mountains and Oregon, "where," says Colonel Frémont ("Expedition to the Rocky Mountains," p. 145), "it is naturalized, and which, if desirable to render into English, there is no word which would be its precise equivalent. It is applied to the detached hills and ridges which rise abruptly and reach too high to be called hills or ridges, and are not high enough"—he might have added, are not massive enough—"to be called mountains. *Knob*, as applied in the Western States, is their most descriptive term in English; but no translation or periphrasis would preserve the identity of these picturesque landmarks."

for the last time with a feeling akin to regret. Moreover, we had been warned that from the crossing of the north Platte to the Sweetwater, all is a dry, and dreary, and desolate waste.

On the way we met a mounted Indian, armed with a rifle, and habited in the most grotesque costume. "Jack"—he was recognised by the driver—wore a suit of buckskin, and a fool's cap made out of an old blanket, with a pair of ass-ear appendages that hung backwards viciously like a mule's; his mouth grinned from ear to ear, and his eyes were protected by glass and wire goggles, which gave them the appearance of being mounted on stalks like a crustacean's. He followed us for some distance, honouring us by riding close to the carriage, in hopes of a little black-mail; but we were not generous, and we afterwards heard something which made us glad that we had not been tempted to liberality. He was followed by an ill-favoured squaw, dressed in a kind of cotton gown, remarkable only for the shoulders being considerably narrower than the waist. She sat her bare nag cavalierly, and eyed us as we passed with that peculiarly unpleasant glance which plain women are so fond of bestowing.

After eighteen miles' drive, we descended a steep hill, and were shown the Devil's Backbone. It is a jagged, broken ridge of huge sandstone boulders, tilted up edgeways, and running in a line over the crest of a long roll of land: the *tout-ensemble* looks like the vertebræ of some great sea-serpent or other long crawling animal; and on a nearer view the several pieces resolve themselves into Sphinxes, Veiled Nuns, [illegible] pillars, and other freakish objects. I may here remark [illegible] *aut Cæsar aut diabolus* of the mediæval European anti-[illegible], when accounting for the architecture of strange places, is in the Far West consigned without partnership to the genius loci, the Fiend who, here as in Europe, has monopolised all the finest features of scenery. We shall pass successively the Devil's Gate, the Devil's Post-office, and the Devil's Hole,—in fact, we shall not be thoroughly rid of his Satanic Majesty's appurtenances till Monte Diablo, the highest of the Californian coast-range, dips slowly and unwillingly behind the Pacific's tepid wave.

We nooned at Willow Springs, a little doggery boasting of a

shed and a bunk, but no corral; and we soothed, with a drink of our whiskey, the excited feelings of the Rancheros. The poor fellows had been plundered of their bread and dried meat by some petty thief, who had burrowed under the wall, and they sorely suspected our goggled friend, Jack the Arapaho. Master Jack's hair might have found itself suspended near the fire-place if he had then been within rifle shot: as it was, the two victims could only indulge in consolatory threats almost wreaking their vengeance upon the first "doggond red-bellied critturs" whom good fortune might send in their way. The water was unusually good at Willow Springs: unfortunately, however, there was nothing else.

At 2·30 P.M. we resumed our way through the yellow-flowered rabbit-bush—it not a little resembled wild mustard—and a thick sage-heath, which was here and there spangled with the bright blossoms of the wilderness. After about twenty miles we passed, to the west of the road, a curious feature, to which the Mormon exodists first, *on dit*, gave the name of Saleratus Lake.* It lies to the west of the road, and is only one of a chain of alkaline waters and springs whose fetor, without exaggeration, taints the land. Cattle drinking of the fluid are nearly sure to die; even those that eat of the *herbe salée* or salt grass growing upon its borders, and known by its reddish-yellow and sometimes bluish tinge, will suffer from a disease called the "Alkali," which not unfrequently kills them. The appearance of the Saleratus Lake startles the traveller who, in the full blaze of mid-day upon this arid waste, where mirage mocks him at every turn, suddenly sees outstretched before his eyes a kind of [illegible] ham Lake solidly overfrozen. The illusion is so perfect [illegible] was completely deceived, nor could the loud guffaws [illegible] driver bring me at once to the conclusion that seeing is [illegible] case is not believing. On a near inspection the icy surface

* According to Dr. L. D. Gale (Appendix F. to Captain Stansbury's "Expedition to the Great Salt Lake"), who tested specimens of this saleratus, "it is composed of the sesqui-carbonate of soda, mixed with the sulphate of soda and chloride of soda, and is one of the native salts called *Trona*, found in the Northern Lakes, in Hungary, Africa, and other countries."

"Three grammes of this salt in dry powder, cleared of its earthy impurities, gave carbonic acid 0·2020 of a gramme, which would indicate 1·74239 grammes of the sesqui-carbonate. The other salts were found to be the muriate and sulphate of soda: the proportions were not determined."

turns out to be a dust of carbonate of soda, concealing beneath it masses of the same material, washed out of the adjacent soil, and solidified by evaporation. The Latter Day Saints were charmed with their *trouvaille*, and laid in stores of the fetid alkaline matter, as though it had been manna, for their bread and pastry. It is still transported westward, and declared to be purer than the saleratus of the shops. Near the lake is a deserted ranch, which once enjoyed the title of "Sweetwater Station."

Four miles beyond this "Waterless Lake"—Bahr bila Ma as the Bedouin would call it—we arrived at Rock Independence, and felt ourselves in a new region, totally distinct from the clay formation of the Manvaises Terres, over which we have travelled for the last five days. Again I was startled by its surprising likeness to the scenery of Eastern Africa: a sketch of Jiwe la Mkoa, the Round Rock in eastern Unyamwesi*, would be mistaken, even by those who had seen both, for this grand *échantillon* of the Rocky Mountains. It crops out of an open plain, not far from the river bed, in dome shape wholly isolated, about 1000 feet in length, by 400—600 in breadth; it is 60 to 100 in height†, and in circumference 1·50 to 2 miles. Except upon the summit, where it has been weathered into a feldspathic soil; it is bare and bald: a scanty growth of shrubs protrudes however from its poll. The material of the stern looking dome is granite, in enormous slabs and boulders, cracked, flaked, scared and cloven, as if by igneous pressure from below. The prevailing tradition in the West is, that the [illegible] derived its name from the fact that Colonel Frémont there delivered an Independence Day Oration: but read a little further. It is usually ascended at the northern side and the south-eastern corner, and many climb its rugged flanks for a peculiarly Anglo-American purpose;—Smith and Brown have held high jinks here. In Colonel Frémont's time (1842), everywhere within six or eight feet of the ground, where the surface is sufficiently smooth, and in some places sixty or eighty feet above, the rock was

* I crave the reader's pardon for referring him to my own publications; but the only account of this Round Rock which has hitherto been published is to be found in the "Lake Regions of Central Africa," chap. viii.

† Colonel Frémont gives its dimensions as 650 yards long and 40 feet high.

inscribed with the names of travellers. Hence the Indians have named it Timpe Nabor, or the Painted Rock, corresponding with the Sinaitic "Wady Mukattah." In the present day, though much of the writing has been washed away by rain, 40,000—50,000 souls are calculated to have left their dates and marks from the coping of the wall to the loose stones below this huge sign-post. There is, however, some reason in the proceeding: it does not in these lands begin and end with the silly purpose, as amongst climbers of the Pyramids, and *fouilleurs* of the sarcophagi of Apis, to bequeath one's few poor letters to a little athanasia. Prairie travellers and emigrants expect to be followed by their friends, and leave, in their vermilion outfit, or their white house-paint or their brownish-black tar—a useful article for waggons—a homely but hearty word of love or direction upon any conspicuous object. Even a bull or a buffalo's skull which lying upon the road will attract attention, is made to do duty at this *Poste Restante*.

I will here take the liberty of digressing a little; with the charitable purpose of admiring the serious turn with which the United States explorers perform their explorations.

Colonel Frémont* thus calls to mind the earnest deeds of a bygone day. "One George Weymouth was sent out to Maine by the Earl of Southampton, Lord Arundel, and others; and in the narrative of their discoveries he says: 'the next day we ascended in our pinnace that part of the river which lies more to the westward, carrying with us a cross—a thing never omitted by any Christian traveller—which we erected at the ultimate end of our route.' This was in the year 1605, and in 1842 I obeyed the feeling of early travellers, and left the impressions of the cross deeply engraved on the vast rock, a thousand miles beyond the Mississippi, to which discoverers have given the national name of Rock Independence."

Captain Stansbury† is not less scrupulous upon the subject of travelling propriety. One of his entries is couched as follows: "Sunday, June 10, barometer 28·92, thermometer 70°. The camp rested: it had been determined, from the commencement of the expedition, to devote this day whenever practicable to its legitimate purpose, as an interval of rest

* Report of the Exploring Expedition to the Rocky Mountains, p. 73.

† Stansbury's Expedition, ch. i. p. 27.

for man and beast. I here beg to record, as the result of my experience, derived not only from the present journey, but from the observations of many years spent in the performance of similar duties, that, as a mere matter of pecuniary consideration, apart from all higher obligations, it is wise to keep the Sabbath."

Lieutenant W. F. Lynch, United States Navy, who in 1857 commanded the United States expedition to the river Jordan and the Dead Sea*, and published a narrative not deficient in interest, thus describes his proceedings at El Meshra, the bathing place of the Christian pilgrims:—

"This ground is consecrated by tradition as the place where the Israelites passed over with the ark of the covenant; and where the blessed Saviour was baptised by John. Feeling that it would be desecration to moor the boats at a place so sacred, we passed it, and with some difficulty found a landing below.

"My first act was to bathe in the consecrated stream, thanking God, first, for the precious favour of being permitted to visit such a spot; and secondly, for his protecting care throughout our perilous passage. For a long time after, I sat upon the bank, my mind oppressed with awe, as I mused upon the great and wondrous events which had here occurred." In strange contrast with these passages stands the characteristic prophecy—"The time is coming—the beginning is come now—when the whole worthless list of kings with all their myrmidons, will be swept from their places and made to bear a part in the toils and sufferings of the great human family," &c. &c.

I would not willingly make light in others of certain finer sentiments—veneration, for instance, and conscientiousness—which Nature has perhaps debarred me from over enjoying: nor is it in my mind to console myself for the privation by debasing the gift in those gifted with it. But—the but, I fear, will, unlike "if," be anything rather than a great peacemaker in this case—there are feelings which, when strongly felt, when they well from the bottom of the heart, man conceals in the privacy of his own bosom; and which if published to the world, are apt to remind the world that it has heard of a form

* Chap. iii. Authorised Edition. Sampson Low, Son, and Co. 47, Ludgate Hill, 1850.

of speech, as well as of argument, ranking under the category of *ad captandum vulgus*.

About a mile beyond Independence Rock we forded the Sweetwater. We had crossed the divide between this stream and the Platte, and were now to ascend our fourth river valley, the three others being the Missouri, the Big Blue, and the Nebraska. The Canadian voyageurs have translated the native Sweetwater from the Indian Pina Pa; but the term is here more applicable in a metaphorical than in a literal point of view. The water of the lower bed is rather hard than otherwise, and some travellers have detected brackishness in it, yet the banks are free from the saline hoar, which deters the thirstiest from touching many streams on this line. The Sweetwater, in its calmer course, is a perfect Naiad of the mountains; presently it will be an Undine hurried by that terrible Anagké, to which Jove himself must bend his omniscient head, into the grisly marital embrace of the gloomy old Platte. Passing pleasant after the surly ungenial silence of the Shallow River, is the merry prattle with which she answers the whisperings of those fickle flatterers, the winds, before that wedding day when silence shall become her doom. There is a something in the Sweetwater which appeals to the feelings of rugged men: even the drivers and the station keepers speak of "her" with a bearish affection.

After fording the swift Pina Pa, at that point about seventy feet wide and deep to the axles, we ran along its valley about six miles, and reached at 9·15 P.M. the muddy station kept by M. Planté, the usual Canadian. En route we had passed the Devil's Gate, one of the great curiosities of this line of travel. It is the beau ideal of a kanyon, our portal opening upon the threshold of the Rocky Mountains: I can compare the form from afar only with the Brèche de Roland in the Pyrenees. The main pass of Aden magnified twenty fold is something of the same kind, but the simile is too unsavoury. The height of the gorge is from 300 to 400 feet: perpendicular, and on the south side threatening to fall, it has already done so in parts, as the masses which cumber the stream-bed show. The breadth varies from a minimum of 40 to a maximum of 105 feet, where the fissure yawns out, and the total length of the cleft is about 250 yards. The material of the walls is a grey granite,

traversed by dykes of trap: and the rock in which the deep narrow crevasse has been made, runs right through the extreme southern shoulder of a ridge, which bears appropriately enough the name of "Rattlesnake Hills." Through this wild gorge the bright stream frets and forces her way, singing, unlike Liris, with a feminine untaciturnity, that awakes the echoes of the pent-up channel,—tumbling and gurgling, dashing and foaming over the snags, blocks, and boulders which, fallen from the cliffs above, obstruct the way, and bedewing the cedars and bright shrubs which fringe the ragged staples of the gate. Why she should have not promenaded gently and quietly round, instead of through, this grisly barrier of rock, goodness only knows: however, wilfull and womanlike, she has set her heart upon an apparent impossibility, and, as usual with her sex under the circumstances, she has had her way. Sermons in stones—I would humbly suggest to my gender.

Procrastination once more stole my chance: I had reserved myself for sketching the Devil's Gate from the S.-W., but the station proved too distant to convey a just idea of it. For the truest representation of the gate, the curious reader will refer to the artistic work of Mr. Fred. Piercy*; that published in Captain Marcy's "List of Itineraries" is like anything but the Devil's Gate; even the rough lithograph in Colonel Frémont's report is more truthful.

We supped badly as mankind well could at the *cabaret*, where a very plain young person, and no neat handed Phyllis withal, [illegible]plied us with a cook whose toughness claimed for it the [illegible]rs of grandpaternity. Chickens and eggs there were [illegible] butcher's meat, of course, was unknown, and our hosts [illegible]d the name of tea; their salt was a kind of saleratus, and [illegible] sugar at least half Indian meal. When asked about fish, they said that the Sweetwater contained nothing but suckers†, and that these, though good eating, cannot be caught with a hook. They are a queer lot these French Canadians who have "located" themselves in the Far West. Travellers who have hunted with them speak highly of them as a patient, sub-

* Route from Liverpool to Great Salt Lake City.

† A common fish of the genus Labio, of which there are many species,—chub, mullet, barbel, horned dace, &c.: they are found in almost all the lakes and rivers of North America.

missive, and obedient race, inured to privations, and gifted with the reckless *abandon*—no despicable quality in prairie travelling—of the old Gascon adventurer, armed and ever vigilant, hardy, handy, and hearty children of nature, combining with the sagacity and the instinctive qualities all the superstitions of the Indians; enduring as mountain-goats; satisfied with a diet of wild meat, happiest when it could be followed by a cup of strong milkless coffee, a "chasse café" and a "brule-gueule;" invariably and contagiously merry; generous as courageous; handsome, active, and athletic; sashed, knived, and dressed in buckskin, to the envy of every Indian "brave," and the admiration of every Indian belle, upon whom, if the adventurer's heart had not fallen into the snares of the more attractive half-breed, he would spend what remained of his $10 a-month, after coffee, alcohol, and tobacco had been extravagantly paid for, in presents of the gaudiest trash. Such is the voyageur of books: I can only speak of him as I found him, a lazy dog, somewhat shy and proud, much addicted to loafing, and to keeping cabarets, because, as the old phrase is, the cabarets keep him—in idleness too. Probably his good qualities lie below the surface:—those who hide a farthing rushlight under a bushel can hardly expect us, in this railway age, to take the trouble of finding it. I will answer, however, for the fact, that the bad points are painfully prominent. By virtue of speaking French and knowing something of Canada, I obtained some buffalo robes, and after a look at the supper, which had all the effect of a copious feed, found a kind of outhouse, and smoked till sleep weighed [illegible] my eyelids.

Up the Sweetwater.—1845 *August.*

We arose at 6 A.M., before the rest of the household, who, when aroused "hifered" and sauntered about all *descousus* till their wool-gathering wits had returned. The breakfast was a little picture of the supper; for watered milk, half baked bread, and unrecognisable butter, we paid the somewhat "steep" sum of $0·75, we privily had our grumble and we set out at 7 A.M. to ascend the valley of the Sweetwater. The river plain is bounded by two parallel lines of hills, or rather rocks, running nearly due east and west. Those to the north are about a

hundred miles in extreme length, and rising from a great plateau lie perpendicular to the direction of the real Rocky Mountains towards which they lead: half the course of the Pina Pa subtends their southern base. The Western men know them as the Rattlesnake Hills, whilst the southern are called after the river. The former, a continuation of the ridge in which the Sweetwater has burst a gap — is one of those long lines of lumpy, misshapen, barren rock, that suggested to the Canadians for the whole region the name of Les Montagnes Rocheuses. In parts they are primary, principally syenite and granite, with a little gneiss, but they have often so regular a line of cleavage, perpendicular as well as horizontal, that they may readily be mistaken for stratifications. The stratified are slaty, micaceous hale and red sandstone, dipping northwards and cut by quartz veins and trap dykes. The remarkable feature in both formations is the rounding of the ridges or blocks of smooth naked granite: hardly any angles appeared; the general effect was, that they had been water-washed immediately after birth. The upper portions of this range shelter the Bighorn, or American mouflon, and the cougar* the grisly bear and the wolf. The southern or Sweetwater range is vulgarly known as the Green River Mountains: seen from the road their naked, barren and sandy flanks appear within cannon shot, but they are distant seven miles.

After a four miles drive up the pleasant valley of the little river-nymph, to whom the grisly hills formed an effective foil, [illegible] on the south of the road "Alkali Lake," another of the [illegible] formations with which we were about to become familiar. [illegible] the full glare of burning day it was undistinguishable [illegible] surface from the round pond in Hyde Park. Presently [illegible] ding a little rise, we were shown for the first time a real bit of the far-famed Rocky Mountains, which was hardly to be distinguished from, except by a shade of solidity, the fleecy sunlit clouds resting upon the horizon: it was Frémont's Peak, the sharp snow-clad apex of the Wind River range. Behind us and afar rose the distant heads of black hills. The valley was

* Locally called the Mountain Lion. This animal (*F. concolor*) is the largest and fiercest feline of the New World: it is a beast of many names — puma, cougar, American lion, panther or painter, &c. Its habit of springing upon its prey from trees makes it feared by hunters. It was once in the Kentishlls.

charming with its bright glad green, a tapestry of flowery grass, willow copses where the grouse ran in and out, and long lines of aspen, beech and cottonwood, while pine and cedar, cypress and scattered evergreens crept up the cranks and crannies of the rocks. In the midst of this Firdaus — so it appeared to us after the horrid unwitherings artemisiæ Jehannum of last week — flowed the lovely little stream, transparent as crystal, and coquettishly changing from side to side in her bed of golden sand. To see her tamely submit to being confined within those dwarf earthen cliffs you would not have known her to be the same that had made that terrible breach in the rock-wall below. "Varium et mutabile semper," &c.: I will not conclude the quotation, but simply remark that the voyageurs have called her "She." And everywhere, in contrast with the deep verdure and the bright flowers of the valley, rose the stern forms of the frowning rocks, some apparently hanging as though threatening a fall, others balanced upon the slenderest foundations, all split and broken, as though earthquake-riven, loosely piled into strange figures, the Lion Couchant, Sugar-loaf, Tortoise and Armadillo, — not a mile in fact was without its totem.

The road was good, especially when hardened by frost. We are now in altitudes where, as in Tibet, parts of the country for long centuries never thaw. After passing a singular stone bluff, on the left of the road, we met a party of discharged soldiers, who were travelling eastward comfortably enough in government waggons drawn by six mules. Not a man [illegible] Lieutenant Dana, though he was in uniform, and all [illegible] surly as Indians after a scalpless raid. Speeding [illegible] along, we were shown on the right of the road a ran[illegible] longing to a Canadian, a "mighty mean man," said the driver, "who ouet gin me ole mare's meat for b'ar." We were much shocked by this instance of the awful depravity of the unregenerate human heart, but our melancholy musings were presently interruped by the same youth, who pointed out on the other side of the path, a mass of clay (conglomerate, I presume), called the Devil's Post-office. It has been lately washed with rains so copious, that half the edifice lies at the base of that which is standing. The structure is not large: it is highly satisfactory — especially to a man who in this life has suffered

severely as the Anglo-Indian ever must from endless official and semi-official correspondence — to remark that the London Post-office is about double its size.

Beyond the post-office was another ranch belonging to a Portuguese named Luis Silva, married to an Englishwoman who had deserted the Salt Lake Saints. We "stayed a piece" there, but found few inducements to waste our time. Moreover, we had heard from afar of an "ole 'coman," an Englishwoman, a Miss Moore — Miss is still used for Mrs. by Western men and negroes — celebrated for cleanliness, tidiness, civility, and housewifery in general, and we were anxious to get rid of the evil flavour of Canadians, squaws, and "ladies."

At 11 A.M. we reached "three crossings," when we found the "miss" a stout, active, middle-aged matron, deserving of all the praises that had so liberally been bestowed upon her. The little ranch was neatly swept and garnished, papered and ornamented. The skull of a full-grown Bighorn hanging over the doorway represented the spoils of a stag of twelve. The table cloth was clean, so was the cooking, so were the children; and I was reminded of Europe by the way in which she insisted upon washing my shirt, an operation which, after leaving the Missouri, *ce va sans dire*, had fallen to my own lot. In fact, this day introduced me to the third novel sensation experienced on the western side of the Atlantic. The first is to feel (practically) that all men are equal; that you are no man's superior, and that no man is yours. The second — this is spoken as an African wanderer — to see one's quondam acquaintance, the [illegible] laying by his green kilt and coat of grease, invest himself in cloth, part his wool on one side, shave what pile nature has scattered upon his upper lip, chin, and cheeks below a line [illegible] from the ear to the mouth-corner after the fashion of the times when George the Third was king, and call himself, not Sambo, but Mr. Scott. The third was my meeting in the Rocky Mountains with this refreshing specimen of that far old world, where, on the whole, society still lies in strata, as originally deposited, distinct, sharply defined and rarely displaced, except by some violent upheaval from *below*, which, however, never succeeds long in producing total inversion. Miss Moore's husband, a decent appendage, had transferred his belief from the Church of England to the Church of Utah, and the good

wife, as in duty bound, had followed in his wake whom she was bound to love, honour, and obey. But when the serpent came and whispered in Miss Moore's modest, respectable, one-idea'd ear that the Abrahams of Great Salt Lake City are more "Shamabrams," that not content with Sarahs they add to them an unlimited supply of Hagars, then did our stout Englishwoman's power of endurance break down never to rise again. "Not an inch would she budge;" not a step towards U. T. would she take. She fought pluckily against the impending misfortune, and — *à quelque chose malheur est bon!* — she succeeded in reducing her husband to that state which is typified by the wife using certain portions of the opposite sex's wardrobe, and in making him make a good livelihood as station master on the waggon-line.

After a copious breakfast, which broke the fast of the four days that had dragged on since our civilised refection at Fort Laramie, we spread our buffalos and water-proofs under the ample eaves of the ranch, and spent the day in taking time with the sextant, — every watch being wrong — in mooning, dozing, chatting, smoking, and contemplating the novel view. Straight before us rose the Rattlesnake Hills, a nude and grim horizon, frowning over the soft and placid scene below, whilst at their feet flowed the little river, — *splendidior vitro*, — purling over its pebbly bed with graceful meanderings through clover prairillons and garden spots full of wild currants, strawberries, gooseberries, and rattlesnakes; whilst contrasting with the green River Valley, and the scorched and tawny rock-wall, patches of sand-hill raised by the winds, here and there cumbered the ground. The variety of the scene was much enhanced by changeful skies. The fine breeze which had set in at [illegible] had died in the attempt to thread those heat-refracting ridges, and vapoury clouds, sublimated by the burning sun, floated lazily in the empyrean, casting fitful shadows that now intercepted, then admitted, a blinding glare upon the many stream and its rough cradle.

In the evening we bathed in the shallow bed of the Sweetwater. It is vain to caution travellers against this imprudence. *Video meliora proboque*: — it is doubtless unwise — but it is also *mera stultitia* to say to men who have not enjoyed ablutions

for a week or ten days, "If you do take that delicious dip you may possibly catch fever." *Deteriora sequor*,—bathed. Miss Moore warned us strongly against the rattlesnakes, and during our walk we carefully observed the Indian rule, to tread upon the log and not to overstep it. The crotalus, I need hardly say, like other snakes, is fond of lurking under the shade of fallen or felled trunks, and when a heel or a leg is temptingly set before it, it is not the beast to refuse a bite. Accidents are very common, despite all precautions, upon this line, but they seldom, I believe, prove fatal. The remedies are almost endless: *e. g.* hartshorn, used externally and drunk in dilution; scarification and irrumation of the part, preceded, of course, by a ligature between the limb and the heart; application of the incised breast of a live fowl or frog to the wound; the dried and powdered blood of turtle, of this two pinches to be swallowed and a little dropped upon the place bitten; a plaster of chewed or washed plantain-leaves—it is cooling enough, but can do little more—bound upon the puncture, peppered with a little finely powdered tobacco; pulverised indigo made into a poultice with water; cauterisation by gunpowder, hot iron, or lunar caustic; cedron, a nut growing on the Isthmus of Panama—of this remedy I heard, *in loco*, the most wonderful accounts, dying men being restored, as if by magic, after a bit about the size of a bean had been placed in their mouths. As will be seen below, the land is rich in snake-roots, but the superstitious snake-stone of Hindostan — which acts, if it does act, as an absorbent of the virus by capillary attraction — is apparently unknown. The favourite remedy now in the United States is the "Kentucky cure," which, under the form of arrack, combined in [illegible] of a scorpion-sting with a poultice of chewed tobacco, [illegible] known for the last fifty years to the British soldier in India. It has the advantage of being a palatable medicine; it must also be taken in large quantities, a couple of bottles sometimes producing little effect. With the lighted end of a cigar applied as moxa to the wound, a *quantum sufficit* of ardent spirits, a couple of men to make me walk about when drowsy by the application of a stick, and above all, with the serious resolution not to do anything so mean as to "leap the twig," I should not be afraid of any snake yet created. The only pro-

vine is that our old enemy must not touch an artery, and that the remedies must be at hand. Fifteen minutes lost, you are "down among the dead men." The history of fatal cases always shows some delay."

We supped in the evening merrily. It was the best coffee we had tasted since leaving New Orleans; the cream was excellent, so was the cheese. But an antelope had unfortunately been brought in; we had insisted upon a fry of newly killed flesh, which was repented in the morning, and we had bitterly to regret it. Whilst I was amusing myself by attempting to observe an immersion of Jupiter's satellites, with a notable failure in the shape of that mares and delusion a portable telescope, suddenly there arose a terrible hubbub. For a moment it was believed that the crotalus horridus had been taking liberties with one of Miss Moore's progeny. The cast of pain, however, soon removed the alarming suspicion, and — the rattle-snake seldom does damage at night — we soon came to the conclusion that the dear little fellow who boo-hoo'd for forty had been bitten by a mosquito somewhat bigger than its fellows. The poor mother soon was restored to her habits of happiness and hard labour. Not contented with supporting her own family, she was doing supererogation by feeding a little rat-eyed, snub-nosed, shark-mouthed, half-breed girl, who was, I believe, in the market as a "chattel." Mrs. Dana pointed out to me one sign of demoralisation on the part of Miss Moore. It was so microscopic that only a woman's acute eye could detect it. Miss Moore was teaching her children to say "Yes surr!" to every driver.

To the Fort of South Pass, 1842.

With renewed spirit, despite a somewhat hard struggle with the mosquitoes, we set out at the respectable hour of 5 A.M. We had breakfasted comfortably, and an interesting country lay before us. The mules seemed to share in our gaiety. Despite a long ringing, the amiable animals kicked and bit, barked and

* The author of "The Quadroon" (chap. xxiii., &c.) relates a happy instance of a "hero" who, after a delay and an amount of exertion which certainly would have cost him his life, was relieved by tobacco and cured by the snake-root (*Polygala Senega*). The popular snake-roots quoted by Mr. Bartlett, are the Seneca snake-root, above alluded to, the black snake-root (*Cimicifuga racemosa*), and the Virginia snake-root (*Aristolochia serpentaria*).

backed, till their recalcitrancies had almost deposited us in the first ford of the Sweetwater. For this, however, we were amply consoled by the greater misfortunes of our consort, the official wagon. After long luxuriating in the pick of the teams, they were to-day so thoroughly badly "muled" that they were compelled to apply for our assistance.

We forded the river twice within fifty yards, and we recognised with sensible pleasure a homely-looking magpie (*Pica Hudsonica*), and a rattle-snake, not inappropriately, considering where we were, crossed the road. Our path lay between two rocky ridges, which gradually closed inwards, forming a regular kanyon, quite shutting out the view. On both sides white and micaceous granite towered to the height of 300 or 400 feet, terminating in jagged and pointed peaks, whose partial disruption covered the angle at their base. Arrived at Ford No. 5, we began an ascent, and reaching the summit, halted to enjoy the fine back view of the split and crevassed mountains.

A waterless and grassless tract of fifteen to sixteen miles led us to a well-known place,—the Ice Springs,—of which, somewhat unnecessarily, a marvel is made. The ground, which lies on the right of the road, is a long and swampy trough between two waves of land which permit the humidity to drain down, and the grass is discoloured, suggesting the presence of alkali. After digging about two feet, ice is found in small fragments. Its presence, even in the hottest seasons, may be readily accounted for by the fact that hereabouts water will freeze in a tent during July, and by the depth to which the [illegible] extends. Upon the same principle, snow gathering [illegible] ravines and hollows long outlasts the shallower [illegible]. A little beyond Ice Springs, on the opposite side of [illegible] and a quarter of a mile distant from the road, lie the Warm Springs: one of the many alkaline pans which lie scattered over the face of the country. From the road nothing is to be seen but a deep cuvette full of percolated water.

Beyond the Warm Springs lay a hopeless-looking land, a vast slope, barren and desolate as Nature could well make it. The loose sands and the granite masses of the valley had disappeared; the surface was a thin coat of hard gravelly soil. Some mosses, a scanty yellow grass, and the dark grey artemisia, now

stunted and shrunk, were sparsely scattered about. It had already begun to give way before an even hardier creation, the rabbit-bush and the grease-wood. The former, which seems to thrive under the wintry snow, is a favourite food with hares which abound in this region; the latter (*Obione*, or *Atriplex canescens*, the chamiso of the Mexicans) derives its name from the oleaginous matter abundant in its wood, and is always a sign of a poor and sterile soil. Avoiding a steep descent by a shorter road, called "Landers' Cut-off," we again came upon the Sweetwater, which was here somewhat broader than below, and lighted upon good grass and underbrush, willow copses, and a fair halting place. At Ford No. 6 — three followed one another in rapid succession — we found the cattle of a travelling trader scattered over the pasture grounds. He proved to be an Italian driven from the low country by a band of Sioux, who had slain his Shoshone wife, and at one time had thought of adding his scalp to his squaw's. After Ford No. 8, we came upon a camping ground, usually called in guide-books "River Bank and Stream." The Sweetwater is here twenty-five feet wide. About three miles beyond it lay the "Foot of Ridge Station," near a willowy creek, called from its principal inhabitants the Muskrat.* The ridge from which it derives its name is a band of stone that will cross the road during to-morrow's ascent. Being a frontier place, it is a favourite camping ground with Indians. To-day a war party of Sioux rode in, *en route* to provide themselves with a few Shoshone scalps.

We made a decided rise to-day, and stood at least 6000 feet above the level of the sea. The altitude of St. Louis [illegible] round numbers 500 feet, and reckoning the diminution [illegible] perature at 1° F. = 100 yards, we are already 10° to 20° [illegible] than before. The severity of the atmosphere and the [illegible] evaporation from the earth cause an increase of frigidity, to which the salts and nitrates upon the surface of the soil, by absorbing the hydrogen of the atmosphere, — as is shown by the dampness of the ground and the absence of dust around the Saleratus Lakes, — greatly add. Another remark made by every

* *Fiber Zibethicus*, a beaver-like animal that inhabits the banks of ponds and streams; it has a strong musky odour in summer only, and is greedily eaten by the Indians.

traveller in these regions, is the marked influence upon the temperature caused by the presence and the absence of the sun. The day will be sultry and oppressive, and a fire will be required at night. In the morning about 11 A.M., the thermometer showed 80° Fahrenheit; at 4 P.M., the sky being clouded over, it fell 25°: before dawn, affected by the cold north wind from the snows about the pass, it stood at 40°.

The lowering firmament threatened rain, of which, however, the thirsty land was disappointed. Moreover, all were agreed that snow was to be expected in another fortnight, if not sooner. Glacial storms occasionally occur in July and August, so that in some years the land may be said to have no summer. In winter the sharpness of the cold is such that it can be kept out only by clothes of the closest texture; the mountain-men, like the Esquimaux, prefer to clothe themselves cap-a-pié in the prepared skins of animals. We were all animated with a nervous desire for travel, but there was the rub. The station-master declared that he had no driver, no authority to forward two wagons-full, and no cattle; consequently, that the last comers must be last served, and wait patiently at Rocky Ridge till they could be sent on. They would find antelopes in plenty, perhaps a grizzly, and plenty of plover, crows, and delicate little ground squirrels* by the burrowfull, to "keep their hands in." We being the first comers, a title to preference rarely disputed in this law-and-rule-abiding land, prudently held ourselves aloof. The judiciary, however, was sorely "exercised." Being a "professor," that is, a serious person, he could not relieve his mind by certain little [illegible] which naturally occurred to the rest of the party. [illegible] and protracted were the pow-wows that took place on [illegible] momentous occasion. Sometimes our quondam companions — now looked upon them as friends lost to us — would mysteriously disappear as though the earth had opened and swallowed them, and presently they would return with woe-begone step and the wrinkled brow of care, simulating an ease which they were far from feeling.

* I had no opportunity of observing this clean, pretty, and vivacious little animal, whose chirruping resembles that of a bird; but it appeared to be quite a different species from the common striped and spotted prairie squirrel (*Spermophilus tredecimlineatus*), or the Chipmonk or Chipmunk (*S. striatus*).

The station rather added to than took from our discomfort: it was a terrible unclean hole; milk was not procurable within thirty-five miles; one of the officials was suffering surely from a stomach ache; there was no sugar, and the cooking was atrocious. With a stray title-pageless volume of some natural history of America, and another of agricultural reports — in those days, before reform came, these scientific and highly elaborate compositions, neatly printed and expensively got up at the public expense, were apparently distributed to every ranch and station in the line of road — I worked through the long and tedious afternoon. We were not sorry when the night came, but then the floor was knobby, the mosquitoes seemed rather to enjoy the cold, and the banks swarmed with "chinches."* The coyotes and wolves made night vocal with their choruses, and had nearly caused an accident. One of the station-men arose, and having a bone to pick with the animals for having robbed his beef barrel, cocked his revolver, and was upon the point of firing, when the object aimed at started up and cried out in the nick of time that he was a Federal marshal, not a wolf.

To the Scott Free, August 2nd.

We rose with the daybreak; we did not start till nearly 8 A.M., the interim having been consumed by the tenants of our late consort in a vain palaver. We bade adieu to them and mounted at last, loudly pitying their miseries as they disappeared from our ken. But the driver bade us reserve our sympathy and humane expressions for a more fitting occasion, and declared — it was probably a little effort of his own imagination — that those faithless friends had spent all their time in persuading him to take them on and to leave us behind. I, for one, will never believe that anything of the kind had been attempted; a man must be created with a total absence of the bowels of compassion, who would leave a woman and a young child for days together at the Foot of Ridge Station.

* The chinch or chints is the Spanish *chinche* — the popular word for the *cimex lectularius* in the Southern States. In other parts of the United States the English bug is called a bed-bug: without the prefix it is applied to beetles and a variety of coleoptera, as the May-bug, June-bug, golden-bug, &c.

The road at once struck away from the Sweetwater, winding up and down rugged hills and broken hollows. From Fort Laramie the land is all a sandy and hilly desert where one can easily starve, but here it shows its worst features. During a steep descent a mule fell and was not made to regain its footing without difficulty. Signs of wolves, coyotes, and badgers were abundant, and the *coqs de prairie* (sage-chickens) still young and toothsome at this season, were at no pains to get out of shot. After about five miles we passed by "Three Lakes," dirty little ponds north of the road, two near it and one distant, all about a quarter of a mile apart, and said by those fond of tasting strange things to have somewhat the flavour, as they certainly have the semblance, of soapsuds. Beyond this point we crossed a number of influents of the pretty Sweetwater, some dry, others full: the most interesting was Strawberry Creek: it supplies plenty of the fragrant wild fruit, and white and red willows fringe the bed as long as it retains its individuality. To the north a mass of purple nimbus obscured the mountains — on Frémont's Peak it is said always to rain or snow — and left no visible line between earth and sky. Quaking Asp Creek was bone dry. At MacAchran's Branch of the Sweetwater we found, pitched upon a sward near a willow copse, a Provençal Frenchman — by what "hasard que les sceptiques appellent l'homme d'affaires du bon Dieu," did he come here? — who begged us to stop and give him the news, especially about the Indians: we could say little that was reassuring. Another spell of rough steep ground placed us at Willow Creek, a pretty little prairillon, with verdure, water, and abundance of the larger vegetation, upon which our eyes, [illegible] accustomed to artemisia and rabbit-bush, dwelt with a compound sense of surprise and pleasure. In a well-built ranch at this place of plenty were two Canadian traders, apparently settled for life; they supplied us, as we found it necessary to "liquor up," with a whiskey which did not poison us, and that is about all that I can say for it. At Ford No. 9, we bade adieu to the Sweetwater with that natural regret which one feels when losing sight of the only pretty face and pleasant person in the neighbourhood; and we heard with a melancholy satisfaction the driver's tribute to departing

worth, viz. that its upper course is the "healthiest water in the world." Near this spot, since my departure, has been founded "South Pass City," one of the many mushroom growths which the presence of gold in the Rocky Mountains has caused to spring up.

Ten miles beyond Ford No. 9, hilly miles, ending in a long champaign having some of the characteristics of a rolling prairie, with scatters of white, rose, and smoky quartz, granite, hornblende, porphyry, marble-like lime, sandstone and mica slate,—the two latter cropping out of the ground and forming rocky ridges,—led us to the South Pass, the great *Wasserscheide* between the Atlantic and the Pacific; and the frontier points between the territory of Nebraska and the State of Oregon. From the mouth of the Sweetwater, about 120 miles, we have been rising so gradually, almost imperceptibly, that now we unexpectedly find ourselves upon the summit. The distance from Fort Laramie is 320 miles, from St. Louis 1580, and from the mouth of the Oregon about 1400: it is therefore nearly midway between the Mississippi and the Pacific. The dimensions of this memorial spot are 7490 feet above sea-level, and 20 miles in breadth. The last part of the ascent is so gentle that it is difficult to distinguish the exact point where the versant lies: a stony band crossing the road on the ridge of the table-land is pointed out as the place, and the position has been fixed at north latitude 42° 19′, and west longitude 108° 40′.* The northern limit is the noble chain of Les Montagnes Rocheuses, which goes by the name of the Wind River; the southern is called Table Mountain, an insignificant mass of low hills.

A pass it is not: it has some of the features of Thermopylæ or the Gorge of Killiecrankie; of the European St. Bernard or Simplon; of the Alleghany Passes or of the Mexican *Barrancas*. It is not, as it sounds, a chaut between lofty mountains, or, as the traveller may expect, a giant gateway, opening through cyclopean walls of heetling rocks that rise in forbidding grandeur as he passes onwards to the Western continent. And yet the

* Some guide-books place the watershed between two small hills, the "Twin Peaks," about fifty or sixty feet high; the road, however, no longer passes between them.

word "Pass" has its significancy. In that New World, where nature has worked upon the largest scale, where every feature of scenery, river and lake, swamp and forest, prairie and mountain, dwarf their congeners in the old hemisphere, this majestic level-topped bluff, the highest steppe of the continent, upon whose iron surface there is space enough for the armies of the globe to march over, is the grandest and the most appropriate of avenues.

A watershed is always exciting to the traveller. What shall I say of this, where, on the topmost point of American travel, you drink within a hundred yards of the waters of the Atlantic and the Pacific Oceans?—that divides the "doorways of the west wind" from the "portals of the sunrise." On the other side of yon throne of storms, within sight, did not the Sierra interpose, lie separated by a trivial space the fountain-heads that give birth to the noblest rivers of the continent, the Columbia, the Colorado, and the Yellowstone, which is to the Missouri what the Missouri is to the Mississippi;—whence the waters trend to four opposite directions; the Wind River to the north-east; to the south-east the Sweetwater and the Platte; the various branches of the Snake River to the north-east; and to the south-west the Green River, that finds its way into the Californian Gulf.* It is a suggestive spot this "divortia aquarum;" it compels Memory to revive past scenes before plunging into the mysterious "Lands of the Hereafter," which lie before and beneath the feet. The Great Ferry, which steam has now bridged, the palisaded banks of the Hudson, the

* As early as A.D. 1772 (Description of the Province of Carolana, &c. &c., by [illegible] Cox) it was suggested that there was a line of water communication by means of the "Northern branch of the Great Yellow River, by the natives called the River of the Mascrites" (Missouri River), and a branch of the Columbia River, which, however, was erroneously supposed to disembogue through the Great Salt Lake into the Pacific. The idea has been revived in the present day. Some assert that the upper waters of the Yellowstone, which approach within three hundred miles of Gt. S. L. City, are three feet deep, and therefore navigable for flat-bottomed boats during the annual inundation. Others believe that, as in the case of the Platte, shallowness would be an insuperable obstacle, except for one or two months. This point will doubtless be settled by Captain W. F. Reynolds, of the United States Topographical Engineers, who, accompanied by Colonel J. Bridger was, at the time of my visit to Gt. S. L. City, exploring the Valley of the Yellowstone.

soft and sunny scenery of the Ohio, and the kingly course of the Upper Mississippi, the terrible beauty of Niagara, and the marvels of that chain of inland seas which winds its watery way from Ontario to Superior; the rich pasture lands of the North, the plantations of the semitropical South, and the broad cornfields of the West: finally the vast meadow-land and the gloomy desert-waste of sage and saleratus, of clay and *mauvaise terre*, of red *butte* and tawny rock: all pass before the mind in rapid array ere they are thrust into oblivion by the excitement of a new departure.

But we have not yet reached our destination, which is two miles below the South Pass. Pacific Springs is our station; it lies a little down the hill, and we can sight it from the road. The springs are a pond of pure, hard, and very cold water surrounded by a strip of shaking bog, which must be boarded over before it will bear a man. The hut would be a right melancholy abode, were it not for the wooded ground on one hand and the glorious snow peaks on the other side of the "Pass." We reached Pacific Springs at 3 P.M. and dined without delay; the material being bouilli and potatoes—unusual luxuries. About an hour afterwards the west wind, here almost invariable, brought up a shower of rain, and swept a vast veil over the forms of the Wind River Mountains. Towards sunset it cleared away, the departing luminary poured a flood of gold upon the majestic pile—I have seldom seen a view more beautiful.

From the South, the barren rolling table-land that forms the Pass trends northwards, till it sinks apparently below a ridge of offsets from the main body, black with timber,—cedar, cypress, fir, and balsam pine. The hand of nature has marked, as though by line and level, the place where vegetation shall go and no further. Below the waist the mountains are robed in evergreens; above it, to the shoulders, they would be entirely bare, but for the atmosphere, which has thrown a thin veil of light blue over their tawny grey, whilst their majestic heads are covered with ice and snow, or are hidden from sight by thundercloud or the morning mist. From the south on clear days the cold and glittering radiance may be seen at a distance of a hundred miles. The monarch of these mountains is "Frémont's Peak;" its height is laid down at 13,570 feet above sea level; and

second to it is a hoary cone called by the station-people Snowy Peak.

That evening the Wind River Mountains appeared in marvellous majesty. The huge purple hangings of rain-cloud in the northern sky set off their huge proportions, and gave prominence, as in a stereoscope, to their gigantic forms, and their upper heights, hoar with the frosts of ages. The mellow radiance of the setting sun diffused a charming softness over their more rugged features, defining the folds and ravines with a distinctness which deceived every idea of distance. And as the light sank behind the far western horizon, it travelled slowly up the mountain side, till, reaching the summit, it mingled its splendours with the snow — flashing and flickering for a few brief moments, then wasting them in the dark depths of the upper air. Nor was the scene less lovely in the morning hour, as the first effulgence of day fell upon the masses of dew-cloud, — at this time mist always settles upon their brows, — lit up the peaks, which gleamed like silver, and poured its streams of light and warmth over the broad skirts reposing upon the plain.

This unknown region was explored in August 1842, by Colonel, then Brevet-Captain, J. C. Frémont, of the United States Topographical Engineers; and his eloquent descriptions of the magnificent scenery that rewarded his energy and enterprise prove how easily men write well when they have a great subject to write upon. The concourse of small green tarns, rushing waters, and lofty cascades, with the gigantic disorder of enormous masses, the savage sublimity of the naked rock, broken, jagged cones, slender minarets, needles, and columns, and serrated walls, 2000 to 3000 feet high, all naked and destitute of vegetable earth; the vertical precipices, chasms, and fissures, insecure icy passages, long morsines, and sloping glaciers — which had nearly proved fatal to some of the party; — the stern recesses, shutting out from the world dells and ravines of exquisite beauty, smoothly carpeted with soft grass, kept green and fresh by the moisture of the atmosphere, and sown with gay groups of brilliant flowers, of which yellow was the predominant colour: all this glory and grandeur seems to be placed like a picture before our eyes. The reader enjoys, like the explorer, the fragrant odour of the pines, and the pleasure of breathing, in the bright, clear morning, that "mountain air

which makes a constant theme of the hunter's praise," and which causes man to feel as if he had been inhaling some exhilarating gas. We sympathise with his joy in having hit upon "such a beautiful entrance to the mountains," in his sorrow, caused by accidents to barometer and thermometer, and in the honest pride with which, fixing a ramrod in the crevice of "an unstable and precarious slab, which it seemed a breath would hurl into the abyss below," he unfurled the Stars and the Stripes, to waive in the breeze where flag never waved before — over the topmost crest of the Rocky Mountains. And every driver upon the road now can tell how, in the profound silence and terrible stillness and solitude that affect the mind as the great features of the scene, while sitting on a rock at the very summit, where the silence was absolute, unbroken by any sound, and the stillness and solitude were complete, a solitary "humble-bee,"* winging through the black-blue air his flight from the eastern valley, alit upon the knee of one of the men, and, behold! "found a grave in the leaves of the large book, among the flowers collected on the way."

The Wind River range has other qualities than mere formal beauty to recommend it. At Horse-shoe Creek I was shown a quill full of large gold-grains from a new digging. Probably all the primitive masses of the Rocky Mountains will be found to contain the precious metal. The wooded heights are said to be a very paradise of sport, full of elk and every kind of deer; pumas; bears, brown† as well as grisly; the wolverine‡; in parts the mountain-buffalo — briefly, all the noble game of the Continent. The Indian tribes, Shoshones and Blackfeet, are not deadly to whites. Washikí, the chief of the former, had, during the time of our visit, retired to hilly ground, about

* A speaker of America or Jonathan. In the United States, as in England, the word is often pronounced humble-bee. Johnson says we call a bee an humble bee that wants a sting; so the Scots call black cattle without horns "humble cows." It is the general belief of the mountaineers that the bee, the partridge, the plantain, and the "Jonathan weed" follow the footsteps of the white pioneer westward.

† Some authorities doubt that the European brown bear is found in America.

‡ The wolverine (*gulo luscus*), carcajou, or glutton, extends throughout Utah Territory: its carnivorous propensities render it an object of peculiar hatred to furbearers. The first name is loosely used in the Indian: the people of Michigan are called wolverines, from the large number of carnivorous animals found there [Burton].

forty miles north of the Post of Bridge Station. This chief — a fine, manly fellow, equal in point of physical strength to the higher race — had been a firm friend, from the beginning, to emigrant and settler; but he was complaining, according to the road officials, that the small amount of inducement prevented his affording good conduct any longer, that he must rob, like the rest of the tribe. Game, indeed, is not unfrequently found near the Pacific Springs; they are visited, later in the year, by swans, geese, and flights of ducks. At this season they seem principally to attract coyotes, — five mules have lately been worried by the little villains, — huge cranes, chicken-hawks, a large species of trochilus, and clouds of mosquitoes, which neither the altitude, the cold, nor the eternal wind-storm that howls through the Pass, can drive from their favourite breeding-bed. Near nightfall a flock of wild geese passed over us, audibly threatening an early winter. We were obliged, before resting, to insist upon a smudge*, without which fumigation, sleep would have been impossible.

The shanty was perhaps a trifle more uncomfortable than the average; our only seat was a kind of trestled plank, which suggested a certain obsolete military punishment, called riding on a rail. The station-master was a *bon enfant*; but his help, a Mormon lad, still in his teens, had been trained to go in a "sorter" jibbing and somewhat uncomfortable "argufying," "highfalutin'" way. He had the furor for fire-arms that characterises the ingenuous youth of Gt. S. L. City, and his old rattletrap of a revolver, which always reposed by his side at night, was as dangerous to his friends as to himself. His vernacular was peculiar; like Mr. Boatswain Chucks (*Mr. D——s*), he could begin a sentence with polished and elaborate diction, but it always ended, like the wicked, badly. He described himself, for instance, as having lately been "slightly inebriated;" but the euphuistic periphrasis concluded with an asseveration that he would be "Gord domned," if he did it again.

The night was, like the day, loud and windy, the log hut being somewhat crannied and creviced, and the door had a porcelain handle, and a shocking bad fit — a characteristic com-

* This old North of England word is used in the West for a heap of green bush or other damp combustibles, placed inside or to windward of a house or tent, and partially lighted, so as to produce a thick, pungent steam.

blankets. We had some trouble to keep ourselves warm. At sunrise the thermometer showed 35° Fahrenheit.

To Green River, August 21st.

We rose early, despite the cold, to enjoy once more the lovely aspect of the Wind River Mountains, upon whose walls of snow the rays of the unrisen sun broke with a splendid effect; breakfasted, and found ourselves *en route* at 6 A.M. The day did not begin well: Mrs. Dana was suffering severely from fatigue, and the rapid transitions from heat to cold; Miss May, poor child! was but little better, and the team was reinforced by an extra mule returning to its proper station; this fleet-footed Xantippe cursed us, without speaking of the dust from her hoofs, an immensity of trouble.

At the Pacific Creek, two miles below the springs, we began the descent of the Western watershed, and the increase of temperature soon suggested a lower level. We were at once convinced that those who expect any change for the better on the counterslope of the mountains labour under a vulgar error. The land was desolate, a red waste, dotted with sage and grease-bush, and in places pitted with large rain-drops. But looking backwards we could admire the Sweetwater's Gap leading far away, and the glorious pile of mountains which, disposed in crescent shape, captained the horizon; their southern and western bases wanted however one of the principal charms of the upper view, the snow had well nigh been melted off. Yet, according to the explorer, they supply within the space of a few miles the Green River with a number of tributaries, which are all called the New Forks. We kept them in sight till they mingled with the upper air like immense masses of thunder cloud gathering for a storm.

From Pacific Creek the road is not bad, but at this season the emigrant parties are sorely tried by drought, and when water is found it is often fetid or brackish. After seventeen miles we passed the junction of the Gt. S. L. and Fort Hall roads. Near Little Sandy Creek—a feeder of its larger namesake—which after rains is about 2·5 feet deep, we found nothing but sand, caked clay, sage, thistles, and the scattered fragments of camp fires, with large ravens picking at the bleaching skeletons, and other indications of a halting-ground,

an eddy in the great current of mankind, which, ceaseless as the Gulf Stream, ever courses from east to west. After a long stage of twenty-nine miles, we made Big Sandy Creek, an important influent of the Green River; the stream, then shrunken, was in breadth not less than five rods, each = 16·5 feet, running with a clear swift current through a pretty little prairillon, bright with the blue lupine, the delicate pink malvacea, the golden helianthus, purple aster acting daisy, the white mountain heath, and the green Asclepias tuberosa*, a weed common throughout U. T. The Indians, in their picturesque way, term this stream Wăgthoongopă, or the Glistening Gravel Water.† We halted for an hour to rest and dine; the people of the station, man and wife, the latter very young, were both English, and of course Mormons; they had but lately become tenants of the ranch, but already they were thinking, as the Old Country people will, of making their surroundings "nice and tidy."

Beyond the Glistening Gravel Water lies a *mauvaise terre*, sometimes called the First Desert, and upon the old road water is not found in the dry season within forty-nine miles—a terrible *jornada*‡ for laden waggons with tired cattle. We prepared for drought by replenishing all our canteens—one of them especially, a tin flask, covered outside with thick cloth, kept the fluid deliciously cold—and we amused ourselves by the pleasant prospect of seeing wild mules taught to bear harness. The tricks of equine viciousness and asinine obstinacy played by the mongrels were so distinct, that we had no pains in determining what was inherited from the father and what from the other side of the house. Before they could be hitched up they were severally hustled into something like a parallel line with the pole, and were then forced into their places by a rope

* Locally called milk-weed. The whites use the silky cotton of the pods, as in Arabia, for bed stuffings, and the Sioux Indians of the Upper Plains boil and eat the young pods with their buffalo flesh. Col Fremont asserts that he never saw this plant without remarking "on the flower a large butterfly, so nearly resembling it in colour as to be distinguishable at a little distance only by the motion of its wings."

† Similarly the Snake River, an eastern influent of the Colorado, is called Yampa or Sweet Root (*Anethum graveolens*) Water.

‡ The Spanish-Mexican term for a day's march. It is generally applied to a waterless march, *e.g.* "Jornada del Muerto" in New Mexico, which, like some in the Sahara, measures ninety miles across.

attached to the forewheel and hauled at the other end by two or three men. Each of these pleasant animals had a bell; it is sure, unless corralled, to run away, and at night sound is necessary to guide the pursuer. At last, being "all aboard," we made a start, dashed over the Big Sandy, charged the high stiff bank with an impetus that might have carried us up an otter-slide or a Montague Rees, and took the right side of the valley, leaving the stream at some distance.

Rain-clouds appeared from the direction of the hills; apparently they had many centres, as the distant sheet was rent into a succession of distinct streamers. A few drops fell upon us as we advanced. Then the fiery sun "ate up" the clouds, or raised them so high that they became playthings in the hands of the strong and steady western gale. The thermometer showed 95° in the carriage, and 121° exposed to the reflected heat upon the black leather cushions. It was observable, however, that the sensation was not what might have been expected from the height of the mercury, and perspiration was unknown except during severe exercise; this proves the purity and salubrity of the air. In St. Jo. and New Orleans the effect would have been that of India or of a Turkish steam-bath. The heat, however, brought with it one evil—a green-headed horsefly, that stung like a wasp, and from which cattle must be protected with a coating of grease and tar. Whenever wind blew, tourbillons of dust coursed over the different parts of the plain, showing a highly electrical state of the atmosphere. When the air was unmoved the mirage was perfect as the marsh in Sindh or Southern Persia; earth and air were both so dry that the refraction of the sunbeams elevated the objects acted upon more than I had ever seen before. A sea lay constantly before our eyes, receding of course as we advanced, but in all other points a complete *lusus naturæ*. The colour of the water was a dull cool sky-blue, not white, as the "looming" generally is; the broad expanse had none of that tremulous upward motion which is its general concomitant; it lay placid, still, and perfectly reflecting in its azure depths—here and there broken by projecting capes and bluff headlands—the forms of the higher grounds bordering the horizon.

After twelve miles' driving we passed through a depression called Simpson's Hollow, and somewhat celebrated in local

story. Two semicircles of black still charred the ground; on a cursory view they might have been mistaken for burnt-out lignite. Here, in 1857, the Mormons fell upon a coralled train of twenty-three wagons, laden with provisions and other necessaries for the Federal troops, then halted at Camp Scott awaiting orders to advance. The wagoners, suddenly attacked, and, as usual, unarmed,—their weapons being fastened inside their awnings,—could offer no resistance, and the whole convoy was set on fire except two conveyances, which were left to carry back supplies for the drivers till they could reach their homes. On this occasion the *duo fools* was Lot Smith, a man of reputation for hard riding and general gallantry. The old saint is always spoken of as a good man who lives by "Mormon rule of wisdom." As at Fort Sumter, no blood was spilt. So far the Mormons behaved with temper and prudence; but this their first open act of rebellion against, or secession from, the Federal authority, nearly proved fatal to them; had the helm of government been held by a firmer hand than poor Mr. Buchanan's the scenes of Nauvoo would have been acted again at Gt. S. L. City. As it was, all turned out à *merveille* for the saints militant. They still boast loudly of the achievement, and on the marked spot where it was performed, the juvenile emigrants of the creed erect dwarf graves and nameless "wooden" tomb-"stones" in derision of their enemies.

As sunset drew near we approached the banks of the Big Sandy River. The bottom through which it flowed was several yards in breadth, bright green with grass, and thickly feathered with willows and cottonwood. It showed no sign of cultivation; the absence of cereals may be accounted for by its extreme cold; it freezes there every night, and none but the hardiest grains, oats and rye, which here are little appreciated, could be made to grow. We are now approaching the valley of the Green River, which, like many of the rivers in the eastern States, appears formerly to have filled a far larger channel. Flat tables and elevated terraces of horizontal strata,—showing that the deposit was made in still waters—with layers varying from a few lines to a foot in thickness, composed of hard clay, green and other sandstones, and agglutinated conglomerates, rise like islands from barren plains, or form escarpments that buttress alternately either bank of the winding stream. Such, according

to Captain Stansbury, is the general formation of the land between the South Pass and the "Rim" of the Utah Basin.

Advancing over a soil alternately sandy and rocky—an iron flat that could not boast of a spear of grass—we sighted a number of coyotes, fittest inhabitants of such a waste, and a long distant line of dust, like the smoke of a locomotive, raised by a herd of mules which were being driven to the corral. We were presently met by the Pony-Express rider; he reined in to exchange news, which *de part et d'autre* were simply *nil*. As he pricked onwards over the plain, the driver informed us, with a portentous rolling of the head, that Ichabod was an a'mighty fine "shynot." Within five or six miles of Green River we passed the boundary stone which bears Oregon on one side and Utah on the other. We had now traversed the south-eastern corner of the country of Long-eared men*, and were entering Deseret, the Land of the Honey Bee.

At 6·30 P.M. we debouched upon the bank of the Green River. The station was the home of Mr. Macarthy, our driver. The son of a Scotchman who had settled in the U. S. he retained many signs of his origin, especially freckles, and hair which one might almost venture to describe as sandy; perhaps also at times he was rather o'er fond of draining "a cup o' kindness yet." He had lately taken to himself an English wife, the daughter of a Birmingham mechanic, who, before the end of her pilgrimage to "Zion on the tops of the mountains," had fallen considerably away from grace, and had incurred the risk of being buffeted by Satan for a thousand years—a common form of commination in the New Faith—by marrying a Gentile husband.† The station had the indescribable scent of a Hindoo village, which appears to result from the burning of *bois de vache*

* Oregon is supposed by Mr. Bryant to have been named by the Spaniards from the immensely lengthened ears (*orejones*) of the Indians who inhabited it.

† Mr. Brigham Young, one of the most tolerant of a people whose motto is toleration, would not, I believe, offer any but an official objection to a Mormon member marrying a worthy Gentile: but even he—and it could hardly be expected that his zealots—cannot overlook the sin of apostacy. The order of the faith runs thus: "We believe that it is not right to prohibit members of the Church from marrying out of the Church, if it be their determination so to do; but such persons will be considered weak in the faith of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ." The same view of the subject is taken, I need hardly say, by the more rigid kind of Roman Catholic.

and the presence of cattle: there were sheep, horses, mules, and a few cows, the latter so lively that it was impossible to milk them. The ground about had the effect of an oasis in the sterile waste, with grass and shrubs, willows, and flowers, wild geraniums, asters, and various *cruciferæ*. A few trees, chiefly quaking asp, lingered near the station, but dead stumps were far more numerous than live trunks. In any other country their rare and precious shade would have endeared them to the whole settlement: here they were never safe when a log was wanted. The Western man is bred and perhaps born—I believe devoutly in transmitted and hereditary qualities—with an instinctive dislike to timber in general. He fells a tree naturally as a bull-terrier worries a cat, and the admirable woodsman's axe which he has invented only serves to whet his desire to try conclusions with every more venerable patriarch of the forest.* Civilised Americans, of course, lament the destructive mania, and the Latter Day Saints have learned by hard experience the inveterate evils that may arise in such a country from disforesting the ground. We supped comfortably at Green River Station, the stream supplying excellent salmon-trout. The Kichimichi, or buffalo-berry †, makes tolerable jelly, and alongside of the station is a store where Mr. Burton (of Maine) sells "Valley Tan" whiskey.‡

The Green River is the Rio Verde of the Spaniards, who named it from its timbered shores and grassy islets: it is called by the Yuta Indians Piya Ogwe, or the Great Water, by the other tribes Sitskidiñgi, or "Prairie-grouse river." It was nearly at its lowest when we saw it: the breadth was not more than 330 feet. In the flood time it widens to 800 feet, and the depth increases from three to six. During the inundation season a ferry is necessary, and when transit is certain the owner sometimes nets $500 a week, which is not unfrequently squandered in a day. The banks are, in places, thirty feet high, and the

* Many of the blades being made by cowlicks at the State prisons are sold cheap. The extent of the timber regions necessitated this excellent implement, and the saving of labour on the European article is enormous.

† A shrub 10—15 feet high, with a fruit about the size of a pea, red like a wild rose hip, and with a pleasant sub-acid flavour: the Indians eat it with avidity and it is cultivated in the gardens at St. L. City.

‡ Tannery was the first technological process introduced into the Mormon Valley: hence, all home industry has obtained the sobriquet of "Valley Tan."

bottom may average three miles from side to side. It is a swift flowing stream, running as if it had no time to lose, and truly it has a long way to go. Its length, volume, and direction entitle it to the honour of being called the head water of the Great Rio Colorado, or Coloured River, a larger and more important stream than even the Columbia. There is some grand exploration still to be done upon the line of the Upper Colorado, especially the divides which lie between it and its various influents, the Grand River and the Yaquisilla, of which the wild trapper brings home many a marvellous tale of beauty and grandeur. Capt. T. A. Gove, of the 10th Reg. of Infantry, then stationed at Camp Floyd, told me that an expedition had often been projected: a party of twenty-five to thirty men, well armed and provided with inflatable boats, might pass without unwarrantable risk through the sparsely populated Indian country: a true report concerning regions of which there are so many false reports, all wearing more or less the garb of fable—beautiful valleys inclosed in inaccessible rocks, Indian cities and golden treasures—would be equally interesting and important. I cannot recommend the undertaking to the European adventurer: the U. S. have long since organised and perfected what was proposed in England during the Crimean war, and which fell, as other projects then did, to the ground, namely a corps of Topographical Engineers, a body of well-trained and scientific explorers, to whose hands the task may safely be committed.*

* The principal explorers under the U. S. Government of the regions lying W. of the Mississippi, and who have published works upon the subject, are the following:—

1. Messrs. Lewis and Clarke, in 1804–6, first explored the Rocky Mountains to the Columbia River.

2. Major Z. M. Pike, in 1806–7, visited the upper waters of the Mississippi and the western regions of Louisiana.

3. Major, afterwards Colonel S. H. Long of the U. S. Top. Eng., made two expeditions, one in 1819–20 to the Rocky Mountains, another in 1823 to the Sources of the St. Peter and the Lake of the Woods—whereby 4 vols. octavo were filled.

4. Governor Cass and Mr. Schoolcraft in 1820 explored the Sources of the Mississippi and the regions west and south of Lake Superior.

5. Colonel H. Dodge, U.S. army, in 1834 travelled 1600 miles from Fort Leavenworth and visited the regions between the Arkansas and the Platte Rivers.

6. Captain Canfield, U.S. Top. Eng., in 1838 explored the country between Forts Leavenworth and Snelling.

We passed a social evening at Green River Station. It boasted of no less than three Englishwomen, two married, and one, the help, still single. Not having the Mormonite *retenue*, the dames were by no means sorry to talk about Birmingham and Yorkshire, their birth-places. At 9 P.M. arrived one of the road agents, Mr. Cloete, from whom I gathered that the mail wagon which once ran from Gt. S. L. city had lately been taken off the road. The intelligence was by no means consolatory, but a course of meditation upon the saying of the sage, "in for a penny, in for a pound," followed by another visit to my namesake's grog-shop, induced a highly philosophical turn, which enabled me — with the aid of a buffalo — to pass a comfortable night in the store.

22nd August.—To Hams Fork and Millersville.

We were not under weigh before 8 A.M. Macarthy was again to take the lines, and a *Giovinetto* returning after a temporary absence to a young wife, is not usually rejoiced to run his course. Indeed he felt the inconveniences of a semi-bachelor life so severely, that he often threatened in my private ear, *chemin faisant*, to throw up the whole concern.

7. Mr. M'Cox of Missouri surveyed the boundaries of the Indian reservations: his work was in part revised by the late Capt. Hood, U.S. Top. Eng.

8. Mr. Nicollet (French) in 1838–38 mapped the country west of the Upper Mississippi: he was employed in 1838–9 to make a similar scientific reconnoissance between the Mississippi and the Missouri, on which occasion he was accompanied by Mr. Frémont. He died in 1842.

The explorations of Colonel Frémont, Captain Howard Stansbury, Lieutenant Gunnison and Lieutenant Warren have been frequently alluded to in these pages.

9. Lieutenant, afterwards Captain Charles Wilkes, U.S. navy, set out in 1838, and after a long voyage of discovery in S. America, Oceanica and the Antarctic continent, made San Francisco on August 11, 1841. It is remarkable that this officer's party were actually pitched upon the spot (New Helvetia, afterwards called Sacramento City) where Californian gold was dug by the Mormons.

10. Captain R. B. Marcy, U.S. army, "discovered and explored, located and marked out the wagon road from Fort Smith, Arkansas, to Santa Fé, New Mexico." The road explorers, however, are too numerous to specify.

11. Governor I. I. Stevens, of Washington Territory, surveyed in 1853 the northern land proposed for a Pacific railway near the 47°–49° parallels, from St. Paul to Puget Sound. No portion of that line had been visited since the days of Lewis and Clarke, except a small portion towards the Pacific Ocean.

12. Captain Reynolds, U.S. Top. Eng., accompanied by Colonel Bridger as guide and interpreter, is still (1860) exploring the head waters of the Yellow Stone River.

After the preliminary squabble with the mules, we forded the pebbly and gravelly bed of the river — in parts it looks like a lake exhausted by drainage — whose swift surging waters wetted the upper spokes of the wheels and gurgled pleasantly around the bags which contained the mail for Gt. S. L. City.* We then ran down the river valley, which was here about one mile in breadth, in a smooth flooring of clay, sprinkled with water-rolled pebbles, overgrown in parts with willow, wild cherry, buffalo berries, and quaking asp. Macarthy pointed out in the road-side a rough grave, furnished with the normal tomb-stone, two pieces of wagon-board: it was occupied by one Farren, who had fallen by the revolver of the redoubtable Slade. Presently we came to the store of Michael Martin, an honest Creole, who vended the staple of prairie goods, champagne, bot-

* Sticklers for strict democracy in the U.S. maintain, on the principle that the least possible power should be delegated to the Federal Government, that the transmission of correspondence is no more a national concern than the construction of railways and telegraphs or the transit of passengers and goods. The present system was borrowed from the monopolies of Europe, and was introduced into America at a time when individual enterprise was inadequate to the task; in the year one of the Republic it became, under the direction of Benjamin Franklin, a State department, and, though men argue in the abstract, few dare to propose a private mail system, which would undertake the management of some 27,000 scattered offices, and 66,000 poorly paid clerks.

On this line we saw all the evils of the contract system. The requisite regularity and quickness was neglected, letters and papers were often lost, the mail bags were wetted or thrown carelessly upon the ground, and those entrusted to the conductors were perhaps destroyed. Both parties complain — the postmaster that the contractors seek to drive too hard a bargain with the department, and the contractors that they are carrying the mails at a loss. Since the restoration (in 1858) of the postal communication with the U.S. which was interrupted in 1857, the Mormons attempt to secure good service by advertising their grievances, and with tolerable success. Postmaster Merrill — a Gentile — complained energetically of the mail service during the last year, that letters were wetted and jumbled together, two of one month perhaps and one of another; that magazines often arrived four months after date, and that thirty sacks left at Rocky Ridge were lost. The consequence was that during my stay at Gt. S. L. City the contractors did their duty.

When salaries are small and families large post-office robberies must at times be expected. The postal department have long adopted the system of registered letters: upon payment of five cents. instead of three the letter is placed in a separate bag, entered separately in the office books, forwarded with certain precautions and delivered to the address only after a receipt from the recipient. But the department disclaims all responsibility in case of loss or theft, and the only value of the higher stamp is a somewhat superior facility of tracking the document that bears it.

tled cocktail, "eye-opener," and other liquors, dry goods,—linen-drapery,—a few fancy goods, ribbons, and finery; brandied fruits, jams and jellies, potted provisions, buckskins, moccasins, and so forth. Hearing that Lieut. Dana was *en route* for Camp Floyd, he requested him to take charge of $500, to be paid to Mr. Livingston the sutler, and my companion, with the obligingness that marked his every action, agreed to deliver the dollars, *sauve* the judgment of God in the shape of Indians, or "White Indians."* At the store we noticed a paralytic man. This original lived under the delusion that it was impossible to pass the Devil's Gate: his sister had sent for him to St. Louis, and his friends tried to transport him eastward in chairs; the only result was that he ran away before reaching the Gate, and after some time was brought back by Indians.

Resuming our journey, we passed two places where trains of fifty-one wagons were burned in 1857 by the Mormon Rangers: the black stains had bitten into the ground like the blood marks in the palace of Holyrood — a neat foundation for a structure of superstition. Not far from it was a deep hole, in which the plunderers had "cached" the iron-work which they were unable to carry away. Emerging from the river plain we entered upon another *mauvaises terres*, with knobs and elevations of clay and green gault, striped and bandied with lines of stone and pebbles: it was a barren desolate spot, the divide between the Green River and its western influent, the shallow and somewhat sluggish Black's Fork. The name is derived from an old trader: it is called by the Snakes Ongo Ogwe Pa, or "Pine-tree Stream;" it rises in the Bear River Mountains, drains the swamps and lakelets on the way, and bifurcates in its upper bed forming two principal branches, Hams Fork and Muddy Fork.

Near the Pine-tree Stream we met a horse thief driving four bullocks: he was known to Macarthy and did not look over comfortable. We had now fallen into the regular track of Mormon emigration, and saw the wayfarers in their worst plight, near the end of the journey. We passed several families and

* A cant term for white thieves disguised as savages, which has a terrible significancy a little further west.

parties of women and children trudging wearily along: most of the children were in rags or half nude, and all showed gratitude when we threw them provisions. The greater part of the men were armed, but their weapons were far more dangerous to themselves and their fellows than to the enemy. There is not on earth a race of men more ignorant of arms as a rule than the lower grades of English; becoming an emigrant, the mechanic hears that it may be necessary to beat off Indians, so he buys the first old fire-arm he sees and probably does damage with it. Only last night a father crossed Green River to beg for a piece of cloth; it was intended to shroud the body of his child, which during the evening had been accidentally shot, and the station people seemed to think nothing of the accident, as if it were of daily occurrence. I was told of three, more or less severe, that happened in the course of a month. The western Americans, who are mostly accustomed to the use of weapons, look upon these awkwardnesses with a profound contempt. We were now in a region of graves, and their presence in this wild was not a little suggestive.

Presently we entered a valley in which green grass, low and dense willows, and small but shady trees, an unusually rigorous vegetation, refreshed, as though with living water, our eyes parched and dazed by the burning glare. Stock strayed over the pasture, and a few Indian tents rose at the farther side; the view was probably *pas grand* above, but we thought it splendidly beautiful. At mid-day we reached Hams Fork, the north-western influent of Green River, and there we found a station. The pleasant little stream is called by the Indians Turugeapa, the "Blackfoot Water."

The station was kept by an Irishman and a Scotchman — "Dawvid Lewis", it was a disgrace; the squalor and filth were worse almost than the two — Cold Springs and Rock Creek — which we called our horrors, and which had always seemed to be the *ne plus ultra* of western discomfort. The shanty was made of dry-stone piled up against a dwarf cliff to save back-wall, and ignored doors and windows. The flies — unequivocal sign of unclean living! — darkened the table and covered everything put upon it: the furniture, which mainly consisted of the different parts of wagons, was broken, and all in disorder; the walls were impure, the floor filthy. The reason was at once

apparent. Two Irishwomen, sisters*, were married to Mr. Dawvid, and the house was full of "childer," the noisiest and most rampageous of their kind. I could hardly look upon the scene without disgust. The fair ones had the porcine Irish face—I need hardly tell the reader that there are three orders of physiognomy in that branch of the Keltic family, viz. porcine, equine, and simian: the pig-faced, the horse-faced, and the monkey-faced. Describing one I describe both sisters; her nose was "pugged," apparently by gnawing hard potatoes before that member had acquired firmness and consistency; her face was powdered with freckles; her hair, and indeed her general costume looked, to quote Mr. Dow's sermon, as though she had been rammed through a bush-fence into a world of wretchedness and woe. Her dress was unwashed and in tatters, and her feet were bare; she would not even take the trouble to make for herself moccasins. Moreover I could not but notice, that though the house contained two wives it boasted only of one cubile, and had only one cubiculum. Such things would excite no surprise in London or Naples, or even in many of the country parts of Europe, but here, where ground is worthless, where building material is abundant, and where a few hours of daily labour would have made the house look at least respectable, I could not but wonder at it. My first impulse was to attribute the evil, uncharitably enough, to Mormonism, to renew, in fact, the stock-complaint of nineteen centuries' standing—

"Fœcunda culpæ secula nuptias
Primum inquinavere, et genus et domos."

A more extended acquaintance with the regions west of the Wasatch taught me that the dirt and discomfort were the growth of the land. To give the poor devils their due, Dawvid was civil and intelligent, though a noted dawdler, as that rare phenomenon a Scotch idler generally is. Moreover his wives were not deficient in charity; several Indians came to the door and none went away without a "bit" and a "sup." During the process of sketching one of these men, a Snake, distinguished by his vermilion'd hair-parting, eyes blackened, as if by lines of

* A man (Mormon) may even marry a mother and her daughters: usually the relationship with the former is Platonic; the tie, however, is irregular, and has been contracted in ignorance of the prohibited degrees.

coat or cuffins, and delicate Hindu-like hands, my eye fell upon the German-silver handle of a Colt's revolver, which had been stowed away under the blankets, and a revolver in the Lansquite's hands breeds evil suspicions.

Again we advanced. The air was like the breath of a furnace; the sun was a blaze of fire — accounting by-the-bye for the fact that the human eyes in these parts seems invariably to become cherry-red — all the nullahs were dried up and the dust-pillars and mirage were the only moving objects on the plain. Three times we forded Black's Fork, and then debouched once more upon a long flat. The ground was scattered over with pebbles of granite, obsidian, flint, and white, yellow, and smoky quartz, all water-rolled. After twelve miles we passed Church Butte, one of many curious formations lying to the left hand or south of the road. This isolated mass of stiff clay has been cut and ground by wind and rain into folds and hollow channels which from a distance perfectly simulate the pillars, grains, and massive buttresses of a ruinous Gothic cathedral. The foundation is level, except where masses have been swept down by the rain, and not a blade of grass grows upon any part. An architect of genius might profitably study this work of nature: upon that subject, however, I shall presently have more to say. The Butte is highly interesting in a geological point of view; it shows the elevation of the adjoining plains in past ages, before partial deluges and the rains of centuries had effected the great work of degradation.

Again we sighted the pretty valley of Black's Fork, whose cool clear stream flowed merrily over its pebbly bed. The road was now populous with Mormon emigrants; some had good teams, others hand-carts, which looked like a cross between a wheelbarrow and a tax-cart. There was nothing repugnant in the demeanour of the party; they had been civilised by travelling, and the younger women who walked together, and apart from the men, were not too surly to exchange a greeting. The excessive barrenness of the land presently diminished; gentian and other odoriferous herbs appeared, and the grease-wood, which somewhat reminded me of the Sindhian camel-thorn, was of a lighter green than elsewhere, and presented a favourable contrast with the dull glaucous hues of the eternal prairie sage. We passed a dwarf copse so strewed with the bones of cattle as

to excite our astonishment: Macarthy told us that it was the place where the 2nd Dragoons encamped in 1857, and lost a number of their horses by cold and starvation. The wolves and coyotes seemed to have retained a predilection for the spot; we saw troops of them in their favourite "location,"—the crest of some little rise, whence they could keep a sharp look out upon any likely addition to their scanty larder.

After sundry steep inclines we forded another little stream, with a muddy bed, shallow, and about thirty feet wide; it is called Smith's Fork, rises in the "Bridger Range" of the Uinta Hills, and sheds into Black's Fork, the main drain of these parts. On the other side stood Millersville, a large ranch with a whole row of unused and condemned wagons drawn up on one side. We arrived at 5·15 P.M., having taken 3 hrs. 15′ to get over twenty miles. The tenement was made of the component parts of vehicles, the chairs had backs of yoke-bows, and the fences which surrounded the corral were of the same material. The station was kept by one Holmes, an American Mormon and an individual completely the reverse of genial; he dispensed his words as if shelling out coin, and he was never—by us at least—seen to smile. His wife was a pretty young Englishwoman, who had spent the best part of her life between London and Portsmouth; whom alone with me she took the opportunity of asking some few questions about old places, but this most innocent *tête-à-tête* was presently interrupted by the protrusion through the open door of a *tête de mari au naturel*, with a truly *renfrogné* and vinegarish aspect, which made him look like a calamity. After supplying us with a supper which was clean and neatly served, the pair set out for an evening ride, and towards night we heard the scraping of a violin, which reminded me of Tommaso Scarafaggio:

"Detto il sage del villagio
Perchè suona il violino."

The "fiddle" was a favourite instrument with Mr. Joseph Smith as the harp with David; the Mormons, therefore, at the instance of their prophet, are not a little addicted to the use of the bow. We spent a comfortable night at Millersville; after watching the young moon as she sailed through the depths of a firmament unstained by the least fleck of mist, we found some scattered

volumes which rendered us independent of our unsocial Yankee host.

Bird Aspect.—Fort Bridger.

We breakfasted early the next morning and gladly settled accounts with the surly Holmes who had infected—probably by following the example of Mr. Candle in later life—his pretty wife with his own surliness. Shortly after starting—at 8.30 A.M.—we saw a little clump of seven Indian lodges, which our experience soon taught us were the property of a white; the proprietor met us on the road, and was introduced with due ceremony by Mr. Macarthy. "Uncle Jack" (Robinson, really) is a well known name between South Pass and Gt. S. L. City; he has spent thirty-four years in the mountains, and has saved some $70,000, which have been properly invested at St. Louis; as might be expected, he prefers the home of his adoption and his Indian spouse, who has made him the happy father of I know not how many children, to good society and bad air further east.

Our road lay along the valley of Black's Fork, which here flows from the S.-W. to the N.-E.; the bottom produced in plenty luxuriant grass, the dandelion, and the purple aster, thickets of a shrub like hawthorn (*crataegus*), black and white currants, the willow and the cotton wood. When almost in sight of the military post we were addressed by two young officers, one of them an assistant-surgeon, who had been engaged in the healthful and exciting pursuit of a badger, whose markings, by-the-bye, greatly differ from the European; they recognised the uniform and accompanied us to the station.

Fort Bridger lies 194 miles from Gt. S. L. City; according to the drivers, however, the road might be considerably shortened. The position is a fertile basin cut into a number of bits by Black's Fork, which disperses itself into four channels about 1·5 mile above the station, and forms again a single bed about two miles below. The fort is situated upon the westernmost islet. It is, as usual, a mere cantonment without any attempt at fortification, and at the time of my visit was garrisoned by two companies of foot, under the command of Captain F. Gardner of the 10th Regiment. The material of the houses is pine and cedar brought from the Uinta Hills, whose black flanks

supporting snowy cones rise at the distance of about thirty-five miles. They are a sanitarium, except in winter, when under their influence the mercury sinks to −20° F., not much less rigorous than Minnesota, and they are said to shelter grizzly bears and an abundance of smaller game.

The fort was built by Col. James Bridger, now the oldest trapper on the Rocky Mountains, of whom Messrs. Frémont and Stansbury have both spoken in the highest terms. He divides with Christopher Carson, the Kit Carson of the Wind River and the Sierra Nevada explorations, the honour of being the best guide and interpreter in the Indian country: the palm for prudence is generally given to the former; for dash and hard fighting to the latter—although, it is said, the mildest mannered of men. Col. Bridger, when an Indian trader, placed this post upon a kind of neutral ground between the Snakes and Crows (Hapanroke) on the north, the Ogalalas and other Sioux to the east, the Arrapahos and Cheyennes on the south, and the various tribes of Yutas (Utahs) on the south-west. He had some difficulties with the Mormons, and Mrs. Mary Ettie Smith, in a volume concerning which something will be said at a future opportunity, veraciously reports his barbarous murder, some years ago, by the Danite band. He was at the time of my visit absent on an exploratory expedition with Captain Raynolds.

Arrived at Fort Bridger, our first thought was to replenish our whiskey-keg: its emptiness was probably due to "the rapid evaporation in such an elevated region imperfectly protected by timber," but however that may be, I never saw liquor disappear at such a rate before. *Par parenthèse*, our late friends the officials had scarcely been more fortunate: they had watched their whiskey with the eyes of Argus, yet, as the driver facetiously remarked, though the quantity did not diminish too rapidly, the quality lost strength every day. We were conducted by Judge Carter to a building which combined the function of post-office and sutler's store, the judge being also sutler, and performing both parts, I believe, to the satisfaction of every one. After laying in an ample provision of biscuits for Miss May and korn-schnapps for ourselves, we called upon the C. O., who introduced us to his officers, and were led by Captain Cumming to his quarters, where, by means of chat, "solace-tobacco," and toddy,—which in these regions signifies "cold with,"—we soon worked our

way through the short three-quarters of an hour allowed us. The officers complained very naturally of their isolation and unpleasant duty, which principally consists in keeping the roads open for, and the Indians from cutting off, parties of unmanageable emigrants, who look upon the Federal army as their humblest servants. At Camp Scott, near Bridger, the army of the Federal Government halted under canvas during the severe winter of 1857–1858, and the subject is still sore to military ears.

We left Bridger at 10 A.M. Macarthy explained away the disregard for the comfort of the public on the part of the contractors in not having a station at the fort, by declaring that they could obtain no land in a government reservation; moreover that forage there would be scarce and dear, whilst the continual influx of Indians would occasion heavy losses in cattle. At Bridger the road forks: the northern line leads to Soda or Beer Springs*, the southern to Gt. S. L. City. Following the latter, we crossed the rough timber bridges that spanned the network of streams, and entered upon another expanse of degraded ground, covered as usual with water-rolled pebbles of granite and porphyry, flint and greenstone. On the left was a butte with steep bluff sides called the Racecourse; the summit, a perfect mesa, is said to be quite level, and to measure exactly a mile round — the role of the American hippodrome. Like these earth-formations generally, it points out the ancient level of the land before water had washed away the outer film of earth's crust. The climate in this part, as indeed everywhere between the South

* These springs of salty greasy water are the greatest curiosity to be seen on the earth. They lie but a short distance east of the junction of the Fort Hall and the California roads, and are scattered over, perhaps, 40 acres of volcanic ground. They do not, like most springs, run out of the sides of hills, but bubble up directly from a level plain. The water contains a gas, and has quite an acid taste: when exposed to the sun or air, it passes but a short distance before it takes the formation of a crust or solid coat of scarlet hue, so that the continued boiling of any of these fountains will "create a stone to the height of its source (15 or 20 feet) some 15 to 20 feet in diameter at the bottom, and from 2 to 3 feet at the top." After arriving at a uniform height, the water has ceased to run from several of the "geyser" to burst out in some other place. The water sparts from some of these very beautifully. Hore's "Overland Guide to California," p. 38. They are also described by Colonel Fremont: "Expedition to Oregon and North California (1843-44)," p. 136.

Pass and the Great Salt Lake Valley, was an exaggeration of the Italian, with hot days, cool nights, and an incomparable purity and tenuity of atmosphere. We passed on the way a party of emigrants, numbering 350 souls and driving 80 wagons. They were commanded by the patriarch of Mormondom, otherwise Captain John Smith, the eldest son of Hyrum Smith, a brother of Mr. Joseph Smith the prophet, and who, being a child at the time of the murderous affair at Carthage, escaped being cuffed with the crown of martyrdom. He rose to the patriarchate on the 19th Feb. 1855: his predecessor was "old John Smith,"—uncle to Mr. Joseph and successor to Mr. Hyrum Smith,—who died 23rd May, 1854. He was a fair-complexioned man with light hair. His followers accepted gratefully some provisions with which we could afford to part.

After passing the Mormons we came upon a descent which appeared little removed from an angle of 35°, and suggested the propriety of walking down. There was an attempt at a zigzag, and for the benefit of wagons, a rough wall of stones had been run along the sharper corners. At the foot of the hill we remounted, and passing through a wooded bottom, reached at 12·15 P.M.—after fording the Big Muddy—Little Muddy Creek, upon whose banks stood the station. Both these streams are branches of the Hams Fork of Green River; and, according to the well-known "rule of contrairy," their waters are clear as crystal, showing every pebble in their beds.

Little Muddy was kept by a Canadian, a chatty lively good-humoured fellow blessed with a sour English wife. Possibly the heat—the thermometer showed 95° F. in the shade—had turned her temper; fortunately it had not similarly affected the milk and cream, which were both unusually good. Jean-Baptiste, having mistaken me for a *Français de France*, a being which he seemed to regard as little lower than the angels,—I was at no pains to disabuse him,—was profuse in his questionings concerning H. I. M. the Emperor, carefully confounding him with the first of the family, and so pleased was he with my responses, that for the first time on that route I found a man ready to spurn an *animal féroce* qu'on *appelle la pièce de cinq francs*: in other words, the "almighty dollar."

We bade adieu to Little Muddy at noon, and entered a new country, a broken land of spurs and hollows, in parts absolutely bare, in others clothed with a thick vegetation. Curiously shaped hills, and bluffs of red earth capped with a clay which much resembled snow, bore a thick growth of tall firs and pines whose sombre uniform contrasted strangely with the brilliant lock-like excessive green foliage, and the tall note-paper-coloured trunks of the ravine-loving quaking-asp (*Populus tremuloides*). The mixture of colours was bizarre in the extreme, and the lay of the land, an uncouth system of converging, diverging, and parallel ridges, with deep divisions — in one of these ravines which is unusually broad and grassy, rise the so-called Copperas Springs, was hardly less striking. We ran winding along a crest of rising ground, passing rapidly, by way of further comparison, two wretched Mormons, man and woman, who were driving, at a snail's pace, a permanently lamed ox, and after a long ascent stood upon the summit of Quaking Asp Hill.

Quaking Asp Hill, according to the drivers, is 1000 feet higher than the South Pass, which would exalt its station to 8400 feet; other authorities, however, reduce it to 7900. The descent was long and rapid, so rapid indeed, that oftentimes when the block of wood which formed our break dropped a bit of the old shoe-sole nailed upon it to prevent ignition, I felt, as man may be excused for feeling, that catching of the breath that precedes the first five-barred gate after a night of "heavy wet." The sides of the road were rich in vegetation, stunted oak, black-jack, and box-elder of the *stateliest* stature; above rose the wild cherry, and the service tree formed the bushes below. The descent, besides being decidedly sharp, was exceedingly devious, and our frequent "shaves,"— a train of Mormon wagons was crawling down at the same time,— made us feel somewhat thankful that we reached the bottom without broken bones.

The train was commanded by a Captain Murphy, who, as one might expect from the name, had hoisted the Stars and Stripes — it was the only instance of such loyalty seen by us on the plains. The emigrants had left Council Bluffs on the 20th June, an unusually late date, and though weather-beaten, all looked well. Inspirited by our success in surmounting the various difficulties of the way, we "poked fun" at an old Yorkshireman who was

assumed, by way of mirth, to be a Caleba in search of polygamy at an epoch of life when perhaps the blessing might come too late; and at an exceedingly plain middle-aged and full-blooded negro-woman, who was fairly warned—the children of Ham are not admitted to the communion of the Saints, and consequently to the forgiveness of sins and a free seat in Paradise—that she was "carrying coals to Newcastle."

As the rays of the sun began to slant we made Sulphur Creek; it lies at the foot of a mountain called Rim Baso, because it is the Eastern wall of the Great Inland Basin; westward of this point the waters can no longer reach the Atlantic or the Pacific; each is destined to feed the lakes,

"Nec Oceani pervenit ad undas."

Beyond Sulphur Creek, too, the face of the country changes; the sedimentary deposits are no longer seen, the land is broken and confused, upheaved into huge masses of rock and mountains broken by deep kanyons, ravines, and water-gaps, and drained by innumerable streamlets. The exceedingly irregular lay of the land makes the road devious, and the want of level ground, which is found only in dwarf parks and prairillons, would greatly add to the expense of a railway. We crossed the Creek, a fetid stagnant water, about ten feet wide, lying in a bed of black infected mud; during the spring rains, when flowing, it is said to be wholesome enough. On the southern side of the valley there are some fine fountains, and on the eastern are others strongly redolent of sulphur; broad seams of coal crop out from the northern bluffs, and about a mile distant in the opposite direction are the Tar Springs, useful for greasing wagon wheels and curing galled-backed horses.

Following the valley, which was rough and broken as it well could be, we crossed a small divide, and came upon the plain of the Bear River, a translation of the Indian Kuiyápá. It is one of the most important tributaries of the Gt. S. Lake. Heading in the Uinta Range to the east of Kamas Prairie*, it flows with a tortuous course to the north-west, till reaching Beer

* So called from the *Camassia esculenta*, the Pomme des Prairies or Pomme Blanche of the Canadians, and the prairie turnip and breadroot of the Western hunters. The Kamas Prairie is a pretty little bit of clear and level ground near the head of the Timpanagos River.

Springs it turns sharply round with a horse-shoe bend, and sets to the south-west, falling into the general reservoir at a bight called Bear River Bay. According to the mountaineers, it springs not far from the sources of the Weber River and of the Timpanogos water. Coal was found some years ago upon the banks of the Bear River, and more lately near Weber River and Silver Creek. It is the easternmost point to which Mormonism can extend *main forte*: for fugitives from justice, "over Bear River" is like "over Jordan." The aspect of the valley, here half a mile broad, was prepossessing. Beyond a steep terrace, or step which compelled us all to dismount, the clear stream, about 400 feet in width, flowed through narrow lines of willows, cotton-wood, and large trees, which waved in the cool refreshing western wind; grass carpeted the middle levels, and above all rose red cliffs and buttresses of frowning rock.

We reached the station at 5·30 P.M. The valley was dotted with the tents of the Mormon emigrants, and we received sundry visits of curiosity: the visitors, mostly of the sex conventionally termed the fair, contented themselves with entering, sitting down, looking hard, tittering to one another, and departing with Parthian glances that had little power to hurt. From the men we heard tidings of "a massacree" of emigrants in the north, and a defeat of Indians in the west. Mr. Myers, the Station-master, was an English Saint, who had lately taken to himself a fifth wife, after severally divorcing the others; his last choice was not without comeliness, but her reserve was extreme; she could hardly be coaxed out of a "Yes, sir." I found Mr. Myers diligently perusing a translation of "Volney's Ruins of Empire;" we had a chat about the Old and the New country, which led us to sleeping time. I had here a curious instance of the effect of the association of words, in hearing a bystander apply to the Founder of Christianity the "Mr." which is the '*Pyrios*' of the West, and is always prefixed to "Joseph Smith:" he stated that the mission of the latter was "far ahead of" that of the former Prophet—which, by the bye, is not the strict Mormon doctrine. My companion and his family preferred as usual the interior of the mail wagon, and it was well that they did so; after a couple of hours, entered Mr. Macarthy, very drunk and "fighting-mad." He called for supper, but supper was past and gone, so he supped upon "fids" of raw meat. Excited by this

lively food he began a series of caprioles which ended, as might be expected, in a rough-and-tumble with the other three youths who occupied the hard floor of the ranch. To Mr. Macarthy's language on that occasion *horresco referens;* every word was apparently English, but so perverted, mis-used, and mangled, that the home reader would hardly have distinguished it from high Dutch: *e. g.* "I'm intire mad as a meat axe; now du don't, I tell ye; say, *you*, shut up in a winkin, or I'll be chawed up if I don't run over *you;* 'can't come that 'ere tarnal carryin' on over *me*," and—*O si sic omnia!* As no weapons, revolvers, or bowie knives were to the fore, I thought the best thing was to lie still and let the storm blow over, which it did in a quarter of an hour. Then, all serene, Mr. Macarthy called for a pipe, excused himself ceremoniously to himself for taking the liberty with the "Cap's." meerschaum, solely upon the grounds that it was the only article of the kind to be found at so late an hour, and presently fell into a deep slumber upon a sleeping contrivance composed of a table for the upper, and a chair for the lower portion of his person. I envied him the favours of Morpheus: the fire soon died out, the cold wind whistled through the crannies, and the floor was knotty and uneven.

Echo Canyon, August 24th.

At 8·15 A.M. we were once more *en voyage*. Mr. Macarthy was very red-eyed as he sat on the stool of penitence: what seemed to vex him most was having lost certain newspapers directed to a friend and committed to his private trust, a mode of insuring their safe arrival concerning which he had the day before expressed the highest opinion. After fording Bear River—this part of the land was quite a graveyard—we passed over rough ground and, descending into a bush, were shown on a ridge to the right a huge Stonehenge, a crown of broken and somewhat lanceolate perpendicular conglomerates or cemented pudding stones called not inappropriately Needle Rocks. At Egan's Creek, a tributary of the Yellow Creek, the wild geraniums and the willows flourished despite the six feet of snow which sometimes lies in these bottoms. We then crossed Yellow Creek, a water trending north-eastwards, and feeding, like those hitherto forded, Bear River: the bottom, a fine broad meadow, was a favourite camping ground, as the many fire places

proved. Beyond the stream we ascended Yellow Creek Hill, a steep chain which divides the versant of the Bear River eastwards from that of Weber River to the west. The ascent might be avoided, but the view from the summit is a fine panorama. The horizon behind us is girt by a mob of hills, Bridger's Range, silver veined upon a dark blue ground: nearer, mountains and rocks, cones and hogsbacks are scattered about in admirable confusion, divided by shaggy rollers and dark ravines, each with its own little water-course. In front the eye runs down the long bright red line of Echo Kanyon, and rests with astonishment upon its novel and curious features, the sublimity of its broken and jagged peaks, divided by dark abysses, and based upon huge piles of disjointed and scattered rock. On the right, about half a mile north of the road, and near the head of the kanyon is a place that adds human interest to the scene. Cache Cave is a dark, deep, natural tunnel in the rock, which has sheltered many a hunter and trader from wild weather and wilder men: the wall is probably of marl and earthy limestone, whose whiteness is set off by the ochreish brick red of the ravine below.

Echo Kanyon has a total length of twenty-five to thirty miles, and runs in a south-easterly direction to the Weber River. Near the head it is from half to three quarters of a mile wide, but its irregularity is such that no average breadth can be assigned to it. The height of the buttresses on the right or northern side varies from 300 to 500 feet; they are denuded and water-washed by the storms that break upon them under the influence of southerly gales; their strata here are almost horizontal; there are inclined at an angle of 45°, and the strike is north-east and south-west. The opposite or southern flank, being protected from the dashing and weathering of rain and wind, is a mass of rounded soil-clad hills, or sloping slabs of rock, earth-veiled, and growing tussocks of grass. Between them runs the clear swift bubbling stream in a pebbly bed now hugging one then the other side of the chasm: it has cut its way deeply below the surface; the banks or benches of stiff alluvium are not unfrequently twenty feet high; in places it is partially dammed by the hand of nature, and every where the watery margin is of the brightest green and overgrown with grass, nettles, willow thickets, in which the hop is conspicuous,

quaking asp, and other taller trees. Echo Kanyon has but one fault: its sublimity will make all similar features look tame.

We entered the kanyon in somewhat a serious frame of mind; our team was headed by a pair of exceedingly restive mules; we had remonstrated against the experimental driving being done upon our vile bodies, but the reply was that the animals must be harnessed at some time. We could not, however, but remark the wonderful picturesqueness of a scene — of a nature which in parts seemed lately to have undergone some grand catastrophe. The gigantic red wall on our right was divided into distinct blocks or quarries by a multitude of minor lateral kanyons, which, after rains, add their tribute to the main artery, and each block was subdivided by the crumbling of the softer and the resistance of the harder material—a clay conglomerate. The colour varied in places from white and green, to yellow, but for the most part it was a dull ochreish red, that brightened up almost to a straw tint where the sun beams fell slantingly upon it from the strip of blue above. All served to set off the curious architecture of the smaller masses. A whole Petra was there, a system of projecting prisms, pyramids, and pagoda towers, a variety of form that enabled you to see whatever your peculiar vanity might be; columns, porticoes, façades, and pedestals. Twin lines of bluffs, a succession of buttresses all fretted and honey-combed, a double row of steeples slipped from perpendicularity, frowned at each other across the gorge. And the wondrous variety was yet more varied by the kaleidoscopic transformation caused by change of position: at every different point the same object bore a different aspect.

And now whilst we are dashing over the bouldered crossings, whilst our naughty mules, as they tear down the short steep pitches, swing the wheels of the mail-wagon within half a foot of the high bank's crumbling edge: whilst poor Mrs. Dana closes her eyes and clasps her husband's hand, and Miss May, happily unconscious of all peril, amuses herself by perseveringly perching upon the last toe that I should have been inclined to offer, the monotony of the risk may be relieved by diverting our thoughts to the lessons taught by the scenery around.

An American artist might extract from such scenery as Church Butte and Echo Kanyon, a system of architecture as original and national as Egypt ever borrowed from her sandstone ledges, or the North of Europe from the solemn depths of her fir-forests. But Art does not at present exist in America; as amongst their forefathers further east, of artists they have plenty, of Art nothing. We can explain the presence of the phenomenon in England, where that grotesqueness and bizarrerie of taste which is observable in the uneducated, and which despite collections and art-missions hardly disappears in those who have studied the purest models, is the natural growth of man's senses and perceptions exposed for generation after generation to the unseen, unceasing, ever-active effect of homely objects, the desolate aspects of the long and dreary winters, and the humidity which shrouds the visible world with its dull grey colouring. Should any one question the fact that Art is not yet English, let him but place himself in the centre of the noblest site in Europe, Trafalgar Square, and own that no city in the civilised world ever presented such a perfect sample of barbarous incongruity, from mast-headed Nelson with his coil behind him, the work of the Satirist's "one man and small boy," to the two contemptible squirting things that throw water upon the pavement at his feet. Mildly has the "Thunderer" described it as the "chosen home of exquisite dulness and stilted mediocrity." The cause above assigned to the fact is at least reasonable. Every traveller who, after passing through the fruitful but unpicturesque orchard grounds lying between La Manche and Paris and the dull flats with their melancholy poplar lines between Paris and Lyons, arrives at Avignon, and observes the picturesqueness which every object, natural or artificial begins to assume, the grace and beauty which appear even in the humblest details of scenery, must instinctively feel that he is entering the land of Art. Not of that Art which depends for development upon the efforts of a few exceptional individuals, but the living Art which the constant contemplation of a glorious nature,

"That holy Virgin of the sage's creed,"

makes part of a people's organisation and development. Art, heavenly maid, is not easily seduced to wander far from her place of birth. Born and cradled upon the all-lovely shores of

that inland sea, so choicely formed by Nature's hand to become the source and centre of mankind's civilisation, she loses health and spirits in the frigid snowy north, whilst in the tropical regions — Nubia and India — her mind is vitiated by the rank and luxuriant scenery around her. A "pretty bit of home scenery," with dumpy church tower — battlemented as the house of worship ought *not* to be — on the humble hill, red brick cottages, with straight tiled roofs and parallelogramic casements, and dwelling-houses, all stiff-ruled lines and hard sharp angles, the straight road and the trimmed hedgerow: such scenery, I assert never can make an artistic people; it can only lead, in fact, to a nation's last phase of artistic bathos — a Trafalgar Square.

The Anglo-Americans have other excuses, but not this. Their broad lands teem with varied beauties of the highest order, which it would be tedious to enumerate. They have used, for instance, the Indian corn for the acanthus in their details of architecture — why cannot they try a higher flight? Man may not, we readily grant, expect to be a great poet because Niagara is a great cataract: yet the presence of such objects must quicken the imagination of the civilised as of the savage race that preceded him. It is true that in America the class that can devote itself exclusively to the cultivation and the study of refinement and art is still, comparatively speaking, small. That the care of politics, the culture of science, mechanical and theoretic, and the pursuit of cash have at present more hold upon the national mind than what it is disposed to consider the effeminating influences of the humanising studies. That, moreover, the efforts of youthful genius in the body corporate, as in the individual, are invariably imitative, leading through the progressive degrees of reflection and reproduction to originality. But valid as they are, these reasons will not long justify such freaks as the American-Grecian capitol at Richmond, a barn with the tritest of all exordiums, a portico which is original in one point only, viz. that it wants the portico's only justification — steps: or the various domes originally borrowed from that bulb which has been demolished at Washington, scattered over the country, and suggesting the idea that the shape has been borrowed from the butt end of a sliced cucumber. Better far the warehouses of Boston, with their monoliths and frontages of rough Quincy

granite; they, at least, are unpretending, and of native growth, no bad test of the native mind.

After a total of eighteen miles we passed Echo Station, a half-built ranch, flanked by well piled haystacks for future mules. The ravine narrowed as we advanced to a mere gorge, and the meanderings of the stream contracted the road and raised the banks to a more perilous height. A thicker vegetation occupied the bottom, wild roses and dwarfish oaks contending for the mastery of the ground. About four miles from the station we were shown a defile where the Latter Day Saints, in 1857, headed by General D. H. Wells, now the third member of the Presidency, had prepared modern Caudine Forks for the attacking army of the United States. Little breastworks of loose stones, very like the "sangahs" of the Affghan Ghauts, had been thrown up where the precipices commanded the road, and there were four or five remains of dams intended to raise the water above the height of the soldiers' ammunition pouches. The situation did not appear to me well chosen. Although the fortified side of the bluff could not be crowned on account of deep chasms that separated the various blocks, the southern acclivities might have been occupied by sharp-shooters so effectually that the fire from the breastworks would soon have been silenced: moreover, the defenders would have risked being taken in rear by a party creeping through the chapparal* in the sole of the kanyon. Mr. Macarthy related a characteristic trait concerning two warriors of the Nauvoo Legion. Unaccustomed to perpendicular fire, one proposed that his comrade should stand upon the crest of the precipice and see if the bullet reached him or not; the comrade thinking the request highly reasonable, complied with it, and received a yäger-ball through his forehead.

Traces of beaver were frequent in the torrent-bed; the "broad-tailed animal" is now molested by the Indians rather than by the whites. On this stage magpies and ravens were unusually numerous; foxes slunk away from us, and on one of the

* The Spanish "chapparal" means a low oak copse. The word has been naturalised in Texas and New Mexico, and applied to the dense and bushy undergrowth, chiefly of briars and thorns, disposed in patches from a thicket of a hundred yards to the whole flank of a mountain range (especially in the Mexican Tierra Caliente), and so closely entwined that nothing larger than a wolf can force a way through it.

highest bluffs a coyote stood as on a pedestal; as near Baffin Sea, these craggy peaks are their favourite howling-places during the severe snowy winters. We longed for a thunder-storm: flashing lightnings, roaring thunders, stormy winds, and dashing rains — in fact a tornado — would be the fittest setting for such a picture so wild, so sublime as Echo Kanyon. But we longed in vain. The day was persistently beautiful, calm and mild, as a May forenoon in the Grecian Archipelago. We were also disappointed in our natural desire to hold some converse with the nymph who had lent her name to the ravine — the reverberation is said to be remarkably fine — but the temper of our animals would not have endured it, and the place was not one that admitted experiments. Rain had lately fallen, as we saw from the mud-puddles in the upper course of the Kanyon, and the road was in places pitted with drops which were not frequent enough to allay the choking dust. A fresh yet familiar feature now appeared. The dews, whose existence we had forgotten on the prairies, were cold and clammy in the early mornings; the moist air, condensed by contact with the cooler substances on the surface of the ground, stood in large drops upon the leaves and grasses. As we advanced the bed of the ravine began to open out, the angle of descent became more obtuse; a stretch of level ground appeared in front where for some hours the windings of the kanyon had walled us in, and at 2·10 P.M. we debouched upon the Weber River Station. It lies at the very mouth of the ravine almost under the shadow of lofty red bluffs, called "The Obelisks," and the green and sunny landscape contrasting with the sterile grandeur behind, is exceedingly pleasing.

After the emotions of the drive, a little rest was by no means unpleasant. The station was tolerably comfortable, and the welcome addition of potatoes and onions to our usual fare was not to be despised. The tenants of the ranch were Mormons, civil and communicative. They complained sadly of the furious rain-storms, which the funnel-like gorge brings down upon them, and the cold draughts from five feet deep of snow which pour down upon the milder valley.

At 4·30 we resumed our journey along the plain of the Weber or Webber River. It is second in importance only to the Bear River: it heads near the latter, and flowing in a

devious course towards the north-west falls into the Great Salt Lake, a few miles south of its sister stream, and nearly opposite Frémont's Island. The valley resembles that described in yesterday's diary; it is, however, narrower, and the steep borders, which if water-washed would be red like the kanyon rocks, are well clothed with grass and herbages. In some places the land is defended by snake-fences in zigzags *, to oppose the depredations of emigrants' cattle upon the wheat, barley, and stunted straggling corn within. After fording the river and crossing the bottom, we ascended steep banks, passed over a spring of salt water five miles from the station, and halted for a few minutes to exchange news with the mail-wagon that had left Gt. S. L. City this (Friday) morning. Followed a rough and rugged tract of land apparently very trying to the way-worn cattle; many deaths had taken place at this point, and the dead lay well preserved as the monks of St. Bernard. After a succession of chuck-holes, rises, and falls, we fell into the Valley of Bauchmin's Creek. It is a picturesque hollow; at the head is a gateway of red clay, through which the stream passes; the sides also are red, and as the glow and glory of the departing day lingered upon the heights, even artemisia put on airs of bloom and beauty, blushing in contrast with the sharp metallic green of the quaking-asp and the duller verdure of the alder (*Alnus viridis*). As the evening closed in, the bottom land became more broken, the path less certain and the vegetation thicker: the light of the moon, already diminished by the narrowness of the valley, seemed almost to be absorbed by the dark masses of copse and bush. We were not sorry to make at 7·45 P.M., the "Carson House Station" at Bauchmin's Fork — the travelling had been fast, seven miles an hour — where we found a log hut, a roaring fire, two civil Mormon lads, and some few "fixins" in the way of food. We sat for a time talking about matters of local im-

* This is the simplest of all fences, and therefore much used in the West. Two trunks are felled, and either used whole or split into rails; they are then disposed in a long, serrated line, each resting upon another at both ends, like the fingers of a man's right hand extended and inserted between the corresponding fingers of the left. The zigzag is not a picturesque object: in absolute beauty it is inferior even to our English trimmed hedgerow; but it is very economical, it saves space, it is easily and readily made, it can always serve for fuel, and, therefore, is to be respected, despite the homeliness of its appearance.

portance, the number of emigrants, and horsethieves, the prospects of the road and the lay of the land. Banchmin's Fork, we learned, is a branch of East Kanyon Creek, itself a tributary of the Weber River *; from the station an Indian trail leads over the mountains to Provo City. I slept comfortably enough upon the boards of an inner room, not, however, without some apprehensions of accidentally offending a certain skunk (*Mephitis mephitica*), which was in the habit of making regular nocturnal visits. I heard its puppy-like bark during the night, but escaped what otherwise might have happened.

And why, naturally asks the reader, did you not shut the door? Because there was none.

The End — Hurrah! August 15th.

To-day we are to pass over the Wásatch †, the last and highest chain of the mountain mass between Fort Bridger and the Gt. S. L. Valley, and — by the aid of St. James of Compostella, who is, I believe, bound over to be the patron of pilgrims in general, — to arrive at our destination, New Hierosolyma, or Jerusalem, alias Zion on the tops of the mountains, the future city of Christ, where the Lord is to reign over the Saints, as a temporal king, in power and great glory.

So we girt our loins and started after a cup of tea and a biscuit at 7 A.M., under the good guidance of Mr. Macarthy, who after a whiskeyless night looked forward not less than ourselves to the run in. Following the course of Banchmin's Creek, we completed the total number of fordings to thirteen in eight miles. The next two miles were along the bed of a watercourse, a complete fiumara, through a bush full of tribulus, which accompanied us to the end of the journey. Presently the ground became rougher and steeper: we alighted and set our breasts manfully against "Big Mountain," which lies about four miles from the station. The road bordered upon the wide arroyo, a tumbled bed of block and boulder, with water in places oozing and trickling from the clay walls,

* In Captain Stansbury's map, Banchmin's Fork is a direct influent, and one of the largest too, of the Weber River.

† The word is generally written *Wasatch* or *Wahsatch*. In the latter the *h* is, as usual, *de trop*; and in both the *t*, though necessary in French, is totally uncalled for in English.

from the sandy soil, and from beneath the heaps of rock,—living fountains these, most grateful to the parched traveller. The synclinal slopes of the chasm were grandly wooded with hemlocks, firs, balsam-pines, and other varieties of abies; some tapering up to the height of ninety feet, with an admirable regularity of form, colour, and foliage. The varied hues of the quaking asp were there; the beech, the dwarf oak, and a thicket of elders and wild roses; whilst over all the warm autumnal tints already mingled with the bright green of summer. The ascent became more and more rugged: this steep pitch, at the end of a thousand miles of hard work and semi-starvation, causes the death of many a wretched animal, and we remarked that the bodies are not inodorous among the mountains as on the prairies. In the most fatiguing part, we saw a handcart halted, whilst the owners, a man, a woman, and a boy, took breath. We exchanged a few consolatory words with them and hurried on. The only animal seen on the line, except the grasshopper, whose creaking wings gave forth an ominous note, was the pretty little chirping squirrel. The trees, however, in places bore the marks of huge talons, which were easily distinguished as the sign of bears. The grizzly does not climb except when young: this was probably the common brown variety. At half-way the gorge opened out, assuming more the appearance of a valley; and in places, for a few rods, were dwarf stretches of almost level ground. Towards the Pass-summit the rise is sharpest: here we again descended from the wagon, which the four mules had work enough to draw, and the total length of its eastern rise was five miles. Big Mountain lies eighteen miles from the city. The top is a narrow crest, suddenly forming an acute based upon an obtuse angle.

From that eyrie, 8000 feet above sea level, the weary pilgrim first sights his shrine, the object of his long wanderings, hardships, and perils, the Happy Valley of the Great Salt Lake. The western horizon, when visible, is bounded by a broken wall of light blue mountain, the Oquirrh, whose northernmost bluff buttresses the southern end of the lake, and whose eastern flank sinks in steps and terraces into a river basin, yellow with the sunlit golden corn, and somewhat pink with its carpeting of heath-like moss. In the foreground a semicircular

sweep of hill top, and an inverted arch of rocky wall, shuts out all but a few spans of the Valley. These heights are rough with a shaggy forest, in some places black-green, in others of brownish-red, in others of the lightest ash colour, based upon a ruddy soil; whilst a few silvery veins of snow still streak the bare grey rocky flanks of the loftiest peak.

After a few minutes' delay to stand and gaze, we resumed the footpath way, whilst the mail-wagon, with wheels rough-locked, descended what appeared to be an impracticable slope. The summit of the pass was well nigh cleared of timber; the woodman's song informed us that the evil work was still going on, and that we are nearly approaching a large settlement. Thus stripped of their protecting fringes, the mountains are exposed to the heat of summer, that sends forth countless swarms of devastating crickets, grasshoppers, and blue-worms; and to the wintry cold, that piles up, four to six feet high,—the mountain men speak of thirty and forty,—the snows drifted by the unbroken force of the winds. The pass from November to February can be traversed by nothing heavier than "sleighs," and during the snow storms even these are stopped. Falling into the gorge of Big Kanyon Creek, after a total of twelve hard miles from Bauchmin's Fork, we reached at 11·30 the station that bears the name of the water near which it is built. We were received by the wife of the proprietor, who was absent at the time of our arrival; and half stifled by the thick dust and the sun which had raised the glass to 103°, we enjoyed copious draughts—*tant soit peu* qualified—of the cool but rather hard water, that trickled down the hill into a trough by the house side. Presently the station master, springing from his light "sulky," entered, and was formally introduced to us by Mr. Macarthy as Mr. Ephe Hanks. I had often heard of this individual, as one of the old triumvirate of Mormon desperadoes, the other two being Orrin Porter Rockwell and Bill Hickman—as the leader of the dreaded Danite band, and in short as a model ruffian. The ear often teaches the eye to form its pictures: I had eliminated a kind of mental sketch of those assassin faces which one sees on the Apennines and Pyrenees, and was struck by what met the eye of sense. The "vile villain," as he has been called by anti-Mormon writers, who verily do not try to *ménager* their epithets, was a middle-sized, light-haired, good

looking man, with regular features, a pleasant and humorous countenance, and the manly manner of his early sailor life, touched with the rough cordiality of the mountaineer. "Frank as a bear-hunter," is a proverb in these lands. He had, like the rest of the triumvirate, and like most men (Anglo-Americans) of desperate courage and fiery excitable temper, a clear pale blue eye, verging upon grey, and looking as if it wanted nothing better than to light up, together with a cool and quiet glance that seemed to shun neither friend nor foe.

The terrible Ephe began with a facetious allusion to all our new dangers under the roof of a Danite, to which in similar strain, I made answer that Danite or Damnite was pretty much the same to me. After dining, we proceeded to make trial of the air-cane, to which he took, as I could see by the way he handled it, and by the nod with which he acknowledged the observation, "almighty convenient sometimes not to make a noise, Mister," a great fancy. He asked me whether I had a mind to "have a slap" at his namesake*, an offer which was gratefully accepted, under the promise that "cuffy" should previously be marked down so as to save a long ride and a troublesome trudge over the mountains. His battery of "killb'ars" was heavy and in good order, so that on this score there would have been no trouble, and the only tool he bade me bring was a Colt's revolver, dragoon size. He told me that he was likely to be in England next year, when he had set the "ole woman" to her work. I suppose my look was somewhat puzzled, for Mrs. Dana graciously explained that every western wife, even when still, as Mrs. Ephe was, in her teens, commands that venerable title, venerable, though somehow not generally coveted.

From Big Kanyon Creek Station to the city, the driver "reckoned," was a distance of seventeen miles. We waited till the bright and glaring day had somewhat burned itself out; at noon heavy clouds came up from the south and south-west, casting a grateful shade and shedding a few drops of rain. After taking friendly leave of the "Danite" chief,—whose cordiality of manner had prepossessed me strongly in his favour—we entered the mail-wagon and prepared ourselves for the finale over the westernmost ridge of the stern Wasatch.

* "Ole Ephraim" is the mountain-man's soubriquet for the grizzly bear.

After two miles of comparatively level ground we came to the foot of "Little Mountain," and descended from the wagon to relieve the poor devils of mules. The near slope was much shorter, but also it was steeper far than "Big Mountain." The counterslope was easier, though by no means pleasant to contemplate with the chance of an accident to the break, which in all inconvenient places would part with the protecting shoe-sole. Beyond the eastern foot, which was ten miles distant from our destination, we were miserably bumped and jolted over the broken ground at the head of Big Kanyon. Down this pass, whose name is a translation of the Yuta name Obitkokichi, a turbulent little mountain-stream tumbles over its boulder-bed, girt with the usual sunflower, vines of wild hops, red and white willows, cotton-wood, quaking-asp, and various bushes near its cool watery margin, and upon the easier slopes of the ravine, with the shin or dwarf oak (*Quercus nana*), mountain mahogany, balsam and other firs, pines, and cedars. The road was a narrow shelf along the broader of the two spaces between the stream and the rock, and frequent fordings were rendered necessary by the capricious wanderings of the torrent. I could not but think how horrid must have been its appearance when the stout-hearted Mormon pioneers first ventured to thread the defile, breaking their way through the dense bush, creeping and clinging like flies to the sides of the hills. Even now accidents often occur; here, as in Echo Kanyon, we saw in more than one place, unmistakable signs of upsets in the shape of broken spokes and yoke bows. At one of the most ticklish turns Macarthy kindly pointed out a little precipice where four of the mail passengers fell and broke their necks, a pure invention on his part, I believe, which fortunately, at that moment, did not reach Mrs. Dana's ears. He also entertained us with many a tale, of which the hero was the redoubtable Hanks; how he had slain a buffalo-bull single-handed with a bowie knife, and how on one occasion, when refused hospitality by his Lamanite brethren, he had sworn to have the whole village to himself, and had redeemed his vow by reappearing *in puris naturalibus*, with gestures so maniacal that the sulky Indians all fled, declaring him to be "bad medicine." The stories had at least local colouring.

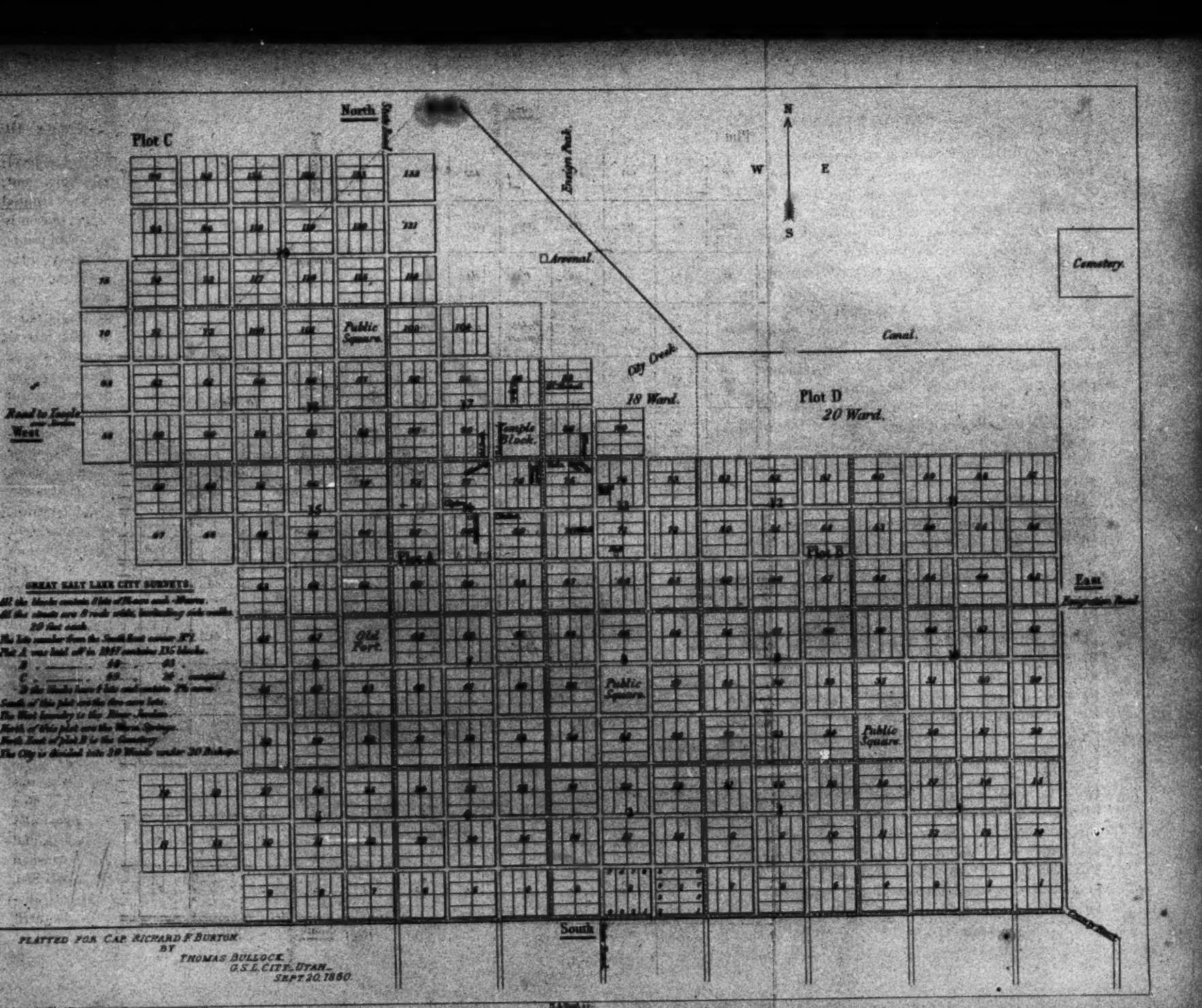
In due time, emerging from the gates and portals and deep

serrations of the upper course, we descended into a lower level: here Big, now called Emigration, Kanyon gradually bulges out, and its steep slopes of grass and fern, shrubbery and stunted brush, fall imperceptibly into the plain. The valley presently lay full before our sight. At this place the pilgrim emigrants, like the Hajis of Mecca and Jerusalem, give vent to the emotions long pent up within their bosoms by sobs and tears, laughter and congratulations, psalms and hysterics. It is indeed no wonder that the children dance, that strong men cheer and shout, and that nervous women, broken with fatigue and hope deferred, scream and faint; that the ignorant should fondly believe that the "Spirit of God pervades the very atmosphere," and that Zion on the tops of the mountains is nearer heaven than other parts of earth. In good sooth, though uninfluenced by religious fervour—beyond the natural satisfaction of seeing a bran new Holy City—even I could not, after nineteen days in a mail-wagon, gaze upon the scene without emotion.

The Sublime and the Beautiful were in present contrast. Switzerland and Italy lay side by side. The magnificent scenery of the past mountains and ravines still floated before the retina, as emerging from the gloomy depths of the Golden Pass—the mouth of Emigration Kanyon is more poetically so called—we came suddenly in view of the Holy Valley of the West.

The hour was about 6 P.M., the atmosphere was touched with a dreamy haze,—as it generally is in the vicinity of the Lake—a little bank of rose-coloured clouds, edged with flames of purple and gold, floated in the upper air, whilst the mellow radiance of an American autumn, that bright interlude between the extremes of heat and cold, diffused its mild soft lustre over the face of earth.

The sun, whose slanting rays shone full in our eyes, was setting in a flood of heavenly light behind the bold jagged outline of "Antelope Island," which, though distant twenty miles to the north-west, hardly appeared to be ten. At its feet, and then bounding the far horizon, lay, like a band of burnished silver, the Great Salt Lake, that still innocent Dead Sea. South-westwards, also, and equally deceptive as regards distance, rose the boundary of the valley plain, the Oquirrh


North
Plot C
Ensign Peak
N
W
E
S
Arsenal.
Cemetery.
Canal.
Public Square.
Old Creek.
19 Ward.
Plot D
20 Ward.
Road to Temple
West
Temple Block.
Plot A
Plot B
East
Old Fort.
Public Square.
Public Square.
South
GREAT SALT LAKE CITY SURVEYS.
All the blocks contain 8 lots of 4 rods each - 10 acres.
All the streets are 8 rods wide, including side walks.
20 feet each.
The lots number from the South East corner N°1.
Plot A was laid off in 1847 contains 135 blocks.
B ——— 19 ——— 83 ———
C ——— 19 ——— 24 ——— completed.
D ——— 19 ——— 24 ———
In the blocks have 4 lots and contain 2½ acres.
South of this plot are the two mile lots.
The West boundary is the River Jordan.
North of this plot are the Warm Springs.
North East of Plot B is the Cemetery.
The City is divided into 19 Wards under 20 Bishops.
PLATTED FOR CAP. RICHARD F. BURTON
BY
THOMAS BULLOCK.
G.S.L. CITY, UTAH.
SEPT 20. 1860.

Range, sharply silhouetted by a sweep of sunshine over its summits, against the depths of an evening sky, in that direction, so pure, so clear, that vision, one might fancy, could penetrate behind the curtain into regions beyond the confines of man's ken. In the brilliant reflected light, which softened off into a glow of delicate pink, we could distinguish the lines of Brigham's, Coon's and other kanyons, which water has traced through the wooded flanks of the Oquirrh down to the shadows already purpling the misty benches at their base. Three distinct and several shades, light azure, blue, and brown blue, graduated the distances, which extended at least thirty miles.

The undulating valley-plain between us and the Oquirrh Range is 12·15 miles broad, and markedly concave, dipping in the centre like the section of a tunnel, and swelling at both edges into bench-lands, which mark the ancient bed of the Lake. In some parts the valley was green; in others, where the sun shot its oblique beams, it was of a tawny yellowish red, like the sands of the Arabian desert, with scatters of trees, where the Jordan of the West rolls its opalline wave through pasture lands of dried grass dotted with flocks and herds, and fields of ripening yellow corn. Everything bears the impress of handiwork, from the bleak benches behind to what was once a barren valley in front. Truly the Mormon prophecy had been fulfilled: already the howling wilderness — in which twelve years ago a few miserable savages, the half naked Digger Indians, gathered their grass-seed, grasshoppers, and black crickets to keep life and soul together, and awoke with their war cries the echo of the mountains, and the bear, the wolf, and the fox prowled over the site of a now populous city — "has blossomed like the rose."

This valley, this lovely panorama of green and azure and gold, this land, fresh as it were from the hands of God, is apparently girt on all sides by hills: the highest peaks, raised 7000 to 8000 feet above the plain of their bases, show by gulches veined with lines of snow that even in this season winter frowns upon the last smile of summer.

Advancing, we exchanged the rough cañons, and the frequent fords of the ravine, for a broad smooth highway, spanning the easternmost valley-bench: a terrace that drops like a Titanic

step from the midst of the surrounding mountains to the level of the present valley-plain. From a distance—the mouth of Emigration Kanyon is about 4·30 miles from the city—Zion, which is not on a hill, but on the contrary lies almost in the lowest part of the river-plain, is completely hid from sight, as if no such thing existed. Mr. Macarthy, on application, pointed out the notabilia of the scene.

Northwards curls of vapour ascending from a gleaming sheet—the Lake of the Hot Springs—set in a bezel of emerald green, and bordered by another lake-bench upon which the glooms of evening were rapidly gathering, hung like a veil of gauze around the waist of the mountains. Southwards for twenty-five miles stretched the length of the valley with the little river winding its way like a silver thread in a brocade of green and gold. The view in this direction was closed by "Mountain Point," another formation of terraced range, which forms the water gate of Jordan, and which conceals and separates the fresh water that feeds the Salt Lake—the Sea of Tiberias from the Dead Sea.

As we descend the Wasach Mountains, we could look back and enjoy the view of the eastern wall of the Happy Valley. A little to the north of Emigration Kanyon, and about one mile nearer the settlement, is the Red Butte, a deep ravine, whose quarried sides show mottlings of the light ferruginous sandstone which was chosen for building the Temple wall.* A little beyond it lies the single City of the Dead, decently removed three miles from the habitations of the living, and further to the north is City-Creek Kanyon, which supplies the Saints with water for drinking and for irrigation. South-east of Emigration Kanyon are other ravines, Parley's, Mill Creek, Great Cottonwood, and Little Cottonwood, deep lines winding down the timbered flanks of the mountains, and thrown into relief by the darker and more misty shading of the farther flank-wall.

The "Twin Peaks," the highest points of the Wasach Mountains, are the first to be powdered over with the autumnal snow. When a black nimbus throws out these piles, with

* At first a canal was dug through the bench to bring this material: the grey granite now used for the Temple is transported in carts from the southern part of the valley.

their tilted up rock strata, jagged edges, black flanks, rugged brows and bald heads, gilt by a gleam of sunset, the whole stands boldly out with that phase of sublimity of which the sense of immensity is the principal element. Even in the clearest weather they are rarely free from a fleecy cloud, the condensation of cold and humid air rolling up the heights and vanishing only to be renewed.

The bench-land then attracted our attention. The soil is poor, sprinkled with thin grass, in places showing a suspicious whiteness, with few flowers, and chiefly producing a salsolaceous plant like the English samphire. In many places lay long rows of bare circlets, like deserted tent-floors: they proved to be ant-hills, on which light ginger-coloured swarms were working hard to throw up the sand and gravel that everywhere in this valley underlie the surface. The eastern valley-bench, upon whose western declivity the city lies, may be traced on a clear day along the base of the mountains for a distance of twenty miles: its average breadth is about eight miles.

After advancing about 1·50 mile over the bench ground, the city by slow degrees broke upon our sight. It showed, one may readily believe, to special advantage after the succession of Indian lodges, Canadian ranchos, and log-hut mail-stations of the prairies and the mountains. The site has been admirably chosen for drainage and irrigation — so well indeed that a "Deus ex machinâ" must be brought to account for it.* About two miles north, and overlooking the settlements from a height of 400 feet, a detached cone called Ensign Peak or Ensign Mount rises at the end of a chain which, projected westward from the main range of the heights, overhangs and shelters the north-eastern corner of the valley. Upon this "big toe of the Wasach range," as it is called by a local writer, the spirit of the martyred prophet, Mr. Joseph Smith, appeared to his suc-

* I have frequently heard this legend from Gentiles, never from Mormons; yet even the Saints own that as early as 1842 visions of the mountains and kanyons, the valley and the lake, were revealed to Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., who declared it privily to the disciples whom he loved. Thus Messrs. O. Pratt and E. Snow, apostles, were enabled to recognise the Promised Land, as, the first of the pioneers, they issued from the ravines of the Wasach. Of course the Gentiles declare that the exodists hit upon the valley by the purest chance. The spot is becoming classical: here Judge and Apostle Phelps preached his "Sermon on the Mount," which, anti-Mormons say, was a curious contrast to the first discourse so named.

cessor Mr. Brigham Young, and pointed out to him the position of the New Temple, which, after Zion had "got up into the high mountain," was to console the Saints for the loss of Nauvoo the Beautiful. The city—it is about two miles broad—runs parallel with the right bank of the Jordan, which forms its western limit. It is twelve to fifteen miles distant from the western range, ten from the debouchure of the river, and eight to nine from the nearest point of the lake—a respectful distance, which is not the least of the position's merits. It occupies the rolling brow of a slight decline at the western base of the Wasach, in fact the lower, but not the lowest level of the eastern valley-bench; it has thus a compound slope from north to south, on the line of its water supplies, and from east to west, thus enabling it to drain off into the river.

The city revealed itself, as we approached, from behind its screen, the inclined terraces of the upper table-land, and at last it lay stretched before us as upon a map. At a little distance the aspect was somewhat Oriental, and in some points it reminded me of modern Athens—without the Acropolis. None of the buildings, except the Prophet's house, were whitewashed. The material—the thick, sun-dried adobe, common to all parts of the Eastern world*—was of a dull leaden blue, deepened by the atmosphere to a grey, like the shingles of the roofs. The number of gardens and compounds—each tenement within the walls originally received 1·50 square acre, and those outside from five to ten acres, according to their distance—the dark clumps and lines of bitter cottonwood, locust or acacia, poplars and fruit trees, apples, peaches, and vines—how lovely they appeared, after the baldness of the prairies!—and, finally, the fields of long-eared maize and sweet sorghum strengthened the similarity to an Asiatic rather than to an American settlement. The differences presently became as salient. The farm-houses, with their stacks and stock, strongly suggested the old country. Moreover domes and minarets—even churches and steeples—were wholly wanting—an omission that somewhat surprised me. The only building conspicuous from afar was the block occupied by the present head of the church. The court-house, with its tinned Muscovian dome, at the west end of the city; the arsenal,

* The very word is Spanish, derived from the Arabic الطوب, meaning "the brick:" it is known throughout the West, and is written *adobies*, and pronounced *dobies*.

a barn-like structure, on a bench below the Jebel Nur of the valley—Ensign Peak; and a saw-mill, built beyond the southern boundary, were the next in importance.

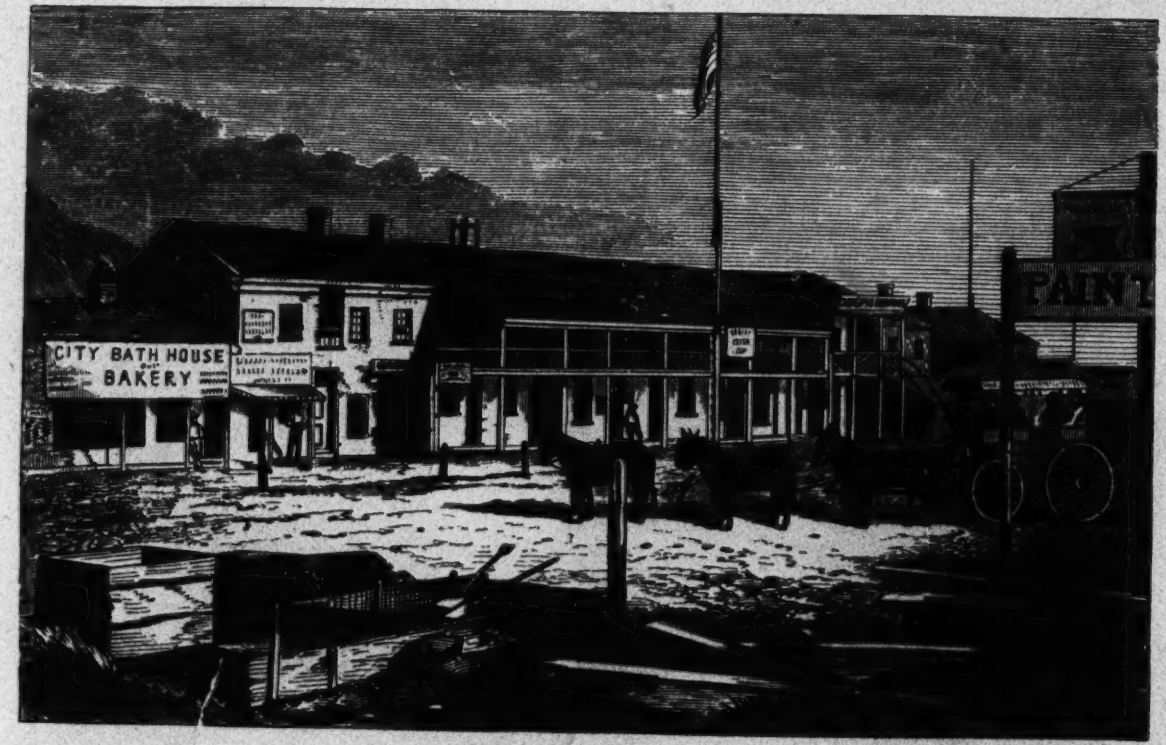
On our way we passed the vestiges of an old moat, from which was taken the earth for the bulwarks of Zion. A Romulian wall, of puddle, mud, clay, and pebbles, six miles—others say, 2600 acres—in length, twelve feet high, six feet broad at the base, and two and three-quarters at the top, with embrasures five to six feet above the ground, and semi-bastions at half musket range, was decided, in 1853-54, to be necessary, as a defence against the Lamanites, whose name in the vulgar is Yuta Indians. Gentiles declare that the bulwarks were erected because the people wanting work were likely to "strike" faith, and that the amount of labour expended upon this folly would have irrigated as many thousand acres. Anti-Mormons have, of course, detected in the proceeding treacherous and treasonable intentions. Parenthetically, I must here warn the reader that in Gt. S. L. City there are three distinct opinions concerning, three several reasons for, and three diametrically different accounts of, everything that happens, viz. that of the Mormons, which is invariably one-sided; that of the Gentiles, which is sometimes fair and just; and that of the anti-Mormons, which is always prejudiced and violent. A glance will show that this much talked-of fortification is utterly harmless; it is commanded in half a dozen places; it could not keep out half a dozen sappers for a quarter of an hour; and now, as it has done its work, its foundations are allowed to become salt, and to crumble away.

The road ran through the Big Field, south-east of the city, six miles square, and laid off in five-acre lots. Presently, passing the precincts of habitation, we entered, at a slapping pace, the second ward, called Denmark, from its tenants, who mostly herd together. The disposition of the settlement is like that of the nineteenth century New World cities—from Washington to the future metropolis of the great Terra Australis—a system of right angles, the roads, streets, and lanes, if they can be called so, intersecting one another. The advantages or disadvantages of the rectangular plan have been exhausted in argument; the new style is best suited, I believe, for the New, as the old must, perforce, remain in the Old World. The

suburbs are thinly settled; the mass of habitations lie around and south of Temple Block. The streets of the suburbs are mere roads, cut by deep ups and downs, and by gutters on both sides, which, though full of pure water, have no bridge save a plank at the *trottoirs*. In summer the thoroughfares are dusty — in wet weather deep with viscid mud.

The houses are almost all of one pattern—a barn shape, with wings and lean-tos, generally facing, sometimes turned endways to, the street, which gives a suburban look to the settlement; and the diminutive casements show that window-glass is not yet made in the Valley. In the best abodes the adobe rests upon a few courses of sandstone, which prevent undermining by water or ground-damp, and it must always be protected by a coping from the rain and snow. The poorer are small, low, and hut-like; others are long single-storied buildings, somewhat like stables, with many entrances. The best houses resemble East Indian bungalows, with flat roofs, and low, shady verandahs, well trellised, and supported by posts or pillars. All are provided with chimneys, and substantial doors to keep out the piercing cold. The offices are always placed, for hygienic reasons, outside; and some have a story and a half—the latter intended for lumber and other stores. I looked in vain for the outhouse-harems, in which certain romancers concerning things Mormon had informed me that wives are kept, like any other stock. I presently found this but one of a multitude of delusions. Upon the whole the Mormon settlement was a vast improvement upon its contemporaries in the valleys of the Missisippi and the Missouri.

The road through the faubourg was marked by posts and rails, which, as we advanced towards the heart of the city, were replaced by neat palings. The garden plots were small, as sweet earth must be brought down from the mountains; and the flowers were principally those of the old country — the red French bean, the rose, the geranium, and the single pink; the ground or winter cherry was common; so were nasturtiums, and we saw tansy, but not that plant for which our souls, well nigh weary of hopes of juleps long deferred, chiefly lusted — mint. The fields were large and numerous, but the Saints have too many and various occupations to keep them Moravian-like neat and trim; weeds overspread the ground;



STORES IN MAIN STREET.

often the wild sunflower-tops outnumbered the heads of maize. The fruit had suffered from an unusually nipping frost in May; the peach trees were barren, the vines bore no produce, only a few good apples were in Mr. Brigham Young's garden, and the water-melons were poor, yellow, and tasteless, like the African. On the other hand, potatoes, onions, cabbages and cucumbers, were good and plentiful, the tomato was ripening everywhere, fat full-eared wheat rose in stacks, and crops of excellent hay were scattered about near the houses. The people came to their doors to see the mail-coach, as if it were the "Derby dilly," of old, go by. I could not but be struck by the modified English appearance of the colony, and by the prodigious numbers of the white-headed children.

Presently we debouched upon the main thoroughfare, the centre of population and business, where the houses of the principal Mormon dignitaries, and the stores of the Gentile merchants, combine to form the city's only street which can be properly so called. It is, indeed, both street and market, for, curious to say, New Zion has not yet built for herself a house or market-place. Nearly opposite the Post-office, in a block on the eastern side, with a long verandah, supported by trimmed and painted posts, was a two-storied, pent-roofed building, whose sign-board, swinging to a tall, gibbet-like flagstaff, dressed for the occasion, announced it to be the Salt Lake House, the principal, if not the only establishment of the kind in New Zion. In the Far West, one learns not to expect much of the hostelry*; I had not seen aught so grand for many a day. Its depth is greater than its frontage, and behind it, secured by a *porte cochère*, is a large yard, for corralling cattle. A rough-looking crowd of drivers, drivers' friends, and idlers, almost every man openly armed with revolver and bowie-knife, gathered round the doorway, to greet Jim, and "prospect" the "new lot;" and the host came out to assist us in transporting our scattered effects. We looked vainly for a bar on the ground floor; a bureau for registering names was there, but (temperance, in public at least, being the order of the day) the usual tempting array of

* I subjoin one of the promising sort of advertisements:—

"Tom Mitchell!!! dispenses comfort to the weary (I) feeds the hungry (II) and cheers the gloomy (III) at his old, well-known stand, thirteen miles east of Fort Des Moines. *Don't pass by me.*"

bottles and decanters was not forthcoming; upstairs we found a Gentile hall-room, a tolerably furnished sitting-room, and bed-chambers, apparently made out of a single apartment by partitions too thin to be strictly agreeable. The household had its deficiencies; blacking, for instance, had run out, and servants could not be engaged till the expected arrival of the hand-cart train. However, the proprietor, Mr. Townsend, a Mormon, from the State of Maine — when expelled from Nauvoo, he had parted with land, house, and furniture for $50 — who had married an Englishwoman, was in the highest degree civil and obliging, and he attended personally to our wants, offered his wife's services to Mrs. Dana, and put us all in the best of humours, despite the closeness of the atmosphere, the sadness ever attending one's first entrance into a new place, the swarms of "emigration flies" — so called because they appear in September with the emigrants, and after living for a month die off with the first snow — and a certain populousness of bedstead, concerning which the less said the better. Such, gentle reader, are the results of my first glance at Zion on the tops of the mountains, in the Holy City of the Far West.

Our journey had occupied nineteen days, from the 7th to the 25th of August, both included; and in that time we had accomplished not less than 1136 statute miles.

CHAP. IV.

FIRST WEEK AT GT. S. L. CITY.—PRELIMINARIES.

Before entering upon the subject of the Mormons I would fain offer to the reader a few words of warning. During my twenty-four days at head quarters, ample opportunities of surface observation were afforded me. I saw, as will presently appear, specimens of every class, from the Head of Church down to the field hand, and being a stranger in the land could ask questions and receive replies upon subjects which would have been forbidden to an American of the States, more especially to an official. But there is in Mormondom, as in all other exclusive faiths, whether Jewish, Hindu or other, an inner life into which I cannot flatter myself or deceive the reader with the idea of my having penetrated. At the same time it is only fair to state that no Gentile, even the unprejudiced, who are *rara aves*, however long he may live or intimately he may be connected with Mormons, can expect to see anything but the superficies. The writings of the Faithful are necessarily wholly presumed. And finally the accounts of Life in the City of the Saints published by anti-Mormons and apostates are venomous, and, as their serious discrepancies prove, thoroughly untrustworthy. I may therefore still hope, by recounting honestly and truthfully as lies in my power what I heard, and felt, and saw, and by allowing readers to draw their own conclusions, to take new ground.

The Mormons have been represented, and are generally believed to be, an intolerant race; I found the reverse far nearer the fact. The best proof of this is that there is hardly one anti-Mormon publication however untruthful, violent, or scandalous

which I did not find in Gt. S. L. City.* The extent of the subjoined bibliographical list would deter me from a theme so used

* A list of works published upon the subject of Mormonism may not be uninteresting. They admit of a triple division — the Gentile, the anti-Mormon, and the Mormon.

Of the Gentile, by which I understand, the comparatively unprejudiced observer, the principal are —

1. The exploration and survey of the Great Salt Lake by Captain Stansbury, who followed up Colonel Frémont's flying survey, in 1849, or two years before the Mormons had settled in the basin, and found the young colony about 2—3 years old. Anti-Mormons find fault with Captain Stansbury for expending upon their adversaries too much of the milk of human kindness.

2. The Mormons or Latter Day Saints, by Lieutenant J. W. Gunnison of the U. S. Topographical Engineers. This officer was second in command of the exploration under Captain Stansbury, and has recorded, in unpretending style and with great impartiality, his opinions concerning the "rise and progress, peculiar doctrines, present condition and prospects" of the Mormons, "derived from personal observation." Like his C. O., Lieutenant Gunnison is accused of having favoured the New Faith, and yet, with all the inconsistency of the odium theologicum, the Faithful are charged with his subsequent murder; the only motive of the foul deed being that the saints dreaded future disclosures, and were determined, though one of their number had been sent to accompany Captain Stansbury as assistant, to prevent other expeditions. Upon Lieutenant Gunnison's volume is founded "Les Mormons" of M. Ernouaux, first printed in the "Presse" and afterwards republished, Paris 1852.

3. The Mormons; a Discourse delivered before the Historical Society of Pennsylvania, March 26th, 1856, by Colonel T. L. Kane (U.S. Militia): this gentleman, an eye-witness, who has knowingly and I believe truthfully related the details of the Nauvoo Exodus, is called by anti-Mormons an "apologist," and is suspected of being a Latter Day Saint — baptized under the name of Dr. Osborne — in Christian disguise. Arrived at Fort Bridger, in 1847, he found assembled there the three heads of departments, Governor Cumming, Chief Justice Eckles, and General Johnston. According to the Saints, he was watched, spied, treated as a Mormon emissary, and nearly shot by a mistake made on purpose: he was, however, supported by the Governor against the General, and the result was a confusion most favourable to the New Faith. Colonel Kane is said to have preserved an affectionate and respectful remembrance of his friends the Mormons.

4. History of the Mormons, by Messrs. Chambers, Edinburgh.

5. An Excursion to California, over the Prairies, Rocky Mountains, and Great Salt Lake of Nevada, by W. Kelly, Esq., J. P. Mr. Kelly, whose work closed at the time of the appearance the interest and admiration of the public with Messrs. Huc and Gabet's travels in Tartary, Tibet, and the Chinese Empire, visited Gt. S. L. City in 1849, an important epoch in the annals of the infant colony, and leaves the reader only to regret that he devoted so little of his time and of his two volumes to the history of the Saints.

6. The Mormons or Latter Day Saints, with Memoirs of the Life of Joseph Smith, the American Mahomet. Office of the National Illustrated Library, 168 Strand, London. This little compilation, dealing with facts rather than theories, borrows from the preceding of both parties and displays the substance of judgment

up by friend and foe, were it not for these considerations. In the first place, I have found since my return to England a prodigious

which results from studying the subject at a distance; though Gentile, it is somewhat in favour with Mormons because it shows some desire to speak the truth. This solid work has won its high honours of an abridged translation, with the title "Les Mormons" (192 pages in 18mo. Mame, Hachette, Paris, 1856), by M. Amédée Pichot, and a brilliant review by M. Prosper Mérimée in the "Moniteur," and reprinted in "Les Mélanges Historiques et Littéraires" (pp. 1–39, Michel Lévy, 1855).

7. A Visit to Salt Lake, and a Residence in the Mormon Settlements at Utah, by William Chandless. London: Smith, Elder, and Co., 1857. Mr. Chandless, about the middle of July 1856, entered this Territory in the character of a "gentleman for pay," spent the rest of the year at Gt. S. L. City, and thence travelled with Fillmore and Sen. Bernardino to California. The book is exceedingly lively and picturesque, combining pleasant reading with just observation, impartiality, and good sense.

8. Voyage au Pays des Mormons, par Jules Remy (2 vols. 8. Dentu, Paris, 1860). The author, accompanied by Mr. Brenchley, M.A., travelled in July and the summer of 1855 from San Francisco along the line of the Sierras and Humboldt Rivers to Gt. S. L. City, and returned, like Mr. Chandless, by the southern route. The two volumes are more valuable for the observations on the natural history of the Mormon lands, than for the generalities more or less veiled with which the subject of the New Faith is discussed.

Not a few anomalies appear in the judgments passed by M. Remy upon the Saints: whilst in some places they are represented as fervent and full of faith, we also read: "Le Mormonisme n'a pas le caractère de spontanéité des religions primitives, ce qui va, du reste, de soi, si le mérveil des religions qui naissent, si le dogmatisme des révélations ne doit nécessairement quitter, comme les siècles avancent, cette plaine fleurie." and whilst Mr. Joseph Smith is in parts tenderly treated, he is ruthlessly characterised in p. 24 as an *ébauche* of the impostor, a "rusé and gigantic Tartuffe." An excellent English translation of this work has lately appeared, under the auspices of Mr. Jeffs, Huntingdon Arcade, but an account of Gt. S. L. City in 1855 is an anachronism as a study of London life in A.D. 1866.

9. Incidents of Travel and Adventure in the Far West, by M. Carvalho, who accompanied Colonel Fremont in his last exploration. According to said Mormon and assistant of the Saints is far too favourable (1856).

10. Geological Survey of the Territory of Utah, by H. Engelmann. Washington, 1856.

The principal anti-Mormon works are the following, ranged in the order of their respective dates. The Gent, it will be observed, more than rubbs the Saints.

1. A brief History of the Church of Christ of Latter-Day Saints (commonly called Mormons) including an Account of their Doctrine and Discipline, with the causes of the Author for leaving the said Church," by John Corrill, a member of the Legislature of Missouri (60 pages, 8vo. St. Louis, 1839). I know nothing beyond the name of this little work, or of the nine following.

2. Mormonism, by the Rev. Hugh Douglas (Isle of Man, 1839).

3. Mormonism weighed in the Balance of the Sanctuary and found Wanting, by Samuel Hinkley (63 pages, Douglas, Isle of Man, 1840).

4. The Latter-day Saints, and Book of Mormon. By W. J. Mowitt, Ludlow.

general ignorance of the "Mormon rule;" the mass of the public has heard of the Saints, but even well educated men

5. An Exposure of the Errors and Fallacies of the Self-named Latter-day Saints. By W. Hewitt, Staffordshire.

6. Tract on Mormonism. By Capt. D. L. St. Clair. (1840).

7. Mormonism Unveiled. By E. D. Howe. (1841).

8. Mormonism Exposed. By the Rev. L. Sunderland. (1841).

9. Mormonism Portrayed; it Errors and Absurdities Exposed, and the Spirit and Designs of its Author made Manifest. By W. Harris (64 pages, Warsaw, Illinois, 1841).

10. Mormonism in all Ages; or, the Rise, Progress, and Causes of Mormonism; with the biography of its author and founder, Joseph Smith, junior. By Professor J. B. Turner, Illinois College, Jacksonville. (304 pages, 12mo. N. Y. 1842.)

11. Gleanings by the Way. By the Rev. John A. Clark, D.D. (352 pages, in 12mo. Philadelphia, 1842), Minister at Palmyra in N.Y. at the time when the New Faith arose.

12. The History of the Saints, or an Exposé of Joe Smith and Mormonism. By John C. Bennett (344 pages, 12mo. Boston, 1842). This is the work of a celebrated apostate, who for a season took a prominent propagandist part in the political history of Mormondom. Defeated in his hopes of dominion, he has revenged himself by a volume whose title declares the character of its contents, and which wants nothing but the confidence of the reader to be highly interesting. The Mormons speak of him as the Musaylimat el Kazzáb — Musaylimat the Liar, who tried, and failed, to enter into partnership with Mohammed — of their religion.

The four following works were written by the Rev. Henry Caswall, a violent anti-Mormon, who solemnly and apparently honestly believes all the calumnies against the "worthless family" of the prophet; unhesitatingly adopts the Solomon Spaulding story, discovers in Mormon Scripture as many "anachronisms, contradictions, and grammatical errors," as ever Celsus and Porphyry detected in the writings of the early Christians, and designates the faith in which hundreds of thousands live and die as a "delusion in some respects worse than Paganism, and a system destined perhaps to act like Mohammedanism (!) as a scourge upon corrupted Christianity" (sub. the American?) The Mormons speak of this gentleman as of a 19th century Torquemada: he appears by his own evidence to have combined with the heart of the great Inquisitor some of the head qualities of Mr. Coroner W—— when insisting upon the unhappy Fire-King's swallowing his (Mr. W's.) prussic acid instead of the pseudo-poison provided for the edification of the public. Mr. Caswall went to Nauvoo holding in his hand an ancient MS. of the Greek psalter, and completely, according to his account, puzzled the Prophet, who decided it to be "reformed Egyptian." Moreover, he convicted of falsehood the "wretched old creature," viz. the maternal parent of Mr. Joseph Smith, called a Mother in Israel, looked upon as one of the holiest of women, and who at any rate was a good and kind-hearted mother, that could not be reproached, like Luther's, with "chastising her son so severely about a nut that the blood came." It is no light proof of Mormon tolerance that so truculent a divine and opponent *par vois de fait*, should have been allowed to depart, from amongst a people whom he had offended and insulted, without loss of liberty or life.

hold theirs to be a kind of socialistic or communist concern, where, as in the world to come, there is no marrying nor

13. The City of the Mormons, or three Days in Nauvoo in 1842 (87 pages, Messrs. Rivingtons, London, 1843).

14. The Prophet of the 19th Century; or, the Rise, Progress, and Present State of the Mormons (277 pages, 8vo. published by the same, London, 1843).

15. Joseph Smith and the Mormons. Chapter xiii. of America and the American Church (John and Charles Mozley, Paternoster Row, London, 1851).

16. Mormonism and its Author; or, a Statement of the Doctrines of the Latter Day Saints. London: Tract Society, No. 866 (16 pages, 1853).

17. Narrative of some of the Proceedings of the Mormons, giving an Account of their iniquities, with particulars concerning the Training of the Indians by them; Descriptions of their mode of Endowment, Plurality of Wives, &c. By Catherine Lewis Lynn (24 pages, 8vo. 1848). As will presently appear, when the fair sex enters upon the subject of polygamy, it apparently loses all self-control, not to say its senses.

18. Friendly Warnings on the Subject of Mormonism. By a Country Clergyman (London, 1850).

19. The Mormon Imposture: an Exposure of the Fraudulent Origin of the Book of Mormon (8vo. Newbury, London, 1851).

20. Mormonism Exposed. By Mr. Bowes (1851).

21. Mormonism or the Bible; a Question for the Times. By a Cambridge Clergyman (12mo. Cambridge and London, 1852). According to Mormon view the title should have been Mormonism *and* the Bible.

22. History of Illinois. By Governor Ford (Chicago, 1854). The author was a determined opponent of the New Faith, and gives his own version of the massacres at Carthage and Nauvoo: it is valuable only on the venerable principle "audi alteram partem."

23. Mormonism. By J. W. Conybeare, first printed in the "Edinburgh Review" (No. ccii. April 1854, and reprinted in 112 pages, 12mo. by Messrs. Longman, London, 1854).

24. Utah and the Mormons; the History, Government, Doctrines, Customs, and Prospects of the Latter Day Saints, from Personal Observations during a Six Months' residence at Gt. S. L. City. By Benj. G. Ferris, late Secretary of U. T. (347 pages, 12mo. Messrs. Harper, N. Y. 1854). The author being married, appears to have lived amongst them to as little purpose — for observation — as possible. Everything is considered from an anti-Mormon point of view, and some of the accusations against the Saints, as in the case of the Eldridges and the Howards, I know to be not founded on fact. The calmness of the work, upon a highly exciting subject, contrasts curiously with the feminine violence — the natural result of contemplating polygamy — of another that issued under the same name.

25. Mormonism Unveiled; or, a History of Mormonism to the Present Time. (235 pages, 8vo. London, 1855.)

26. Mormonism Examined: a Few Kind Words to a Mormon. (8vo. Birmingham, 1855.)

27. Female Life among the Mormons, published anonymously for the demand of the New York market, and especially intended for the followers of Miss Lucy Stone and of the Rev. Miss Antoinette Brown, but known to be by Mrs. Maria Ward,

giving in marriage. Even where this is not the case, the reader of travels will not dislike to peruse something more

who subsequently edited another work. The authoress, who professes to have escaped from the Mormons, was manifestly never amongst them. This "tissu de mensonges et de calomnies," as M. Remy somewhat ungallantly but very truthfully styles it, has had extensive currency. M. Révoil has given a free translation of it, under the name of "Les Harems du Nouveau Monde" (308 pages, Paris, 1856). Its success was such that its writeress was in 1858 induced to repeat the experiment.

28. The Mormons at Home: in a Series of Letters by Mrs. Ferris, wife of the late U. S. Secretary for U. T. (Dix and Edwards, Broadway, N.Y. 1856.) The reasons for this lady's rabid hate may be found in polygamy, which is calculated to astound, perplex, and enrage fair woman in America even more than her strong opinioned English sister, and in the somewhat contemptuous estimation of a sex — which is early taught and soon learns to consider itself creation's cream — conveyed in those words of Mr. Brigham Young: "If I did not consider myself competent to transact business without asking my wife, or any other woman's counsel, I think I ought to let that business alone."

Accordingly Mrs. Ferris finds herself in the hands and of a "society of fanatics," controlled by a "gang of licentious villains," — an unpleasant predicament *pour cette verve*, in fact for virtue at any time of life — characterises the land as a "Botany Bay" for society in general, and a "region of moral pestilence;" and whilst she lavishes the treasures of her pity upon the "poor, poor wife," holds her spiritual rival to be *tout bonnement* a "concubine," and consigns the wretches assembled here (*scil.* in Zion on the tops of the Mountains) to the "very hottest part of the infernal torrid zone." Tantæne animis cœlestibus iræ?

The Mormons declare that they incurred this funny amount of feminine wrath and suffered from its consequent pin-pricks by their not taking sufficient interest in, or notice of the writer, especially by the fact that on one occasion — it is made much of in the book — some rude men actually did walk over a bridge before her. But coming direct from the land of woman's rights' associations, lectureuses on propagandism and voluntary celibatarians, whose "mission" it is to reform, purify, and exalt the age, especially our wicked selves, what else could be expected of outraged delicacy and self esteem? Not being "vivisectors," we cannot however, quite join with Mrs. Ferris in the complacency with which she relates her "probing the hearts" of her Mormon guests and visitors "with ruthless questions" about their domestic affairs; and we remark with pleasure that in more than one place she has most unwillingly confessed the kindness and civility of the Latter Day Saints.

29. Adventures Among the Mormons, by Elder Hawthornthwaite, an Apostate Missionary. (1857.)

30. The Mormons, the Dream, and the Reality; or, Leaves from the Sketch-book of Experience. Edited by a Clergyman, W. B. F. (8vo. London, 1857.)

31. The Husband in Utah; or, Sights and Scenes among the Mormons. By Austin N. Ward. Edited by Mrs. Maria Ward, Author of "Female Life among the Mormons." (212 pages, 8vo. Derby and Jackson, Nassau Street, N. Y. 1857.) It is regrettable that a respectable publisher should lend his name to a volume like this. The authoress professes to edit the MS. left by a nephew of her husband, who lived among the Mormons en route to California, went on to the gold regions and died. I cannot but characterise it as a pure invention. The writer who describes mar-

of a theme with which he is already perhaps familiar: for in this department of literature, as in history and biography, the

kets where not one ever existed, and "the tall spires of the Mormon temples glittering in the rich sunlight" (p. 15), there being no spires and no temples at Utah, can hardly expect to be believed, even when, with all the eloquence of Mr. Potts, of the "Eatanswill Gazette," she dwells upon the "fanaticism and diabolism that ever attends (!) the hideous and slimy course of Mormonism in its progress over the world." The imposture too is not "white," it is premeditatedly mischievous. Although Brother Underwood is a fancy personage, Miss Eliza R. Snow, with whose name improper liberties are taken, is no myth, but a well-educated and highly respectable reality.

32. Fifteen Years among the Mormons, being the Narrative of Mrs. Mary Ettie V. Smith, late of the Gt. S. L. City, a Sister of one of the Mormon High Priests, she having been personally acquainted with most of the Mormon leaders, and long in the confidence of the Prophet Brigham Young. By Nelson Winch Green. (Charles Scribner, Broadway, N.Y. 1858, and unhappily republished by Messrs. Routledge, London.) This work, whose exceedingly clap-trap title is a key to the "popular" nature of the contents, is, *par excellence*, *the* most offensive publication of the kind, and bears within it marks of an exceeding untruthfulness. The human sacrifices and the abominable rites performed in the Endowment House, are reproductions of the accounts of hidden orgies in the Nauvoo Temple, invented and promulgated by Mr. Bowes. The last words placed in the mouth of Mr. Joseph Smith, "My God! my God! have mercy upon us, if there is a God!"—a palpable plagiarism from Lord P——e's will—may be a pious fraud to warn stray lambs from the fold of Mormonism, but as a history shows, it is wholly destitute of fact. The murder in Mr. Jones', the butcher's house, so circumstantially related, never took place. Colonel Bridger, who is killed off by the Danites at the end of the book, still lives; and a dream (ch. xxxviii.) seems to be the only proof of Lieut. Gunnison having been slaughtered by the Latter Day Saints, not as is generally supposed by the Indians. "Milking the Gentiles," coining "Bogus-money," "whistling and whittling" anti-Mormons out of the town, the dangers of competition in love matters with an apostle, and the imminent peril of being scalped by white Indians, are stock accusations copied from book to book, and rendered somewhat harmless by want of novelty. But nothing will excuse the reckless accusations with which Mrs. Smith takes away the characters of her Mormon sisters, and the abominations with which she charges the wives of the highest dignitaries. Amongst those thus foully defamed is Miss Snow, who also appears as a leading actress in Mrs. Ward's fiction. The "poetess of the Mormons," now married to the Prophet, has ever led a life of exceptional asceticism—cold in fact as her name. The Latter Day Saints retort upon Mrs. Smith, of course, in kind, quoting Chaucer (but whether truthfully or not I cannot say):—

> "A woman she was the most discrete alive,
> Husbandes at chirche-dore had she had five."

33. Mormonism; its Leaders and Designs, by John Hyde, jun., formerly a Mormon Elder, and resident of Great Salt Lake City. (385 pages, 8vo. W. P. Fetridge & Co. Broadway, N. Y. 1857.) This is the work of an apostate Mormon, now preaching, I believe, Swedenborgianism in England: it has some pretensions to learning, and it attacks the Mormons upon all their strongest grounds. It is also satisfactory to see that in the circumstantial description of the mysteries of the

more we know of a subject the more we want to know. Moreover, since 1857 no book of general interest has appeared,

Endowment House, Mrs. Smith and Mr. Hyde, whose account has apparently been borrowed by M. Remy, disagree; thus justifying us in doubting both, and it is curious to remark that whilst the lady leans to the erotic, the gentleman dwells upon the treasonous and mutinous tendency of the ceremony. According to Mr. Hyde, he left the Mormons from conscientious motives. The Mormons, who, however, never fail thoroughly to denigrate the character of an enemy, especially of an apostate, declare that the author when a missionary at Havre-de-Grâce proved useless, always shirking his duty; and that since dismissal from the ministry he has left a wife unprovided for at Gt. S. L. City.

The now almost forgotten polemical and anti-Mormon works, are—

M. Favez. Fragments sur J. Smith et les Mormons. A methodistical brochure.

Mr. Gray. Principles and Practices of Mormons.

M. Guers. L'Irvingisme et le Mormonisme jugés par la parole de Dieu.

Dr. Hurlburt's Mormonism Unveiled. This work first set on foot the story of "Solomon Spaulding" having composed the Book of Mormon, concerning which more anon.

Mormonism a Delusion. By the Rev. E. B. Chalmers.

Mormonism Unmasked. By R. Clarke.

Mormonism, its History, Doctrine, &c. By the Rev. S. Simpson.

Mormonism an Imposture. By P. Drummond.

The Latter Day Saints and their Spiritual Views. By H. S. J.

Tracts on Mormonism. A brochure by the Rev. Edmund Clay.

A Country Clergyman's Warning to his Parishioners. (Wertheim & McIntosh, London.)

The Materialism of the Mormons, or Latter Day Saints, Examined and Exposed. By S. W. P. Taylder.

The Book of Mormon Examined, and its Claims to be a Revelation from God, proved to be False. (12mo. Anonymous.)

The principal notices of Mormonism in periodical literature, are—

Archives du Christianisme: articles de MM. Agénor de Gasperin et Monod sur le Mormonisme. Nos. of the 11th December 1852, and 14th May 1853; quoted in the "Bibliographie Universelle" of MM. Ferdinand Denis, Pinçon et De Narbonne, under the article "Utah."

Sectes religieuses au xix^me^ siècle; Les Irvingiens et les Saints du Dernier Jour, par M. Alfred Maury. Revue des Deux-Mondes. Vol. iii. of the 23rd year (A.D. 1853), 1st September, pages 961–995.

History and Ideas of the Mormons. "Westminster Review," vol. iii. pages 196–230. 1853.

Le Mormonisme et sa valeur morale—La Société et la Vie des Mormons, by M. Emile Montégut, "Revue des Deux-Mondes," vol. i. of the 26th year, pages 689–725, 15th Feb. 1856.

Visite aux Mormons du Lac Salé par Jules Remy. Articles in the "Echo du Pacifique," San Francisco, January and February, 1856.

L'Illustration, Journal Universel. Vols. xv. and xxi. Articles by M. Depping "Sur les Mormons" (1853).

Biographie Générale du Dr. Hœfer, publiée chez MM. Didot frères: a long article upon Mr. Brigham Young, by M. Isambert (1853).

and the Mormons are a progressive people whose "go-a-headitiveness" in social growth is only to be compared with their

Une Campagne des Américains contre les Mormons. By M. Auguste Langel. "Revue des Deux-Mondes," 1er Septembre, 1859, pages 194–211.

Magasin Pittoresque. Several articles upon the Great Salt Lake, by M. Ferdinand Denis. Vol. xxvii. pages 172–239. Vol. xxviii. pages 207. (1859–1860.)

Le Mormonisme et les Etats-Unis. "Revue des Deux-Mondes," 15th April, 1861, signed by M. Elisée Reclus; an article formed chiefly upon the work of M. Remy. It is an able article, but written by one who, unfortunately, was never in the country — a *sine qud non* for correct description. The "Revue" had already undertaken the subject in the number of the 1st September 1853, the 15th February 1856, and the 1st September 1859.

The foreign works omitted in the catalogue at the end of this note are—

Mormonismen och Swedenborgianismen. Upsala (8vo. 1854.)

Geschichte der Mormonen, oder Jüngsten, Tages-Heiligen in Nord-Amerika, von Theodor Olshausen. (Göttingen, 244 pages, 8vo. 1856.)

Geographische Wanderungen. Die Mormonen und ihr Land, von Karl Andree. Dresden, 1859.

The Mormons have published at their General Repository only one purely lateal book, "The Route from Liverpool to Great Salt Lake Valley," illustrated with steel engravings and woodcuts, from sketches made by Frederick Piercy. Edited by James Linworth. It is a highly creditable volume, especially in the artistic department, but the letter press is uninteresting, and appears a mere peg upon which to hang copious notes and official returns. The price varies from 1*l.* to 1*l.* 3*s.*, and the three first parts, containing an accurate history of the Latter Day Saints' emigration from Europe up to 1854, may be had separately, 1*s.* each.

So good a theme for romance could not fail to fall into the hands of Captain Mayne Reid, who is to Mormonism what Alexander Dumas was to Mesmerism. In his pages the exaggerated anti-Mormon feeling attains its acme; the explorer Stansbury, who spoke fairly of the Saints, is thus qualified: "the captain is at best but a superficial observer;"—quite a glass-house stone-throwing critique. Mr. Brigham Young is a "vulgar Alcibiades;" the City of the Saints is a "modern Gomorrah," and the Saints themselves are "sanctified *foolsans*;" the plurality wife is a "*femme entretenue*." In the tale of the "Wild Huntress," a young person married by foul means to Josh. Stebbing the Mormon, and rescued mainly by a young hero — of course a Mexican volunteer — we have a sound abuse of the many-wife-system, despotism, theocracy, Danites, tithes, "plebbishness," and the "vulgar ring which smacks (!) of ignoble origin." On the other hand, the rascal Wakara, an ignoble sub-chief of the Yutas, known mainly as a horse thief, contrasts splendidly by his valour, by his "delicate attentions" to the pretty half-caste, and by his chivalry and hospitality, which make him a very "Rolla of the North!" And this is "fact taught through fiction!"

The Mormon scriptures, corresponding with the Old Testament, the Evangels, and the epistles of Christianity, consist of the following works: purely bibliographical notices are here given, the contents will be the subject of a future page.

1. The Book of Mormon, an Account written by the hand of Mormon, upon plates taken from the Plates of Mormon. Translated by Joseph Smith, Jun. The first edition was printed in 1830, at Palmyra, N. Y., and consisted of 5000 copies. Since that time it has frequently been republished in England and America: it

obstinate conservatism in adhering to institutions that date from the days of Abraham. Secondly, the natural history of

was translated into French in 1852 (Mare Duclerc, Rue Saint-Benoît 7, Paris, 1852), and versions have appeared in the German, Italian, Danish, Welsh, and Hawaiian tongues.

2. The Book of Doctrine and Covenants of the Church of Jesus of Latter Day Saints, selected (!) from the Revelations of God. By Joseph Smith, President, (336 pages, 12mo). The first American edition was printed in 1833, or ten years after the Book of Mormon, and was published at Mr. Joseph Smith's expense. Many translations of this important work have appeared.

3. The Pearl of Great Price; being a Choice Selection from the Revelations, Translations, and Narratives of Joseph Smith (56 pages, 8vo. Liverpool, first published in 1851). This little volume contains the Book of Abraham, "translated from some records that have fallen into our hands from the catacombs of Egypt, purporting to be the writings of Abraham whilst he was in Egypt, called the Book of Abraham, written by his own hand on papyrus. With a facsimile of three papyri."

4. The Latter Day Saints' Millennial Star, begun in 1839, Manchester, U.S., and now published 42 Islington, Liverpool, every Saturday. It has reached its 21st volume. The periodical is a single sheet (16 pages), and the price is one penny. It is an important publication, embracing the whole history of Mormonism; the hebdomadal issue now contains polemical papers, vindications of the Faith, with a kind of appendix, such as emigration reports, quarterly lists of marriages and deaths, varieties, and money lists.

5. Journal of Discourses by Brigham Young and others. First published in 1854 (8vo. Liverpool). It now appears in semi-monthly numbers, 1st and 15th, costing 2d.; making up one volume per annum. The above-mentioned and the writings of "Joseph the Seer and Parley P. Pratt, wherever found," are considered by the authorities of the Church as direct revelations.

The Mormons do not hold the "Biographical sketches of Joseph Smith the Prophet and his progenitors, for many generations, by Lucy Smith, mother of the Prophet," to be entirely trustworthy. Beyond its two pages of preface by Orson Pratt, it is deep below criticism. This work, 18mo. of 297 pages (including "Elegies" by Miss E. R. Snow), was first printed in 1853.

The Controversialist works, not usually included in the London catalogue, are the following. They are characterised by abundant earnestness and enthusiasm, and are purposely written in a style intelligible to the classes addressed:—

The Word of our Lord to the Citizens of London, by H. C. Kimball and W. Woodruff (1839).

The Millennium, and other Poems, to which is annexed a Treatise on the Regeneration and Eternal Duration of Matter, by Parley P. Pratt. N. Y. 1840.

A Cry out of the Wilderness, by Elder Hyde. This book was first published in Germany and in German. (120 pages, in 1842.)

Three Nights' Public Discourse at Boulogne-sur-Mer, by Elder John Taylor (46 pages in 8vo. Liverpool, 1850).

Three Letters to the "N. Y. Herald," of James Gordon Bennett, Esq., from J. M. Grant (Mayor and President of the Quorum of Seventies), of Utah, March 1852. These epistles have been reprinted in pamphlet form; they chiefly set forth Mormon grievances, especially the injury done by the Federal officials.

History of the Persecutions endured by the Church of Jesus of Latter Day Saints

the New Faith—for such it is—through the several periods of conception, birth, and growth to vigorous youth, with fair

in America, compiled from public documents and drawn from authentic sources, by C. W. Wandell, Minister of the Gospel (without date, but subsequent to the 64 pp. 8vo. edition, printed at Sydney).

Journal of the House of Representatives, Council and Joint Sessions of the First Annual Special Sessions of the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah, held at Gt. S. L. City, 1851–1852. (Printed by Brigham Young, 175 pages 12mo. 1852.)

Defence of Polygamy, by a Lady of Utah (Mrs. Belinda Marden Pratt) to her Sister in New Hampshire (11 pages, 8vo., first printed at Gt. S. L. City in 1854, and subsequently republished in the "Millennial Star" of 29th July in the same year. I shall presently quote this curious work.

Acts and Resolutions of the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah, Gt. S. L. City, 40 pages 12mo. First printed in 1854, and now published for every Annual Session (that of '60-'61, being the 10th) at Gt. S. L. City. Printed at the "Mountaineer" Office, by John S. Davis, Public Printer.

Acts, Resolutions, and Memorials passed at the several Annual Sessions (the 9th in 1859–60) of the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah. Published by virtue of an Act approved Jan. 19th, 1855, Gt. S. L. City, Joseph Cain, afterwards J. S. Davis, Public Printer, 1855–1860. 460 pages, 12mo. It contains the Territorial Code of Deseret, and is purely secular.

Report of the First General Festival of the Renowned Mormon Battalion, Gt. S. L. City. 39 pages in 8vo.

Discourses delivered by Joseph Smith (30th June 1842) and Brigham Young (18th February 1855) on the Relation of the Mormons to the Government of the United States. Gt. S. L. City, 16 pages.

Marriage and Morals in Utah, by Parley P. Pratt. 8 pages, 8vo. Liverpool, 1856.

Twenty-four Miracles, by O. Pratt. Liverpool, 16 pages, 8vo. 1857.

Latter Day Kingdom; or, the Preparation for the Second Advent, by O. Pratt. Liverpool, 16 pages, 8vo. 1857.

Spiritual Gifts, by Orson Pratt. Liverpool and London, 80 pages, 8vo. 1857.

Universal Apostacy; or, the Seventeen Centuries of Darkness, by O. Pratt. Liverpool, 16 pages in 8vo. 1857.

Compendium of the Faith and Doctrines of the Church of Jesus of Latter Day Saints, compiled from the Bible, and also from the Book of Mormon, Doctrines and Covenants, and other publications of the Church; with an Appendix, by Franklin D. Richards, one of the Twelve Apostles of said Church. 42 Islington, Liverpool, 248 pages, long 18mo. (1857.) A concordance and compilation of the chief doctrinal works and seven sermons.

The following is the Catalogue of English Works published by the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, and for sale by Orson Pratt, at their General Repository, and "Millennial Star" Office, 42 Islington, Liverpool, and removed from 35 Jewin Street, City, to 30 Florence Street, Islington, London.

Hymn Book, first edition in 1851. Morocco extra, 4s.; calf, gilt edges, 2s. 6d.; calf grained, 2s.; roan embossed, 1s. 6d.

The Harp of Zion. Poems by John Lyon. Published for the benefit of the Perpetual Emigrating Fund. First printed in 1853. Morocco extra, 6s. 6d.; cloth gilt extra, 3s. 6d.; cloth embossed, 2s. 6d.

promise of stalwart manhood, is a subject of general and no small importance. It interests the religionist who looks upon

Poems, Religious, Historical, and Political. By Eliza R. Snow. Vol. I. Morocco extra, 6s. 6d.; calf gilt, 6s.; cloth gilt, 3s. 6d.; cloth embossed, 2s. 6d.

The Government of God, by John Taylor, one of the Twelve Apostles. First printed in 1852. Stiff covers, 1s. 9d.

Latter Day Saints in Utah. Opinion of Judge Snow upon the official course of His Excellency Gov. B. Young—Trial of Howard Egan on indictment, for the murder of James Monroe, verdict—A Bill to establish a Territorial Government for Utah. The Territorial Officers, &c. 6d.

One Year in Scandinavia. Results of the Gospel in Denmark and Sweden, by Erastus Snow, One of the Twelve Apostles. 3d.

Reports of Three Nights' Public Discussion in Bolton, between William Gibson, H. P., Presiding Elder of the Manchester Conference of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, and the Rev. Woodville Woodman, Minister of the New Jerusalem Church. First published in 1851. 6d.

Assassination of Joseph and Hyrum Smith; also a condensed History of the expulsion of the Saints from Nauvoo, by Elder John S. Fullmer, Pastor of the Manchester, Liverpool, and Preston Conferences. First printed in 1855. 5d.

Testimonies for the Truth; a record of Manifestations of the Power of God—miraculous and providential—witnessed in the travels and experience of Benjamin Brown, H. P., Pastor of the London, Reading, Kent, and Essex Conferences. It is a list of the Miracles performed by the first Mormons. Printed in Liverpool, 1853. 4d.

Works by Parley P. Pratt, one of the Twelve Apostles.

Key to the Science of Theology: designed as an introduction to the First Principles of Spiritual Philosophy, Religion, Law, and Government, as delivered by the Ancients, and as restored in this Age, for the Final Development of Universal Peace, Truth, and Knowledge. First published in 1855. It is a volume far superior in matter and manner to the average run of Mormon composition. Morocco extra, 5s. 6d.; calf grained, 3s. 6d.; cloth embossed, 2s.

The Voice of Warning; or, an Introduction to the Faith and Doctrine of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. This work has been translated into French. Morocco extra, 4s.; calf gilt edges, 3s.; calf grained, 2s. 6d.; cloth embossed, 1s. 6d.

Works by Orson Pratt, A.M., one of the Twelve Apostles.

Absurdities of Immaterialism, or a Reply to T. W. P. Taylder's Pamphlet, entitled "The Materialism of the Mormons, or Latter Day Saints, Examined and Exposed." First Edition in 1849. 4d.

Great First Cause; or, the Self-moving Forces of the Universe. 2d.

Divine Authenticity of the Book of Mormon, in 6 parts. Each Part 2d.

Divine Authority, or the Question, was Joseph Smith sent of God? First published in 1848. 2d.

Remarkable Visions. First published in 1849. 2d.

The Kingdom of God, in 4 parts. First Edition in 1849. Parts 1, 2, 3, each 1d. Part 4, 2d.

it as the "scourge of corrupted Christianity," as much as the sceptic that admires how in these days of steam-travelling,

Reply to a Pamphlet printed at Glasgow, with the approbation of Clergymen of different denominations, entitled, "Remarks on Mormonism." First Edition in 1840. 2d.

New Jerusalem; or, the Fulfilment of Modern Prophecy. First published in 1849. 3d.

Title and Index to the above Works. ½d.

The Seer. Vol. I. 12 numbers, II. 8 numbers. Each number 2d. The two volumes bound in one, in half calf, 5s.

A Series of Pamphlets, now being published on the first Principles of the Gospel. The following numbers are already out—Chap. 1, The True Faith. Chap. 2, True Repentance. Chap. 3, Water Baptism. Chap. 4, the Holy Spirit. Chap. 5, Spiritual Gifts. First printed in 1857. Each Number 2d.

Works by Lorenzo Snow, one of the Twelve Apostles.

The Voice of Joseph. A Brief Account of the Rise, Progress, and Persecutions of the Church of Jesus Christ of L. D. Saints, with their present Position and Prospects in Utah Territory; together with American Exiles' Memorial to Congress. First published in 1852. 3d.

The Only Way to be Saved. An Explanation of the First Principles of the Doctrine of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. 1d.

The Italian Mission. 4d.

Works by Elder Orson Spencer, A.B.

Letters exhibiting the most prominent Doctrines of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, in reply to the Rev. William Crowel, A.M., Boston, Mass., U.S.A. First printed in 1852. Morocco extra, 4s.; calf grained, 2s. 6d.; cloth embossed, 1s. 6d.

Patriarchal Order, or Plurality of Wives. (Being the Fifteenth Letter in Correspondence with the Rev. William Crowel, A.M.) 2d.

The Prussian Mission of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints. Report of Elder Orson Spencer, A.B., to President Brigham Young. 2d.

Works by Elder John Jacques.

Catechism for Children. Cloth gilt edges, 10d.; stiff covers, 6d.

Exclusive Salvation. 1d.

Salvation. A Dialogue in Two Parts. Each Part 1d.

I will conclude this long enumeration with Catalogue of the principal works in foreign languages.

Works in French.

Le Livre de Mormon. (Book of Mormon.) 3s. 6d.

Une Voix d'Avertissement. (Voice of Warning.) Par Parley P. Pratt. Morocco gilt edges, 4s.; roan, 1s. 9d.; cloth, 1s. 6d.; paper covers, 1s. 3d.

Les Mormons et leurs Ennemis. (The Latter Day Saints and their Enemies.) Par T. B. H. Stenhouse, President des Missions Suisse et Italienne. 1s. 6d.

Autorité Divine. (Divine Authority.) Par L. A. Bertrand, Elder. 4d.

De la Necessité de Nouvelles Révélations prouvée par la Bible. Par John Taylor, un des Douze Apôtres. 4d.

Aux Amis de la Vérité Religieuse. Par John Taylor, Elder. 2d.

Epitre du President de la Mission Française à l'Eglise des Saints des Derniers-

printing, and telegramming, when "many run to and fro," and when "knowledge" has been "increased," human credu-

jouis en France et dans les Iles de la Manche. (Epistle of the President of the French Mission, &c.) 1½d.

Traité sur le Baptême. Par John Taylor, un des Douze Apôtres. 2d.

Works in German.

Das Buch Mormon. (The Book of Mormon.) 2s. 6d.

Eine Gottliche Offenbarung; und Belehrung uber den Ehestand. (Revelation on Marriage; and Patriarchal order or Plurality of Wives.) Stiff covers, 6d.

Zion's Panier. (Zion's Pioneer.) No. 1, 2d.

Works in Italian.

Il Libro di Mormon. (The Book of Mormon.) Morocco extra, 6s. 6d.; grained roan, 4s. 6d.

Works in Danish.

Mormons Bog. (The Book of Mormon.) Grained roan, 4s.

Works in Welsh.

Llyfr Mormon. (Book of Mormon.) Grained roan, 4s.; roan gilt edges, 4s. 6d.

Athrawiaeth a Chyfamodau. (Doctrine and Covenants.) Grained roan, 3s. 6d.; roan, gilt edges, 3s. 6d.

Llfyr Hymnau. (Hymn Book.) Marble calf, 2s.; grained roan, 2s. 3d.; calf gilt edges, 2s. 6d.

Y Perl o Fawr Bris. (Pearl of Great Price.) 1s. 2d.

Priodas a Moesau yn Utah, gan Parley P. Pratt. (Marriage and Morals in Utah, by Parley P. Pratt.) 1d.

Prophwyd y Jubili. (The Millennial Prophet.) Vol. III. unbound. 2s. 6½d.

By Elder Dan Jones.

Yr Eurgrawn Ysgrythyrol. (Casket, or Treatises on upwards of 100 subjects.) Half calf, 5s. 3d.; unbound, 3s. 6d.

Pwy yw Duw y Saint? (Who is the God of the Saints?) 2½d.

Yr Hen Grefydd Newydd. (The old Religion anew.) 6d.

Annerchiad i'r Person, &c. (Proclamation to the Reverends, &c.) 1½d.

Gwrthbrofion i'r Spaulding Story am Llyfr Mormon. (Spaulding Story, &c., refuted.) 2d.

Annhoblogrwydd Mormoniaeth. (Unpopularity of Mormonism.) 1d.

Arweinydd i Seion. (Guide to Zion.) 1½d.

Pa beth yw Mormoniaeth? (What is Mormonism?) ½d.

Pa beth yw gras Cadwedigol? (What is saving Grace?) ½d.

Dadl ar Mormoniaeth? (Discussion on Mormonism.) 2d.

Anffyddiaeth Sectyddiaeth. (Scepticism of Sectarianism.) 1d.

Anddiffyniad rhag Cam-gyhuddiadau. (Replies to False Charges.) 1d.

Y Lleidr ar y Groes. (The Thief on the Cross.) ½d.

"Peidiwch a'u Gwrando." ("Don't go to hear them.") ½d.

Egwyddorion Cyntaf a Gwahoddiadau. (First Principles and Invitations.) ½d.

Ai duw a Ddatgudodd Joseph Smith. (Divinity of Joseph's Mission.) 1d.

Llofruddiad Joseph a Hyrum Smith. (Assassination of Joseph and Hyrum Smith.) 1d.

Tarddiad Llfyr Mormon. (Origin of the Book of Mormon.) 1d.

lity will display itself in the same glaring colours which it wore ere the diffusion of knowledge became a part of social labour. The philosophic observer will detect in it a notable example of how *mens agitat molem*, the "powerful personal influence of personal character," and the "effect that may be produced by a single mind inflexibly applied to the pursuit of a single object;" and another proof that "it is easier to extend the belief of the multitude than to contract it; a circumstance which proceeds from the false but prevalent notion that too much belief is at least an error on the right side." The statist will consider it in its aspect as a new system of colonisation. In America the politician will look with curiosity at a despotism thriving in the centre of a democracy, and perhaps with apprehension at its future efforts, in case of war or other troubles, upon the destinies of the whilome Great Republic. In England, which principally supplies this number of souls, men, instead of regarding it as one of many safety valves, will be reminded of their obligations towards the classes by

Dammeg y Pren Ffrwythlawn. (Parable of the Fruitful Tree.) ½d.
Darlun o'r Byd Crefyddol. (The Religious World Illustrated.) ½d.
Traethodau D. Jones, yn rhwym mewn hanner cwen &c. (D. Jones' Works bound in half calf). 6s. 4d.

By Elder John Davies.

Yr hyn sydd o ran, &c. (That which is in part, &c.) 1d.
Epistol Cyffredinol Cyntaf. (First General Epistle of the first Presidency.) 1d.
Traethawd ar Wyrthiau. (Treatise on Miracles.) 1d.
Etto Adolygiad, &c. Chwech Rhifyn. (Do. in reply to Anti-Mormon Lectures, Six Nos. (Each No. 1d.)
Pregethu i'r Ysbrydion yn Ngharchar, &c. (Preaching to the Spirits in Prison, &c.) 1d.
Ewch a Dysgwch. (Go and Teach.) ½d.
Darlithiau ar Ffydd, gan Joseph Smith. (Joseph Smith's Lectures on Faith.) 4d.
Y Donian Ysbrydol yn Mrawdlys y Golyn. (The Spiritual Gifts before their Enemies' Tribunal.) 2d.
Traethawd ar Fedydd. (Treatise on Baptism.) 1d.
Corff Crist, neu yr Eglwys. (The Body or Church of Christ.) 1d.
Ffordd y Bywyd Tragywyddol. (The Way of Eternal Life.) 1d.
Yr Achos Mawr Cyntaf, gan O. Pratt. (Great First Cause, by O. Pratt.) 2d.
Profwch Bob Peth, &c. (Prove all things, &c.) ½d.
Athrawiaeth Iachus. (Sound Doctrine.) ½d.
Ymddyddanion yn Gymraeg a Saesonaeg. (Dialogues in Welsh and English.) ½d.
Llythyron Capt. Jones o Ddyffryn y Ll. H. Mawr, yn desgrifio ardderchawgrwydd Seion. (Beauties of Zion described by Capt. Jones, in a Series of Letters, from Gt. S. L. Valley.) 2d.

which Mormonism is fed, and urged to the improvement of education, religion, and justice. And I hope to make it appear that the highly coloured social peculiarities of the New Faith have been used as a tool by designing men to raise up enmity against a peaceful, industrious, and law-abiding people whose whole history has been a course of cruel persecution, which if seen really believed in his own improvement would be a disgrace to a self-styled enlightened age. The prejudice has naturally enough extended from America to England. In 1845, when the Mormons petitioned for permission to retire to Vancouver's Island, they met with nothing but discouragement. And even in 1860, I am told, when a report was raised that Mr. Brigham Young would willingly have taken refuge with his adherents, in the valley of the Saskatchewan, the British Minister was instructed to oppose the sinful emigration to the utmost of his power.

On the evening of our arrival Lieutenant Dana and I proceeded to the store of Messrs. Livingston, Bell, and Co.—formerly Livingston and Kinkhead—the outlets of Camp Floyd, and the most considerable Gentile merchants in Gt. S. L. City; he to learn the readiest way of reaching head-quarters, I to make inquiries about the San Francisco road. We were cordially received by both these gentlemen, who, during the whole period of my stay, did all in their power to make the place pleasant. Governor Bell, as he is generally called, presently introduced me to his wife, a very charming person, of English descent, whose lively manners contrasted strongly and agreeably with the almost monastic gloom which the régime of the "lady-saints" casts over society. Lieutenant Dana was offered seats in Mr. Livingston's trotting-wagon on the ensuing Monday. I was less fortunate. Captain Miller, of Millersville, the principal agent and director at this end of the road, informed me that he had lately ceased to run the wagon, which had cost the company $15,000 a month, returning but $90,000 per annum, and was sending the mails on mule-back. However, my informants agreed that a party would probably be starting soon, and that, all things failing, I could ride the road, though with some little risk of scalp. We ended with a bottle of Heidseck, and with cigars which were not unpleasant even after the excellent "gold-leaf tobacco" of the States.

On the next day, Sunday, we walked up the main street northwards, and doubling three corners of Temple Block, reached the large adobe house, with its neat garden, the abode of the then Governor, Hon. Alfred Cumming. This gentleman, a Georgian by birth, after a long public service as Indian agent in the northern country, was, after several refusals, persuaded by the then President, who knew his high honour and tried intrepidity, to assume the supreme executive authority at Gt. S. L. City. The conditions were that polygamy should not be interfered with, nor forcible measures resorted to except in extremest need. Governor Cumming, accompanied by his wife, and an escort of 600 dragoons, left the Mississippi in the autumn of 1857, at a time when the Mormons were in arms against the Federal authority, and ended his journey only in April of the ensuing year. By firmness, prudence, and conciliation, he not only prevented any collision between the local militia and the U. S. army, which was burning to revenge itself for the terrible hardships of the campaign, but succeeded in restoring order and obedience throughout the Territory. He had been told before entering that his life was in danger; he was not, however, a man to be deterred from a settled purpose, and experience showed, that so far from being molested, he was received with a salute and all the honours. Having been warned that he might share the fate of Governor Boggs, who, in 1843, was shot through the mouth when standing at the window, he enlarged the casements of his house in order to give the shooter a fair chance. His determination enabled him to issue, a few days after his arrival, a proclamation offering protection to all persons illegally restrained of their liberty in Utah. The scrupulous and conscientious impartiality which he has brought to the discharge of his difficult and delicate duties, and more still his resolution to treat the Saints like Gentiles and citizens, not as Digger-Indians or felons, have won him scant favour from either party. The anti-Mormons use very hard language, and declare him to be a Mormon in Christian disguise. The Mormons, though more moderate, can never, by their very organization, rest contented without the combination of the temporal with the spiritual power. The Governor does not meet his predecessor, the ex-Governor, Mr. Brigham Young, from prudential motives, except on public duty. Mrs. Cumming visits Mrs. Young, and at the

houses of the principal dignitaries, this being nearly the only society in the place. As among Moslems, a Lady M. W. Montagu can learn more of domestic life in a week than a man can in a year, so it is among the Mormons. I cannot but express a hope, that the amiable Mrs. Cumming will favour us with the results of her observation and experience, and that she will be as disinterested and unprejudiced as she is talented and accomplished. The kindness and hospitality which I found at the Governor's, and indeed at every place in New Zion, is "ungrateful to omit," and would be "odious to repeat."

We dined with H. R. at the usual hour, 2 P.M. On the way I could well note observantly upon the main features of the city, which, after the few use of the perfect compass, were becoming familiar to me. The first remark was, that every meridional street is traversed in both sides by a streamlet of limpid water, virulent-frigent, and gurgling with a murmur which would make a Persian Moollah long for imperial drinks. The supplies are brought by raised and hollowed water courses from City Creek, Red Butte, and other Kanyons, lying north and east of the settlement. The first wells are never less than forty-five feet deep; artesians have been proposed for the best sites, but the expense has hitherto proved an obstacle. Citizens can now draw with ability trouble their drinking water in the morning, when it is purest, from the clear and sparkling streams that flow over the pebbly beds before their doors. The surplus is reserved for the purposes of irrigation, without which, as the "distillation from above" will not suffice, Deseret would still be a desert, and what is not wanted ovells the City Creek, and eventually the waves of the *Jordan*. The element, which flows at about the rate of four miles an hour, is under a chief water-master or commissioner, assisted by a water-master in each ward, and by a deputy in each block, all sworn to see the fertilizing fluid fairly distributed. At the corners of every ward there is a water-gate which controls the supplies that branch off to the several blocks, and each lot of one and a quarter acres, is allowed about three hours' irrigation during the week. For repairs and other expenses a property tax of one mill per dollar is raised, and the total of the impost in 1860 was $1163·25. The system works like clock-work. "The Act to incorporate the Gt. S. L. City Waterworks," was approved Jan. 21, 1853.

Walking in a northward direction up Main, otherwise called Whiskey Street, we could not but observe the "magnificent distances" of the settlement which, containing 9000—12,000 souls, covers an area of three miles. This broadway is 132 feet wide, including the side walks, which are each twenty, and, like the rest of the principal avenues, is planted with locust and other trees. There are twenty or twenty-one wards or cantons, numbered from the S.E. "boustrophedon" to the N.W. corner. They have a common fence, and a bishop apiece. They are called after the creeks, trees, people, or positions, as Mill Creek Ward, Little Cotton Wood, Denmark, and South Ward. Every ward contains about nine blocks, each of which is forty rods square. The area of ten acres is divided into four to eight lots, of two and a half to one and a quarter acres each, 264 feet by 132. A city ordinance places the houses twenty feet behind the front line of the lot, leaving an intermediate place for shrubbery or trees. This rule, however, is not observed in Main Street.

The streets are named from their direction to the Temple Block. Thus Main Street is East Temple Street, No. 1; that behind it is State Road, or East Temple Street 2, and so forth, the ward being also generally specified. Temple Block is also the point to which latitude and longitude are referred. It lies in N. lat. 40° 45′ 44″, W. long. (G.) 112° 00′ 09″, and 4300 feet above sea level.

Main Street is rapidly becoming crowded. The western block, opposite the hotel, contains about twenty houses of irregular shape and size. The buildings are intended to supply the principal wants of a far-western settlement, as bakery, butchery, and blacksmithery, hardware and crockery, paint and whip warehouse, a "fashionable tailor"—and "fashionable" in one point, that his works are more expensive than Poole's—shoe stores, tannery and currier; the Pantechnicon, on a more pretentious style than its neighbours, kept by Mr. Gilbert Clements, Irishman and orator; dry goods, groceries, liquors, and furniture shops, Walker's agency, and a kind of restaurant for ice-cream, a luxury which costs $0·25 a glass; saddlers, dealers in "food, flour, and provisions," hats, shoes, clothing, bath baths, shingles, timber, copper, tin, crockery ware, carpenters' tools, and mouse-traps; a watchmaker and repairer, a gunsmith, locksmith, and armourer, soap and candle maker, nail maker,

and venders of "Yankee notions." On the eastern side, where the same articles are sold on a larger scale, live the principal Gentile merchants, Mr. Gilbert and Mr. Nixon, an English saint; Mr. R. Gill, a "physiological barber;" Mr. Godbe's "apothecary and drug store;" Goddard's confectionery; Messrs. Hockaday and Burr, general dealers, who sell everything from a bag of potatoes to a yard of gold lace; and various establishments, Mormon and others. Crossing the street that runs east and west, we pass on the right hand a small block, occupied by Messrs. Dyer and Co. outlets to a regiment in Arizona, and next to it the stores of Messrs. Hooper and Cronyn, with an ambrotype and daguerreian room behind. The stores, I may remark, are far superior, in all points, to the shops in an English country town that is not a regular watering place. Beyond this lies the adobe house, with its wooden Ionic stoop or piazza (the portico is a favourite here), and well-timbered garden, occupied by Bishop Hunter; and adjoining it the long tenement inhabited by the several relicts of Mayor Jedediah M. Grant. Further still, and facing the Prophets' Block, is the larger adobe house belonging to Gen. Wells and his family. Opposite, or on the western side, is the well-known store of Livingston, Bell, and Co., and beyond it the establishment, now belonging to the nine widows and the son of the murdered apostle Parley P. Pratt. Still looking westwards, the Globe bakery and restaurant, and a shaving saloon, lead to the "Mountaineer Office," a conspicuous building, forty-five feet square, two storied, on a foundation of cut stone stuccoed red to resemble sandstone, and provided with a small green-balconied belvidere. The cost was $20,000. It was formerly the Council House, and was used for church purposes. When purchased by the Territory the Public Library was established in the northern part; the office of the "Deseret News" on the first story, and that of the "Mountaineer" on the ground floor. This brings us to the 1st South Temple Street, which divides the "Mountaineer" office from the consecrated ground. In this vicinity are the houses of most of the apostles, Messrs. Taylor, Cannon, Woodruff, and O. Pratt.

Crowds were flocking into Temple Block for afternoon service; yet I felt disappointed by the scene. I had expected to see traces of "workmen in abundance, hewers and workers of

stone and timber, and all manner of cunning men for every manner of work," reposing from their labours on the Sabbath. I thought, at any rate, to find—

"pars ducere muros
Molirique arcem, et manibus subvolvere saxa."

It seemed hardly in accordance with the energy and devotedness of a new faith that a hole in the ground should represent the House of the Lord, whilst Mr. Brigham Young, the Prophet, thinking of his own comfort before the glory of God, is lodged, like Solomon of old, in what here appears a palace. Nor, reflecting that without a Temple the dead cannot be baptised out of purgatory, was I quite satisfied when reminded of the fate of Nauvoo (according to Gentiles the Mormons believe that they must build nine temples before they will be suffered to worship in peace), and informed that the purely provisional works, which had been interrupted by the arrival of the army in 1858, would shortly be improved.

The lines of Temple Block—which, as usual, is ten acres square = forty rods each way—run towards the cardinal points. It stands clear of all other buildings, and the locust trees, especially those on the sunny south side, which have now been planted seven years, will greatly add to its beauties. It is surrounded with a foundation wall of handsomely dressed red sandstone, raised to the height of ten feet by adobe stuccoed over to resemble a richer material. Each facing has thirty flat pilastres, without pedestal or entablature, but protected, as the adobe always should be, by a sandstone coping. When finished the whole will be surmounted by an ornamental iron fence. There are four gates, one to each side—of these two, the northern and western, are temporarily blocked up with dry-stone walls, whilst the others are left open—which in time will become carriage entrances, with two side ways for foot passengers. According to accounts the wall and the foundations have already cost one million of dollars, or a larger sum than that spent upon the entire Nauvoo Temple.

Temple Block—the only place of public and general worship in the city—was consecrated and a Tabernacle was erected in September 1847, immediately after the celebrated exodus from "Egypt on the banks of the Mississippi," on a spot revealed by

the past to the present Prophet and his adherents. Two sides of the wall having been completed, ground was broken on the 14th of February 1853, for the foundation of the building. One part of the ceremony consisted of planting a post at the central point, the main "stake for the curtains of Zion:" every successive step in advance was commemorated by imposing ceremonies, salvos of guns, bands playing, travels attending, addresses by the Governor, Mr. Brigham Young, prayers and pious exercises. The foundations of the Temple, which are sixteen feet deep, and composed of hard grey granite, in colour like that of Aberdeen or Quincy, are now concealed from view; and the lumber huts erected for the workmen, were, when the Mormons made their minor Hegirah to Provo City, removed to the Sugar House Ward, three miles S. E. of the city.

The Temple Block is at present a mere waste. A central excavation, which resembles a large oblong grave, is said by Gentiles to be the beginning of a baptismal font twenty feet deep. The S.-western corner is occupied by the Tabernacle, an adobe building 126 feet long, from N. to S. and 64 wide from E. to West: its interior, ceilinged with an elliptical arch — the width being its span — can accommodate 2000 — 3000 souls. It urgently requires enlarging. Over the entrances at the gable ends, which open to the N. and S., is a wood-work representing the sun with his usual wildfire of yellow beams, like a Somali's wig, or the symbol of the Persian Empire. The roof is of shingles: it shelters under its projecting eaves a whole colony of swallows, and there are four chimneys — a number insufficient for warmth of one season, or for ventilation at the other. The speaker or preacher stands on the W. side of the building, which is reserved for the three highest dignities, viz. the First Presidency, the "Twelve" (Apostles), and the President of the State of Zion: distinguished strangers are also admitted. Of late, as in the old Quaker meeting houses at Philadelphia, the brethren in the Tabernacle have been separated from the "sisters," who sit on the side opposite the preacher's left, and according to Gentiles, it is proposed to separate the Christians from the Faithful, that the "goats" may no longer mingle with the sheep.

Immediately north of the Tabernacle is the Bowery — in early spring a canopy of green leafy branches which are left to

ENDOWMENT HOUSE AND TABERNACLE. (From the West.)

within with the year, suspended on wooden pegs. The interior will be described when we attend the lectures of worship next Sunday.

In the extreme N.W. angle of the Block is the Endowment, here pronounced *On-dowment House*, separated from the Tabernacle by a high wooden paling. The building of which I made a pen and ink sketch from the west, is of adobie with a pent roof and four windows, one blocked up: the central and higher portion is flanked by two wings, smaller counterparts of the same shape. The Endowment House is the place of great mysteries, and all appertaining to it is carefully concealed from Gentile eyes and ears: the result is that human sacrifices are said to be performed within its walls. Mrs. Smith and Mr. Hyde have described the mysteries there performed within these humble walls; but, for reasons given before, there is reason to doubt the truth of their descriptions; such orgies as they describe could not co-exist with the respectability which is the law of the land. M. Remy has detailed the programme with all the constancy of an eye-witness, which he was not. The public declare that the ceremonies consist of some show which in the middle ages, would be called a comedy or mystery,—possibly Paradise Lost and Paradise Regained,—and connect it with the working of a Mason's lodge. The respectable judge Phelps, however supposed to take the place of the Father of lies, whom tempting Adam and Eve, is popularly known as "the Devil." The two small wings are said to contain fonts for the two sexes, where baptism by total immersion is performed. According to Gentiles, the ceremony occupies eleven or twelve hours. The neophyte, after bathing is anointed with oil, and dressed in clean white cotton garments, cap and shirt, of which the latter is nicely conserved.—Dr. Richards saved his life at the Carthage massacre, by wearing it,—and a small square handkerchief, with worked or painted fig leaves; he receives a new name and a distinguishing grip, and is bound to secrecy by dreadful oaths. Moreover, it is said that, as in all such societies, there are several successive degrees, all of which are not laid open to initiation till the Temple shall be finished. But,—in every mason history,—the "red-hot poker" and other ideas concerning masonic institutions have prevailed when justice disbelievers have been rejected. Similarly in the Mormonite mystery, it is highly probable that, in consequence of the consideration reserve of the

people upon a subject which it would be indelicate to mention, the evident desire have raised the deepest feel.

The other features of the enclosure are a wall near the Tabernacle not visible above it, the western wall for drainage, and at the eastern entrance a small habitation for the carriage and guards. The future Temple was designed by an Anglo-American architect, Mr. Truman O. Angell. The plan is described at full length in the Latter Day Saints' "Millennial Star," December 3, 1864, and drawings, apparently copied from this original in the historian's office, have been published at Liverpool, besides the small sketches in the works of Mr. Hyde and M. Remy. It is hardly worth while here to describe the general reader with a lengthy description of shops and complicated pile, a syncretism of Greek and Roman, Gothic and Moorish, not revealed like that of Moroni, but planned by man, which will probably never be completed. It has been transferred to the Appendix (No. 2), for the benefit of students: after briefly saying that the whole is symbolical, and that it is intended to dazzle by its indefinite majesty the beholder's sight, I will repeat the architect's concluding words, which are somewhat in the style of Parr's Life Pills advertisements, "the other particulars will till the house is done, then come and see it."

After dining with the Governor we sat under the stoop enjoying, as we might in India, the cool of the evening. Several visitors dropped in, amongst them Mr. and Mrs. Stenhouse. He —Elder T. B. H. Stenhouse— is a Scotchman by birth, and has passed through the usual stages of neophyte (larva), missionary (pupa), and elder or fully-developed Saint (imago). Madame was from Jersey, spoke excellent French, talked English without mutilation or mutilation, and showed a highly cultivated mind. She had travelled with her husband on a propagandist tour to Switzerland and Italy, where, as president of the mission for three years, he was a "diligent and faithful labourer in the great work of the last dispensation." He became a Saint in 1840, at the age of 21; lived the usual life of poverty and privation, founded the Southampton Conference, converted a lawyer amongst other great achievements, and propagated the Faith successfully in Scotland as in England. The conversation turned—somehow in Gt. S. L. City it generally does—upon polygamy, or rather plurality, which keep in the public mind,

and for the first time I heard that phase of the family tie sensibly, nay heavenly, advanced on religious grounds by fair lips. Mr. Sherborne kindly offered to accompany me up the minaret, as the first hand-rail train was expected to enter, and to point out whatever might be interesting. I saw Elder and High Priest S. almost every day during my stay at Gt. S. L. City, and found in his society both pleasure and profit. We of course avoided those mysterious points, into which, as an outsider, I had no right to enter; the elder was communicative enough upon all others, and freely gave me leave to use his information. The reader, however, will kindly bear in mind that being a strict Mormon, Mr. S. could enlighten me only upon one side of the subject; his statements were therefore carefully referred to the "other part;" moreover, as he could never see any but the perfections of his system, the blame of having printed only what I deem its imperfections is not to be charged upon him. His power of faith struck me dumb. I had once asked him what became of the Mormon Tables of the Law, the Golden Plates which according to the Gentiles were removed by an angel after they had done their work. He replied that he knew not, that his belief was independent of all such quibbling, that Mormonism is and must be true to the exclusion of all other systems. I saw before me an instance how the brain or mind of man can, by mere force of habit and application, imbue itself with any idea.

Long after dark I walked home alone. There were no lamps in any but Main Street, yet the city is as safe as St. James's Square, London. There are perhaps not more than twenty-five or thirty constables or policemen in the whole place, under their captain, a Scandinavian, Mr. Sleeny, "by name as well as nature my," said the guard on public works is merely nominal. No excellent order must be referred to the perfect system of private police, resulting from the constitution of Mormon society, which in this point imitates the caste system of Hindostan. There is no escape from the hand of the Church and State; everything, from the highest to the lowest detail of private and public life, must be brought to the rule and submitted to the judgment of the father confessor-in-chief. Gentiles affect disbelief that the Prophet is acquainted with their every word half an hour after it is spoken; and from certain hallowing tales which I heartily used

ation; my opinion is that, allowing something for exaggeration, they are not very far wrong. In London and Paris the foreigner is subjected, though perhaps he may not know it, to the most searching surveillance, and all kinds of his movements are visible to the eyes of the Police-officer. We entirely deny, therefore, that at Ch. S. L. City, a stranger, before pouring himself at the heels of the Mormons, should begin by being an object of suspicion.

On Monday, as the sun was sloping towards the west, Mr. S. called to fix our hour when the coach had already found from Bridgeston Kenyon; we were to appear. We sat down together "down town" at once. Near the angle of Main Street I was shown the place where a short time before my arrival a sudden murder was committed. Two men, named Johnston and Brown, upwards eighty, who had notoriously been guilty of forgery and horse-stealing, were returning home one fine evening when both fell with pistol-ball in each, cunningly placed under the heart-valve. The bodies were carried to the nearest house, which is how the thought or dread history, to be exposed, as is the custom, for a time: the citizens, when asked if they suspected who did the deed, invariably replied, with a philosophical sang-froid, that, in the first place, they didn't know; and, secondly, that they didn't care. Of course the Gentiles hinted that life had been taken by "avenging" that is to say, by the secret orders of Mr. Brigham Young and his Police. But even had such been the case—of course it was the merest suspicion—such a person would not have been very repugnant to that wild fanaticism, the Theocracy of the Rocky Mountains. In a place where, amongst much that is honest and respectable, there are notable exceptions, this wild, unflinching, and unerring justice, secret and sudden, is the rod of iron which protects the good. During my residence at the Mormon City not a single murder was, to the best of my belief, committed: the three days which I spent at Christian Carson City witnessed three. Moreover, from the Mississippi to the S. L. City, I noticed that the citizens were for the most part of stalwart, sturdy and manly build: the weedy, sky-shiny, and other classically promising of Europe are apparently unknown, although they might be used usefully and efficiently with great chance of detection. That while emigrants have sometimes wiped off the Indian, as the English settler settled with sometimes sublimate the hapless

dwellers of the great Southern Continent, is scarcely to be doubted; at the same time, it must be owned that they have rarely tried that form of amusement upon one another.

As we issued from the city, we saw the smoke-like column which announced that the caravan were crossing the Jordan-ford; and people were hurrying from all sides to greet and to get news of friends. Presently the carts came. All the new arrivals were in dusty clothes, the mules wearied and starved, and the girls, who were singing hymns, hoarse in singing thereto. The company was sunburned, but looked well and thoroughly happy, and few except the very young and the very old, who suffer most on such journeys, troubled the cities. They marched through clouds of dust over the sandy road leading up the eastern portion of the town, accompanied by crowds, some on foot, others on horseback, and a few in traps and other "locomotive dotes," talking and laughing. A few youths of rather a rowdyish appearance were skirmishing in all the directions of western frappings—Buffalo Mountain hats, tall and broad, or steeple-crowned felts, covering their multi-plaited, embroidered buckskin garments, huge leggings, with caterpillar or millepede fringes, red or rainbow-coloured flannel shirts, gigantic spurs, bright-hilted pistols and queer-sheathed knives stuck in red sashes with gracefully depending ends. The generous *cords* of the Valley Tau was easily distinguished from imported goods by the perfect ease with which they sat and managed their animals. Around me were all manner of familiar faces—heavy English mechanics, discharged soldiers, clerks, and agricultural labourers, a few Germans, students, farmers, husbandmen, and peasants from Scandinavia and Switzerland, and correspondents and editors, clergy, preachers, and other dignitaries from the Eastern States. When the mule reached the public square—at Gt. S. L. City the "squares" are hollow as in England, not solid as in the States—of the 6th ward, the wagons were ranged in line for the final encampment. Before the invasion of the army the First President made a point of honouring the entrance of hand-cart trains (but these only) by a greeting in person. Of late he seldom leaves his house except for the Tabernacle; when inclined for a ride-out, the day and the hour are kept secret. It is said that Mr. Brigham Young, despite his powerful will and high moral courage, does not share the reputation personal intrepidity of Mr.

Joseph Smith: his followers deny this, but it rests on the best and fairest Gentile evidence. He has guards at his gates, and he never appears in public unattended by friends and followers, who are of course armed. That such a mental anomaly often exists, those familiar with the biographies of the Brahmin officials at the courts of Poonah, Sattara, and other places in India, well know: many a "Pant," whose reckless audacity in intrigue conducted under imminent danger of life argued the courage of a Cœur-de-Lion, was personally fearful as Hobbes, and displayed at the depth the terrors of Robespierre. A moment of fear is recounted of St. Peter; Erasmus was not the stuff of which martyrs are made, and even the bravo Sabrevois once ran. However, in the case of the Prophet there is an absolute necessity for precautions: as Gentiles have themselves owned to me, many a ruffian, if he found an opportunity, would, from pure love of notoriety, even without stronger incentive, try his revolver or his bowie-knife upon the "Big Mormon."

On this occasion the place of Mr. Brigham Young was taken by President Bishop Hunter, a Pennsylvanian, whom even the most fanatic and intentionally evil-speaking anti-Mormon must regard with respect. Preceded by a brass band,—"this people" delights in

"Sweeter sound blowing martial sounds",—

and accompanied by the City Marshal, he stood up in his carriage, and, calling up the Captains of Companies, shook hands with them and proceeded forthwith to business. In a short time arrangements were made to house and employ all who required work, whether men or women. Having read certain offensive accounts about "girl-hunting elders," "gay-headed gallants," and "ogling apostles," I was somewhat surprised to see that everything was conducted with the greatest decorum. The Gentiles, however, declare that Mr. Brigham Young and the high dignitaries have issued an order against "presumption" on the part of their followers, who escort and accompany the emigrant ladies across the prairies.

Mr. S. circulated freely amongst the crowd and introduced me to many whose names I do not remember; in almost every case that introduction was followed by some invitation. He now exchanged a word with this "brother," then a few sentences with that "sister," carefully suppressing the Mr. and Madam of the

eastern States. The fraternal address gives a patriarchal and somewhat oriental flavour to Mormon converse; like other things, however, it is apt to run into extremes. If a boy in the streets be asked, "What's your name?" he will reply—if he condescends to do so—"I'm brother such-and-such's son." In order to distinguish children of different mothers, it is usual to prefix the maternal to the paternal parent's name, suppressing the given or Christian name of monogamic lands. Thus, for instance, my sons by Miss Brown, Miss Jones, and Miss Robinson, would call themselves Brother Brown Burton, Brother Jones Burton, and so on. The Saints—even the highest dignitaries—waive the Reverend and the ridiculous Esquire; that "title much in use among vulgar people," which in Old and New England applies to everybody, gentle or simple, has not yet extended to Gt. S. L. City. The Mormon Pontiff and the Eminences around him are simply Brother or Mister—they love the substance and they disdain the shadow of power. *En revanche*, amongst the crowd there are as many Colonels and Majors—about ten being the proportion to one Captain—as in the days when Mrs. Trollope set the Mississippi on fire. Sister is applied to women of all ages, thus avoiding the difficulty of addressing a dowager, as in the eastern States, Madam, in contra-distinction to Miss, her daughter-in-law, or what is worse, of calling her after the English way, old Mrs. A., or, *Scottice*, Mrs. A., senior.

The dress of the fair sex has, I observed, already become peculiar. The article called in Cornwall a "gowk," in other parts of England a "cottage bonnet," and in the U. S. a "sun bonnet," is here universally used, with the difference, however, that the Mormons provide it with a long thick veil behind, which acts like a cape or shawl. A loose jacket and a petticoat, usually of calico or of some inexpensive stuff, compose the *tout visible*. The wealthier affect silks, especially black. The merchants are careful to keep on hand a large stock of fancy goods, millinery, and other feminine adornments. Love of dress is no accident in the mental organization of that sex which aims one called ἡδὺ φόνευμα; the essential is a pleasing foible, in which the semi-nude savage, and the crinolined "civilisee," the nun and quakeress, the sinner and the saint, the *biche*, the *petite-maîtresse*, and the *grande dame*, all meet for once in their lives, pretty much on a par, and on the same ground. Gt. S. L. City

contains three "millinery stores," besides thirteen of dry goods and two of fancy goods, or variation; and more exchange their merchandise for grain.

The contrast of physique between the new arrivals and the older colonists, especially those born in the vicinity of the Prairies, was salient. Whilst the fresh importations wore that solid and sometimes clumsy frame and dimensions that characterize the English at home,—where "beauty is seldom found in cottages or workshops, even when no real hardships are suffered"—the others had much of the delicacy of figure and complexion which distinguishes the American women of the U. S. Physiologists may perhaps doubt so rapid and perceptible an operation of climate, but India proves clearly enough that a very few years suffice to deteriorate form and colour, especially in the weaker half of humanity: why then should we think it impossible that a climate of extremes, an air of unending purity and tonicity, in an arid position 4000 feet above sea level, can produce the opposite results in as short a space of time? But whether my theory stand or fall, the fact remains the same. I remarked to my companion the change from the lymphatic and the sanguine to the bilious-nervous, and the purely nervous temperament, and admired its results, the fining down of extremities, ankle, and wrist, the superior glassiness and thoughtful seam of expression, and the general appearance of higher caste blood. I could not but observe in those born homebreds the noble regular features, the lofty, thoughtful brow, the clear transparent complexion, the long silky hair, and greatest charm of all, the soft smile of the American woman when she does smile. He appeared surprised, and said that most other Gentiles had explained the thinness of form and the seductive look by the perpetual fretting of the fair under the shrivelling régime of polygamy. The belle of the crowd was Miss Sally A——, the daughter of a lawyer, and of course a ci-devant judge. Strict Mormons, however, seldom wag the head at this pretty person; she is supposed to prefer Gentile and Heathenish society, and it is whispered against her that she has actually vowed never to marry a Saint.

I "queried" of my companion, how the new arrivals usually behave at Gt. S. L. City, when the civilization, or rather the humanization of a voyage, a long journey, and the sense of [illegible]

[illegible] mingled by new position, have somewhat mitigated their British hauteur and self-esteem. "Pretty well," he replied; "all appear to be at the top of the tree at once, and they find themselves in the wrong box; no room gets out here by pushing; for higher at the lowest end, a new hand is not trusted; but if fresh mist on mission, there detached, and there allotted to the higher if he shows himself useful." This bore a cachet of truthful-

[illegible]

(Wilson to Mary.)

Many of these English emigrants have passed over this globe without knowing that they are in the United States, and look upon Mr Brigham Young much as Roman Catholics of the last generation regarded the Pope. The Welsh, Danes, and Swedes have been sent on the travels to throw away their blankets and warm clothing, from a conviction that a gulf stream runs through the year in Zion. The misunderstandings of this inexperienced travellers has become a matter of Jeb Miller. An old but favourite illustration, told from the Mississippi to California, is this: A man rides up to a standing wagon, and seeing a wretched looking girl nursing a shriving baby, asks him what the matter with her. "Well now," responds the youth, "guess I'm kinder stumbled—the child's drunk, the mare's in hysterics, brother Jim is playing poker with two gamblers, mother Bell's down, powder a' squirtin' with an Indian stranger, this 'ere baby's got the diarrœa, the team's shook gone dead, the wagon's broke down, it's twenty miles to the next water, I don't care a [illegible] if I never see California."

We returned homewards by the Union Road, in which are two of the principal buildings. On the left is the Council Hall of the Seventies, an edifice (testament of the small local shops, fifty feet long by thirty internally, used for the various purposes of deliberation, preaching, and dancing. I looked through the windows and saw that it was hung with red. It is a provisional building, until a larger one be erected. A little beyond the Seventies Hall, and on the other side of the road, was the Social Hall, the usual scene of Mormon festivities; it resembled

the former, but it was larger—70 × 40 feet—and better furnished. The gay season had not arrived; I lost, therefore, an opportunity of seeing the beauty and fashion of Gt. S. L. City in ball-room toilette, but I heard enough to convince me that the Saints, though grave and unpoetical, are a highly sociable people. They delight in sleighing and in private theatricals, and boast of many good amateur actors, amongst whom Messrs. R. Snow, H. B. Clawson, and W. C. Dunbar are particularly mentioned. Sir E. L. Bulwer will perhaps be pleased to hear that the "Lady of Lyons" excited more furore here than even in Europe. It is intended, as soon as funds can be collected, to build a theatre which will vie with those of the old country. Dancing seems to be considered an edifying exercise. The Prophet dances, the Apostles dance, the Bishops dance. A professor of this branch of the fine arts would thrive in Zion, where the most learned of pedagogues would require to eke out a living after the fashion of one Aristocles, surnamed the "broad-shouldered." The salutation is not in the languid, dawdling style that polite Europe affects; as in the days of our grandparents, "positions" are maintained, steps are elaborately executed, and a somewhat severe muscular exercise is the result. I confess to a prejudice against dancing, after the certain, which we are told is the uncertain, epoch of life, and have often joined in the merriment excited amongst French folks by the aspect of some bald-headed and stiff-jointed "Anglais," mingling doubled ages with joyful youth in a public ball. Yet there is high authority for perseverance in the practice; David danced, we are told, with all his might, and Scipio, according to Seneca, was wont thus to exercise his heroic limbs.

Besides the grand fêtes at the Social Hall and other subscription establishments, there are "Ward Parties," and "Elders' Weekly Cotillion Parties," where possibly the saints dance together, as the Oxford dons did drill—in private. Polkas, as at the Court of St. James's, are disapproved of. It is generally asserted that to the New Faith Terpsichore owes a fresh form of worship, the Mormon cotillion—their quadrille—in which the cavalier leads out, characteristically, two dames. May I not be allowed to recommend the importation of this decided improvement into Leamington and other watering-places, where the proportion of the sexes at "hops" rarely exceeds one to seven?

The balls at the Social Hall are highly select, and are conducted on an expensive scale; invitations are issued on embossed bordered and gilt-edged white paper, say to 75—80 of the élite, including a few of the chief Gentiles. The ticket is in this form and style:—

PARTY AT SOCIAL HALL.

Mr. ——— and Ladies are respectfully invited to attend a Party at the SOCIAL HALL,

ON TUESDAY, FEBRUARY 4, 1868.

Tickets, $10 ($2) per Couple.

Mayor A. O. SMOOT,
Marshal J. C. LITTLE, } Managers.

Committee of Arrangements.

William C. Staines, H. B. Clawson | William Rossiter, Robert T. Burton | Isaac P. Green, Hosea Stout.

Great Salt Lake City, Feb. 1, 1868.

The $10 tickets will admit only one lady with the gentleman; for all extra $2 each must be paid. In the less splendid fêtes $2·50 would be the total price. Premiums are offered when the time draws nigh, but space is limited, and many a Jacob is shorn of his glory by appearing with only Rachel for a follower, and without his train of Leahs, Zilpahs, and Bilhahs.

An account of the last ball may be abridged. The Hall was tastefully and elegantly decorated; the affecting motto "Our Mountain Home," conspicuously placed among hangings and evergreens, was highly effective. At 4 P.M. the Prophet and ex-President entered and "order was called." (N.B. Might not this be tried to a purpose in a London ball-room?) Ascending a kind of platform, with uplifted hands he blessed those present. Further east I have heard of the réunion being done, especially by the *modus de logis*. He then descended to the boards and led off the first cotillion. At 8 P.M. supper was announced; covers for 250 persons had been laid by Mr. Candland, "mine host" of "The Globe." The following is the list of the somewhat substantial goodies that formed the carte.

TERRITORIAL AND CIVIL BALL.

SOCIAL HALL, February 7, 1856.

BILL OF FARE.

First Course.

soups.

Oyster
Oxtail
Vermicelli
Vegetable

Second Course.

meats.

Beef
Mutton
Roasted venison
Pork
Elk
Fish
Chicken
Ducks
Turkeys
Beef
Sagebrush beef
Mutton
Chickens
Ducks
Tripe
Turkey
Ham
Trout
Salmon

stews and vegetables.

Oysters and Ox Tongues
Boiled fish
Cooked Ham
Chickens
Ducks
Turkeys

vegetables.

Potatoes
Onions (i.e. greens)
Parsnips
Cauliflowers
Rice
Potatoes
Pumpkins
Beans
Rice

Pastry.

Tarts Cakes.

Apple pie
Mince pie
Pineapple pie
Quince pie
Peach pie
Currant jelly pie
Custard pie
Apple pie
Mince pie
Pumpkin pie
Peach pie
Custard pie
Jelly cake

Fourth Course.

fruits.

Pears
Peaches
Grapes
Apples
Watermelons
Pears
Peaches
Grapes
Apples
Watermelons

Cordials Tea Coffee

It still be observed that the cuisine in U. T. has some novelties, such as Bear and Beaver. The former meat is a favourite throughout the West, especially when the animal is fresh from feeding; after hybernation it is hard and lean. In the Himalayas many a sportsman, after mastering an artificial appetite to eat bear's grease, has enjoyed a grill of "sully." The paws, which not a little resemble the human hand, are excellent—superb crubs. I cannot pronounce an authority upon beavers' tails; there is no reason, however, why they should be inferior to the appendages of a Cape sheep. "Skew,"—according to my informants—is synonymous with sweet-bread. Mountain, Pioneer, and Sugarballs are nicknames to me, except by their names, which are certainly patriotic if not descriptive.

After supper dancing was resumed with spirit, and in the intervals popular songs and duets were performed by the best musicians. The "finest party of the season," ended as it began, with prayer and benediction, at 5 A.M.—thirteen successive mortal hours—it shown a solid power of enduring enjoyment. And, probably, the revellers wended their way home chanting some kind of national hymn like this, to the tune of the "Ole Kentucky Shore:"

"Let the chorus still be sung
Long live Brother Brigham Young
And blessed be the Vale of Deseret—ee—ee—ee)
And blessed be the Vale of Deseret."

Returning to the hotel we found the Justiciary and the official party safely arrived; they had been delayed three days at Foot of Ridge Station, but they could not complain of the pace at which they came in. The judge was already in conclave with a Pennsylvanian compatriot, Col. S. C. Stambaugh, of the Militia, Surveyor-Gen. U. T. This gentleman is no great favourite with the Saints; they accuse him of a too great skilfulness in "mixing"—cocktails for instance,—and a degree of general joviality that swears (qui jure) with the grave and reverend seignory around him. His crime, it appears to me, chiefly consists in holding a fat appointment. I need hardly say, that at Gt. S. L. City, party feeling rises higher, perhaps, than in any other small place, because religious acrimony is superadded to the many conflicting interests. Every man's son-

curse are his neighbour's; no one apparently ever heard of that person who "became immensely rich"—he quote an Americanism—by "minding his own business." As often happens, religion is made, like slavery in the eastern States and opium in China, the *casus belli*; the root of the quarrel must be sought deeper: in other words, interest only is the Thirteenth that shakes the hand of war. As Mormonism grows in frame becomes more strongly knit. Thus the Gentile merchants, who have made from 150 to 300 per cent. on capital, were, at the time of my visit, preparing to sell off, because they found the combination against them overpowering. For the most part they vowed that there is no people with whom they would rather do business than with the Mormons; praised their honesty and punctuality in payments, and compared them advantageously in such matters with those of the older faith. Yet they had resolved to remove. The total number of Gentiles in the city is probably not more than 300, a small proportion to a body of at least 9000.

A stranger, especially an official, is kindly warned on his first arrival at Gt. S. L. City, of its inveterate cliquism, and is amicably advised to steer a middle course, without turning to the right or to the left, between the Scylla and Charybdis of Christianity and Mormonism. This mezzo-termine may be possible in official matters; in society it is not. I soon saw, that though a traveller on the wing might sit alternately in the tents of Shem and Japhet, a resident would soon be obliged to dwell exclusively in either one or the other. When Gentile and Mormon meet, they either maintain a studied or curly silence, or they enter into a dialogue which on a closer acquaintance with its formalities proves to be a conglomerate of "rile" and "knuggy,"—an unpleasant predicament for those on view. Such, at least, was my short experience, and I believe that of my companions.

Col. Stambaugh, a day or two after the introduction, offered to act cicerone through the Settlement, and I was happy to accept his kindness. One fine evening we drove along the Tooele Road, westward, and drank of the waters of the New Jordan, which, to the unregenerate palate, tasted, I must say, somewhat brackish and ill-flavoured. The river is at this season about one hundred feet broad, and not too deep below its banks

to be useful for irrigation, which, as the City increases, will doubtless be extended. It is spanned by a wooden bridge, so ricketty that it shakes with a child's tread;—the Governor has urgently but unwillingly represented the necessity of reconstruction. But although the true waters, or rather Kabbi emblems of human life,—which contrasts so strongly with the sanctity attached to it by the old Romans and the modern Anglo-Scandinavian,—here still displays itself, in some points there is no disregard for improvement. Mr. Brigham Young has seen the evils of disforesting the land, and the want of plantations; he has lately contracted for planting, near Jordan and elsewhere, a million of young trees at the rate of one cent. each. On the way we saw several fine Durhams and Devons, which are driven out every morning and back every evening under the charge of a boy, who receives one and a half cent per mornem a head. The animals have been brought across the prairies at great trouble and expense; stock breeding is one of the Prophet's useful hobbies, and the difference between the cattle in U. T. and the old Spanish herds still seen in the country parts of California is remarkable. The land, as will presently appear, is better calculated for grazing than for agriculture, and a settlement of 500 souls rarely has less than 500 head of cattle.

Returning from Jordan we re-entered the city by the Western Road, and drove through Mr. Brigham Young's Block, towards the Northern Kanyon. The gateway was surmounted by a plaster group, consisting of a huge vulturine eagle, perched, with wings outspread, neck bended as if smelling the breeze of carrion from afar, and talons clinging upon a yellow bee-hive;—a most uncomfortable and unnatural position for the poor animal. The device is doubtless highly symbolical, emblematical, typical,—in fact, everything but appropriate and commonsensical. The same, however, may be said of one of the most picturesque ensigns in the civilised world,—what have Stars to do with Stripes or Stripes with Stars? It might be the device of the British or Austrian soldier,—only in their case, unlike the flag of the U. S., the Stripes should be many and the Stars few. *En passant* we remarked a kind of guard-room at the eastern doorway of the White House;—a presidential title which the house of prophecy in New Zion shares with the house of polit-

called* at Washington; my information limited, that in case of an assault upon headquarters by Indians, mountain, or white desperadoes, fifty rifles could in three to be brought to bear upon the spot, and 1000 after the first hour. On the eastern side of the compound were the stables; a heath fir effigy surmounted the entrance, and meekly repeated under the Romanic injunction "Take care of your feathers." Beyond this point lay a number of decrepit emigrant wagons, drawn up to form a fence; a young plantation of fruit-trees promised, and the remnants of the fatting well.

We then entered "City," usually known as "Brigham's." Kanyon, the Prophet having a mansion upon the upper course. It is the usual deep narrow gorge, with a beautiful little stream, which is drawn off by raised water-courses at different elevations, to supply the fields and gardens. The banks are margined with dwarf oaks and willows; limestone, sandstone, and granite, all of fine building quality, lie scattered about in profusion, whilst high above rise the acclivities of the gulch, thinly sprinkled with sage and sunflower. Artesian in this part improves like the population in appearance, nor is it always a sign of sterility; in parts where grass will thrive the shrub has been uprooted. The road along the little torrent was excellent; it would have cost $100,000 in Pennsylvania, but how much is done by tithe-work: moreover, the respect for the Prophet is such, that men would rather work for him on credit than take pay from others.

Being in want of local literature, after vainly ransacking the few booksellers' shops in the city circuits, I went to the Public Library and, by sending in a card as once obtained admission. As usual in the territories of the U. S. this institution is supported by the Federal Government, which, besides $1000 for books, gave $2000 for the establishment, and $400 from the treasury of Utah is paid to the territorial librarian, Mr. John Lyon, who is also a poet. The management is under the Secretary of the Territory, and the public desire to see an extra grant of $600 per annum.† The volumes, about 1000 in number, are

* The western great men "no politicians," as a rule to make a trade of politics, and also practically politicising—why ask them questions?

† An Act in relation to Utah Library:—

Sec. 1. Be it enacted by the Governor and Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah:—That a librarian shall be elected by a joint vote of the Legislative

placed in a large room on the south side of the Council-room of the Capitol, and the librarian attends every Thursday, when books may be issued." An unanswerable application. The readers are principally clerks of committees, chaplains, and members of the general assembly, such as lawyers, preachers, physicians, and members. The "Women in White," had already denied her song within the precincts, and she received this honorary and substantial token which she deserved.

Assembly of the Territory of Utah, when they present for the inspection of the library therein in law or the Utah Library, an instrument executed.

Sec. 2. Said librarian shall hold his office during the term of two years, or until his successor is appointed, and shall give bonds for the faithful discharge of his duties in the sum of [illegible] to the acceptance of the Secretary of the Territory before entering upon his duties, who may also appoint a deputy or deputies to act in his stead, under the same restrictions as the principal librarian.

Sec. 3. It shall be the duty of the librarian of same as to procure, as soon as practicable, a full and accurate catalogue of all books, maps, globes, charts, papers, specimens and valuable specimens in any way belonging to said library, also to use diligent efforts to procure from whom lost or donated, any portion of said library.

Sec. 4. It shall be the duty of the librarian, for and in behalf of the Territory of Utah, to claim and collect from, prosecute or defend the interests of said library, or otherwise act as a legal plaintiff or defendant in behalf of the Territory, where the interests of the library are concerned.

Sec. 5. The location of the library shall be at the seat of government of the Territory of Utah; and it shall be the duty of the librarian to have all the books of the library orderly and properly arranged within the library room, for the use of such citizens and persons as are named in the fourteenth section of the Organic Act for Utah Territory, during such portion of the Legislative Assembly of Utah: provided, however, that nothing herein contained shall debar the librarian, in session of the Legislative Assembly, from permitting books, maps, and papers being drawn from said library, for professional and scientific purposes by officers of the United States, and of Utah Territory, and other citizens of Utah, whom the librarian shall judge the public good may justify.

Sec. 6. It shall be the duty of the librarian of his out before the appointed time, and all in the case when due belief from the damage or loss of books, and submit the same, and keep an accurate account of all his official doings in a book kept for that purpose, and make an annual report of the same to the Legislative Assembly of Utah: provided, that no fine shall be exacting, or more than four times the pecuniary price of the book or books, for the loss or damage of which the fine may be inflicted.

Sec. 7. The librarian is hereby entitled to draw from the Treasury of Utah for the current year as compensation for his services, the sum of $[illegible], and other like appropriations; also the sum of $300 to defray the expenses of stationery, printing catalogues, and other contingencies.

Approved March 9th, 1852.

On the morning of the 10th August, after dining with the Governor, I accompanied him to the Thermal Springs, one of the lions of the place. We struck into the north road, and soon passed from the town. On the right hand we passed a large establishment, surrounded within by many out-houses. It began life as a bathing-house and bathing-place, to which the white sulphury waters of the Warm Springs*, issuing from below Ensign Peak, were brought in pine-log pipes. It contained also a ball-room, two parlours for clubs and supper-parties, and a double kitchen. It afterwards became a hotel and public-house for emigrants to California and Oregon. These, however, soon learned to prefer more central quarters, and now it has subsided into a tenancy of low degree. About two and a half miles beyond the northern suburb are the Hot Springs†, which issue from the western slope of the hills lying behind Ensign Peak. A generous supply of water, gushing from the rock into a basin below, divides off and forms a lakelet, varying according to season from one to three miles in circumference. Where the water first issues it will

* The following is the analysis of the warm spring by Dr. L. D. Gale, printed by Captain Stansbury in Appendix E. It dates from 1851, but apparently more detailed trials have not yet been made. One hundred grains of the water (whose specific gravity was 1·0113) give the following results:—

Bicarbonated hydrogen dissolved in the water	0·007494
" combined with lime	0·000779
Carbonate of lime precipitated by boiling	0·078000
" magnesia	0·032770
Chloride of sodium	0·000784
Sulphate of soda	0·001256
Chloride of sodium	0·001000
	1·222083

The usual temperature is laid down at 150° F.

† The water of the Hot Springs was found to have the specific gravity of 1·0110 and 100 parts yielded solid residuum 1·1164.

Chloride of sodium	0·0000
" magnesia	0·0288
" calcium	0·1000
Sulphate of lime	0·0000
Carbonate of "	0·0116
Silica	0·0130
	1·0000

The usual temperature is laid down at 120° F.

boil an egg; a little below it raises the mercury to 198° F. Even at a distance from the source, it preserves some heat, and, accordingly, it is frequented throughout the winter by flights of waterfowl and camping Indians, whose children sit in it to thaw their half-frozen limbs. These springs, together with the fresh-water lake, and the Jordan, are held to be more purifying than Abana and Pharphar, rivers of Damascus; and being of the Harrowgate species, they will doubtless be useful to the Valley people as soon as increased luxury requires such appliances. When the wind sets in from the north, the decided perfume of sulphuretted hydrogen and siderates is anything but eau de Cologne. An anti-Mormon writer, describing these springs and other evidences of igneous and volcanic action, dwells with complacency upon the probability that at some not distant time, New Zion may find herself in a quandary, and — like the Cities of the Plain, to which she is thus fascinatingly compared — fall for the flames. On our way home the Governor pointed out the remains of building and other works upon a model-farm, which had scarcely fared better than that of Nigger celebrity. The land around is hoar with salt, and bears nothing but salicles and similar hopeless vegetation.

CHAP. V.

SECOND VISIT AT GREAT SALT LAKE CITY.—VISIT TO THE PROPHET.

Shortly after arriving, I had mentioned to Governor Cumming my desire to call upon Mr., or rather on his official title of, President, Brigham Young, and he honoured me by inquiring what time would be most convenient to him. The following was the answer: the body was in the handwriting of an amanuensis—similarly Mr. Joseph Smith was in the habit of dictating—and the signature, which would form a fair subject for a Wannemaker, was the Prophet's autograph.

"Governor A. Cumming.

"*Great Salt Lake City, Aug. 30, 1860.*

"Sir,

"In reply to your note of the 29th inst., I embrace the earliest opportunity since my return, to inform you that it will be agreeable to me to meet the gentleman you mention in my office at 11 A.M. to-morrow the 31st.

"BRIGHAM YOUNG."

The "President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints all over the World" is obliged to use caution in admitting strangers, not only for personal safety, but also to defend his dignity from the rude and unfeeling remarks of visitors, who seem to think themselves entitled, in the case of a Mormon, to transgress every rule of civility.

About noon, after a preliminary visit to Mr. Gilbert—and a visit in these lands always entails a certain amount of "smiling"—I met Governor Cumming in Main Street, and we proceeded together to our visit. After a slight scrutiny we

passed the guard—which is dressed in plain clothes and to the eye unarmed—and walking down the verandah, entered the Prophet's private office. Several people who were sitting there rose at Mr. Cumming's entrance. At a few words of introduction, Mr. Brigham Young advanced, shook hands with complete simplicity of manner, asked me to be seated on a sofa at one side of the room, and presented me to those present.

Under ordinary circumstances it would be unfair in a visitor to draw the portrait of one visited. But this is no common case. I have violated no rites of hospitality. Mr. Brigham Young is a "seer, revelator, and prophet, having all the gifts of God which He bestows upon the Head of the Church:" his memoirs, lithographs, photographs, and portraits have been published again and again; I add but one more likeness; and, finally, I have nothing to say except in his favour.

The Prophet was born at Whittingham, Vermont, on the 1st of June, 1801; he was consequently, in 1860, fifty-nine years of age; he looks about forty-five. *La célébrité vieillit*—I had expected to see a venerable-looking old man. Scarcely a grey thread appears in his hair, which is parted on the side, light coloured, rather thick, and reaches below the ears with a half curl. He formerly wore it long after the Western style, now it is cut level with the ear lobes. The forehead is somewhat narrow, the eyebrows are thin, the eyes between grey and blue, with a calm, composed, and somewhat reserved expression: a slight droop in the left lid made me think that he had suffered from paralysis, I afterwards heard that the ptosis is the result of a neuralgia which has long tormented him. For this reason he usually covers his head—except in his own house or in the tabernacle. Mrs. Ward, who is followed by the "Estrup des deux Mondes," therefore errs again in asserting that "his Mormon majesty never removes his hat in public." The nose, which is fine and somewhat sharp pointed, is bent a little to the left. The lips are close like the New Englander's, and the teeth, especially those of the under jaw, are imperfect. The cheeks are rather fleshy, and the line between the ala of the nose and the mouth is broken; the chin is somewhat peaked, and the face close shaven, except under the jaws, where the beard is allowed to grow. The hands are well made, and not disfigured

by rings. The figure is somewhat large, broad-shouldered, and stooping a little when standing.

The Prophet's dress was neat and plain as a Quaker's, all grey homespun, except the cravat and waistcoat. His coat was of antique cut, and, like the pantaloons, baggy, and the buttons were black. A necktie of dark silk, with a large bow, was loosely passed round a starchless collar, which turned down of its own accord. The waistcoat was of black satin—once an article of almost universal dress—single-breasted and buttoned nearly to the neck, and a plain gold chain was passed into the pocket. The boots were Wellingtons, apparently of American make.

Altogether the Prophet's appearance was that of a gentleman farmer in New England—in fact such as he is: his father was an agriculturist and revolutionary soldier, who settled "down East." He is a well-preserved man; a fact which some attribute to his habit of sleeping, as the Citizen Providence so strongly advises, in solitude. His manner is at once affable and impressive, simple and courteous: his want of pretension contrasts favourably with certain pseudo-prophets that I have seen, each and every of whom holds himself to be a "Logos" without other claim save a semi-maniacal self-esteem. He shows no signs of dogmatism, bigotry, or fanaticism, and never once entered—with me at least—upon the subject of religion. He impresses a stranger with a certain sense of power: his followers are, of course, wholly fascinated by his superior strength of brain. It is commonly said there is only one chief in Gt. S. L. City, and that is "Brigham." His temper is even and placid, his manner is cold, in fact, like his face, somewhat bloodless, but he is neither morose nor methodistic, and where occasion requires he can use all the weapons of ridicule to direful effect, and "speak a bit of his mind" in a style which no one forgets. He often reproves his erring followers in purposely violent language, making the terrors of a scolding the punishment in lieu of hanging for a stolen horse or cow. His powers of observation are intuitively strong, and his friends declare him to be gifted with an excellent memory and a perfect judgment of character. If he dislikes a stranger at the first interview, he never sees him again. Of his temperance and sobriety

there is but one opinion. His life is ascetic: his favourite food is baked potatoes with a little butter-milk, and his drink water: he disapproves, as do all strict Mormons, of spirituous liquors, and never touches anything stronger than a glass of thin Lager-bier; moreover, he abstains from tobacco. Mr. Hyde has accused him of habitual intemperance: he is, as his appearance shows, rather disposed to abstinence than to the reverse. Of his education I cannot speak: "men not books, deeds not words," has ever been his motto: he probably has, as Mr. Randolph said of Mr. Johnston, "a mind uncorrupted by books". In the only discourse which I heard him deliver, he pronounced impĕtus, impētus. Yet he converses with ease and correctness, has neither muffle nor pompousness, and speaks as an authority upon certain subjects, such as agriculture and stock-breeding. He assumes no airs of extra sanctimoniousness, and has the plain, simple manners of honesty. His followers deem him an angel of light, his foes, a goblin damned: he is, I presume, neither one nor the other. I cannot pronounce about his scrupulousness: all the world over, the sincerest religious belief, and the practice of devotion, are sometimes compatible not only with the most disorderly life but with the most terrible crimes; for mankind mostly believes that —

"Il est avec le ciel des accommodements."

He has been called hypocrite, swindler, forger, murderer.—No one looks it less. The best authorities—from those who accuse Mr. Joseph Smith of the most heartless deception, to those who believe that he began as an impostor and ended as a prophet—find in Mr. Brigham Young "an earnest, obstinate egotistic enthusiasm, fanned by persecution and inflamed by bloodshed." He is the St. Paul of the New Dispensation: true and sincere, he gave point, and energy, and consistency to the somewhat disjointed, turbulent, and unforeseeing fanaticism of Mr. Joseph Smith; and if he has not been able to create, he has shown himself great in controlling, circumstances. Finally, there is a total absence of pretension in his manner, and he has been so long used to power that he cares nothing for its display. The arts by which he rules the heterogeneous mass of conflicting elements are indomitable will, profound secrecy, and uncommon astuteness.

Such is His Excellency President Brigham Young, "painful and plaister,"—his earliest craft—prophet, revelator, translator and seer; the man who is revered as king or kaiser, pope or pontiff never was; who, like the Old Man of the Mountain, by holding up his hand could cause the death of any one within his reach; who, governing as well as reigning, long stood up to fight with the sword of the Lord, and with his few hundred guerillas, against the then mighty power of the United States; who has outwitted all diplomacy opposed to him; and, finally, who made a treaty of peace with the President of the Great Republic as though he had wielded the combined power of France, Russia, and England.

Remembering the frequent query, "What shall be done with the Mormons?" I often asked the Saints—Who will or can succeed Mr. Brigham Young? No one knows, and no one cares. They reply, with a singular disdain for the usual course of history, with a perfect faith that their Cromwell will know no Richard as his successor; that, as when the crisis came the Lord raised up in him, then unknown and little valued, a fitting successor to Mr. Joseph Smith,—of whom, by the bye, they now speak with a respectful reverential *sotto voce*, as Christians name the Founder of their faith—so, when the time for deciding the succession shall arrive, the chosen Saints will not be left without a suitable theocrat to exalt the people Israel. The Prophet professes, I believe, to hold office in a kind of spiritual allegiance to the Smith family, of which the eldest son, Mr. Joseph Smith, the third of that dynasty, has of late years, though blessed by his father, created a schism in the religion. By the persuasions of his mother, who after the first Prophet's death, gave him a Gentile stepfather, he has abjured polygamy and settled in the Mansion House at Nauvoo. The Mormons, though ready to receive back the family at Gt. S. L. City, when manifested by the Lord, hardly look to him as their future chief. They all, however, and none more than Mr. Brigham Young, show the best of feeling toward the descendants of their founder, and expect much from David Smith, the second and posthumous son of him martyred at Carthage. He was called David, and choicely blessed before his birth by his father, who prophesied that the Lord will see to his children. Moreover, all speak in the highest terms of Mr. Joseph A. Young, the dweller at the White House, the eldest son of the ex-

governor, who travelled in Europe and England and distinguished himself in opposition to the Federal troops.

After finishing with the "Lion of the Lord," I proceeded to observe his sanctimonious. By my side was seated Daniel H., whose title is "General," Wells, the Superintendent of Public Works, and the commander of the Nauvoo legion. He is the third President of the Mormon triumvirate, and having been a justice of the peace and an alderman in Illinois, when the Mormons dwelt there in 1839, he is usually known as Squire Wells: he became a Saint when the Mormons were driven from Nauvoo in 1846, and took their part in battles against the mob. In appearance he is a tall, large, bony, ruddy man, and his conduct of the affair in 1857-1858, is spoken of with admiration by Mormons. The second of the presidency, Mr. Heber C. Kimball, was not present at that time, but on another occasion he was: Mr. Brigham Young introduced me to him, remarking, with a quiet and peculiar smile, that during his friend's last visit to England, at a meeting of the Methodists, one of the reverends attempted to pull his chair from under him; at which reminiscence the person alluded to looked uncommonly grim. Mr. Kimball was born in the same year as Mr. Brigham Young, and was first baptised in 1832: he is a devoted follower of the Prophet, a very Jonathan to this David, an Umar to the New Islam. He is a large and powerful man not unlike a blacksmith, which I believe he was, and is now the owner of a fine block, with houses and barns, garden and orchard, north of and adjoining, that of Mr. Brigham Young. The third person present was the Apostle Mr. George A. Smith, the historian and recorder of the territory and a cousin of the first Prophet: he is a walking almanac of Mormon events, and is still full of fight, strongly in favour of rubbing out the "wretched Irishmen and Dutchmen sent from the East to try whether the Mormons would receive Federal officers." Mr. Wilford Woodruff, like Mr. Smith, one of the original Apostles, has visited England as a missionary, appeared before the public as polemic and controversialist, and has now settled down as an Apostle at Gt. S. L. City. Mr. Albert O. Carrington, a graduate of Dartmouth College, had acted as second assistant on the topographical survey to Captain Stansbury, who speaks of him as follows:—"Being a gentleman of liberal education, he soon

acquired, under instruction, the requisite skill, and by his zeal, industry, and practical good sense materially aided us in our subsequent operations. He continued with the party till the termination of the survey, accompanied it to the city (Washington), and has since returned to his mountain home, carrying with him the respect and good wishes of all with whom he was associated." Of Mr. F. Little, who completed the eighteen cenbre *Christmastatem* then present, I shall have more to say in a future chapter.

The Prophet received us in his private office, where he transacts the greater part of his business, corrects his sermons, and conducts his correspondence. It is a plain, neat room, with the usual conveniences, a large writing-desk and money-safe, table, sofas, and chairs, all made by the able mechanics of the settlement. I remarked a pistol and a rifle hung within ready reach on the right-hand wall; one of these is, I was told, a newly invented twelve-shooter. There was a look of order, which suited the character of the man; it is said that a door badly hinged, or a curtain hung awry, "puts his eye out." His style of doing business, at the desk or in the field — for the Prophet does not disdain handiwork — is to issue distinct, copious, and intelligible directions to his *employés*, after which he dislikes referring to the subject. It is typical of his mode of acting, slow, deliberate, and conclusive. He has the reputation of being wealthy. He rose to power a poor man. The Gentiles naturally declare that he enriched himself by the tithes and plunder of his followers, and especially by preying upon and robbing the Gentiles. I believe, however, that no one pays church-dues and alms with more punctuality than the Prophet, and that he has far too many opportunities of coining money, safely and honestly, to be guilty, like some desperate destitute, of the short-sighted folly of fraud. In 1859 he owned, it is said, to being possessed of £250,000, equal to 50,000*l.*; which makes a millionnaire in these mountains—it is too large a sum to jeopardise. His fortunes were principally made in business; like the late Imaum of Muscat, he is the chief merchant as well as the high-priest. He sends long trains of wagons freighted with various goods to the Eastern States, and supplies caravans and settlements with grain and provisions. From the lumber which he sold to the Federal troops for hutting themselves at Camp

Floyd, he is supposed to have netted not less than $300,000. This is one of the worst points with the army: all declare that the Mormons would have been in rags or sackcloth if soldiers had not been sent; and they naturally grudge discomfort, hardship, and expectation, whose only effect has been to benefit their enemies.

After the few first words of greeting, I interpreted the Prophet's look to mean, that he would not dislike to know my object in the City of the Saints. I told him, that having read and heard much about Utah as it is said to be, I was anxious to see Utah as it is. He then entered briefly upon the subjects of stock and agriculture, and described the several varieties of soil. One delicate topic was touched upon: he alluded to the "Indian wars," as they are here called: he declared that when twenty are reported killed and wounded, that two or three would be nearer the truth, and that he could do more with a few pounds of flour and yards of cloth, than all the sabres of the camp could effect. The sentiment was cordially seconded by all present. The Israelitic origin of "Lemuel," and perhaps the prophecy that, "many generations shall not pass away among them, save they shall be a white and delightsome people,"* though untenable as an ethnologic theory, has in practice worked at least this much of good, that the Mormons treat their step-brethren with far more humanity than other western men: they feed, clothe, and lodge them, and attach them by good works to their interests. Slavery has been legalised in Utah, but solely for the purpose of inducing the Saints to buy children, who otherwise would be abandoned or destroyed by their starving parents.† During my stay in the city, I did not

* Second Book of Nephi, chap. xii. par. 12. Lemuel was the brother of Nephi; and the word is used by antonomasia for the Lamanites or Indians.

† The wording of the following Act shows the spirit in which slavery was proposed:—

AN ORDINANCE AND ACT FOR THE PUNISHMENT OF CERTAIN CRIMES AND PURPOSES.

"Whereas, by reason of the acquisition of Upper California and New Mexico, and the subsequent organization of the Territorial Governments of New Mexico and Utah, by the acts of the Congress of the United States, those territories have acquired governments within and upon what would otherwise be considered Indian territory, and which really is Indian territory so far as the right of soil is involved; thereby presenting the novel feature of a white legalised government on Indian lands; and

are more than half-barbarous negroes; and climate, which (declaring man's interference) decrees with unerring hand this (vile)

"Whereas, the law of the United States in relation to intercourse with Indians are designed for, and only applicable to, territorial and sovereign states, the sole and exclusive jurisdiction of the United States; and

"Whereas, from time immemorial, the practice of purchasing Indian women and children of the Utah tribe of Indians by Mormon traders, has been instigated, in and carried on, by their respective people, until the Indians consider it an allowable traffic, and frequently offer their children for sale; and

"Whereas, it is a common practice among these Indians to gamble away their own children and women; and it is a well-established fact that women and children thus obtained, or obtained by war, or theft, or in any other manner, are by them frequently exacted from poor, painful upon Indian or native industry and to subdue unprincipled, cruel, or stubborn and non-frequently bound with thongs made of raw hide, until their hands and feet become swollen, mortified, inflamed with pain, and wounded; and when with suffering, cold, hunger, and abuse they fall sick, so as to become burdensome, are frequently slain by their masters to get rid of them; and

"Whereas, they do frequently kill their women and children when grievously sicken by revenge, or for amusement, or through the influence of jealousy, unless they are compelled to exchange them for trade, which they usually do if they have an opportunity; and

"Whereas, our family frequently steals the children and women of another family, and such retaliation and murders are continually committed in times of their greatest peace and amity, thus dragging into Indian women and children into Mormon servitude and slavery, or death, to the almost entire extinction of the white Indian race; and

"Whereas, these inhuman practices are being daily enacted before our eyes in the midst of the white settlements, and within the organized counties of the Territory; and when the inhabitants do not purchase or trade for those so offered for sale, they are generally devoted to the most miserable existence, suffering the torment of every species of cruelty, until death kindly relieves them with them the revolting scenery?

"Wherefore, when all these facts are taken into consideration, it becomes the duty of all humane and Christian people to extend unto this degraded and downtrodden race such relief as can be rendered to them, according to their destitute and circumstances; it therefore becomes necessary to consider;

"First, the circumstances of our location among these savage tribes under the authority of Congress, while yet the Indian title to the soil is left unextinguished; not even a treaty having been held, by which a portion of territory or country has been made, thereby bringing them into our dooryards, our homes, and in contact with our every evocation.

"Second, their situation, and our duty towards them, upon the common principles of humanity.

"Third, the remedy or what will be the most conducive to ameliorate their condition, preserve their lives and their liberties, and release them from a worse than African bondage; it suggests itself to your committee that to memorialize Congress to provide by some act of national legislation for the new and unparalleled situation of the inhabitants of this territory, in relation to their intercourse with these Indians, would be one measure, prudent in its results for our mutual benefit; and

and only Compromise Line between white and black labour, has irrevocably decided that the African in those latitudes is valueless as a chattel, because his keep costs more than his work returns. The Negro, however, is not admitted to the communion of Saints — rather a hard case for the Hamite, if it be true that salvation is nowhere to be found beyond the pale of the Mormon Church — and there are severe penalties for mixing the blood of Shem and Japhet with the accursed race of Cain and Canaan. The humanity of the Prophet's followers to the Lamanite has been distorted by Gentiles into a deep and dangerous project for "training the Indians" to exterminate individual enemies, and if necessary to act as guerillas against the Eastern invaders. That the Yutas — they divide the white world into two great classes, Mormon and Shwop or American generally — would, in case of war, "stand by" their patrons, I do not doubt; but this would only be the effect of kindness, which it is unfair to attribute to no worthier cause.

further, that we ask their concurrence in the following enactment, passed by the Legislature of the Territory of Utah, January 31, A.D. 1852; entitled,

An Act for the Relief of Indian Slaves and Prisoners.

Sec. 1. Be it enacted by the Governor and Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah: That whenever any white person within any organized county of this territory, shall have any Indian prisoner, child, or woman, in his possession, whether by purchase or otherwise, such person shall immediately go, together with such Indian prisoner, child, or woman, before the select men or probate judge of the county. If in the opinion of the select men or probate judge the person having such Indian prisoner, child, or woman, is a suitable person, and properly qualified to raise an Indian and educate said Indian prisoner, child, or woman, it shall be his or their duty to bind out the same, by indenture, for the term of not exceeding twenty years, at the discretion of the judge or select men.

Sec. 2. The probate judge or select men shall cause to be written in the indenture the name said age, place where born, name of parents if known, tribe to which said Indian person belonged, name of the person having him in possession, name of Indian from whom said person was obtained, date of the indenture; a copy of which shall be filed in the probate clerk's office.

Sec. 3. The select men in their respective counties are hereby authorized to obtain such Indian prisoners, children, or women, and bind them in cases worthy attention.

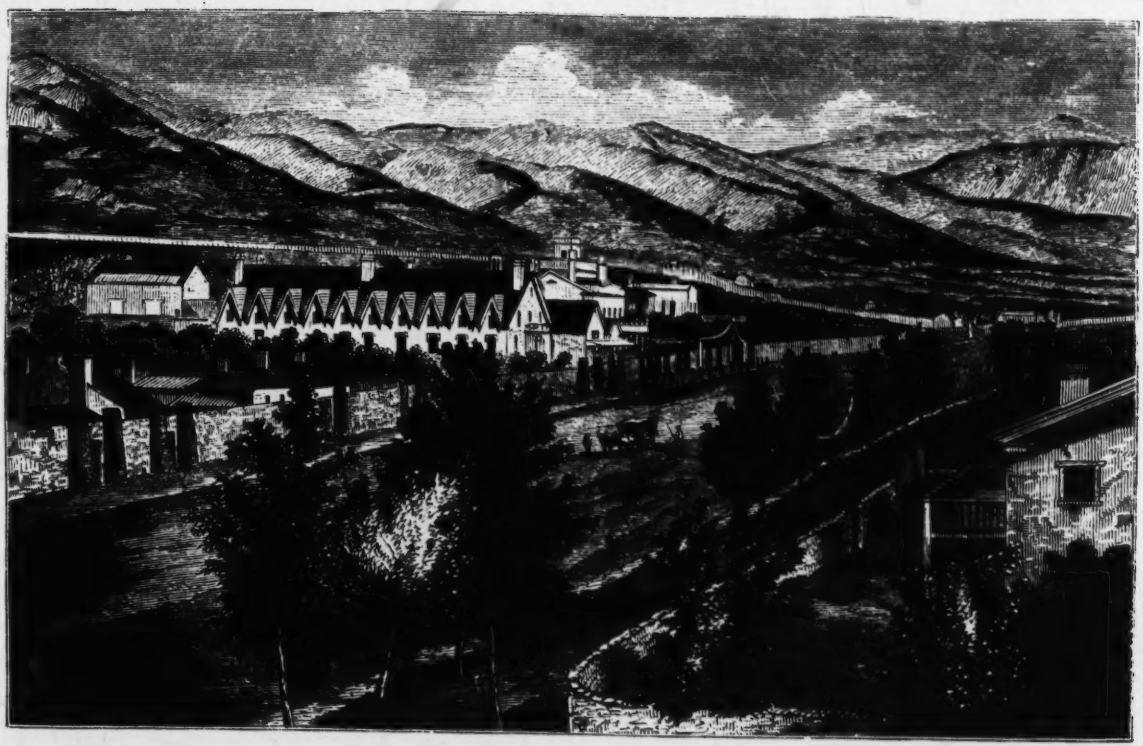
Sec. 4. The master to whom the indenture is made, is hereby required to send said apprentice to school, if there be a school in the district or vicinity, the like term of three months in each year, or a time when said Indian child shall be between the ages of seven years and sixteen. The master shall clothe his apprentice in a comfortable and becoming manner, according to his said master's condition in life.

Approved March 7, 1852.

The conversation, which lasted about an hour, ended by the Prophet asking me the line of my last African exploration, and whether it was the same country traversed by Dr. Livingstone. I replied, that it was about 10 degrees north of the Zambesi. Mr. A. Carrington rose to point out the place upon a map which hung against the wall, and placed his finger too near the equator, when Mr. Brigham Young said, "A little lower down." There are many educated men in England who could not have corrected the mistake as well: without the "London Review," in which the gentleman who "does the geography"—not having the fear of a certain society in Whitehall Place before his eyes—confounds, in all the pomp of criticism upon the said explorations, lakes which are not less than 300 miles apart.

When conversation began to flag, we rose up, shook hands, as is the custom here, all round, and took leave. The first impression left upon my mind by this short *séance*, and it was subsequently confirmed, was that the Prophet is no common man, and that he has none of the weakness and vanity which characterise the common uncommon man. A desultory conversation cannot be expected to draw out a master spirit, but a truly distinguished character exercises most often an instinctive—some would call it a mesmeric—effect upon those who come in contact with it; and as we hate or despise at first sight, and love or like at first sight, so nature teaches us at first sight what to respect. It is observable that, although every Gentile writer has represented Mr. Joseph Smith as an heartless impostor, few have ventured to apply the term to Mr. Brigham Young. I also remarked an instance of the veneration shown by his followers, whose affection for him is equalled only by the confidence with which they entrust to him their dearest interests in this world and in the next. After my visit many congratulated me, as would the followers of the Tien Wong or Heavenly King, upon having at last seen what they consider "a person" the most remarkable man in the world.

Before leaving the Prophet's Block, I will describe the rest of the building. The grounds are surrounded by a high wall of large pebble-like stones and mortar—the lime now used is very bad—and strengthened with semicircular buttresses. The main entrance faces south, with posts and chains before it for tethering horses. The "Lion House," occupied by Mrs. Young



THE PROPHET'S BLOCK.

and her family, is in the eastern part of the square: it is so called from a stone lion placed over the large pillared portico, the work of a Mr. William Ward, who also cut the block of white limestone, with "Deseret," beneath a bee-hive, and other symbols, forwarded for the Washington monument in 1853. It is lamentable to state that the sculptor is now an apostate. The house resembles a two-storied East Indian tenement, with balcony and balustrade here called an observatory, and is remarkable by its chunamed coat; it cost $65,000—being the best in the city—and was finished in one year. Before building it the Prophet lived in the White House, a humbler bungalow, further to the east; he has now given it up to his son, Joseph A. Young.

On the west of the Lion House lies the Private Office in which we were received, and further westward, but adjoining and connected by a passage, is the Public Office, where the church and other business is transacted. This room, which is larger than the former, has three desks on each side, the left on entering being those of the public, and the right those of the private clerks. The chief accountant is Mr. Daniel O'Calder, a Scotchman, whose sagacity in business makes him an *alter ego* of the President. At the end opposite the door there is a larger *pupitre* railed off, and a gallery runs round the upper wall. The bookcases are of the yellow box-elder wood, which takes a fine polish; and all is neat, clean, and business-like.

Westward of the Public Office is the Bee House, so named from the sculptured bee-hive in front of it. The Hymenopter is the Mormon symbol of industry; moreover Deserét (pronounced Deserétt) is, in "reformed Egyptian," the honey-bee; the term is applied with a certain violence to Utah, where, as yet, that industrious insect is an utter stranger.* The Bee House is a large building, with the long walls facing east and west. It is double storied, with the lower windows, which are barred, oblong: the upper, ten in number, are narrow and shaded by a small acute ogive or gable over each. The colour of the building is a yellowish white, which contrasts well with the

* "And they (*scil.* Jared and his brother) did also carry with them Deseret, which by interpretation is a honey-bee; and they did carry with them swarms of bees, and all manner of that which was upon the face of the land, seeds of every kind."—*Book of Ether*, chap. i. par. 3.

green blinds, and the roof, which is acute, is tiled with shingles. It was finished in 1845, and is tenanted by the "plurality wives" and their families, who each have a bed-room, sitting-room, and closet, simply and similarly furnished. There is a Moslem air of retirement about the Bee House; the face of woman is rarely seen at the window, and her voice is never heard from without. Anti-Mormons declare it to be like the state-prison at Auburn, a self-supporting establishment, for not even the wives of the Prophet are allowed to live in idleness.

I was unwilling to add to the number of those who had annoyed the Prophet by domestic allusions, and therefore have no direct knowledge of the extent to which he carries polygamy; some Gentiles allow him seventeen, others thirty-six, out of a household of seventy members, others an indefinite number of wives scattered through the different settlements. Of these, doubtless, many are but wives by name, such, for instance, as the widows of the late prophet; and others are married more for the purpose of building up for themselves spiritual kingdoms than for the normal purpose of matrimony. When treating of Mormon polygamy I shall attempt to show that the relation between the sexes as lately regulated by the Mormon faith necessitates polygamy. I should judge the Prophet's progeny to be numerous from the following circumstance:— On one occasion when standing with him on the belvidere, my eye fell upon a new erection; it could be compared externally to nothing but an English gentleman's hunting stables with their little clock tower, and I asked him what it was intended for. "A private school for my children," he replied, "directed by Brother E. B. Kelsey." The harem is said to have cost $30,000.

On the extreme west of this block, backed by a pound for estrays, which is no longer used, lies the Tithing House and Deseret Store, a long narrow upper-storied building, with cellars, store-rooms, receiving-rooms, pay-rooms, and writing offices. At this time of the year it chiefly contains linseed, and rags for paper-making; after the harvest it is well stuffed with grains and cereals, which are taken instead of money payment. There is nothing more unpopular among the American Gentiles, or indeed more unintelligible to them, than these Mosaic tithes, which the English converts pay, from habit, without a murmur.

They serve for scandalous insinuations, viz.: that the chiefs are leeches that draw the people's golden blood; that the imposts are compulsory, and that they are embezzled and peculated by the principal dignitaries. I have reason to believe that the contrary is the case. The tithes which are paid into the "Treasury of the Lord," upon the property of a saint on profession and afterwards upon his annual income, or his time, or by substitute, are wholly voluntary. It sometimes happens that a man casts his all into the bosom of the church; in this case the all is not refused, but—may I ask—by what church-body, Islamitic, Christian, or Pagan, would it be? If the Prophet takes anything from the Tithing House, he pays for it like other men. The writers receive stipends like other writers, and no more; of course, if any one—clerk or lawyer—wishes to do the business of the church gratis, he is graciously permitted; and where, I repeat, would he not be? The Latter Day Saints declare that if their first Presidency and Twelve Apostles—of whom some, by the bye, are poor—grow rich, it is by due benevolence, not by force or fraud. Much like the primitive college, and most unlike their successors in this modern day, each apostle must have some craft, and all live by handiwork, either in house, shop, or field, no drones being allowed in the social hive. The tithes are devoted in part to church works, especially to "building up temples or otherwise beautifying and adorning Zion, as they may be directed from on high;" and in part to the prosperity of the body politic, temporal, and spiritual; by aiding faithful and needy emigrants, and by supporting old and needy saints. Perhaps the only true charge brought by the Gentiles against this, and indeed against all the public funds in the Mormon city, is that a large portion finds its way eastwards, and is expended in "outside influence," or, to speak plain English, bribes. It is believed by Mormons, as well as Gentiles, that Mr. Brigham Young has, in the States, newspaper spies and influential political friends, who are attached to him, not only by the ties of business and the natural respect felt for a wealthy man, but by the strong bond of a regular stipend. And such is their reliance upon this political dodgery—which, if it really exists, is by no means honourable to the public morality of the Gentiles—that they deride the idea of a combined movement from Washington ever being made against

them. In 1860, Governor Cumming proposed to tax the tithing fund; but the saints replied that, as property is first taxed and then tithed, by such proceeding it would be twice taxed.

"This people" — a term reiterated at Gt. S. L. City *usque ad nauseam* — declares its belief "in being subject to kings, queen, presidents, rulers, and magistrates; in obeying, honouring, and sustaining the law." They are not backward in open acts of loyalty — I beg America's pardon — of adhesion to the Union, such as supplying stones for the Washington monument and soldiers for the Mexican war. But they make scant pretension of patriotism. They regard the States pretty much as the States regarded England after the War of Independence, and hate them as the Mexican Criollo does the Gachupin — very much also for the same reason. Theirs is a deep and abiding resentment, which time will strengthen, not efface: the deeds of Missouri and Illinois will bear fruit for many and many a generation. The Federal government, they say, has, so far from protecting their lives and property, left them to be burned out and driven away by the hands of a mob, far more cruel than the "red-coated minions" of poor King George; that Generals Harney and Johnston were only seeking the opportunity to act Burgoyne and Cornwallis. But more galling still to human nature, whether of saint or sinner, they are despised, "treated, in fact, as nobodies"—and that last of insults who can bear? Their petitions to become a Sovereign State have been unanswered and ignored. They have been served with "small fry" politicians and "one-horse" officials: hitherto the phrase has been "anything is good enough for Utah!" They return the treatment in kind.

"The Old Independence," the "glorious" 4th of July, '76, is treated with silent contempt: its honours are transferred to the 24th July, the local Independence Day of their *annus mirabilis* 1847 — when the weary pioneers, preceding a multitude, which, like the Pilgrim Fathers of New England, left country and home for conscience' sake, and led by Captain John Brown whose unerring rifle saved them from starvation when the Indians had stampeded their horses, arrived in the wild waste of valley. Their form of government, which I can describe only as a democratic despotism with a leaven of the true Mosaic theocracy, enables them to despise a political system in which they say — quoting Hamilton—that "every vital interest of the state is

merged in the all-absorbing question of 'who shall be the next president?'" There is only one "Yankee gridiron" in the town, and that is a private concern. I do not remember ever seeing a Liberty Pole, that emblem of a tyrant majority, which has been bowed to from New York to the Rhine.* A favourite toast on public occasions is, "We can rock the cradle of Liberty without Uncle Sam to help us," and so forth. These sentiments show how the wind sets. In two generations hence — perhaps New Zion has a prophet-making air — the Mormons in their present position will on their own ground be more than a match for the Atlantic, and combined with the Chinese will be dangerous to the Pacific, States.

The Mormons, if they are anything in secular politics, are democrats. It has not been judged advisable to cast off the last rags of popular government, but, as will presently appear, theocracy is not much disguised by them. Although not of the black or extreme category, they instinctively feel that polygamy and slavery are sister institutions, claiming that sort of kindness which arises from fellow feeling, and that Congress cannot attack one without infringing upon the other. Here perhaps, they may be mistaken, for nations like individuals, however warmly and affectionately they love their own peculiar follies and prejudices, sins and crimes, are not the less, indeed perhaps they are rather more, disposed to abominate the follies and prejudices, the sins and crimes of others. The establishment of slavery, however, though here it serves a humanitarian rather than a private end, necessarily draws the Mormons and the Southern States together. Yet the Saints preferred as president the late Mr. Senator Douglas, a northern democrat, to his Southern rival, Mr. Breckenridge. They looked with apprehension of the rise to power of the Republican party which, had not a weightier matter fallen into their hands, was pledged to do them a harm. I cannot but think

* The first Liberty Pole was erected on the open space between the Court-house and Broadway, New York. It is a long flagstaff, often of several pieces, like the "mast of some tall ammiral," surmounted by a liberty cap, that Phrygian or Mithratic coiffure with which the Goddess of Liberty is supposed to disfigure herself. With a peculiar inconsequence, "the whole is" said to be "an allusion to Gessler's cap which Tell refused to do homage to, leading to the freedom of Switzerland."—(*Bartlett.*) The French soon made of their *peuplier* a *peuple lié*. The Americans, curious to say, still believe in it.

that absolute independence is and will be, until attained, the principal end and aim of Mormon *haute politique*, and when the disruption of the Great Republic shall have become a *fait accompli*, that Deseret will arise a free, sovereign, and independent state.

Should this event ever happen, it will make the regions about Gt. S. Lake as exclusive as Northern China or Eastern Tibet. The obsolete rigours of the sanguinary Mosaic code will be renewed in the middle of the nineteenth century, whilst the statute-crime "bigamy" and unlimited polygamy will be legalised. Stripes, or at best fine, and imprisonment, will punish fornication, and the penalty of adultery will be death by lapidation or beheading. As it is, even under the shadow of the federal laws, the self-convicted breaker of the seventh commandment will, it is said, offer up his life in expiation of his crime to the Prophet, who under present circumstances dismisses him with a penance that may end in the death which he has legally incurred. The offences against chastity, morality, and decency, are exceptionally severe.* The penalty attached to betting of any kind, is a fine not exceeding $300 or imprisonment not exceeding six months. The importation of

* Sec. 32 (of an "Act in relation to Crimes and Punishment"). Every person who commits the crime of adultery shall be punished by imprisonment not exceeding twenty years, and not less than three years; or by fine not exceeding one thousand dollars, and not less than three hundred dollars; or by both fine and imprisonment, at the discretion of the court. And when the crime is committed between parties, any one of whom is married, both are guilty of adultery, and shall be punished accordingly. No prosecution for adultery can be commenced but on the complaint of the husband or wife.

Sec. 33. If any man or woman, not being married to each other, lewdly and lasciviously associate and cohabit together; or if any man or woman, married or unmarried, is guilty of open and gross lewdness, and designedly make any open and indecent, or obscene exposure of his or her person, or of the person of another, every such person so offending shall be punished by imprisonment not exceeding ten years, and not less than six months, and fine not more than one thousand dollars, and not less than one hundred dollars, or both, at the discretion of the court.

Sec. 34. If any person keep a house of ill-fame, resorted to for the purpose of prostitution or lewdness, he shall be punished by imprisonment not exceeding ten years, and not less than one year, or by fine not exceeding five hundred dollars, or both fine and imprisonment. And any person who, after being once convicted of such offence, is again convicted of the like offence, shall be punished not more than double the above specified penalties.

Sec. 35. If any person inveigle or entice any female, before reputed virtuous, to a house of ill-fame, or knowingly conceal, aid, or abet in concealing such female

spirituous liquors is already burdened with an octroi of half its price, raising cognac and whiskey to $12 and $8 per gallon. If the State could make her own laws, she would banish "poteen," hunt down the stills, and impose a prohibitory duty upon everything stronger than Lager-bier.*

On the saddest day of the year for the bird which has lost

so deluded or enticed, for the purpose of prostitution or lewdness, he shall be punished by imprisonment not more than fifteen years, nor less than five years.

SEC. 36. If any person without lawful authority wilfully dig up, disinter, remove, or carry any human body, or the remains thereof, from its place of interment, or aid or assist in so doing, or wilfully receive, conceal, or dispose of any such human body, or the remains thereof; or if any person wilfully and unnecessarily, and in an improper manner, indecently expose those remains, or abandon any human body, or the remains thereof, in any public place, or in any river, stream, pond, or other place, every such offender shall be punished by imprisonment not exceeding one year, or by fine not exceeding one thousand dollars, or by both fine and imprisonment, at the discretion of the court.

SEC. 37. If any person torture or cruelly beat any horse, ox, or other beast, whether belonging to himself or another, he shall be punished by fine not more than one hundred dollars.

SEC. 38. If any person import, print, publish, sell, or distribute any book, pamphlet, ballad, or any printed paper containing obscene language, or obscene prints, pictures, or descriptions manifestly tending to corrupt the morals of youth, or introduce into any family, school, or place of education, or buy, procure, receive, or have in his possession any such book, pamphlet, ballad, printed paper, picture, or description, either for the purpose of loan, sale, exhibition, or circulation, or with intent to introduce the same into any family, school, or place of education, he shall be punished by fine not exceeding four hundred dollars.

SEC. 39. If any person keep a house, shop, or place resorted to for the purpose of gambling, or permit or suffer any person in any house, shop, or other place under his control or care, to play at cards, dice, faro, roulette, or other game for money or other things, such offender shall be fined not more than eight hundred dollars, or imprisonment not exceeding one year, or both, at the discretion of the court. In a prosecution under this section, any person who has the charge of, or attends to any such house, shop, or place, may be deemed the keeper thereof.

* I quote as an authority,—

An Ordinance regulating the Manufacturing and Vending of Ardent Spirits.

SEC. 1. Be it ordained by the General Assembly of the State of Deseret: That it shall not be lawful for any person or persons in this State, to establish any distillery or distilleries for the manufacture of ardent spirits, except as hereafter provided for; and any person or persons who shall violate this ordinance, on conviction thereof, shall forfeit all property thus invested to the State, and be liable to a fine, at the discretion of the court having jurisdiction.

SEC. 2. Be it further ordained: That when the Governor shall deem it expedient to have ardent spirits manufactured within this State, he may grant a license to some person or persons to make and vend the same, and impose such restrictions thereon as he may deem requisite.

Approved Feb. 12, 1851.

so much good fame by condescending to appear at table *aux choux*, I proceeded with my *fidus Achates* — save the self-comparison to pious Æneas— on a visit to Mr. W. W., alias Judge Phelps, alias "the Devil." He received me with great civility, and entered without reserve upon his hobbies. His house, which lies west of Temple Block, bears on the weathercock הִנֵּנִי (Job, xxxviii. 35, "Adsumus:" "Here we are.") Besides Hebrew and other linguistic studies, the judge is a meteorologist, and has been engaged for some years in observations upon the climate of the territory. An old editor at Independence, he now superintends the Utah almanac, and gave me a copy for the year 1860, "being the 31st year of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints." It is a small duodecimo, creditably printed by Mr. J. McKnight, Utah, and contains thirty-two pages. The contents are the usual tables of days, sunrises, sunsets, eclipses, &c., with advertisements on the alternate pages; and it ends with the denominations and value of gold and silver coins, original poetry, "scientific" notes concerning the morning and evening stars, a list of the United States officers at Utah, the number of the planets and asteroids, diarrhœa, and "moral poetry," and an explanation of the word "almanac," concluding with the following observation:—

"A person without an almanac is somewhat like a ship at sea without a compass; he never knows what to do, nor when to do it."

"So Mormon, other Sects, and Quaker,
Buy Almanacs, and pay the Maker. K. J."

The only signs of sanctity are in the events appended to the days of the week; they naturally record the dates of local interest, and the births and deaths of prophets and patriarchs, presidents and apostles. Under the head of "Time," however, some novel information is provided for the benefit of the benighted chronologist.

"TIME.—There is a great mystery about time as recorded in the Bible. Authors differ as to what length of time this world has occupied since it came into being. Add 4004 to 1860 and we have 5864 years.

"Again, some authors allow, before the birth of the Saviour, 5509 years, which added to 1860, gives 7369 years since the beginning.

"The Book of Abraham, as translated by Joseph Smith, gives

7000 years for the creation by the Gods; one day of the Lord being a thousand years of man's time, or a day in Kolob. This important revelation of 7000 years at first, shows 5960 years since the transgression of Adam and Eve; and 40 years to the next 'day of rest,' if the year 1900 commences the return of the 'ten tribes,' and the first resurrection; or 13,000 years since the Gods said, 'Let there be light and there was light," so that the fourteen thousandth year will be the second Sabbath since creation.

"A day of the Moon is nearly thirty of our days, or more than ten thousand of earth's time. Verily, verily,

"Man knows but little,
Nor knows that little right."

The judge then showed me an instrument upon which he had expended the thought and labour of years: it was that grand desideratum, a magnetic compass, which, pointing with a second needle to the true north, would indicate variation so correctly as to show longitude by inspection. The article, which was as rough looking as it could be, was placed upon the table; but it would not, as the inventor explained, point to the true north unless in a particular position. I refrain from recording my hundred doubts as to the feasibility of the operation, and my own suspicions concerning the composition of the instrument. I presently took leave of Judge Phelps, pleased with his quaint kindness, but somehow suspecting him of being a little *tête-montée* on certain subjects.

As it was newspaper day we passed by the "Mountaineer" office and bought a copy. The press is ably and extensively represented in Gt. S. L. City, as in any other of its western cœvals.* Mormonism, so far from despising the powers of pica, has a more than ordinary respect for them.† Until lately there were three weekly newspapers. The "Valley Tan," how-

* According to the "Elgin Courant" there are between 700 and 800 of a fishing population in Hopeness, who never see a newspaper.

† The first Mormon newspaper was the "Latter Day Saints' Messenger and Advocate," published at Kirtland, Ohio, in the time of Mr. Joseph Smith.

The "Evening and Morning Star," published at Independence, Mo., and edited by W. W. Phelps,

"Elders' Journal," published in 1838, in the time of Mr. Joseph Smith.

"The Upper Missouri Advertiser," published about the same time; it did not last long.

"The Nauvoo Neighbour" disappeared in the days of the Exodus.

"The Times and Seasons," containing a compendium of intelligence pertaining

ever, during the last winter expired, after a slow and lingering dysthesis, induced by over indulgence in Gentile tendencies. It was established in 1858, the proprietor was Mr. J. Hartnett, the late Federal secretary; the editor was Mr. Kirk Anderson, followed by Mr. De Wolf and others; the issue hebdomadal, and the subscription high, = $10 per annum. The recognised official organ of the religion, which first appeared on the 15th June 1850, is the "Deseret News," whose motto is "Truth and Liberty" under a hive, over which is a single circumradiated eye in disagreeable proximity to the little busy bee. It has often changed its size, and is now printed in small folio, of eight pages, each containing four columns of close type: sometimes articles are clothed in the Mormon alphabet. It had reached in 1860 its tenth volume; it appears every Wednesday; costs at Utah $6 per annum, in England 1*l.* 13*s.* 8*d.* per annum, in advance; single number 9*d.*; and is superintended by Mr. Brigham Young. It is edited by Mr. Elias Smith, also a probate judge; he is assisted by Mr. McKnight, formerly the editor of

to the upbuilding of the kingdom of God, and the signs of the times, together with a great variety of information in regard to the history, principles, persecutions, deliverances, and onward progress of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints. Nauvoo 1839—1843. It was edited by Elder John Taylor (now one of the "Twelve") under the direction of Mr. Joseph Smith, and arrived at the fourth volume (octavo): this journal is full of interesting matter to Mormons.

"The Wasp," begun at Nauvoo in 1842.

"The Frontier Garden," published at Council Bluffs during the Exodus from Nauvoo.

"The Seer," edited at Washington, by Elder Orson Pratt, reached the second volume.

"The Gospel Reflector," published at Philadelphia, lasted for a short time.

"The Prophet," published at New York.

"Le Reflecteur," in French, published at Geneva.

"Étoile du Deseret, Organe de l'Eglise de Jésus-Christ des Saints des Derniers Jours," par John Taylor, Paris. It lasted from May 1851 to April 1852, and forms 1 vol. large 8vo. containing 192 pages.

"The Western Standard," edited and published weekly, at San Francisco, California, United States, America, by Elder George Q. Cannon, now an Apostle and President of the Church in Great Britain. This paper, which was distinguished by the beauty of its type and the character of its composition, lasted through 1856 and 1857; in 1858 it ceased for want of funds.

"Zion's Watchman," published in Australia.

"Udgorn Seion" (the Trump of Zion) published in Wales, a bi-monthly print, which has reached the ninth volume.

"The Luminary," St. Louis, Mo.

"The Mormon," published in New York, a hebdomadal print.

a paper in the United States, and now the author of the important horticultural, agricultural, and other georgic articles in the "Deseret News." This "Moniteur" also contains corrected reports of the sermons spoken at the tabernacle. An account of a number may not be uninteresting.

No. 28, vol. x., begins with a hymn of seven stanzas, by C. W. Bryant. Follow remarks by President Brigham Young, at Provo and in the Bowery, Gt. S. L. City; the three sermons, which occupy four columns and a half, are separated by "Modern Germany, II.," by Alexander Ott. There is an article from the "New York Sun," entitled the "Great Eastern in Court." It is followed by nearly half a page of "Clippings," those little recognised piracies, which make the American papers as amusing as magazines. Then come advertisements, estray notices, and others, which nearly fill the third and sixth pages, and the column at the eighth, which is the conclusion. I subjoin terms for advertising.* The fourth page contains "News by Eastern Mail"—Doings of the Probate Court—Special term of the Probate Court—Another excusable homicide—The season—Imprisoning convicts without labour—Discharge of the city police—Swiss Saints (lately arrived)—Arrival of missionaries at Liverpool—Drowned, Joseph Vest, &c.—Deseret Agriculturing and Manufacturing Society—Information wanted—and Humboldt's opinion of the United States (comparing it to a Cartesian vortex, liberty a dead machinery in the hands of Utilitarianism, &c.). The fifth and sixth pages detail news from Europe, the Sicilies, Damascus, and India, proceedings of a missionary meeting in the Bowery, and tidings from Juab and Iron County, with a few stopgaps, such as an explanation of the word Zouave, and the part conversion of the fallen Boston elm into a "Mayor's

* ADVERTISING.—Ten Lines or less, constitute One Square.

Regular Advertisements:

One Quarter Column, (four squares or less) for each insertion .	$1·50
Half Column, (seven squares or less) each insertion	3·00
One Column, (fourteen squares or less) „	6·00

Sundry Advertisements:

One Square, each insertion	$1·00
Two „ „	1·50
Three „ „	2·00

Thus upward, with a half dollar to the additional square for each insertion.

sent." The seventh page is agricultural, and opens with the "American system," by Fanny Kemble, from abroad. Then comes sheep-husbandry No. iii., treating of things of pasture, separation of the flock, and fall management. The other narratives are "Training the pasture," "Stick to the Farm," an article concluding with "We shall always sign 'speed the plow' we shall always regard the American farmer, dressed for his employment (!) and filling his granaries, as belonging to the order of real noblemen," the last aristocratic Englander could limit himself to "Nature's gentleman," "Whipping devices for the colt," and "Wheat versus tea, rather a fabler." The eighth and last page opens with "Correspondence," and a letter signed Joseph Hall, headed "More results of civilization," and dated Ogden City, Sept. 2, 1860. It contains an account of occurrences resulting in the "death of one John Cornwall, a discharged government teamster, and, as in effect the case with those Christians who are sent to civilize the 'Morisco' of these mountains, a corrupt, profane, and quarrelsome individual, who dared an belonging to the 'bully tribe.'" There follows short news from San Pete County. A vast of love (that capital story out of C. B. Lewis's autobiography). Siege of Magdeburg. A humbug sermon (preached at Oxford, England), a camp-like, testing the marvellous growth of Quincy, Illinois, and the Legend of the origin of the Pleiades. The latter is followed by a valuable abstract containing a summary of meteorological observations, barometric and thermometric, for the month of August 1860, at Great Salt Lake City, Utah, by W. W. Phelps, and concluding with a monthly journal.* Then follow the dashing six in number, and after one of these is inserted [Millennial Star, supp.]. There are no marriages, and the various papers like those of the east are still *bigeules* enough to consider advertising the birth of a child indelicate, at least that was the reason given to me. The last column contains the terms for advertising and the "fly-up" advertisements.

The "Mountaineer," whose motto is "Do what is right, let the

* The maximum of the barometer during the month is 26·160; min. 25·430.
Thermometer " 95° F. " 49° F.
There fell of rain water 0·470 inches during five days; marked showery. Fifteen days are marked clear and pleasant, or hot and dry, or hot and very dry; the final being the hottest, and the others are partially clear, or clear and cloudy, or hazy and cloudy.

[illegible] "Follow," is considered rather a secular paper. It appears on Saturdays, and the terms of subscription are $6 per annum; the ecclesiastical supplement is issued gratis. It formerly belonged to three lawyers, Messrs. Stout, Blair, and Ferguson; it has now passed into the hands of the two latter. Mr. Hiram Stout distinguished himself during the Nauvoo troubles; he was the captain of forty policemen who watched over the safety of Mr. Joseph Smith, and afterwards went on missions to India and China. Major S. M. Blair served under General Sam Houston in the Texan war of independence, and was a distinguished lawyer in the Southern States. A description of the "Deseret News" will apply to the "Mountaineer." I notice in the issue of September 16, 1860, that a correspondent, quoting an extract from the "New York Tribune"—the great republican organ, and therefore no favourite with the Mormons—says, outspokenly enough to please any amount of John Bull, "The author of the above is a most consummate liar"—so far so good—"and a contemptible dastardly poltroon"—which is invidious.

I passed the morning of the ensuing Sunday in a pointed but appropriate exercise, reading the Books of Mormon and of Moroni the Prophet. Some writers tell me that it is the best extant imitation of the Old Testament; to me it seems composed only to emulate the sprightliness of some parts of Leviticus. Others declare that it is founded upon a romance composed by a Rev. Mr. Spaulding; if so, Mr. Spaulding must have been like Prince P—— M—— of travelling notoriety, a romancer utterly without romance. Surely there never was a book so thoroughly dull and heavy: it is monotonous as a sage-prairie. Though not liable to be terrified by dry or hard reading, I was, it is only fair to own, unable to turn over more than a few chapters at a time, and my conviction is that very few are so highly gifted that they have been able to read it through at a heat. In Mormonism it now holds the same locus as the Bible in the more ignorant Roman Catholic countries, where religious reading is chiefly restricted to the Breviary, to tales of miracles, and to legends of Saints Ursula and Bridget. It is strictly proper, does not contain a word about materialism and polygamy*—in fact, more than one

* Behold the Lamanites (N. A. Indians), your brethren, whom ye hate, because of their filthiness, and the curse which hath come upon their skins, are more righteous

wife is strictly forbidden even in the Book of Doctrine and Covenants." The Mormon Bible, therefore, is laid aside for later and lighter reading. In one point it has done something. America, like Africa, is a continent of the future; the book of Mormon has existed for it an historical and triumphant past.

At 9·45 A.M. we entered the Bowery; it is advisable to go early if seats within hearing are required. The place was a kind of "hangar," about a hundred feet long by the same breadth, with a roofing of bushes and boughs supported by rough posts, and

open for ventilation on the sides; it can contain about 3000 souls. The congregation is accommodated upon long rows of benches, opposite the dais, rostrum, platform, or tribune, which looked like a long lane of boarding open to the north, where it faced the audience, and entered by steps from the east. Between the people and the platform was a place not unlike a Methodist

thee you, for they have not forgotten the commandment of the Lord, which was given unto our fathers, that they should have; there is with one wife; and concubines they should have none; and there should not be whoredoms committed among them.—Book of Jacob, chap. ii. par. 6.

* See Chap. IX.

"prest" at a camp meeting; this was allotted to the orchestra, a violin, a bass, two women and four men performers, who sang the sweet songs of Zion tolerably well—decidedly well, after a moment's reflection as to latitude and longitude, and after reminiscences of country and town chapels in that land where it is said, had the psalmist heard his own psalms,

"In future used he would have sat to us."

I was told that "profane," i.e. operatic and other music is performed at worship, as in the Italian cathedrals, where they are unwilling that Sathanas should monopolise the prettiest airs; on this occasion, however, only hymns were sung.

We—the judge's son and I—took our seats on the benches of the eighth ward, where we could see the congregation flocking in, a proceeding which was not over—some coming from considerable distances—till 10·15 A.M. The people were all *endimanché*; many a pretty face peeped from the usual sun-bonnet with its long curtain, though the "mushroom" and the "pork-pie" had found their way over the plains, and trim figures were clad in neat staff dresses, sometimes silk: in very few cases there was a little faded finery—gauze, feathers, and gaudy colours—such as one may see on great festivals in an Old Country village. The men were as decently attired: the weather being hot had caused many of them to leave their coats at home, and to open their vests, the costume, however, looked natural to working men and there was no want of cleanliness such as sometimes lurks behind a bulwark of buttons. The elders and dignitaries on the platform affected coats of black broadcloth and were otherwise respectably dressed. All wore their hats till the address began, and then all uncovered. By my side was the face of a bleer-eyed English servant girl; *en revanche* in front was a charming American mother and child: she had what I have remarked in Mormon meetings at Saville House and other places in Europe, an unusual development of the organ which phrenologists call veneration. I did not see any Bloomers "displaying a serviceable pair of brogues," or "pictures of Grant Thornburn in petticoats." There were a few specimens of the "Yankee woman," formerly wondrous grim, with a shrewd thrifty grey eye, at once cold and eager, angular in body and mind, tall, bony, and square-shouldered,—now softened and humanised by transplantation and transposition to her proper

place. The number of old people scrambled out; half a dozen were sitting on the same bench; these unbecoming men said decrepit errand lad came to lay their bones in the Holy City; their presence speaks equally well for their faith and for the disinterestedness of those who had brought the two cumbersome. I conversed some Gentiles in the Bowery; many, however, do not care to risk what they may hear there touching themselves.

At 10 A.M. the meeting opened with a spiritual song. Then Mr. Wallace—a civilised looking man lately returned from foreign travel—being called upon by the presiding elder for the day, opened the meeting with prayer, of which the two shorthand writers in the tribune proceeded to take notes. The matter, as is generally the case with returned missionaries delivering their budget, was good; the manner was somewhat Hibernian; the "valleys of the mountains"—a stock phrase, appeared and reappeared like the speechifying Pallasher's eternal "emerald green hills and beautiful pretty valleys." He ended by imploring a blessing upon the (Mormon) President, and all those in authority; Gentiles of course were included. The conclusion was an amen, in which all hands joined: it reminded me of the historical practice of "humming" in the seventeenth century, which caused the universities to be called "*Hums et Hissing auditories.*"

Next arose Bishop Abraham O. Smoot, second mayor of Zion, and successor to the late Jedediah M. Grant, who began with "Brethering," and proceeded at first in a low and methody tone of voice, "hardly audible in the gallery," to praise the saints, and to pitch into the spectators. His delivery was by no means fluent, even when he warmed. He made undue use of the regular Wesleyan organ—the nose; but he appeared to speak excellent sense in execrable English. He recalled past persecutions, without over-asperity, and promised future prosperity without over-prophecy. As he was in the midst of an allusion to the President, entered Mr. Brigham Young, and all turned their faces, even the old lady,—

"Best on at this present qu'elle ne donne un sermon!"—

who, dear soul! from Hanover Square to far San Francisco, placidly reposes through the discourse.

The prophet was dressed, as usual, in grey homespun and home-woven: he wore, like most of the elders, a tall steeple-crowned straw hat with a broad black ribbon, and he had the rare refinement of black kid gloves. He entered the tribune covered and sat down, apparently greeting those near him. A man in a fit was carried out pumpwards. Bishop Smoot concluded with informing us that we should live for God. Another hymn was sung. Then a great silence, which told us that something was about to happen: that old man held his cough; that old lady awoke with a start; that child ceased to squall. Mr. Brigham Young removed his hat, advanced to the end of the tribune, superintended stooping over the spittoon, which was concealed from sight by the boarding, restored the balance of fluid by a glass of water from a well-filled decanter on the stand, and leaning slightly forwards upon both hands propped on the green baize of the tribune, addressed his followers.

The discourse began slowly, word crept timbantly after word, and the opening phrases were hardly audible; but as the orator warmed, his voice rose high and sonorous, and a fluency so remarkable succeeded falter and hesitation, that — although the phenomenon is not rare in strong speakers — the latter seemed almost to have been a work of art. The manner was pleasing and animated, and the matter fluent, impromptu, and well turned, spoken rather than preached: if it had a fault it was rather rambling and unconnected. Of course colloquialisms of all kinds were introduced, such as "he become," "for you and I," and so forth. The gestures were easy and rounded, not without a certain grace, though evidently untaught; one, however, must be excepted, namely, that of raising and shaking the forefinger; this is often done in the Eastern states, but the rest of the world over it is considered threatening and bullying. The address was long. God is a mechanic. Mormonism is a great fact. Religion had made him (the speaker) the happiest of men. He was ready to dance like a shaker. At this sentence the prophet, who is a good mimic, and has much of the old New English quaint humour, raised his right arm, and gave, to the amusement of the congregation, a droll imitation of Anne Lee's followers. The Gentiles had sent an army to lay waste Zion, and what had they done? Why, hung one of their

own tribe!—and that, too, on the Lord's Day!" The Saints have a glorious destiny before them, and their morality is remarkable as the beauty of the Promised Land; the soft breeze blowing over the Bowery, and the glorious sunshine outside, made the allusion highly appropriate. The Lamanites or Indians are a religious people. All races know a God and may be saved. After a somewhat lengthy string of sentences concerning the great tribulation coming on earth,—it has been coming for the last 1800 years,—he concluded with good wishes to visitors and Gentiles generally, with a solemn blessing upon the President of the United States, the territorial governor, and all such as be in authority over us, and, with an amen which was loudly reechoed by all around, he restored his hat and resumed his seat.

Having heard much of the practical good sense which characterises the prophet's discourse I was somewhat disappointed; probably the occasion had not been propitious. As regards the concluding benedictions, they are profanely compared by the Gentiles to those of the slave, who whilst being branded on the hand, was ordered to say thrice, "God bless the State." The first was a blessing. So was the second. But at the third, natural indignation having mastered Sambo's philosophy, forth came a certain naughty word not softened to "darn." During the discourse a Saint, in whose family some accident had occurred, was called out, but the accident failed to affect the riveted attention of the audience.

Then arose Mr. Heber C. Kimball, the second president. He is the model of a Methodist, a tall and powerful man, a "gentleman in black," with small dark piercing eyes, and clean-shaven blue face. He affects the Boanerges style, and does not at times disdain the part of Thersites: from a certain dislike to the Nonconformist rant and whine, he prefers an every day manner of speech, which savours rather of familiarity than of reverence. The people look [illegible] amused when he

* Alluding to one Thos. H. Ferguson, a Gentile; he killed, on Sept. 12th, 1858, in a drunken moment, J. Carpenter, who kept a tent and shoe store. Judge Sprague, according to the Mormons, was unwittingly undone that somebody should be run, gun sold; and, although intoxication is usually admitted as a plea for the Western States, he ignored it and hanged the man on Sunday. Mr. Ferguson was executed in a place behind the city; he appeared costumed in a Robin Hood style, and complained bitterly to the Mormon troops, who were drawn out, that the support to be shot had not been granted.

speaks than when others harangue them, and they laugh readily, as almost all crowds will, at the thinnest pleasantry of a joke. Mr. Kimball's movements contrasted strongly with those of his predecessor; they consisted now of a stone-throwing gesture delivered on tiptoe, then of a descending movement, as

"When pulpit drum ecclesiastic,
Was beat with fist and not with stick."

He began with generalities about humility, faithfulness, obeying counsel, and not beggaring one's neighbour. Addressing the hand-cart emigrants, newly arrived from the "sectarian world," he warned them to be on the look-out, or that every soul of them would be taken in and shaved (a laugh). Agreeing with the prophet—Mr. Kimball is said to be *his* echo—in a promiscuous way, concerning the morality of the Saints, he felt it notwithstanding his duty to say that, amongst them were "some of the greatest rascals in the world" (a louder laugh, and N.B. the Mormons are never spared by their own preachers). After a long suit of advice, à propos de rien, to missionaries, he blessed, cursed, and sat down.

I confess that the second president's style startled me. But presently I called to mind Luther's description* of Tetzel's sermon, in which he used to shout the words, Bring! bring! bring! with such a horrible bellowing, that one would have said it was a mad bull, rushing on the people and goring them with his horns; and D'Aubigné's neat apology for Luther†, who, "in one of those homely and quaint yet not undignified similitudes which he was fond of using, that he might be understood by the people," illustrated the idea of God in history by a game of cards! " . . . Then came our Lord God. He dealt the cards; . . . This is the Ace of God. . . . " Mormons also think it a merit to speak openly of "those things we know naturally;" they affect what to others appears coarseness and indelicacy. The same is the case with Oriental nations, even amongst the most modest and moral. After all, taste is in its general development a mere affair of time and place; what is apt to *froisser* us in the nineteenth may have been highly refined in the sixteenth century, and what may be exceedingly unfit for

* History of the Reformation of the Sixteenth Century. Book iii. chap. 1.
† Ditto, Preface.

Westminster Abbey and Notre Dame is often perfectly suited to the predilections and intelligence of Wahs or the Tuscin." It is only fair to both sides to state that Mr. Kimball is accused by Gentiles of calling his young wives, from the pulpit, "little heifers," of entering into physiological details belonging to the Dorcas Society, or the clinical lecture-room, rather than the house of worship, and of transgressing the bounds of all decorum when reproving the sex for its penchants and ridicules. At the same time I never heard, nor heard of, any such indelicacy during my stay at Gt. S. L. City. The saints abjured all knowledge of the "fact," and—in this case, *vafer ab hoste docuit*—so gross a scandal should not be adopted from Gentile mouths.

After Mr. Kimball's address, a list of names for whom letters were lying unclaimed, was called from the platform. Mr. Eldridge, a missionary lately returned from foreign travel, adjourned the meeting till 2 P.M., delivered the prayer of dismissal, during which all stood up, and ended with the benediction and amen. The Sacrament was not administered on this occasion. It is often given and reduced to the very elements of a sacramentary; even water is used instead of wine, because the latter is of Gentile manufactory. Two elders walk up and down the rows, one carrying a pitcher, the other a plate of broken bread, and each Saint partakes of both.

Directly the ceremony was over, I passed through the thirty carriages and wagons that awaited at the door the issuing of the congregation, and returned home to write my notes. Before appearing in the "Deseret News," the discourses are always accompanied; the reader, therefore, is warned against the following report which appeared in the "News" of Wednesday, the 5th September:

"SUNDAY.—*Sunday, Sept.* 2, 10 A.M. Bishop Abraham O. Smoot addressed the congregation. He said he rejoiced in the opportunity he had been favoured with of seeing both principles and men in the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints; he was fully satisfied that those who do right are constantly filled with joy and gladness, by the influence of the Holy Ghost. Every man must know God for himself, and practise the principles of righteousness for himself, learn the truth and the light and walk therein. Men are too much in the habit of patterning after their neighbours' actions, instead of following the

dictates of the Spirit of God; if the Saints do right they are filled with light, truth, and the power of God. It has been a matter of astonishment to many how we could so much rejoice in the things of God, but the reason is our religion is true, and we know it, for God has revealed it unto us, and hence we can rejoice in the midst of calamities that would make our enemies very cross and cause them to swear about their troubles. Nine tenths of those who have apostatized have done it on account of prosperity, like Israel of old, but the Lord desires to use us for the advancement of his kingdom, and the spreading abroad of light and truth. We should live for God, and prepare ourselves for all the temporal and spiritual blessings of his kingdom.

"President Brigham Young said if our heavenly Father could reveal all he wishes to his Saints, it would greatly hasten their perfection, and asked the question, Are the people prepared to receive those communications and profit by them, that would bring about their speedy perfection? He discovered a very great variety of degrees of intelligence in the people; he also observed a manifest stupidity in the people attempting to learn the principles of natural life. Observed that God is just and equal in his ways, and that no man will dare to dispute; also that there is no man in our government who will speak truthfully, and according to his honest convictions, but who will admit that we are the most law-abiding people within its jurisdiction. Remarked that all the heathen nations have devotional instincts, and none more than the natives of this vast continent; and they all worship according to the best of their knowledge. The whole human family can be saved in the kingdom of God if they are disposed to receive and obey the gospel. Reasoned on the subject of fore-ordination, and said the religion of Jesus Christ is designed to make the bad good and the good better. Argued that there is a feeling in every human breast to acknowledge the supremacy of the Almighty Creator. God is just, he is true, and if this were not the case no mortal could be exalted in his presence; advised all to improve upon the knowledge they had received of the things of God. Referred briefly to the birth of Christ, and the attendant opposition and threatening of the governments of the nations of the earth.

"President Heber C. Kimball followed with appropriate remarks on the practical duties of life, the necessity of humility and faithfulness among the Saints, and admonished all to be obedient to the mandates of heaven, and to the counsels of the living oracles. In giving advice to the Elders who are expected to go on missions to preach the Gospel, he said: "The commandment of Jesus to his apostles anciently has been renewed unto us, viz. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have

commanded you; and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world."

The student of the subject may desire to see how one of these sermons reads; I therefore extract from the "Deseret News," one spoken by Mr. Brigham Young, during my stay in the city; it is chosen impartially, neither because it is better nor because it is worse than its fellows. The subject it will be observed, is uninteresting, in fact, what negroes call "talkee-talkee"—*pour passer le temps*. But Mr. Brigham Young can, all admit, when occasion serves ability, "bring the house down," and elicit thundering amens.

REMARKS by President BRIGHAM YOUNG, *Bowery*, A.M., *August* 12, 1860. (*Reported by G. D. Watt.*)—"I fully understand that all Saints constantly, so to speak, pray for each other. And when I find a person who does not pray for the welfare of the kingdom of God on the earth, and for the honest in heart, I am sceptical in regard to believing that person's religion to be genuine, and his faith I should consider not the faith of Jesus. Those who have the mind of Christ are anxious that it should spread extensively among the people, to bring them to a correct understanding of things as they are, that they may be able to prepare themselves to dwell eternally in the heavens. This is your desire, and is what we continually pray for.

"Brother J. V. Long's discourse this morning was sweet to my taste; and the remarks of Brother T. B. H. Stenhouse were very congenial to my feelings and understanding. Brother Long has good command of language, and can readily choose such words as best suit him to convey his ideas.

"Brother Stenhouse remarked that the gospel of salvation is the great foundation of this kingdom; that we have not built up this kingdom, nor established this organization, we have merely embraced it in our faith; that God has established this kingdom, and has bestowed the priesthood upon the children of men, and has called upon the inhabitants of the earth to receive it, to repent of their sins and return to him with all their hearts. This portion of his remarks I wish you particularly to treasure up.

"If the angel Gabriel were to descend and stand before you, though he said not a word, the influence and power that would proceed from him, were he to look upon you in the power he possesses, would melt this congregation. His eyes would be like flaming fire, and his countenance would be like the sun at mid-day. The countenance of an holy angel would tell more than all the language in the world. If men who

are called to speak before a congregation, rise full of the Holy Spirit and power of God, their countenances are sermons to the people. But if their affections, feelings, and desires are like the fool's eye to the ends of the earth, looking for this, that, and the other, and the kingdom of God is far from them and not in all their affections, they may rise here and talk what they please, and it is but like sounding brass or a tinkling cymbal—mere empty, unmeaning sounds to the ears of the people. I cannot say this of what I have heard to-day.

"Those faithful elders who have testified of this work to thousands of people on the continents and islands of the sea will see the fruits of their labours, whether they have said five words or thousands. They may not see these fruits immediately, and perhaps in many cases not until the millennium, but the savour of their testimony will pass down from father to son. Children will say, 'the words of life were spoken to my grandfather, and grandmother; they told me of them, and I wish to become a member of the church; I also wish to be baptized for my father and mother and grand-parents;' and they will come and keep coming, the living and the dead, and you will be satisfied with your labours, whether they have been much or little, if you continue faithful.

"Brother Long remarked that before he gathered to Zion he had imbibed an idea that the people were all pure here. This is a day of trial for you. If there is anything that should give us sorrow and pain, it is that any of the brethren and sisters come here and neglect to live their religion. Some are greedy, covetous, and selfish, and give way to temptation; they are wicked and dishonest in their dealings with one another, and look at and magnify the faults of everybody, on the right and on the left. 'Such a sister is guilty of pilfering; such a brother is guilty of swearing,' &c., 'and we have come a long distance to be joined with such a set; we do not care a dime for "Mormonism," nor for anything else.' The enemy takes the advantage of such persons, and leads them to do that for which they are afterwards sorry. This is a matter of great regret to those who wish to be faithful. But no matter how many give themselves up to merchandising and love it better than their God, how many go to the gold mines, how many go back on the road to trade with the wicked, nor how many take their neighbours' wood after it is cut and piled up in the kanyons, or steal their neighbours' axes or anything that is their neighbours'; you live your religion and we shall see the day when we shall tread iniquity under foot. But if you listen to those who practise iniquity, you will be carried away by it, as it has carried away thousands. Let every one get a knowledge for himself, that this work is true. We do not want you to say that it is true, until you know that it is; and if you know it, that knowledge is as good to you as though the Lord came down and

said yes. Then let every person say, 'I will live my religion, though every other person goes to hell; I will walk humbly before God, and deal honestly with my fellow beings.' There are now scores of these saints in this territory who will do this, and who feel as I do on this subject, and we will overcome the wicked. Ten filthy, dirty sheep in a thousand cause the whole flock to appear defiled, and a stranger would pronounce them all filthy; but wash them and you will find nine hundred and ninety pure and clean. It is so with this people; half a dozen horse thieves tend to cause the whole community to appear corrupt in the eyes of a casual observer.

"Brother Lang said that the Lord will deal out correction to the evil doer, but that he would have nothing to do with it. I do not know whether I shall or not, but I shall not ask the Lord to do what I am not willing to do; and I do not think that Brother Lang is any more or less ready to do so than I am. Ask any earthly king to do a work that you would not do, and he would be insulted. Were I to ask the Lord to free us from ungodly wretches, and not lend my influence and assistance, He would look upon me differently to what he now does.

"You have read that I had an agent in China to mix poison with the tea to kill all the nations; that I was at the head of the Vigilance Committee in California; that I managed the troubles in Kansas, from the beginning to the end; that there is not a liquor shop or distillery, but what Brigham Young dictates it; so state the newspapers. In these and all other accusations of evil doing, I defy them to produce the first show of evidence against me. It is also asserted that President Buchanan and myself connected the plan for the army to come here, with a view to make money. By and by, the poor wretches will come bending and say, 'I wish I was a 'Mormon.'' All the army with its teamsters, hangers-on, and followers, with the judges, and nearly all the rest of the civil officers, amounting to some seventeen thousand men, have been searching diligently for three years to bring one act to light that would criminate me; but they have not been able to trace out one thread or one particle of evidence that would criminate me; do you know why? Because I walk humbly with my God and do right, so far as I know how. I do no evil to any one; and so long as I can have faith in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ to hinder the wolves from tearing the sheep and devouring them, without putting forth my hand, I shall do so.

"I can say honestly and truly, before God and the holy angels and all men, that not one act of murder or disorder has occurred in this city or territory that I had any knowledge of, any more than a babe a week old, until after the event has transpired; that is the reason they cannot trace any crime to me. If I have faith enough to cause the devils to eat up the devils, like the Kilkenny cats, I shall certainly

exercise it. Joseph Smith said that they would eat each other up as did those cats. They will do so here, and throughout the world. The nations will consume each other, and the Lord will suffer them to bring it about. It does not require much talent or tact to get up opposition in these days; you see it rife in communities, in meetings, in neighbourhoods, and in cities; that is the knife that will cut down this government. The axe is laid at the root of the tree, and every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit, will be hewn down.

"Out of this Church will grow the kingdom which Daniel saw. This is the very people that Daniel saw would continue to grow, and spread, and prosper; and if we are not faithful, others will take our places, for this is the Church and people that will possess the kingdom for ever and ever. Will we do this in our present condition as a people? No, for we must be pure and holy and be prepared for the presence of our Saviour and God, in order to possess the kingdom. Selfishness, wickedness, bickering, tattling, lying, and dishonesty must depart from the people, before they are prepared for the Saviour; we must sanctify ourselves before our God.

"I wanted to ask Brother Long a question this morning—what he had learned in regard to the original sin. Let the Elders, who like speculation, find out what it is, if they can, and inform us next Sabbath; or if you have anything else that is good, bring it along. I wish to impress upon your minds to live your religion, and, when you come to this stand to speak, not to care whether you say five words or five thousand, but to come with the power of God upon you, and you will comfort the hearts of the Saints. All the sophistry in the world will do no good. If you live your religion, you will live with the Spirit of Zion within you, and will try, by every lawful means, to induce your neighbours to live their religion. In this way we will redeem Zion, and cleanse it from sin.

"God bless you:—Amen."

The gift of unknown tongues—which is made by some physiologists the result of an affection of the epigastric region, and by others an abnormal action of the organ of language—is now apparently rarer than before. Anti-Mormon writers thus imitate the "blatant gibberish" which they derive directly from Irvingism: "Eli, ele, elo, ela—como, coma, como—reli, relo, rela, relo—sela, selo, sele, selum—vavo, vava, vavum—sero, seri, sera, serum." Lieut. Gunnison relates* a facetious story concerning a waggish youth, who, after that a woman had sprung

* The Mormons. Chap. vi. Social Condition.

up and spoken "in tongues," as follows, "Mole, molli, molee," surely pressed by the "gift of interpretation of tongues," translated the sentence into the vernacular, "My leg, my thigh, my knee." For this he was called before the Council, but he stoutly persisted in his "interpretation" being "by the Spirit," and they dismissed him with admonition. Gentiles have observed that whatever may be uttered "in tongues," it is always translated into very intelligible English.

That evening when dining out, I took a lesson in Mormon modesty. The mistress of the house, a Gentile, but not an anti-Mormon, was requested by a saintly visitor, who was also a widow, to instruct me, that on no account I must propose to see her house. "Mormon ladies," said my kind informant, "are very strict;" unnecessarily so on this occasion I could not but think. Something similar occurred on another occasion: a very old lady wishing to return home surreptitiously left the room and stalked out of the garden gate, and my companion, an officer from Camp Floyd, at once recognised the object of the retreat. I afterwards learned at dinner and elsewhere amongst the Mormons to abjure the Gentile practice of giving precedence to that sex than which, according to Latin grammar, the masculine is nobler. The lesson, however, was not new; I had been taught the same, in times past, amongst certain German missionaries who assumed precedence over their wives upon a principle borrowed from St. Paul.

I took the earliest opportunity of visiting, at his invitation, the Prophet's gardens. The grounds were laid out by Mr. W. C. Staines, now on church business in London.* Mr. Staines arrived at Gt. S. L. City an exceptionally poor emigrant, and is now a rich man, with house and farm, all the proceeds of his own industry. This and many other instances which I could quote prove that although as a rule the highest dignitaries are the wealthiest, and though the polygamist cannot expect to keep a large family and fill at the same time a long purse, that the Gentiles somewhat exaggerate when they represent that church discipline keeps the lower orders in a state of pauperdom. Mr. Staines is also the "son of 'Brigham' by adoption." This custom is prevalent amongst the Mormons

* I have to thank Mr. Staines for kind assistance in supplying me with necessary items of information.

as amongst the Hindus, but with this difference, that whilst the latter use it when childless, the former employ it as the means of increasing their glory in the next world. The relationship is truly one of parent and child, by choice, not only by the mere accident of birth, and the "son," if necessary, lives with and receives the necessaries of life from his "father." Before entering the garden, we were joined by Mr. Mercer, who, long after my departure from India, had ministered at Kurrachee in "Scinde or the Unhappy Valley."

The May frost had injured the fruit. Grapes were but quarter-grown, whilst winter was fast approaching. I suggested to the civil and obliging English gardener that it would be well to garnish the trellised walls, as is done in Tuscany, with mats which roll up and can be let down at night. Bacchus appeared in three forms: the California grape, which is supposed to be the Madeira introduced into the New World by the Franciscan Missions; the Catawba,—so called from an Indian people on a river of the same name,—a cultivated variety of the *Vitis labrusca*, and still the wine-grape in the States. The third is the inferior Isabella, named after his wife by "ole man Gibbs,"* who first attempted to civilise the fox-grape (*Vitis vulpina*), growing on banks of streams in most of the temperate States. A vineyard is now being planted on the hill-side near Mr. Brigham Young's block, and home-made wine will soon become an item of produce in Utah. Pomology is carefully cultivated; about one hundred varieties of apples have been imported, and of these ninety-one are found to thrive as seedlings: in good seasons their branches are bowed down by fruit, and must be propped up, or they will break under their load. The peaches were in all cases unpruned: upon this important point opinions are greatly divided. The people generally believe, that the foliage is a protection to the fruit during the spring frosts. The horticulturists declare that the "extremes of temperature render proper pruning even more necessary than in France, and that the torrid summers often induce a growth of wood which must suffer severely during the inclement months, unless checked and hardened by cutting back. Besides grapes and apples, there were walnuts, apricots and quinces, cherries and

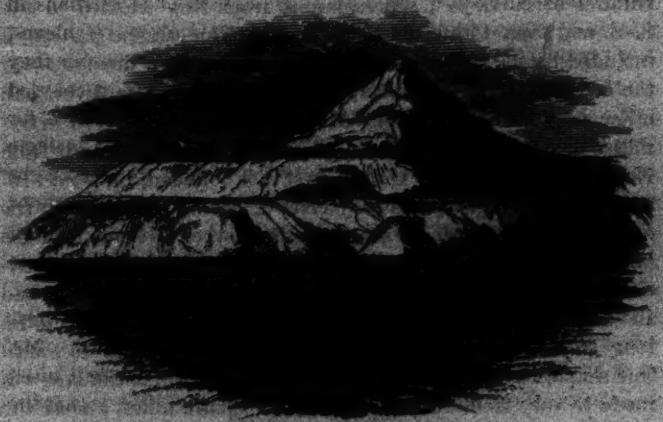
* Similarly, the Constantia of the Cape was named after Madame van Stell, the wife of the governor.

plums, currants, raspberries and gooseberries. The principal vegetables were the Irish and the sweet potato, squashes, peas — excellent — cabbages, beets, cauliflowers, lettuce, and broccoli; a little rhubarb is cultivated, but it requires too much expensive sugar for general use, and white celery has lately been introduced. Leaving the garden, we walked through the various offices, oil-mill, timber-mill, and smithy: in the latter oxen are shod, according to the custom of the country, with half shoes. The animal is raised from the ground by a broad leather band under the belly, and is liable to be lamed by any but a practised hand.

On the evening of the 3rd September, whilst sauntering about the square in which a train of twenty-three wagons had just bivouacked: amongst the many others to whom Mr. S. introduced me, was the Apostle John Taylor, the "Champion of Rights," Speaker in the House, and whilome editor. I had heard of him from the best authorities as a man so morose and averse to Gentiles, "who made the healing virtue depart out of him," that it would be advisable to avoid his "fierceness." The *véridique* Mr. Austin Ward, describes him as "an old man deformed and crippled," and Mrs. Ferris as a "heavy dark-coloured beetle-browed man." Of course, I could not recognise him from these descriptions; — a stout, good-looking somewhat elderly personage, with a kindly grey eye, pleasant expression, and a forehead of the superior order; he talked of Westmoreland his birthplace, and of his European travels for a time, till the subject of Carthage coming upon the *tapis*, I suspected who my interlocutor was. Mr. S. burst out laughing when he heard my mistake, and I explained the reason to the Apostle, who laughed as heartily. Wishing to see more of him, I accompanied him in the carriage to the Sugar House Ward, where he was bound on business, and *chemin faisant* we had a long talk. He pointed out to me on the left the mouths of the several kanyons, and informed me that the City Creek and the Red Buttes on the north-east, and the Emigration, Parley's, Mill Creek, Great Cottonwood and Little Cottonwood kanyons to the east and south-east, all head together in two points, thus enabling troops and provisions to be easily and readily concentrated for the defence of the eastern approaches. When talking about the probability of gold digging being developed near Gt. S. L. City, he said

that the Mormons are aware of that, but that they look upon agriculture as their real wealth. The Gentiles, however, —it is curious that they do not form a company among themselves for prospecting—assert that the Church has very rich mines which are guarded by those dragons of Danites more fiercely than the Hesperidian Gardens, and which will never be known till Miss Utah becomes Mistress Deseret. Arriving at the tall, gaunt Sugar House—its occupation is gone whilst the name remains—we examined the machinery employed in making threshing and wool-carding machines, flanges, wheels, cranks, and similar necessaries. After a visit to a nail manufactory belonging to 'Squire Wells, and calling upon Mrs. Harris, we entered the Penitentiary. It is a somewhat oriental looking building with a large quadrangle behind the house, guarded by a wall with a walk on the summit, and pepper-caster sentry-boxes at each angle. There are cells in which the convicts are shut up at night, but one of these had lately been broken by an Indian, who had cut his way through the wall; a Hindu "gonnoff" would soon "pike" out of a "penitentiary" like this. We found in it besides the guardians only six persons, of whom two were Yutas. When I remarked to Gentiles how few were the evidences of crime, they invariably replied, that instead of half a dozen souls half the population ought to be in the place. On our return we resumed the subject of the massacre at Carthage, in which it will be remembered, Mr. John Taylor was severely wounded and escaped by a miracle as it were. I told him openly that there must have been some cause for the furious proceedings of the people in Illinois, Missouri, and other places against the Latter Day Saints; that even those who had extended hospitality to them ended by hating and expelling them, and accusing them of all possible iniquities, especially of horse-thieving, forgery, larceny, and offences against property which on the borders are never pardoned—was this smoke quite without fire? He heard me courteously and in perfect temper, replied that no one claimed immaculateness for the Mormons; that the net cast into the sea brought forth evil as well as good fish, and that the Prophet was one of the labourers sent into the vineyard at the eleventh hour. At the same time that when the New Faith was stoutly struggling into existence, it was the object of detraction,

odium, persecution—so, said Mr. Taylor, were the Christians in the days of Nero—that the border ruffians, forgers, horse-thieves, and other vile fellows followed the Mormons wherever they went; and finally that every fraud and crime was charged upon those whom the populace were disposed by desire for confiscation's sake to believe guilty. Besides the theologic odium there was also the political: the Saints would vote for their favourite candidates, consequently they were never without enemies. He quoted the Mormon rules:—1. Worship what you like. 2. Leave your neighbour alone. 3. Vote for whom you please; and compared their troubles to the Western, or, as it is popularly called the Whiskey insurrection in 1794, whose "dreadful night" is still remembered in Pennsylvania. Mr. Taylor remarked that the Saints had been treated by the United States as the colonies had been treated by the Crown: that the persecuted naturally became persecutors, as the Pilgrim Fathers, after flying for their faith, hung the Quakers on Bloody Hill at Boston; and that even the Gentiles cannot defend their own actions. I heard for the first time this view of the question, and subsequently obtained from the Apostle a manuscript account, written in extenso, of his experience and his sufferings. It has been transferred in its integrity to Appendix No. 3.—the length forbidding its insertion in the text: a tone of candour, simplicity and honesty, renders it highly attractive.



ANCIENT LAKE BEACH-LAND.

CHAP. VI.

DESCRIPTIVE GEOGRAPHY, ETHNOLOGY, AND STATISTICS OF U. T.

Utah Territory, so called from its Indian owners, the Yuta—"those that dwell in mountains"—is still to a certain extent *terra incognita*, not having yet been thoroughly explored, much less surveyed or settled.

The whole Utah country has been acquired, like Oregon, by conquest and diplomacy. By the partition of 1848, the parallel of N. L. 42°, left unsettled, between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific, by the treaties of 22nd October 1818, and 12th February 1819, was prolonged northwards to N. L. 49°, thus adding to the United States, California, Oregon, and Washington, whilst to Britain remained Vancouver's Island and the joint navigation of the Columbia River. Under the Hispano-Americans the actual Utah Territory formed the northern portion of Alta California, and the peace of Guadalupe Hidalgo, concluded in 1848 between the United States and Mexico, transferred it from the latter to the former.

The present boundaries of U. T. are, northwards (42° N. L.), the State of Oregon; and southwards, a line pursuing the

parallel of N. L. 37°, separating it from New Mexico to the S.-E. and from California to the S.-W. The eastern portion is included between 106° and 120° W. long. (G.); a line following the crest of the Green River, the Wasatch, the Bear River, and other sections of the Rocky Mountains whose southern extremities anastomose to form the Sierra Nevada, separate it from Nebraska and Kansas. On the west it is bounded, between 116° and 120° W. long., by the lofty crest of the Sierra Nevada; the organisation, however, of a new territory, the "Nevada," on the landward slope of the Snowy Range has diminished its dimensions by about half. Utah had thus 5° of extreme breadth, and 14° degrees of total length; it was usually reckoned 650 miles long from east to west, and 350 broad from north to south. The shape was an irregular parallelogram, of which the area was made to vary from 188,000 to 225,000 square miles, almost the superficies of France.

The surface configuration of U. T. is like Central Equatorial Africa, a great depression in a mountain land: a trough elevated 4000 to 5000 feet above sea level, subtended on all sides by mountains 8000 to 10,000 feet high, and subdivided by transverse ridges. The "Rim of the Basin" is an uncontinuous line formed by the broken chains of Oregon to the north, and to the south by the little-known subranges of the Rocky Mountains; the latter also form the eastern wall, whilst the Sierra Nevada bems in the west. Before the present upheaval of the country the Great Interior Basin was evidently a sweetwater inland sea; the bench formation, a system of water-marks, is found in every valley, whilst detached and parallel blocks of mountain, trending almost invariably north and south, were in geological ages rock-islands protruding from the lake surface like those that now break the continuity of that "vast and silent sea" the Great Salt Lake. Between these primitive and metamorphic ridges lie the secondary basins, whose average width may be 15—20 miles; they open into one another by Kanyons and Passes, and are often separated longitudinally, like "waffel irons," by smaller divides running east and west, thus converting one extended strip of secondary into a system of tertiary valleys. The Great Basin, which is not less than 500 miles long by 500 broad, is divided by two large chains, which run transversely from N.-E. to S.-W. The northernmost is the range of the Humboldt River, rising 5000—6000 feet above the sea.

The southern is the prolongation of the Wasach, whose south-western extremity abuts upon the Pacific coast range; it attains a maximum elevation of nearly 12,000 feet. Without these mountains, whose gorges are fed during the spring, and even in the summer, by melted snow, there would be no water. The levels of the valleys are still unknown; it is yet a question how far they are irregular in elevation, whether they have formed detached lakes, or whether they slope uniformly and by steps towards the Gt. S. Lake and the other reservoirs scattered at intervals over the country.

The watershed of the Basin is towards the north, south, east, and west; the affluents of the Columbia and the Colorado Rivers carry off the greatest amount of drainage. One of the geographical peculiarities of the Territory is the "sinking," as it is technically called, of the rivers. The phenomenon is occasioned by the porous nature of the soil. The larger streams, like the Humboldt and the Carson Rivers, form terminating lakes. The smaller are either absorbed by sand or sink, like the S. African fountains, in ponds and puddles of black mire, beneath which is peaty earth that burns as if by spontaneous combustion, and smoulders for a long time in dry weather; the waters either re-appear, or escaping under the surface — a notable instance of the "subterranean river" — feed the greater drains and the lakes. The potamology is more curious than useful; the streams being unnavigable play no important part in the scheme of economy.

Utah Territory is well provided with lakes; of these are two nearly parallel chains extending across the country. The easternmost begins at the north, with the Gt. S. Lake, the small tarns of the Wasach, the Utah, or sweetwater reservoir, the Nicollet, and the Little Salt Lake, complete the line which is fed by the streams that flow from the western counterslope of the Wasach. The other chain is the drainage collected from the eastern slope of the Sierra Nevada; it consists of Mud, Pyramid, Carson, Mono, and Walker's Lakes. Of these, Pyramid Lake, so called by Col. Frémont, its explorer, from a singular rock in the centre, is the most beautiful, — a transparent water, 700 feet above the level of the Gt. S. Lake, and walled in by precipices nearly 3000 feet high.

The principal thermal features of U. T. are the Bear Springs, near the Fort Hall Road. The Harrowgate Springs, near Gt. S. L. City, have already been alluded to. Between the city and

Bear River there is a fountain of strong brine, described as discharging a large volume of water. There are sulphurous pools at the southern extremity of the Gt. S. L. Valley. Others are chalybeate, coating the earth and the rocks with oxide of iron. Almost every valley has some thermal spring, in which various conferve flourish; the difficulty is to find good cold water.

Another curious geographical peculiarity of the Territory, is the formation of the mountains. For the most part the ridges, instead of presenting regular slopes, more or less inclined, are formed of short but acute angular cappings super-imposed upon flatter prisms. It often happens that after easily ascending two-thirds from the base, the upper part suddenly becomes wall-like and insurmountable.

Utah Territory is situated in the parallel of the Mediterranean; the southern boundary corresponds with the provinces along the Amoor lately acquired by Russia, and with Tasmania in the southern hemisphere. But the elevation, that grand modifier of climate, renders it bleak and liable to great vicissitudes of temperature. The lowest valley rises 4000 feet above sea level; the mountains behind Gt. S. L. City are 6000 feet high; Mount Nebo is marked 8000, and the Twin Peaks, that look upon the "happy valley," were ascertained barometrically by Messrs. O. Pratt and A. Carrington, to be 11,660 feet in height: in the western part of the Territory the Sierra Nevada averages 9000 feet above the South Pass, and it has peaks that tower thousands of feet above that altitude. These snowy masses, in whose valleys thaw is seldom known, exercise a material effect upon the climate, and cause the cultivator to wage fierce war with the soil. The air is highly rarefied by its altitude. Capt. Stansbury's barometrical observations for May, June, July, and August, give as a maximum 27·80, at 9 A.M. on 4th August, and minimum 23·86 at sunrise on 19th June, with a general range between 25° and 26°. New comers suffer from difficulty of breathing; often after sudden and severe exercise, climbing, or running, the effect is like the nausea, sickness, and fainting experienced upon Mont Blanc and in Tibet; even horses feel it, and must pass two or three months before they are acclimatised.*

* Subjoined is an abstract of meteorology kindly forwarded to me by Judge Phelps.

Great Salt Lake City, Utah, Oct. 24th, 1860.

DEAR SIR,—The following is an abstract of meteorological observations for the past year, from October 1859, to October 1860 inclusive:—

The climate of the Basin has been compared with that of the Tartar plains of High Asia. Spring opens in the valleys with great suddenness, all is bloom and beauty below, whilst the snow line creeps lingeringly up the mountain side, and does not disappear till the middle of June. Thus there are but three months of warmth in the high lands; the low lands have four, beginning with a May-day like that of England. At the equinoxes, both vernal and autumnal, there are rains in the bottoms, which in the upper levels become sleet or snow. Between April and October showers are rare; there are, however, exceptions, heavy downfalls, with thunder, lightning, and hail. "Clouds without water" is a proverbial expression; a dark, heavy pall, which in woodland countries would burst with its weight, here sails over the arid, sun-parched surface, and discharges its watery stores in the kanyons and upon the mountains. During the first few years after the arrival of the Saints, there was little rain either in spring or autumn; in 1860 it extended to the middle of June. The change may be attributed to cultivation and plantation; thus also may be explained the N. A. Indian's saying that the pale-face brings with him his rain. The same has been observed in Kansas and New Mexico, and is equally remarked by the natives of Cairo, the Aden Coalhole, and Kurrachee. Seed-time lasts from April to the 10th of June.

Yearly mean of barometer	25·655
Highest range	26·550
Lowest „	24·205
Thermometer attached (mean)	60°
Thermometer (open air) „	71°
Thermometer, dry bulb „	64°
Thermometer, wet bulb „	49°

(All Fahrenheit.)

The amount of fair days 244. The remaining 121 were 31 stormy and the residue cloudy and foggy.

The losses of the wind more than two-thirds of the year were casual daily with the rain; strongest wind south; worst for stock, north.

Highest range of the thermometer, 96° in July; lowest range in December, − 22° below 0.

The amount of snow and rain water was 13·167, which is somewhat over 1 foot.

All the snow in the Valley was less than 3 feet, while perhaps in the mountains it was more than 10 feet, which gives ample water for irrigation.

The weather during the year was steady, without extremes.

Such was Utah in 1860.

Respectfully I have the honour to be, &c.

W. W. PHELPS.

The summer is hot, but the lightness and the aridity of the air prevent its being unwholesome. During my visit the thermometer (F.) placed in a room with open windows, showed at dawn 63—66°; at noon 75°; and at sunset 70°: the greatest mid-day heat was 105°. The mornings and evenings, cooled by breezes from the mountains, were deliciously soft and pure. The abundant electricity was proved, as in Sindh and Arabia, by frequent devilsor dust-pillars, like huge columns of volcanic smoke, that careered over the miraged plains, violently excited where they touched the negative earth, and calm in the positive strata of the upper air, whence their floating particles were precipitated. Dust-storms and thunder-storms are frequent and severe. Clouds often gather upon the peaks, and a heavy black nimbus rises behind the Wasatch wall, setting off its brilliant sunlit side, but there is seldom rain. Showers are preceded, as in Eastern Africa, by puffs and gusts of cold air, and are expected in Gt. S. L. City when the clouds come from the west and south-west, opposite and over the "Black Rock;" otherwise they will cling to the hills. Even in the hottest weather, a cold continuous wind, as from the nozzle of a forge bellows, pours down the deep damp kanyons, where the snow lingers, and travellers, especially at night, prepare to pass across the ravine mouths with blankets and warm clothing. Where the Federal troops encamped on the stony bench opposite the Provo Kanyon, it was truly predicted that they would soon be blown out. When summer is protracted, severe droughts are the result. Harvest time is in the beginning of July.

About early September the heat ends. In 1860, the first snow fell upon the Twin Peaks and their neighbourhood on the 12th of September. Rains then usually set in for a fortnight or three weeks, and mild weather often lasts till the end of October. November is partially a fine month; after two or three snowy days, the Indian summer ushers in the most enjoyable weather of the year, which, when short, ends about the middle of November.

Winter has three very severe months, reckoned from December. Icy winds blow hard, and gales are sometimes so high that spray is carried from the Gt. S. Lake to the City,—a distance of 10—12 miles. In 1854-5 hundreds of cattle perished in the snow. Usually in mid-winter, snow falls every day with a high westerly wind, veering towards the north, and thick with Poudrè — dry icy spiculæ, hard as gravel. The thermometer

is not often below zero in the bottoms; on the 13th of December 1858, however, the thermometer at daylight, with the barometer at 26·250, showed —23° (F.); 5° or 6° lower than it had ever been before. The snow seldom lies in the valleys deeper than a man's knee; it is dry and readily thawed by the sun. A vast quantity is drifted into the kanyons and passes, where the people, as in Styria, often become prisoners at home. These crevasses, hundreds of feet deep, retain their icy stores throughout the year. It is asserted by those who believe in a Pacific Railway upon this line*, that the Wasatch can be traversed at all seasons; at present, however, sledge transit only is practicable, and at times even that is found impossible.

It cannot be doubted that this climate of arid heat and dry cold is eminently suited to most healthy and to many sickly constitutions: children and adults have come from England, apparently in a dying state, and have lived to be strong and robust men. I have elsewhere alluded to the effect of rarefaction upon the English *physique*: another has been stated, namely, that the atmosphere is too fine and dry to require, or even to permit, the free use of spirituous liquors. Paralysis is rare: scrofula and phthisis are unknown as in Nebraska — the climate wants that humidity which brings forward the predisposition. It is also remarkable that though all drink marsh water, and though many live in valleys where there is no free circulation of air, goitre and cretinism are not yet named. The City Council maintains an excellent sanitory supervision which extends to the minutest objects that might endanger the general health. The stream of emigrants which formerly set copiously westward, is now dribbling back towards its source, and a quarantine is established for those who arrive with contagious diseases.

* The Pacific R. R. in 1842 was unknown to the political world: in 1849 it began to be necessary, and shortly afterwards it appeared in both "platforms" become without it no one could expect to carry the Mississippian and Pacific States, Texas, the Louisiana, and California. The Diary will show the many difficulties which it must encounter after crossing the South Pass: as the West can afford no assistance, provisions and material must all come from the East — an additional element of expense and delay. The estimate is roughly laid down at $100,000,000: it may safely be doubled. The well-known contractor, Mr. Whitney, offered to build it for a reservation of thirty miles on both sides: the idea was rejected as that of a crazy man. It is promised in ten years, and will probably take thirty. England, then, had better look to her line through Canada and Columbia — it would be worth a hundred East Indian railroads.

Gt. S. L. City is well provided with disciples of Æsculapius, against whom there is none of that prejudice founded upon superstition and fanaticism which anti-Mormon writers have detected. Dr. Francis, an English Mormon, lately died, leaving Dr. Anderson, a graduate of Maryland College, to take his place: Dr. Bernhisel prefers politics to physic, and Dr. Kay is the chief dentist.

The normal complaints are easily explained by local peculiarities—cold, alkaline dust, and over indulgence in food.

Neuralgia is by no means uncommon. Many are compelled to wear kerchiefs under their hats, and if a head be not always uncovered there is some reason for it. Rheumatism, as in England, affects the poorer classes, who are insufficiently fed and clothed. Pneumonia, in winter, follows exposure and hard work. The pleuro-pneumonia, which in 1860 did so much damage to stock in New England, did not extend to U. T.: the climate, however, is too like that of the Cape of Storms to promise lasting immunity. Catarrhs are severe and lasting; they are accompanied by bad tooth-aches and sore throats which sometimes degenerate into bronchitis. Diphtheria is not yet known. The measles have proved especially fatal to the Indians; in 1850 "Old Elk," the principal war-chief of the Timpanogos Yutas died of it: erysipelas also kills many of the wild men.

For ophthalmic disease, the climate has all the efficients of the valley of the Nile, and unless suitable precautions are taken, the race will, after a few generations, become tender-eyed as Egyptians. The organ is weakened by the acrid irritating dust from the alkaline soil, which glistens in the sun like hoar-frost. Snow-blindness is common on the mountains and in the plains: the favourite preventive, when goggles are unprocurable, is to blacken the circumorbital region and the sides of the nose with soot — the Kohl, surmah, or collyrium of the Far West: — the cure is a drop of nitrate of silver or laudanum. The mucous membrane in horses, as amongst men, is glaidared as it were by alkali, and the chronic inflammation causes frequent hemorrhage: the nitrous salts in earth and air exasperate to ulcers sunburns on the nose and mouth: it is not uncommon to see men riding or walking with a bit of paper instead of a straw, between their lips. Wounds must be treated to great disadvantage, where the climate, like that of Abyssinia, renders a mere scratch troublesome. The dryness of the air produces immunity

from certain troublesome excrescences which cause shooting pains in humid regions, and the pedestrian requires no vinegar and water to harden his feet: on the other hand, horses' hoofs, as in Sindh and Arabia, must be stuffed with tar, to prevent sun-crack.

Under the generic popular name "mountain fever" are included various species of febrile affections, intermittent, remittent and typhoid: they are treated successfully with quinine.

Emigrants are advised to keep up hard work and scanty fare after arrival: otherwise the sudden change from semi-starvation and absence of fruits and vegetables upon the prairies to plenty in the settlements may cause dyspepsia, dysentery, and visceral inflammation. Some are attacked by "liver complaint," the trivial term for the effects of malaria, which when inhaled affects successively the lungs, blood, liver, and other viscera. The favourite, and indeed the only known successful treatment is by mineral acids, nitric, muriatic and others.* Scurvy is unknown to the settlers; when brought in after long desert marches, it yields readily to a more generous diet and vegetables, especially potatoes, which, even in the preserved form, act as a specific. The terrible scorbutic disease, called the "black canker of the plains," has not extended so far west.

There is not much sport with fur, feather, and fin in this part of Far West: the principal carnivors of the Great Basin are the cougar (*F. unicolor*), and the cat'-o-mountain, the large and small wolf, a variety of foxes, the red (*V. fulvus*), the great tailed (*V. macrourus*), and the silver (*V. argentatus*), whose spoils were once worth their weight in silver. There are minks, ermines, skunks, American badgers, and wolverines or gluttons, which ferret out caches of peltries and provisions, and are said sometimes to attack man. Of rodents the principal are the beaver, a burrowing hare, the jackass-rabbit (*L. callotis*), porcupines, the geomys or gopher, a sand rat peculiar to America, the wood-chuck or ground-hog, many squirrels, especially the Spermophilus tredecim-lineatus, which swarms in hilly ground,

* The following is the favourite cure: it is upon the principle of the medicinal bath well-known in Europe.

℞. Acid. Nit. ʒi.
Acid. Mur. ʒii. Mix.

Of this fifteen drops are to be taken in a tumbler of water twice a day before meals. The local application to the hepatic region is one oz. of the nitro-muriatic acid in a quart of water, and applied upon a compress every night.

and musk-rat (*F. sibiricus*) which, like other vermin, is eaten by Indians. The principal pachyderm is the hyrax, called by the settlers "coney." Of the ruminants, we find the antelope, deer, elk, and the noble Bighorn or Rocky Mountain sheep, the mouflon or argali of the New World.

Of the raptors, the principal are the red tailed hawk (*B. borealis*), the sharp-shinned hawk (*A. fuscus*), the sparrow-hawk and the vulturine turkey-buzzard. Of game birds there are several varieties of quail, called partridges, especially the beautiful blue species (*O. californica*), and grouse, especially the sage hen (*T. urophasianus*): the water fowl are swans, (*C. americanus*), wild geese in vast numbers, the white pelican here a migrating bird, the cormorant (*Phalacrocorax*), the mallard or greenhead (*A. boschas*), which loves the water of Jordan and the western Sea of Tiberias, the teal, red-breasted and green-winged, the brant (*A. bernicla*), the plover and curlew, the gull (a small *Larus*), a blue heron, and a brown crane (*G. canadensis*), which are found in the marshes throughout the winter. The other members of the family are the blue-bird (*A. sialis*), the humming-bird (*Trochilus*), finches, wood-peckers, the swamp-blackbird, and the snow-bird, small passerines: there is also a fine lark (*Sturnella*) with a harsh note, which is considered a delicacy in autumn.

Besides a variety of grey and green lizards, the principal Saurian is the Phrynosoma, a purely American type, popularly called the horned frog—or toad, although its tail, its scaly body, and its inability to jump, disprove its title to rank as a batrachian—and by the Mexicans, chameleon, because it is supposed to live on air. It is of many species, for which the naturalist is referred to the Appendix of Capt. Stanbury's Exploration. The serpents are chiefly rattle-snakes, swamp-adders, and water-snakes. The fishes are perch, pike, bass, chub, a mountain trout averaging three pounds, and salmon trout which has been known to weigh thirty pounds. There are but few molluska, periwinkles, snails and fresh water clams.*

* Mr. W. Baird, in the absence of Mr. S. Woodward, of the British Museum, has kindly favoured me with the following list of a little collection from the Great Basin which I placed in his hands.

British Museum, August 3rd, 1861.

DEAR SIR,—The Helix (with open umbilicus) is, I think, *H. solitaria*; the large Physa is very near, if not identical with the *P. elliptica* of our collection; the next largest Physa comes very near *P. gyrina*; the larger Lymnæa is *L. palus-*

The botany of the Great Basin has been investigated by Messrs. Frémont and Stansbury, who forwarded their collections for description to Professor John Torrey of N. Y.: M. Remy has described his own herbarium. To these valuable works the reader may be referred for all now known upon the subject.

The rocks in U. T. are mostly primitive — granite, brick-red jasper, syenite, hornblende and porphyry, with various quartzes, of which the most curious is a white nodule surrounded by a crystalline layer of satin spar. The presence of obsidian, scoriæ and lava — apparently a dark brown mud tinged with iron and so vitrified by heat that it rings — evidences volcanic action. Many of the ridges are a carboniferous limestone threaded by calcareous spar, and in places rich with encrinites and fossil corallines; it rests upon or alternates with hard and compact grits and sandstone. The kanyons in the neighbourhood of Gt. S. L. City, supply boulders of serpentine, fine grey granite, coarse red ochreish poikilated crystalline-white, and metamorphic sandstones, a variety of conglomerates, especially granitic, with tufa in large masses, talcose and striated slates, some good for roofing, gypsum (plaster of Paris), pebbles of alabaster and various kinds of limestones, some dark and fetid, others oolitic, some compact and massive, black, blue, or ash-coloured, seamed with small veins of white carbonate of lime, others light grey and friable, cased with tufa, or veneered with jade. The bottom-soil in most parts is fitted for the adobe; and the lower hills contain an abundance of fossilless chalky lime, which makes tolerable mortar: the best is that near Deep Creek, the worst is in the vicinity of Gt. S. L. City. Near Fort Hall, in the N.-E. corner of the basin, there is said to be a mountain of marble, displaying every hue and texture: marble is also found in large crystalline nodules like arragonite.

capsum, the smaller ditto *L. modicella*. There are two species of the genus *Lithoglyphus*, the one resembling very much the *L. naticoides* of Europe, but most probably new; the other I should imagine to be undescribed. There is a small *Paludina* looking shell which comes very near the *Paludina glutinosa* of d'Orbigny. There is a species of *Anodonta* which corresponds with a shell we have from the Columbia River, but of which I do not know the name. There is also a species of *Cyclas* which may be new, as I do not know at present any species from North America exactly like it.—Believe me, yours truly,

W. BAIRD.

Capt. R. F. Burton.

Utah Territory will produce an ample supply of iron.* According to the Mormons, it resembles that of Missouri and the gangue contains eighty per cent. of pure metal, which to acquire the necessary toughness must be alloyed with imported iron. Gold, according to Humboldt, is constant in meridional mountains, and we may expect to find it in a country abounding with crystalline rocks cut by dykes of black and grey basalt and porous trap, gneiss, micaceous schists, clayey and slaty shales, and other argillaceous formations. It is generally believed that gold exists upon the Wasatch Mountains, within sight of Gt. S. L. City, and in 1861 a travelling party is reported to have found a fine digging in the north. Lumps of virgin silver are said to have been discovered upon the White Mountains, in the south of the Territory, and Judge Ralston, I am informed, has lately hit upon a mine near the western route. Copper, zinc, and lead have been brought from Little Salt Lake Valley and sixty miles east of the Vegas de Santa Clara. Coal, principally bituminous —like that nearer the Pacific—is found mostly in the softer limestones south of the city, in a country of various marls, indurated clays, and earthy sandstones. In 1855 a vein of five feet thick, in quality resembling that of Maryland, was discovered west of the San Pete Creek, on the road to Manti. In Iron County, 250 to 280 miles south of Gt. S. L. City, inexhaustible coal-beds as well as iron deposits are said to line the course of the Green River, and that nothing may be wanting considerable affluents supply abundant water-power. A new digging had been discovered shortly before my arrival on a tributary of the Weber River, east of the City of the Saints, and upon the western route many spots were pointed out to me as future coal-mines. Timber being principally required for building, fencing, and mechanical purposes, renders firewood expensive: in the city a cartage of fifteen miles is necessary, and the price is thereby raised from $7 in summer to a maximum of $20 in the hard season per cord of sixteen by four feet. Unless the Saints would presently be reduced to the necessity of "breakfasting with Ezekiel," they must take heart and build a tramroad to the south.

Saltpetre is found—upon paper: here, as in other parts of America, it is deficient: a reward of $500 offered for a sample

* Magnetic iron ore is traced in the basaltic rock; cubes of bisulphuret of iron are found in the argillaceous schists, and cubic crystals of iron pyrites are seen in white ferruginous quartz.

of gunpowder manufactured from Valley Tan materials produced no claimants. Sulphur is only too common. Saleratus or alkaline salts is the natural produce of the soil. Borax and petroleum or mineral tar have been discovered, and the native alum has been analysed and pronounced good by Dr. Gale.* Rubies, emeralds, and other small but valuable stones are found in the chinks of the primitive rocks throughout the western parts of the Territory. I have also seen chalcedony, sardonyx, carnelian, and various agates.

Utah Territory is pronounced by immigrants from the old country to be a "mean land," hard, dry, and fit only for the steady, sober, and hard-working Mormon. Scarcely one-fiftieth part is fit for tillage: farming must be confined to rare spots, in which, however, an exceptional fertility appears. Even in the arable lands there is a great variety: some do not exceed 8—10 bushels per acre, whilst Capt. Stansbury mentions 180 bushels† of wheat being raised upon 3·50 acres of ground from one bushel of seed, and estimates the average yield of properly cultivated land at 40 bushels, whereas rich Pennsylvania rarely gives 30 per acre.‡ I have heard of lands near the fresh-water lake which bear from 60 to 105 bushels per acre.

The cultivable tracts are of two kinds, bench-land and bottom-land.

The soil of the bench-lands is fertile, a mixture of the high-land feldspath with the débris of decomposed limestone. It is comparatively free from alkalines, the bane of the valleys; but as rain is wanting, it depends, like the Basses-Pyrénées, upon irrigation, and must be fertilised by the mountain torrents that issue from the kanyons. As a rule, the creeks dwindle to rivulets and sink in the porous alluvium before they have run a mile from the hill foot, and reappear in the arid plains at a level too low for navigation: in such places artesian wells are wanted. The soil, though fertile, is thin, requiring compost:

* 100 grammes of the freshly crystallised salt, gave—

Water	73·0
Protoxide of manganese	08·9
Alumina	04·0
Sulphuric acid	13·0

† In the United States the bushel of wheat or clover seed is 60 lbs.; of corn, barley, and rye, 56 lbs.; of oats, 35—36 lbs.

‡ The yield in Egypt varies from 25 to 150 grains for one planted.

manure is here allowed to waste, the labour of the people sufficing barely for essentials. I am informed that two bushels of seed are required for each acre, and that the colonists sow too scantily: a judicious rotation of crops is also yet to come. The benches are sometimes extensive: a strip, for instance, runs along the western base of the Wasatch Mountains, with a varying breadth of 1—2 miles, from 80 miles north of Gt. S. L. City to Utah Lake and Valley, the southern terminus of cultivation, a total length of 120 miles. These lands produce various cereals, especially wheat and buckwheat, oats, barley, and a little Indian corn, all the fruits and vegetables of a temperate zone, and flax, hemp, and linseed in abundance. The wild fruits are the service-berry, choke-cherry, buffalo-berry, gooseberry, an excellent strawberry, and black, white, red, and yellow mountain currants, some as large as ounce bullets.

The bottom-lands, where the creeks extend, are better watered than the uplands, but they are colder and salter. The refrigerated air seeks the lowest levels; hence in U. T. the benches are warmer than the valleys, and the spring vegetation is about a fortnight later on the banks of Jordan than above them. Another cause of cold is the presence of saleratus or alkaline salts, the natural effect of the rain being insufficient to wash them out. Experiment proved in Sindh that nothing is more difficult than to eradicate this evil from the soil: the sweetest earth brought from afar becomes tainted by it: sometimes the disease appears when the crop is half grown; at other times it attacks irregularly — one year, for instance, will see a fine field of wheat and the next none. When inveterate, it breaks out in leprous eruptions, and pieces of efflorescence can be picked up for use: a milder form induces a baldness of growth, with an occasional birth of chenopodiaceæ. Many of the streams are dangerous to cattle, and often in the lower parts of the valleys there are ponds and pools of water coloured and flavoured like common ley. According to the people, a small admixture is beneficial to vegetation: the grass is rendered equal for pasturage to the far-famed salt marshes of Essex and of the Atlantic coast; potatoes, squashes, and melons become sweeter, and the pie-plant loses its acidity. On the other hand, the beet has been found to deteriorate, no small misfortune at such a distance from the sugar-cane.

Beside salt-drought and frost the land has to contend against an Asiatic scourge. The cricket (*Anabrus simplex?*) is compared by the Mormons to a "cross between the spider and the buffalo;" it is dark, ungainly, wingless, and exceedingly harmful. The five red-legged grasshopper (*Œdipoda corallipes*), about the size of the English migratory locust, assists these "black Philistines," and but for a curious provision of nature would render the land well nigh uninhabitable. A small species of gull flocks from its resting-place in the Gt. S. Lake, to feed upon the advancing host; the "glossy bird of the valley, with light red beak and feet, delicate in form and motion, with plumage of downy texture and softness," stayed in 1848 the advance of the "frightful bug," whose onward march nor fires, nor hot trenches, nor the cries of the frantic farmer could arrest. We can hardly wonder that the Mormons, whose minds, so soon after the exodus, were excited to the highest pitch, should have seen in this natural phenomenon a miracle, a special departure from the normal course of events, made by Providence in their favour, or accuse them, as anti-Mormons have done, of forging signs and portents.

But whilst many evils beset agriculture in U. T. grazing is comparatively safe, and may be extended almost *ad libitum*. The valleys of this land of Goshen supply plentiful pasturage in the winter; as spring advances cattle will find gamma and other grasses on the benches, and as, under the influence of the melting sun, the snow line creeps up the hills, flocks and herds, like the wild graminivorants will follow the bunch grass which, vivified by the autumnal rains, breeds under the snow, and bears its seed in summer. In the basin of the Green River, fifty miles S. of Fillmore City, is a fine wool-producing country 7000 square miles in area. Even the ubiquitous sage will serve for camels. As has been mentioned, Durhams, Devons, and Merino tups have found their way to Gt. S. L. City, and the terrible milk sickness* of the Western States has not.

In 1860 the Valley of the Gt. S. Lake alone produced 306,000 bushels of grain, of which about 17,000 were oats. Lieutenant Gunnison, estimating the average yield of each ploughed acre at 2000 lbs. (33⅓ bushels), a fair estimate, and "drawing the most

* A fatal spasmodic disease produced in the Western States by astringent salts in the earth and water: it first attacks cattle, and then those who eat the infected meat or drink the milk. Travellers tell of whole villages being destroyed by it.

part of the ration, or one half," from the herds fed elsewhere fixes the maximum of population in U. T. at 4000 souls to a square mile, and opines that it will maintain with ease one million of inhabitants."

Timber, I have said, is a growing want throughout the country; the "hair of the earth-animal" is by no means luxuriant. Great Cottonwood Kanyon is supposed to contain supplies for twenty years, but it is chiefly used for building purposes. The Mormons, unlike the Hibernians, of whom it was said in the last century that no man ever planted an orchard, have applied themselves manfully to remedying the deficiency, and the next generation will probably be safe. At present "hard woods," elm, hackberry, pecan or button-wood, hickory, mulberry, bass-wood, locust, black and English walnut are wanted and must be imported from the Eastern States. The lower kanyons and bottoms are clothed with wild willow, scrub maple, both hard and soft, box-elder, aspen, birch, cottonwood, and other amentaceæ, and in the south with spruce and dwarf ash. The higher grounds bear stunted cedars white and red, balsam and other pines, the dwarf oak, which like the maple is a mere scrub, and the mountain mahogany, a tough, hard, and strong but grainless wood, seldom exceeding eight inches in diameter. Hawthorn (a *Crataegus*) also exists, and in the southern and western latitudes, the pinôn (*P. monophyllus*), varying from the size of an umbrella to twenty feet in height, feeds the Indians with its oily nut, which not a little resembles the seed of the pinaster and the Mediterranean *P. Pinea*, and supplies a rich gum for strengthening plasters.

The present state of agriculture in the vicinity of Gt. S. L. City will best be explained by the prospectus of the annual show for 1860.* Wheat thrives better than maize, which in

* List of premiums to be awarded by the Deseret Agricultural and Manufacturing Society, at the Annual Exhibition, October 3rd and 4th, 1860.

CLASS A.—CATTLE.

Awarding Committee—Hector C. Haight, Wm. Jennings, Wm. Miller, Alex. Barron.

Best Durham bull	Dol. 10	00	2d Devon cow and calf	dip	2d Shorthorn and crossed heifer	$.
2d do.	$.		Best milch cow or cross cow and calf	$.	3rd do.	dip
3rd do.	dip		2d do. do.	$.	Best 2 years old Steers for Wood cart	$.
Best Devon bull	Dol.		3rd do.	dip	2d do.	$.
2d do.	$.		Best 2 year old heifer	$.	3rd do.	dip
3rd do.	dip		2d do.	dip	Best bull	$.
Best bull under 1 year	$.		Best 1 year old heifer	$.	Best heifer	$.
2d do.	dip		2d do.	dip	2d do.	$.
Best Durham cow and calf	$.		Best matched cattle	$.	3rd do.	dip
2d do. do.	$.		2d do.	$.	Best cow and calf	$.
3rd do. do.	dip		3rd do.	dip	2d do.	$.
Best Devon cow and calf	$.		Best Shorthorned & crossed bull	$.	3rd do.	dip
2d do. do.	$.					

the northern parts suffers from the late frosts and requires a longer summer. Until oats and barley can be grown in suffi-

CLASS B.—FIELD CROPS.

Awarding Committee—A. P. Rockwood, Jos. Hollenck, I. E. Harrington, John Rowberry.

Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, Red Fife wheat, Prize, $10	2nd best 1 acre of beans, do.	Best acre of rye, do.
2nd do. do. 5	Best 1 acre of clover, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, White Russian wheat, do.	2nd do. do.	Best acre of turnips, do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of white beans, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, Golden Drop wheat, do.	2nd do. do.	Best acre of beets, do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of peas, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, Colorado wheat, do.	2nd do. do.	Best acre of carrots, do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of oats, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, Spring wheat, do.	2nd do. do.	Best 100 lbs. flax, do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of flax, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 bushel and multiple thereof, Winter wheat, do.	2nd do. do.	Best 100 lbs. hemp, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd best 1 acre of flax, do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 acre of spring wheat, do.	Best 1 acre of hemp, do.	Best 100 lbs. hemp, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 acre of winter wheat, do.	Best 1 acre of red clover seed, do.	Best 10 lbs. unmanufactured tobacco, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 1 acre of corn, do.	Best 1 acre of timothy seed, do.	Best 10 lbs. manufactured tobacco, do.
Second best 1 acre of corn, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of Hungarian grass, do.	Best 5 varieties of Ontario sugar canes, do.
Best 1 acre of barley, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.	Best 1 acre of millet, do.	Best 5 varieties of field corn, do.
Best 1 acre of buckwheat, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.

Awarding Committee on Cotton and Tobacco—William Crosby, Robert D. Covington, Joshua T. Willis, Jacob Hamblin, Jas. R. M'Cullough.

Best 1 acre of cotton, Dol. Cts.	2nd best 1 acre of cotton, do.	4th best 1 acre of cotton, do.
2nd do. do.	3rd do. do.	5th do. do.
3rd do. do.	4th do. do.	Best 5 acres of tobacco, do.
4th do. do.	Best 1 acre of cotton, do.	2nd do. do.
5th do. do.	2nd do. do.	3rd do. do.
Best 3 acres of cotton, do.	3rd do. do.	4th do. do.
2nd do. do.	4th do. do.	5th do. do.
3rd do. do.	5th do. do.	Best 1 acre of tobacco, do.
4th do. do.	Best 1 acre of cotton, do.	2nd do. do.
5th do. do.	2nd do. do.	3rd do. do.
Best 2 acres of cotton, do.	3rd do. do.	4th do. do.
2nd do. do.	4th do. do.	

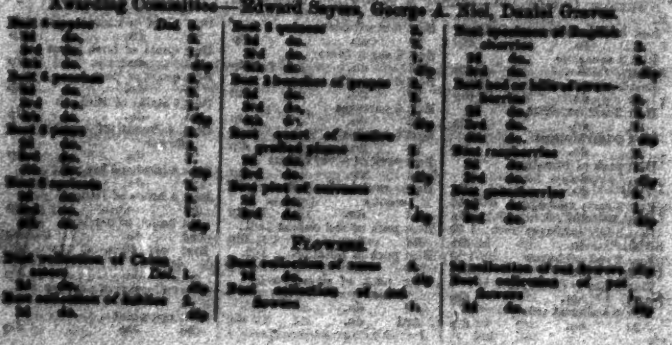
CLASS C.—VEGETABLES.

Awarding Committee—Sidney A. Knowlton, Charles H. Oliphant, Thos. Woodbery.

Best dozen cucumbers, Dol. Cts.	Best 6 blood beets, do.	Best quart of Lima beans, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 3 squashes, do.	Best 6 sugar beets, do.	Best quart of bush beans, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 3 pumpkins, do.	Best 6 carrots, do.	Best quart of peas, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 3 watermelons, do.	Best 6 parsnips, do.	Best 6 heads of cabbage, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best 3 muskmelons, do.	Best 6 turnips, do.	Best 4 heads of cauliflower, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
Best peck of tomatoes, do.	Best peck of silver onions, do.	Best 4 heads of broccoli, do.
2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
3rd do. do.	Best peck of yellow onions, do.	Best 4 heads of kohlrabi, do.
Best 3 early cabbages, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.	Best peck of red onions, do.	Best 1 bunch of parsley, do.
Best 3 late cabbages, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.	Best peck of potatoes, do.	Best collection of pickles, do.
Best 3 red cabbages, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.	Best peck of sweet potatoes, do.	Best collection of peppers, do.
Best 3 Savoy cabbages, do.	2nd do. do.	2nd do. do.
2nd do. do.		Best egg plant, do.
Best 6 stalks of celery, do.		2nd do. do.

cient quantities, horses are fed upon heating wheat, which only the hardest riding enables them to digest. *Holcus saccharatus*, or Chinese millet, succeeds where insufficient humidity is an obstacle to the sugar-cane. The fault of the vegetables here, as in California, is excessive size, which often renders them insipid; the Irish potato, however, is superior to that of Nova Scotia and and Charleston; the onions are large and mild as those of Spain. The white carrot, the French bean, and the cucumber grow well, and the "multicaulis mania" has borne good fruit in the shape of cabbage. The size of the beets suggested in 1853 the project originated in France by Napoleon the Great: £100,000 were expended upon sugar-making machinery; the experiment, however, though directed by a Frenchman, failed it is said on account of the alkali contained in the root, and the Saints are accused of having distilled for sale bad spirit from the useless substance. The deserts skirting the Western Holy Land have also their manna; the leaves of poplars and other trees on the banks of streams distil, at divers seasons of the year, globules of honeydew, resembling in colour gum Arabic, but of softer consistence and less adhesiveness; the people collect it with spoons into saucers. Cotton thrives in the southern and S.-western part of U. T. when the winter is mild; at the meeting-place of waters near the Green and Grand Rivers that unite to form the Colorado, the shrub has been grown with great success.

The principal value of U. T. is its position as a great half-way station—a Tadmor in the wilderness—between the Valley of the Mississippi and the Western States California and Oregon;


CLASS D.—FRUITS AND FLOWERS.

Awarding Committee—Edward Sayer, George A. Nixi, Daniel Graves.

FLOWERS.

it has thus proved a benefit to humanity. The Mormons "flying from civilisation and Christianity," attempted to isolate themselves from the world in a mountain fastness; they were foiled, by an accident far beyond human foresight. They had retired to a complete oasis, defended by sterile volcanic passes, which in winter are blocked up with snow, girt by vast waterless and uninhabitable deserts, and unapproachable from any settled country, save by a painful and dangerous march of 600—1000 miles. Presently, in 1850, the gold fever broke out on the Pacific seaboard; thousands of people not only passed through U. T. but were also compelled to remain there and work for a livelihood. The transit received a fresh impulse in 1858 by the gold discovered at Pike's Peak, and in 1859 by the rich silver mines found in the Carson and Washo Valleys, on the eastern slopes of the Sierra Nevada. Carson Valley, which was settled by Colonel Reese in 1852, and colonised in 1855 by 500 Mormons, was soon cleared of Saints by the influx of prospectors and diggers, and the other El Dorados drew off much Gentile population, which was an incalculable boon to the Mormons. They thus rid themselves of the "thriving lawyers, gamblers, prostitutes, criminals and desperadoes, loafers and drunkards," who made New Jerusalem a carnival of horrors. The scene is now shifted to Denver and Carson Cities, where rape and robbery, intoxication and shooting are attributed to their true causes, the gathering together of a lawless and excited crowd, not to the "baleful shade of that deadly Upas Tree, Mormonism."

The Mormons having lost all hopes of safety by isolation, now seek it in the reverse: mail communication with the Eastern and Western States is their present hobby: they look forward to markets for their produce, and to a greater facility and economy of importing. They have dreamed of a water-line to the east by means of the Missouri head-waters, which are said to be navigable for 350—400 miles, and to the west by the tributaries of the Snake River that afford 400. Shortly after the foundation of Gt. S. L. City, they proceeded to establish under the ecclesiastical title, "Stakes of Zion in the Wilderness," settlements and outposts, echelonned in skeleton, afterwards to be filled in, from Temple Block along the southern line to San Diego. The importance of connecting the Atlantic with

the Pacific by a shorter route than the 24,000 miles of navigation round Cape Horn, has produced first a monthly then a weekly, and lastly a daily mail, and has opened up a route from the Holy City to Carson Valley. So far from opposing the Pacific R. R., the local legislature petitioned for it in 1849, and believe that it would increase the value of their property tenfold. But as equal parts of Mormon and Gentile never could dwell together in amity, extensive communication would probably result in causing the Saints to sell out and once more to betake themselves to their "Wilderness work," in Sonora, or in other half settled portions of Northern Mexico. This view of the question is taken by the Federal authorities, who would willingly, if they could, confer upon the petitioners the fatal boon.

The Mormon pioneers, 143 in number, when sent westward under several of the apostles to seek for settlements, fixed upon the Valley of the Gt. S. Lake. The advance colony of 4000 souls, expelled from Nauvoo on the Mississippi, and headed by "Brigham the Seer," arrived there on the 24th July, 1847, the anniversary of which is their 4th of July—Independence Day. Before the end of the first week a tract of land was ditched, ploughed, and planted with potatoes. City Creek Kanyon was dammed for irrigation, an area of forty acres was fortified after the old New England fashion, by facing log-houses inwards and by a palisade of timber hauled from the ravines; the city was laid out upon the spot where they first rested, the most eligible site in the Valley, and prayers with solemn ceremonies consecrated the land.

Early in 1849 the Mormons, irritated by the contemptuous silence of the Federal Government, assembled themselves in convention, and with the boldness engendered by a perfect faith, duly erected themselves into a free, sovereign, and independent people, with a vast extent of country.* Disdaining

* The following is the preamble to the Constitution; it is a fair specimen of Mormon plain dealing.

Provisional Government of the State of Deseret.—Abstract of Convention Minutes. On the 14th March 1849, the Convention appointed the following persons a Committee to draft a Constitution for the State of Deseret, viz.: Albert Carrington, Joseph L. Heywood, William W. Phelps, David Fullmer, John S. Fullmer, Charles C. Rich, John Taylor, Parley P. Pratt, John M. Bernhisel, Erastus Snow.

March 18th, 1849.—Albert Carrington, chairman of the Committee, reported

to remain in *statu pupillari*, they dispensed with a long political minority, and rushed into the conclave of republics, like California, whose sons are fond of comparing her to Minerva issuing full grown from the cranium of Jupiter into the society of Olympus. Roused by this liberty the Senate and House of Representatives of the U. S. of America, in Congress assembled, on the 9th Sept. 1850, sheared the self-constituted republic of its fair proportions, and reduced it to the infant condition of

the following Constitution, which was read and unanimously adopted by the Convention:—

CONSTITUTION OF THE STATE OF DESERET.

PREAMBLE.—Whereas, a large number of the citizens of the United States, before and since the Treaty of Peace with the Republic of Mexico, emigrated to, and settled in that portion of the territory of the United States, lying west of the Rocky Mountains, and in the great interior Basin of Upper California; and,

Whereas, by reason of said treaty, all civil organization, originating from the Republic of Mexico became abrogated; and,

Whereas, the Congress of the United States has failed to provide a form of civil government for the territory so acquired, or any portion thereof; and,

Whereas, civil government and laws are necessary for the security, peace and prosperity of society; and,

Whereas, it is a fundamental principle in all republican governments, that all political power is inherent in the people; and governments instituted for their protection, security and benefit, should emanate from the same:

Therefore, your Committee beg leave to recommend the adoption of the following CONSTITUTION, until the Congress of the United States shall otherwise provide for the Government of the Territory, hereinafter named and described, by admitting us into the Union. WE, THE PEOPLE, grateful to the SUPREME BEING for the blessings hitherto enjoyed, and feeling our dependence on Him for a continuation of those blessings DO ORDAIN AND ESTABLISH A FREE AND INDEPENDENT GOVERNMENT, by the name of the STATE OF DESERET; including all the territory of the United States, within the following boundaries, to wit: commencing at the 33° north latitude, where it crosses the 108° longitude, west of Greenwich, thence running south and west to the boundary of Mexico; thence west to and down the main channel of the Gila River (or the northern line of Mexico); and on the northern boundary of Lower California to the Pacific Ocean; thence along the coast north westerly to the 118° 30′ of west longitude; thence north to where said line intersects the dividing ridge of the Sierra Nevada mountains; thence north along the summit of the Sierra Nevada mountains to the dividing range of mountains, that separate the waters flowing into the Columbia River from the waters running into the Great Basin; thence easterly along the dividing range of mountains that separate said waters flowing into the Columbia River on the north, from the waters flowing into the Great Basin on the south, to the summit of the Wind River chain of mountains; thence south-east and south by the dividing range of mountains that separate the waters flowing into the Gulf of Mexico, from the waters flowing into the Gulf of California, to the place of beginning; as set forth in a map drawn by Charles Preuss, and published by order of the Senate of the United States in 1848.

New Mexico, with the usual proviso in the organic Act that when qualified for admission as States they shall become slave or free, as their respective constitutions may prescribe. At present one of the principal Mormon grievances is that, although their country can, by virtue of population, claim admission into the Union, which has lately been overrun with a mushroom growth, like Michigan, Minnesota, and Oregon, their prayers are not only rejected, but even their petitions remain unnoticed. The cause is, I believe, polygamy, which, until the statute law is altered, would not and could not be tolerated, either in America or in England. To the admission of other territories, Kansas for instance, the slavery question was the obstacle. The pro-party will admit none who will not support the South, and *vice versâ*. Perhaps it is well so, otherwise the old and civilised States would soon find themselves swamped by batches of peers in rapidly succeeding creations.

The Mormons have another complaint, touching the tenure of their land. The U. S. have determined that the Indian title has not been extinguished. The Saints declare that no tribe of aborigines could prove a claim to the country, otherwise they were ready to purchase it in perpetuity by pay, presents, and provisions, besides establishing the usual reservations. Moreover, the Federal Government has departed from the usual course. The law directs that the land, when set off into townships, six miles square with subdivisions*, must be sold at auction to the highest bidder. The Mormons represent that although a survey of considerable tracts has been completed by a Federal official, they are left to be mere squatters that can be ejected like an Irish tenantry, because the government, knowing their ability and readiness to pay the recognised pre-emption price ($1·25 per acre), fear lest those now in possession become lawful owners and permanent proprietors of the soil.† Polygamy is here again to blame.

* Viz. the section of one square mile; the half section = 320 acres, and the quarter section of 160 acres: the latter is the legal grant to military settlers. The pre-emption laws in the United States are just and precise; but in the mountains it is about as easy to eject a squatter as to collect "rint" from Western Galway in the days of Mr. Martin.

† In England and Scotland the rent for use of land averages one quarter of the gross produce; in France one third; unhappy India gives one half; and the Territories of the United States nearly nothing.

The Mormon settlements resemble those of the French in Canada and elsewhere, rather than the English in Australia, the Dutch at the Cape, or the American squatters on the western frontier. They eschew solitude and cluster together round the Church and the succedaneum for the priest. In establishing these "stakes" they proceed methodically. A tentative expedition, sent out to select the point presenting the greatest facilities for settlements, is followed by a volunteer band of Saints, composed of farmers, mechanics, and artizans, headed by an apostle, president, elder, or some other dignitary. The foundations are laid with long ceremonies. The fort or block-house is first built, and when the people are lodged, the work of agriculture begins. The cities of U. T. are somewhat like the "towns" of Cornwall. At present there are three long lines of these juvenile settlements established as caravanserais in the several oases. The first is along the Humboldt River to Carson Valley; the second is by the southern route, *viâ* Fillmore; and the third is betwixt the two, along "Egan's Route," the present mail line.

The counties, originally 5, increased in 1855 to 12, are now (1860) 19 in number, viz.:—

1. Gt. S. L. County: the chief town is Gt. S. L. City, the sub-settlements are the Sugar House, 4 miles S. of Temple Block—the invariable *point de départ*; Mill Creek, 7 miles; Gt. Cotton Wood, 8—9 miles; West Jordan, Jordan Mills, Herriman, and Union or Little Cotton Wood Creek, 12 miles; Draperville, 20—21, m. S.; all small villages with good farming lands.

2. Utah County: the chief town is Provo or Provaux, on the Timpanagos River, 45 m.; David City on Dry Creek, 28 m.; Lake City on American Fork, 32 m. S.; Lehi City, 35 m. S.; Lone City, 37 m. S.; Pleasant Grove or Battle Creek, 41 m. S.; Springville or Hobble Creek, 53—54 m.; Palmyra, a small place east of the Lake, and north of Spanish Fork, 59—60 m.; Spanish Fork City, 61 m. S.; Pondtown, 64 m. S.; Payson City, on both banks of the Peet-Neet Creek, 64—65 m. S.; and Santa Quin, 74 m. S.

3. Davis County: chief town Farmington; others, Stoker, Centerville, 12-50 m. N., and Kaysville, 22 m. N.

4. Weber County: chief town Ogden City, on both sides of Ogden River, 40 m. E.; also North Ogden.

5. Iron County: chief town Parowan, so called from the Pavant Indians; built on Center Creek, 255 m. S. of G. S. L. City, and 93 miles from Fillmore, and incorporated in 1851. Also Cedar City, near Little Salt Lake, 275 m. S.; St. Joseph's Springs and Vegas de Santa Clara, 300 miles from Cedar City. The Aztecs, as their rock inscriptions prove, once extended to Little Salt Lake Valley.

6. Tooele County: chief town Tooele City, 32 m. W.; also "K. T. City," 26 m. W.; Grantsville, 27 m. W.; Richville and Cedar Valley, 40 m. W.

7. San Pete Valley County and City, 131 m., laid out by the presidency in 1849, and incorporated in 1850: Fort Ephraim, 130 m.; Manti City, 140 m., on the southern declivity of Mount Nebo. Aztecan pictographs have been found upon the cliffs in San Pete Valley.

8. Juab County: chief town Salt Creek, in a valley separated from Utah Valley by a ridge, on which runs Summit Creek.

9. Box Elder County and City, 60 m. N.; also Willow Creek and Brigham's City.

10. Washington County: chief town Fort Harmony, on Ash Creek, 291 m. S. and 20 m. N. of Rio Virgen."

* I annex a description of Washington County, which lately appeared in the "Deseret News."

"Yesterday afternoon I went to the library of the University the Hon. Wm. Crosby, the representative from Washington County to our Legislature, who furnishes me with some items of information respecting the county he represents worthy a passing notice, especially as there is so little known of that county. The inhabitants are estimated at about 1800 persons, chiefly engaged in farming and grazing. The county of Washington is quite as large as the State of Connecticut, generally of a barren, desert character, broken and mountainous. On the borders of the Rio Virgen and the Santa Clara there are narrow strips of land exceedingly fertile, on which everything grows with great richness, and at a cost of very little labour. During the present year only 50,000 pounds of cotton have been raised, but, properly cultivated and attended to, the inhabitants alone could raise all the cotton ever required by the inhabitants of this territory. At present its cultivation is almost neglected for the want of proper facilities for its manufacture. The entrance also of the army in 1857, followed by immense trains of goods — which, by the bye, some of the merchants never paid a cent for, and it is very doubtful if they ever will — was also a crushing competition to the people of Washington county.

"Every kind of fruit that has been tried there grows with great luxuriance. The apple, pear, plum, apricot, peach, and fig trees do exceedingly well. The English walnut tree grew this year nine feet, and the Catawba grape grew nineteen feet and a half before the 6th of September. The bunches of these grapes, many of

11. Millard County, chief town, which is also the capital of U. T., Fillmore, in N. l. 38° 58′ 40″, in a central position, 152 m. S. of Gt. S. L. City, 600 m. E. of San Francisco and 1200 m. W. of St. Louis. The sum of $20,000 was expended upon public buildings, but the barrenness of the soil has reduced the population from 100 to a dozen families.

them, measured nineteen inches in length. At Toquerville, one of the small towns in that county, one man raised this year two water melons from one vine that weighed, the one sixty and the other fifty pounds.

"At the Agricultural Exhibition, held there last September, the fine grapes which I have mentioned were on exhibition. At the same time there was exhibited a stalk of cotton containing three hundred and seven forms; a radish measuring eighteen inches in circumference; a sun-flower head thirty-six inches; and a monster maize corn stalk; a sweet potato vine five feet and a half long; and one Isabella grape vine twenty-five feet long. One Man had in his garden trees which, in six months, grew as follows:

	ft.	in.		ft.	in.
Washington Plum	6	6	Almond	7	3
Apple Tree	6	6	Peach	6	6
Apricot	6	6	Pear	6	6
Fig	7	6			

"In climate, Washington embraces all the varieties from frigid to torrid, from regions of perpetual frost to an eternal spring. Every kind of out-door work, ploughing, digging, building, &c., can be pursued throughout winter in some parts of the county, while in others there are killing frosts throughout the whole year.

"I had almost forgotten to mention that the soil is excellent for the grape, and during the present year very fine tobacco has been grown there, as well as madder and indigo. The sorghum raised there has a magnificent flavour, and without the 'patent fixings,' with very little labour, and that of the simplest character, good sugar is made from it. At the late exhibition the sorghum took the two highest prizes. I believe the honourable member from Washington has brought with him a few gallons of this very fine molasses as a *cadeau* to the Prophet. To readers who have every luxury in abundance and at very moderate figures, these items may have little interest, but to those who watch the progress of the people here, and the reclaiming of the desert, this information has great significance. In a few years everything that the people require will be raised from their own soil, and manufactured by their own hands.

"Mr. C., from whom I elicited these facts, was born in Indiana, but 'brought up' in the Southern States. Mormonism got hold of him in 1843, in the State of Mississippi. Following the fortunes of Brigham, he brought some nine or ten slaves, 'very select niggers.' In 1851 he went over to San Bernardino, and was bishop over there. The State soon liberated the ebony folks, and Mr. Crosby of course lost his $6,000 or $10,000 by the operation.

"The superintendent of the Church Public Works and a few others went out one day last about the Weber some time in August last, and found a splendid bed of mineral. It promises to be the greatest blessing that has yet fallen to the lot of the Saints. Of course I do not look at things with 'an eye of faith;' that is their business. But among a people paying $10 per cord for wood, scarce at that, and sure to be scarcer, the discovery of coal is an important matter. The

12. Green River County: Fort Supply.

13. Cedar County: chief town Cedar City. It is built upon an old Aztecan foundation, rich in pottery and other remains.

14. Malad County: chief town Fort Malad, properly so called from its slow, brackish, and nauseous river.

15. Cache County, the granary of Mormon land, and the most fertile spot in the Great Basin; well settled and much valued: chief town Cache Valley, 80 m. N.

16. Beaver County: chief town Beaver Creek, 220 m. S.

17. Shambip County: Rich Valley and Deep Creek.

18. Salt Lake Islands.

19. St. Mary's County; West of Shambip City, extending to the Humboldt River; chief settlement, Deep Creek.

I found it impossible to arrive at a true estimate of the population. Like the earlier English numberings of the people, which originated in bitter political controversies,—the charge of unfairness was brought as late as 1831 against the enumerators in Ireland,—the census is a purely party measure. The Mormons, desiring to show the 100,000 persons which entitle them to claim admission as a State into the Union, are naturally disposed to exaggerate their numbers; they are of course accused of "cooking up" schedules, of counting cattle as souls, and of making every woman a mother in esse as in posse. On the other hand, the Anti-Mormons are as naturally inclined to underestimate: moreover, as the "census marshals" receive but three halfpence per head, they are by no means disposed to pay a

present coal bed is about fifty miles distant; but, nevertheless, paying $4 per ton at the mouth of the pit, at which it is now sold, it can be brought into the city and sold for $10. Last year it was sold here to blacksmiths for $40. The Pacific Railroad folks should have an eye on this. The apprehension that the absence of coal and wood in the territory would be a serious obstacle need not now exist. Though the wood is scarce and high priced as an article of daily household consumption, railroad companies can get all the lumber they require for money, though they may have to haul it far and pay a good price for it. I believe that the whole country is full of coal, and what is not coal is gold and silver; but I earnestly hope that the day is far distant before the Mormons or anybody else discover the precious metals. The coal discovery, however, is very important. The Bishops of the city have been instructed to urge upon their flocks the hauling of it, and it is hoped that by constant travel the snow will be kept down and the roads clear all the winter. A Scotch miner, who had just returned from the coal bed, told me the other day that it far exceeded anything that he had ever seen in his own country, or in the States, both in quality and abundance."

shilling for the trouble of ransacking every ranch and kanyon where the people repair for grazing and other purposes. The nearest approach to truth will probably be met by assuming the two opposite extremes, and by "splitting the difference."

In 1849 Mr. Kelly estimated the Mormons to be "about 5000 inhabitants in the town, and 7000 more in the settlements." In 1850 the seventh official census of the U. S. numbered the inhabitants of U. T. at 11,354 free + 26 slaves, = 11,380 souls. In 1853 the Saints were reckoned at 25,000 by the Gentiles, and 30,000 to 35,000 by Mr. O. Pratt, in the "Seer." In 1854 Dr. S. W. Richards estimated the number at "probably from 40,000 to 50,000" in the U. S., and in Great Britain at 29,727. In 1856 the Mormon census gave 76,336 souls. I subjoin a synopsis of the official papers.* In 1858 the Peace

* The following is a condensed Report of the enumeration of the inhabitants of Utah Territory, taken February, 1856:—

Counties.	Males.	Females.	Total.
Great Salt Lake county	13,730	13,074	26,804
Utah "	6,951	7,614	14,565
Davis "	4,735	4,575	9,310
Weber "	3,488	3,584	7,071
Iron "	2,474	2,943	5,417
Tooele "	1,316	1,673	2,989
San Pete "	1,110	1,133	2,243
Juab "	807	1,034	1,841
Box Elder "	622	717	1,339
Washington "	742	778	1,520
Millard "	544	512	1,056
Green River "	394	345	739
Cedar "	312	369	681
Malad "	259	208	467
Cache "	240	223	463
Beaver "	118	126	244
Shambip "	83	64	147
Salt Lake Islands	135	85	210
	37,277	39,059	76,336

"Gt. S. L. City, 1st March, 1856.

"I do hereby certify that the above is a correct enumeration of the white Inhabitants of Utah Territory, according to the reports furnished by my assistants, and which are now on file in my office.

"LEONARD W. HARDY, Census Agent."

"Gt S. L. City, September 13, 1860.

"The above is a correct transcript from the originals on file in the Historian's Office.

"THOMAS BULLOCK, Clerk."

Commissioners sent to U. T. reported that the Saints did not exceed 40,000 to 50,000 souls, half of them foreigners, and that they could bring 7000 men, of whom 1600 were valuable for cavalry, into the field. In 1859 Mr. Remy made the number of Saints in U. T., not including Nevada, 80,000 souls, and the total in the world 186,000. The last official census, in 1860, was taken under peculiar disadvantages. General Burr, of the firm of Hockaday and Burr, was appointed to that duty by Mr. Dotson, the Anti-Mormon Federal Marshal. But as the choice excited loud murmurs, the task was committed to a clerk in the General's store, and deputies for the rest of the Territory were similarly chosen. The consequence is that the Gentile marshal's census of 1860 offers a number of 40,266 free + 29 slaves, = a total of 40,295 souls; whilst the Mormons assert their territory to contain from 90,000 to 100,000, and the world to hold from 300,000 to 400,000 Saints. Their rise is remarkable, even if we take the statistics of the enemy, which show nearly a quadrupling of the population in ten years, whilst Great Britain creeps on at a rate of about ten per cent.: a similar increase will in the ninth census of 1870 give in round numbers 160,000 persons. Utah Territory now ranks second in the eight minor states: New Mexico (93,541) and D. Columbia (75,076) take precedence of it, and it is followed by Colorado (34,197), Nebraska (28,842), Washington (11,578), Nevada (6857), and Dakotah (4839).

I have vainly attempted to discover the proportion of native Anglo-Americans to the foreign-born. The late Mr. Stephen A. Douglas, who was supposed to know and to befriend the Saints, asserted it to be one to ten. This will not hold good if applied to the authorities, and if it fails at the head it will be inapplicable to the baser part of the body politic, for the American in Mormondom is the prophet, president, apostle, bishop, or other high dignitary who leavens the lump of ignorance and superstition kneaded together in the old countries. Of the thirteen members of the Upper House, there were in 1860, ten Americans, two English, and one Irishman: of the officers, viz. secretary and his assistant, sergeant-at-arms, messenger, fireman, and chaplain, four were Americans, one English, and one Irishman. The members of the Lower House, twenty-six in number, consisted of twenty-four Americans and two Englishmen, including

the Speaker, Mr. John Taylor: of its six officers, four were Americans, one English, and one Scotchman. Both houses were thus distributed:—

New York	13	Texas	2	Ireland	2
Maine	6	Kentucky	2	Scotland	1
Vermont	5	N. Hampshire	2	Isle of Man	1
England	4	Penn.	2	Virginia	1
Ohio	4	Indiana	2	Rhode I.	1
				Grand total	49

The Mormon emigration is without exception the most interesting feature in their scheme. There is an evident selection of species in the supply: a man must be superior to many in "grit" and energy who voluntarily leaves his native land. As regards the national classification of the converts, it may be observed that the supply depends upon the freedom of religious discussion at home. Great Britain supplies five times more than all the rest of the world, excepting Denmark. France must be proselytised through the Channel Islands, and there are few converts of the Latin race, which speaks a strange language, and is too much attached to the soil for extensive colonisation. Sweden sends forth few (67)—a fine of twenty-six rixdollars has there been imposed upon all who harbour, let rooms to, or hold to service a Mormon; Denmark supplies many (502), because the constitution of 1849 guaranteed to her religious liberty; Switzerland is, after a fashion, republican; Germany gives the fewest. Propagandism has not yet been thoroughly organised east of Father Rhine; moreover, the Teuton, whose faith is mostly subordinate to his fancy, finds superior inducements to settle whilst passing through the Eastern States. All the "diverts" long retain their motherlandish characteristics, and associating together are often unable to understand the English sermon at the Tabernacle. The work of proselytising is slow in the U. S.; the analytic Anglo-American prefers the *rôle* of knave to that of fool, besides *un saint n'est pas honoré dans son pays*, upon the principle that no man is a hero to his valet. At Gt. S. L. City I saw neither Kanaka, Hindoo, nor Chinese; these "exotics" have probably withered out since the days of M. Remy; only one negro met my sight, and though a few Yutas, principally Weber River, were seen in the streets, none of them had Mormonised.

Emigration in Mormondom, like El Hajj in El Islam, is the

fulfilment of a divine command. As soon as the Saints could afford it they established, under the direction of the First Presidency, a fund for importing poor converts, appointed a committee for purchasing transports, and established in Europe and elsewhere agents, who collected $5000 in the first, and $20,000 in the second year. In September 1850, a committee of three officers was appointed to transact the business of the poor fund, and an ordinance was passed incorporating the "Perpetual Emigration Fund Company," consisting of thirteen members, including the First President. The Saint whose passage is thus defrayed, works out his debt in the public *ateliers* of the Tithing Office Department, under the superintendence of the Third President; he is supplied with food from the "Deseret Store," and receives half the value of his labour, besides which a tithe of his time and toil is free. The Anti-Mormons declare that by this means the faces of the poor are ground: I doubt that so far-seeing a people as the Mormons would attempt so suicidal a policy.

According to the late agent at Liverpool,—and publisher of the "Millennial Star," Dr. S. W. Richards (Select Committee on Emigrant Ships, 1854, No. 12, p. 8), the Mormon emigration, under its authorised agent and passenger-broker, is better regulated than under the provisions of the Passengers' Act; the sexes are berthed apart, and many home comforts are provided for the emigrants. In 1854 it was estimated not to exceed 3000 souls per annum, and of 2600 the English were 1430, 250 Welsh, 200 Scotch, and about a score of Irish, making a total of 1900 Britons to 700 from the Continent. The classes preferred by the Fund are agriculturists and mechanics,—the latter being at a premium,—moral, industrious, and educated people, "qualified to increase and enhance the interest of the community they go amongst." From Liverpool, whence all the emigration proceeds, to New Orleans, the passage money varied from 3*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* to 4*l.*, and from N. Orleans to Gt. S. L. City 20*l.* each. Of late years that line has been abandoned as unhealthy: the route now lies by rail through New York and Chicago to Florence, on the Missouri R. The emigration season is January, February, and March, and the passage can be made at the quickest in twenty-two days.

I now proceed to figures, which are given in full detail and can easily be verified by a reference to Liverpool. The official

reports are subjoined, because they speak well for Mormon accuracy.* From 1840–54 they reckon 17,195 souls, and from 1854–55, 4716 souls; the total in fifteen years (1840–55) being 21,911. From 1855–56 they number 4395 souls, and from 1st July, 1857, to 30th June 1860, they count 2433, making for the five subsequent years (1855–60) a total of 6828. Thus in the

* No. I.

List of Latter-Day Saints' Emigration, from January 6th, 1851, to May 14th, 1861.

Date of Sailing.	Vessel.	Captain.	No. of Souls.
1851			
January 6	Ellen	Phillips	428
„ 21	G. W. Bourne	Williams	281
February 2	Ellen Maria	Whitmore	378
March 4	Olympus	Wilson	245
1852			
January 10	Kennebec	Smith	333
February 10	Ellen Maria	Whitmore	360
March 6	Rockaway		30
1853			
January 17	Ellen Maria	Whitmore	339
„ 23	Golconda	Kerr	321
February 6	Jersey	Day	314
„ 15	Elvira Owen	Owen	345
„ 28	International	Brown	426
March 20	Falcon	Wade	334
April 6	Camillus	Day	423
	(Miscellaneous)		23
1854			
January 22	Benjamin Adams	Drummond	6
February 4	Golconda	Kerr	434
„ 29	Windermere	Fairfield	477
March 5	Old England	Barstow	45
„ 13	John M. Wood	Hartley	393
April 4	Germanicus	Fales	320
„ 8	Marshfield	Torrey	386
„ 24	Clara Wheeler	Nelson	29
	(Miscellaneous)		34
November 27	Clara Wheeler	Nelson	433
1855			
January 6	Rockaway	Mills	440
„ 7	James Nesmith	Goodwin	94
„ 9	Neva	Brown	13
„ 17	Charles Buck	Smalley	403
February 3	Isaac Jesse	Chipman	16
„ 27	Siddons	Taylor	430
March 21	Juventa	Watts	573
April 17	Chimborazo	Vesper	431
„ 23	Samuel Cunling	Cushing	581
„ 26	William Stetson	Jordan	393
June 29	Cynosure	Pray	139
November 30	Emerald Isle	Cornish	350
December 12	John J. Boyd	Austin	512

twenty years between 1840-60, they show a grand total of 25,739 immigrants. They expect for the present year an emigration of 1500 to 2000 souls from the British Isles, independent of some hundreds from the Scandinavian, Swiss, and other missions. Already 200 teams have been despatched from Gt. S. L. City to assist with transport and provisions the poor

No. I.—continued.

Date of Sailing.	Vessel.	Captain.	No. of Souls.
1856			
February 19	Caravan	W. A. Sands	497
March 23	Rocah Train	H. P. Rich	624
April 19	S. Curling	S. Curling	797
May 4	Thornton	Collins	784
„ 25	Horizon	Reid	856
June 1	Wellfleet	Westcott	148
	(Miscellaneous Ships)		89
November 17	Columbia	Hutchinson	283
1857			
March 26	George Washington	J. S. Gaskings	617
April 25	Westmoreland	R. R. Dacon	544
May 30	Tasmania	Dunlary	547
	(Miscellaneous)		40
July 18	Wyoming	Brooks	36
1859			
April 11	William Tapscott	J. B. Ball	732
July 16	Antarctic		20
August 20	Emerald Isle	Cornish	51
1860			
March 30	Underwriter	J. W. Roberts	424
May 11	William Tapscott	J. B. Ball	731
	(Miscellaneous)		243
1861			
April 16	Manchester	Tyack	879
„ 23	Underwriter	J. W. Roberts	634
May 14	Monarch of the Sea	Gardner	856
		Total	21,195

"Latter-day Saints' European Publishing and Emigration Office,
"42 Islington, Liverpool.

"The above are the numbers of the Latter-Day Saints who have taken passage on ships chartered at this port by the Church Emigration Agent. Besides these, there are many who engage passages at other offices — not being able to arrange their affairs to go when we have ships chartered — whose numbers we do not know. The bulk of our emigration, for the past few years, has left here in the spring. This is the only time we have ships chartered. The returning few who go over in the summer and autumn, with the intention of remaining in the United States until another spring, we do not keep any account of.

"Geo. Q. Cannon."

emigrants from Florence. The Holy Land of the West would soon be populous were it not for two obstacles: first, the expense and difficulty of the outward journey; secondly, the facility

No. II.

General Summary of Emigration, from Nov. 20th, 1854, to July 6th, 1856.
(It was discontinued in 1856, owing to troubles with the U.S. Government.)

Ships.	Captains.	Presidents of Companies.	Sailed from Liverpool.	Arrived at Port of Destination.			
Samuel Ide	O. P. Cornish	P. C. Merrill	Nov. 20, 1854	New York	—		
John J. Boyd	Austin	C. Spencer	Dec. 27, 1854	New York	34		
Cleone	W. A. Smith	D. Tyler	Mar. 27, 1855	New York			
Ensign Train	H. F. Eldredge	J. Ferguson	May 26, 1855	Boston			
S. Curling	S. Curling	D. Jones	Sept. 19, 1855	Boston			
Thornton	Collins	J. G. Willie	May 14, 1856	New York			
Horizon	Reed	S. Marden	May 28, 1856	Boston			
Wolfhart	Woodward	J. Ashworth	June 1, 1856	Boston	—		
Miscellaneous Ships (U.S.)					—		
				Total			

Of this number, as the table shows, 2012 are P. E. Fund passengers, of whom 833 were ordered out by their friends in Utah; also 780 members of many years' standing in the Church have been forwarded to Utah under the P. E. Fund Co.'s arrangements, and 28 are others returning home from missions. We have not the means of ascertaining definitely, but the approximate numbers of those who started to go through to Utah on their own means is 365, making a total of those who started from here with the intention of going through to the Valley this season, about 3197: which will leave 1066, who have located for the present in various parts of the United States, in order to obtain means to complete their journey whenever circumstances will permit.

Latter-Day Saints' Emigration Report, from July 1st, 1857, to June 30, 1863.

Ships.	Captains.	Presidents of Companies.	Sailed from Liverpool.	Arrived at Port of Destination.				
Windermere	T. Brocklebank	Charles Harmon	Liverpool	July 14, '57	Philadelphia			
Wm. Tapscott	J. G. Ball	Robert B. Thompson	Liverpool	July 16, '57	New York			
Antarctic		James Chesley	Liverpool	July 18, '57	New York			
Samuel Ide	C. Quilliam	Daniel D. Wood	Liverpool	July 25, '57	New York			
Underwriter	J. G. Holmes	Samuel H. Hale	Liverpool	Sept. 26, '57	New York			
Wm. Tapscott	J. G. Ball	Ann Calder	Liverpool	May 11, '58	New York			
Miscellaneous Ships	—	—	—	—	—			
					Total			

Of this number, as the table shows, 1037 purposed going through to Utah under P. E. Fund, Handcart, and Team arrangements. But we have good cause to presume that a large number of those who left here with the intention of settling for a short time in the States (and are included in the table under that head) have also gone through to Utah, without settling on the way.

The number of natives of the various countries may be classified as follows:—From the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland—English, 1074; Scotch, 136; Welsh, 173; Irish, 13. The total number from the Scandinavian Mission is 762, of which there are 522 Danes, 193 Swedes, and 41 Norwegians. The total number from the Swiss and Italian Mission is 211; of which 200 are from

of emigration to the gold regions of Pike's Peak, and the silver mines of the Nevada.

The London Conference has seventeen places of worship, and numbers a little over 2000 men, scattered throughout Great

---

the Swiss Cantons, and 2 from Italy. There are also 1 French, 2 Germans, and 70 elders returning home from missions; making a grand total, as per table, of 2433 souls.

Countries.—The number of natives of the various countries may be classified as follows:—

England (Principal counties:—Lancashire Yorkshire, and Staffordshire.)		2611	
Scotland		397	
Wales		687	3645
Ireland		54	
America		10	
French Mission (Channel Islands)		9	
Denmark	Scandinavia	505	
Sweden		97	
Norway		48	
Swiss Cantons		19	
Piedmont, Italy		31	
East India Mission		2	
Germany		1	760
	Total		4395 souls

The emigration in 1851 is progressing satisfactorily, as the following extract proves:—

"A party of Mormonites, consisting of 17 men, 38 women, and 11 children, left London lately by the North-Western Railway for Liverpool, en route for the Salt Lake settlement. The emigration of Mormonites from Great Britain, particularly from the southern districts of Wales, has during the past ten weeks been on a large scale. Their number embraces all classes; one gentleman, an inhabitant of Merthyr, Glamorganshire, having contributed £1000, and joined the 'brethren,' 300 of whom, including an old woman upwards of eighty years of age, have just left Wales."

No. III.

Latter-Day Saints' Emigration, Spring of 1851.

42 *Islington, Liverpool, June 28th, 1851.*

Per Ship Manchester, Captain Funk.	Males.	Females.	Per Ship Underwriter, Captain Roberts.	Males.	Females.
English	132	134	English	246	270
Scotch	3	3	Scotch	23	43
Irish	2	0	Irish	3	0
Welsh	54	57	Welsh	16	14
Danes	5	0	Norwegian	1	0
Americans	1	0	Americans	3	0
	197	193		289	335

Britain. In these isles there is a general Presidency of the Church, assisted by a counsellor: these preside over the pastors or presidents of districts, ten in number, who also, assisted by counsellors in their turn, direct and counsel the presidents of the twenty-four Conferences, whilst these superintend the presidents of the 400 branches. The total of members in the whole European mission is not less than 40,000. I subjoin a list of the various places—kindly furnished to me by an influential Saint—which the Mormons have selected for worship in London.*

Two points in this subject are truly remarkable. The first

Per Ship Monarch of the Sea, Captain Gardner.

	Males.	Females.		Males.	Females.
English	97	105	Brought forward	182	198
Scotch	25	27	Italian	1	2
Irish	2	1	French	1	2
Welsh	17	17	Danish	176	210
German	1	0	Norwegian	24	43
Swiss	40	43	Swedish	61	68
Carried forward	182	198	Total	444	534

Summary.

	Males.	Females.	Total.	
English	463	507	970	
Scotch	60	72	132	
Irish	7	1	8	
Welsh	87	88	175	1285
German	1	0	1	
Swiss	40	43	83	
Italian	1	3	4	
French	1	2	3	
Danes	180	210	390	
Swedes	61	68	129	
Norwegians	25	43	68	
Americans	4	0	4	687
	930	1042	1972 — 1972	

* *Latter-Day Saints' Meeting Rooms in London and vicinity:*—

Somers Town—Euston Hall, 3 George Street, Hampstead Road.
Holborn—148 Holborn, near Gray's Inn Lane.
Goswell Hall—46 Goswell Street.
Holloway—1 Cornwall Place, Holloway Road.
Whitechapel—Pisgah Chapel, North Street, Sydney Street, Mile End.
Poplar—26 Penny Fields.
Barking—L. D. S. Chapel, North Street.
Paddington—Hope Hall, Bell Street.
Chelsea—Lloyd's Assembly Rooms, 1 George Street, Sloane Square.

is the difference between U. T. and all other Anglo-Scandinavian colonies, in which males are usually far more numerous than females. The latter, at Utah, by the census of 1856, are 1781 in excess of the former: almost as great a disproportion as the extra three-quarter million in England. The second is the rapid growth of the New Faith, and the deep hold which it has taken upon Great Britain. Few Englishmen are aware that their metropolis contains seventeen places of Mormon worship, and their fatherland an army of 4000 volunteer missionaries. In the U. S. it is also the fashion to ignore the Mormons. The subject, however, will grow in importance, and it is easy to predict that before two decades shall have elapsed, Deseret, unless sent once more upon her travels, will have forced herself into the position of an Independent State.

The Mormon polity is, in my humble opinion,—based upon the fact that liberty is to mankind in mass, a burden far heavier than slavery—the perfection of government. It is the universal suffrage of the American States, tempered by the despotism of France and Russia: in moderate England men have nothing of it but that tory-radicalism to which the few of extremest opinions belong. At the semi-annual Conferences, which take place on the 6th April and 6th October, and last for four days, all officers, from the President to the constable, are voted in by direction and counsel; i.e. of the Lord through His Prophet; consequently, re-election is the rule, unless the chief dictator determine otherwise. Every adult male has a vote, and all live under an iron sway. His poor single vote—from which even the sting of ballot has been drawn—gratifies the dignity of the man, and satisfies him with the autocracy which directs him in the way he should go. He has thus all the harmless pleasure of voting, without the danger of injuring himself by his vote. The reverse duly carried out frees mankind from king and kaiser, and sub-

---

Shepherd's Bush—L. D. S. Chapel, Shepherd's Bush Green.
Camden Town—Beulah Cottage, King's Road, Camden Town.

On the Surrey Side of the Thames.

Walworth Common—L. D. S. Meeting Room, 2 King Street, Old Kent Road.
Lambeth—St. George's Hall, St. George's Road, near the Elephant and Castle.
Deptford—L. D. S. Meeting Room, Tanner's Hill.
Woolwich—L. D. S. Chapel, Prospect Row.
Welling—L. D. S. Meeting Room, Wickham Lane, near Welling.
Eltham—L. D. S. Meeting Room, at Mr. J. Daly's, Pound Place.

jects them to mobs and mobs. Mormon society is modelled upon a civilised regiment: the prophet is the colonel-commanding, and the grades are nicely graduated down to the last neophyte or recruit. I know no form of rule superior to that of Gt. S. L. City; it might supply the author of "Happy Years at Hand" with new ideas for the "Outlines of the Coming Theocracy." It exerts its beneficial effects equally upon the turbulent and independent American; the sensible and self-sufficient Englishman; the Frenchman, ever lusting after new things; the Switzer, with his rude love of a most problematic liberty; the outwardly cold, inwardly fiery, Scandinavian; the Italian, ready to bow down before any practice, with the one proviso that it must be successful; and the German, who demands to be governed by theories and Utopianisms, "worked" by professors "out of the depths of their self-consciousness."

The following description of a Conference is extracted at length from the "Daily Missourian Republican," of May 4, 1861:—

Great Salt Lake City, April 13, 1861.

On the 6th of April, 1830, in a small room about fifteen feet square, in the town of Fayette, Seneca county, New York, a young country lad —Joseph Smith—and five other persons organised that movement now known throughout Christendom as "The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints," or Mormonism. How the units have each increased to tens of thousands, and where these disciples have been found, and how they have been converted, is not the task I assign myself. I *assisted*, as the Frenchmen say, at the thirty-first anniversary conference of that obscure movement, and propose to give the readers of the "Republican" its picture and "nothing extenuate, nor set down aught in malice."

Twice a year the Mormons assemble in conference, on the 6th of April, and on the 6th of October, for the purpose of re-electing their presiding authorities, or making such changes among them as are deemed "wisdom" or "necessary,"—the chiefs, also, making these periods seasonable for general instruction to the "body,"—and in April electing and sending out missionaries to the nations of the earth, where Mormonism is flourishing, or where the new faith has yet to be introduced.

As the settlements in the Territory are widely scattered, and communication between them rare,—except where business or family purposes invite,—the conferences are looked forward to with peculiar interest by the people generally as a time of renewing acquaintance and friendship with those they have known and been associated with in the old world. To this add the curiosity to see and hear again the "Pro-

phet" and his associates, and the influences that draw the multitude to conference is comprehended.

Up to within a few years this country has, I am told*, been rarely visited by showers of rain, the husbandmen depending almost entirely upon the melting snows of the mountains for irrigating fields and gardens. Very recently the snow and rain had fallen in great abundance, and the muddy roads were rendered almost impassable. Notwithstanding this obstacle, the faithful screwed up courage and travelled in droves from every part of the territory, and filled the streets of the city during conference like a county fair.

Early on Saturday morning the carriages and wagons, equestrians and pedestrians, thronged into the city, and long before the opening of the Tabernacle doors, the people were gathering in groups, eager for admission to obtain a good seat, fearing the general rush. On the Sunday preceding, Brigham had requested the citizens here to stay at home, and afford their country brethren and sisters an opportunity of getting within the Tabernacle; otherwise there would have been a poor show for the strangers, and as it was they were themselves vastly too many for the dimensions of the building.

THE CONFERENCE — FIRST DAY — MORNING SESSION.

At 10 o'clock there were on the stand, according to technical rank and authority:

Of the First Presidency — Presidents Brigham Young, Heber C. Kimball and Daniel H. Wells.

Of the Twelve Apostles — Orson Hyde, Wilford Woodruff, John Taylor, George A. Smith, Ezra T. Benson, Lorenzo Snow and Franklin D. Richards.

Of the First Presidency of the Seventies — Joseph Young, Levi W. Hancock, Henry Herriman, Zera Pulsipher, Albert P. Rockwood and Horace S. Eldredge.

Of the Presidency of the High Priests — Edwin D. Woolley and Samuel W. Richards.

Of the Presidency of the Stake — Daniel Spencer, David Fullmer and George B. Wallace.

Of the Presidency of the Bishopric — Edward Hunter, Leonard W. Hardy, and Jesse C. Little.

Of the Patriarchs — John Smith and Isaac Morley.

Apostle Hyde called the meeting to order, and in a moment all talking was hushed, and a choir of about a dozen persons, accompanied by a fine toned organ in the centre of the building, sung:

* The writer is probably written by a Mormon Elder. It is the fashion, however, in newspaper correspondence — as the columns of the "N. Y. Herald" prove — to assume Gentilism for the scene.

The morning breaks, the shadows flee,
Lo! Zion's standard is unfurled!
The dawning of a brighter day
Majestic rises on the world.

The clouds of error disappear
Before the rays of truth divine;
The glory bursting from afar,
Wide o'er the nations soon will shine.

The Gentile fullness now comes in,
And Israel's blessings are at hand;
Lo! Judah's remnant, cleansed from sin,
Shall in their promised Canaan stand.

Jehovah speaks! let earth give ear,
And Gentile nations turn and live;
His mighty arm is making bare,
His covenant people to receive.

Angels from Heaven and truth from earth
Have met, and both have record borne;
Thus Zion's light is bursting forth,
To bring her ransomed children home.

Apostle Lorenzo Snow offered prayer, and the choir sung: "Praise ye the Lord; 'tis good to praise."

Apostle Benson was first invited to address the Conference. "Brother Ezra" is generally called a son of thunder — great preacher, I suppose. On this occasion he aimed at being modest, and after expressing his gratitude for the privilege of being permitted to attend Conference, to come and see the Prophet, his counsellors, and the twelve apostles, and the good brothers and sisters, he was prepared to bear his testimony.

He knew that Joseph Smith was a prophet; that his predictions had been fulfilled, and were daily fulfilling, to the joy of all the Saints. He would not stop there in his testimony; he would bear testimony to the teachings of President Brigham Young. His Counsellors — Heber C. Kimball and Daniel H. Wells — were also true as the revelations of Joseph, and he rejoiced in them. Oh, what a joy it was to know that they had such men to lead them! What would be the condemnation of those who rejected their testimony? Ezra was quite serious — yes, serious to shuddering.

The fearfulness of apostacy was eloquently portrayed. False spirits attending it, and false revelations bestowed on the backslider, and every other ugly, disagreeable, business was the certain lot of the apostate, and from which the brethren were decently warned.

President Daniel H. Wells was much pleased with the Latter Day work; it was a great blessing to live in the light of the Gospel. It had been but a few years proclaimed to the world. The channel of communication between heaven and earth was again open to the children,

of men. Brother Wells referred to the state of the nation. The present trouble was the result of bad treatment to the Saints. The people of God had been driven into the wilderness — thousands might have perished, and the Government was indifferent. It was a political axiom, that when governments ceased to protect, the people were released from their obligations. The Government had never protected the Saints as other citizens. They had been driven from place to place, and the murderers of Joseph Smith had gone unpunished. Fault had been found with the Mormons, because they had asked the Government to appoint good men as Federal officers — men in whom they had confidence. They were for this called rebels; but they were probably the only people that would yet stand by the Constitution and uphold it.

The Government had fallen in the eyes of the civilised world; it had become corrupt and debased. Now-a-days, nobody expected anything from public servants but corruption. These things were well known to everybody. The Saints had been molested and could get no redress. The prophet Joseph, moved by the Spirit of the Most High, told their enemies there that they would see mobbing to their heart's content, for the measure that they meted to the Saints should be meted to them back again.

The Saints could now see the distracted state of the nations, and the confusion of all governments. If they were wise men and women, they would appreciate the blessed inheritance that the Lord had brought them to. He had but one request to make, and that was, that the people should not only believe in the counsellings of President Young, but be diligent, and see that his counselling prospered.

President Heber C. Kimball got up with the invocation of "God bless the Saints, and peace be multiplied unto them." He respected and loved good men and women who were striving to do the will of Heaven. The Mormons were united, and he wanted them to continue so and be of one heart and of one mind, and to do as they were told. The South had seceded from the North, but the Mormons would never secede from either. He had sometimes a kind of notion that North and South would secede from them, and if they did so the Mormons couldn't help it, and the Lord would yet make a great people of them, just as fast as they were able to bear it.

Heber had a fling at "the miserable creatures who had been sent here one time and another, to rule and judge them." The yoke was off their neck; they were away out from the confusion, and the yoke was on the neck of their enemies, and the bow key was in. Many were engaged in trying to have the Mormons associate with them in a national capacity; but they would have nothing to do with them. "No, gentlemen and ladies, we are free from them and will keep free." Heber was satisfied with their position in the mountains. Brigham was their

Governor; had always been so, and would always be so. He went around about with his hands in his pocket, and governed the people. They had the Lord for ruler, and the men whom he delegated could govern the people. He had no fear, for he lived above the law; he transgressed no law, and had nothing to apprehend. With an exhortation to go to and make themselves happy and independent by their own industry, Heber's racy discourse terminated with a hearty *amen* from the congregation.

President Brigham Young was much pleased to meet with the Saints. The Church was that day thirty-one years old—it seemed but a short time, yet a great work had been done. He remembered when he had a great anxiety to see some person of foreign birth embrace the faith. For the first few years it was only Americans who received it, but he could now gaze upon tens of thousands from the nations of the old world. He discarded miracles as being any evidence of the divinity of any man's mission: men might be astonished by them, but the spirit only could convince and satisfy the mind. Referred to Aaron's operations; turning his stick into a serpent, filling the air with life, and turning the rivers into blood, did not satisfy. He alluded to the troubles in the States, and warned the people against too great anxiety; thought the nation was breaking up quite fast enough. All he was anxious about was the Saints being prepared for every event in the providence of the Lord. He sometimes wondered if the great men of the nation ever asked themselves the question, "How can a republican government stand?" There was but one way in which it could endure—as the government of heaven endures upon the basis of eternal truth and virtue. Had Martin Van Buren redressed the wrongs committed against the Saints,—had he ordered the State of Missouri to restore them to their property, the nation would be stronger to-day than it is. He mourned to see the corruption, and he sometimes felt a blush for being an American. He had been reared by the green mountains of Vermont, and could look down upon the nation and mourn that he had no power to save it. Although he had no reason to doubt that President Lincoln was as good a man as ever sat in the chair of state, he had little hope of his accomplishing much. He was powerless, because of the corruptions that had been introduced and fostered by the chief men of the nation. "Abraham's" authority and power was like a rope of sand: he was weak as water. The governments that had been had put aside the innocent, justified thieving and every species of debauchery, and had fostered every one that plundered the coffers of the people, and said let it be so.

Choir sung, "Arise, O Glorious Zion," and with benediction from President Joseph Young, we got home for dinner.

* * *

AFTERNOON SESSION.

At 2 P.M. choir sung,

"Great God attend while Zion sings,"

And Bishop Lorenzo D. Young prayed.

Choir again sung:

"All hail the glorious day, by prophets long foretold."

Attention was requested from the congregation, and Apostle John Taylor was to put all the presiding authorities before the people for re-election. Twice a year, in April and October, all the presidents are presented and voted on separately, and such dismissals or changes made that are deemed proper. On this occasion there were some additions made, but not a dissentient voice heard. The present presiding authorities in Mormondom are:

Brigham Young, as President of the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints; Heber C. Kimball, his first, and Daniel H. Wells, his second counsellors.

Orson Hyde, as President of the Quorum of the Twelve Apostles; and Orson Pratt, sen., Wilford Woodruff, John Taylor, George A. Smith, Amasa Lyman, Ezra T. Benson, Charles C. Rich, Lorenzo Snow, Erastus Snow, Franklin D. Richards, and George Q. Cannon, as members of the said Quorum.

John Smith, Patriarch of the whole Church.

Daniel Spencer, as President of this Stake of Zion; and David Fullmer and George B. Wallace, his counsellors.

William Eddington, James A. Little, John V. Long, John L. Blythe, George Nebeker, John T. Caine, Joseph W. Young, Gilbert Clements, Brigham Young, jun., Franklin B. Woolley, Orson Pratt, jun., and Howard Spencer, as members of the High Council.

John Young, as President of the High Priests' Quorum; Edwin D. Woolley and Samuel W. Richards, his counsellors.

Joseph Young, President of the first seven Presidents of the Seventies; and Levi W. Hancock, Henry Herriman, Zera Pulsipher, Albert P. Rockwood, Horace S. Eldredge, and Jacob Gates, as members of the first seven Presidents of the Seventies.

John Nebeker, as President of the Elders' Quorum; and Ebnthan Eldredge and Joseph Felt, his counsellors.

Edward Hunter, as Presiding Bishop; Leonard W. Hardy and Jesse C. Little, his counsellors.

Lewis Wight, as President of the Priests' Quorum; William Whiting and Samuel Moore, his counsellors.

McGee Harris, as President of the Teachers' Quorum; Adam Speirs and David Bowman, his counsellors.

John S. Carpenter, as President of the Deacons' Quorum; William F. Cook and Warren Hardy, his counsellors.

Brigham Young was presented as Trustee in Trust for the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints.

Daniel H. Wells, as Superintendent of Public Works.

Truman O. Angell, Architect for the Church.

Brigham Young, President of the Perpetual Emigrating Fund to gather the poor.

Heber C. Kimball, Daniel H. Wells, and Edward Hunter, his assistants and agents for said fund.

George A. Smith, Historian and general Church Recorder; and Wilford Woodruff, his assistant.

Besides the time consumed in putting every name separately for the action of the assembly, there was a good deal of instruction given about the severities, which is of no outside interest.

Apostles John Taylor and George A. Smith, and Patriarch Aaron Morley, addressed the audience.

The Apostle Taylor thought the Mormons the freest people on the earth. They could, if they would, reject their rulers twice a year: they had the opportunity. The unity of the Saints pleased them. He questioned *Vox populi, vox Dei*. He got fractions, and wondered how they would get along, both North and South, with that doctrine. If the voice of the people in the North was the voice of God, and the voice of the people in the South was the voice of God, he was a little interested to know with which of them He would really be. [*A voice in the stand*: "Not either of them."]

With the Saints it was *Vox Dei, vox populi*, the voice of God first, and the voice of the people afterwards. The Spirit dictated and the Saints sustained it. But what were they after? Did they seek to subdue and put their feet on the necks of men? to rule and dictate nations? No! It was only the "little stone cut out of the mountains," growing into the kingdom that the prophets foresaw that would be established in the Last days.—The Mormons had never troubled their neighbours; but their neighbours kept meddling with them. They had sent an army here, but the Mormons did not seek to harm them when they had the chance. They came here with the intention to kill the Mormons, if they could; but they couldn't, for the Lord wouldn't let them. Their enemies had hunted them like wolves; but the Lord had said, "Touch not mine anointed and do my prophets no harm." They had kept the army out at Ham's Fork shaking and shivering till they cooled down. "Brother Taylor" was real well pleased with things in general, and concluded with Hallelujah.

Apostle Geo. A. Smith was exceedingly humorous over the Democracy. There was no head to it; the centre of its intelligence was the

belly, and the principal portion of the body was in the boots. Several plundering operations were alluded to, and Uncle Sam had been sadly victimized by his boys. The Government had been a miserable gobee for politicians to pluck. Abe Lincoln had now the honour of presiding over a portion of what was once the United States; he had been elected by the religious portion of the States. "George A." remembered when the folks of New York sold his slaves to Virginia. Their consciences would not allow them to retain their fellow-beings in bondage—oh, they were mighty squeamish! They could take the money from Virginia, and as they got more religion and more conscience they were exceedingly anxious for Virginia to set them loose!

That religious fanaticism that had been mixed up with politics would lead to bloodshed. They were more to be dreaded than infidels. They were cruel in their fanaticism. The Republicans first whipped old Buck* into the Utah war, and they whipped him for getting into it, and whipped him awfully for getting out of it—he got out of it too soon. Politicians were in confusion and the Lord would keep them there. He laboured to show the folly of men worshipping a God without body, parts or passions, for such being, if being he might be called, must be destitute of principles and power. He argued that the God worshipped by sectarians could not be the being that wrestled with Jacob, that conversed with Moses and wrote with his finger upon tables of stone. He said that Joseph Smith had prophesied when the Saints were driven from Jackson county, Missouri, that if the Government did not redress our wrongs they should have mob upon mob until mob-power, and that alone, should govern the whole land.

He bore testimony to the truth of the work in which he was engaged, and said if the Latter Day Saints would listen to President Young's instructions as they ought to do, they would soon be the wealthiest people upon the face of the earth.

Choir sung "The Standard of Zion."

Air—"*Star Spangled Banner.*"

Oh, see! on the tops of the mountains erected,
The ensign of promise, of hope, and salvation,
From their summits how nobly it waves to the world,
And spreads its broad folds o'er the head of each nation;
A signal of light for the lovers of right,
To rally where truth will soon triumph in might.
'Tis the ensign of Israel streaming abroad,
And ever shall wave o'er the people of God.

By an angel's strong hand to the earth it was brought
From the regions of glory, where long it lay folded;
And holy ones here, for the arduous work taught
By the priesthood unflinching and faithful upheld it;

* Mr. Buchanan.

Its waves pierce heav'n, and 'twill never be riv'n,
'Till the rule of the earth will to Jesus be given.
For the ensign of Israel's streaming abroad,
And ever shall wave o'er the people of God.

'Tis the emblem of peace and good will to mankind,
That prophets have sung of when fired by the spirit,
And a token which God has for Israel designed,
That their seed may the land of their fathers inherit;
Many nations will say, when they see its bright ray,
To the mountains of God let us hasten away;
For the ensign of Israel's streaming abroad,
And ever shall wave o'er the people of God.

Its guardians are sending their ministers forth,
To tell when the Latter Day Kingdom is founded,
And invite all the lovers of truth on the earth,
Jew, Christian, and Gentile, to gather around it;
The cause will prevail, though all else may assail,
For God has decreed that his works shall not fail;
Oh! the ensign of Israel's streaming abroad,
And ever shall wave o'er the people of God.

Patriarch Morley pronounced the benediction, and the first day's conference terminated.

SECOND DAY.

The crowd on the Sunday far exceeded that of the preceding day. The streets around the Temple Block were literally filled with people and carriages. The Tabernacle could not hold a third of those who were anxious to hear. Every seat and standing place was occupied long before the opening of proceedings. As soon as Brigham reached the inside vestry, he sent out some of the apostles and elders to preach to the outsiders, sufficiently distant from the Tabernacle as not to disturb each other with their preaching.

I have already filled so much paper that I fear trespassing too much upon your columns with the details of the second day, at the present time. As Brigham was very explicit on the subject of plurality of wives, and it was the only time I ever heard him on the "peculiar institution."

Altogether it was a great conference, and, as the foregoing exhibits, the apostles enjoyed a particular free and easy time of it.

In its territorial status an anomaly has been forced upon the Mormon population. It must receive officers appointed and salaried by the Federal Government, viz.:—

A governor, with a salary of $2500 (500*l.*) per annum, payable quarterly.
A secretary to Government, $1000.
A chief-justice to the Supreme Court, $2500.
An associate, do. $1000.
Do. do. $1000.
A district attorney, $400.
A marshal, $400 (not including perquisites).
A superintendent of Indian affairs, $2500.
A surveyor-general, $2500.*

The governor, who is also commander-in-chief of the militia, holds office for four years, unless sooner removed by the President of the U. S., or until appointment of a successor. He has the usual right of pardoning territorial offences, and of reprieving offenders against the Federal Government. He approves all laws passed by the Legislative Assembly before they can take effect; he commissions all officers appointed under the laws, and he takes care that the laws are faithfully executed.

The secretary holds office for the same time: his duty is to record, preserve, and transmit copies of all laws and proceedings of the Legislative Assembly, and all acts and proceedings of the governor in his executive department. In case of death, removal, resignation, or necessary absence of the governor from the territory, he acts temporarily until the vacancy is filled up; and practically he looks forward to being an M. C. in the House of Representatives, U. S.

The marshal holds office for a similar term: his duty is to execute all processes issued by the courts when exercising their functions as circuit and district courts of the U. S. In disturbed countries, as California of the olden time, the marshal's principal office seems to have been that of being shot at.

The executive arm would, in any other territory, be found to work easily and well: it is in fact derived with certain modifications from that original constitution which has ever remained to new States the great old model. Among the Mormons, however, there is necessarily a division and a clashing of the two principles: one, the federal, republican, and laical; the other, the theocratic, despotic, and spiritual. The former is the State,

* The delegate to Washington receives "$3 per diem, not including 'mileage.'"

under which is the Church. The latter is the Church, under which is the State, and hence complications which call for a cutting solution. As long as the prophet and president was also the temporal governor, so long the Mormons were contented: now they must look forward to a change.

The Legislative Assembly consists of an "Upper House," a President and Council of thirteen, and a House of Representatives, or Lower House, of twenty-six members, whose term of office is one year. An appointment of the representation based upon a census is made in the ratio of population: the candidates, however, must be *bonâ fide* residents of the counties or districts for which they stand. No member of the Legislative Assembly is allowed to hold any appointment created whilst he was in office, "or for one year thereafter," and the U. S. officials — post-masters alone excepted — cannot become either senators or representatives. The legislative power extends to the usual rightful and constitutional limits. "No law shall be passed interfering with the primary disposal of the soil; no tax shall be imposed upon the property of the U. S.; nor shall the lands or other property of non-residents be taxed higher than the lands or other property of residents. All the laws passed by the Legislative Assembly and Government shall be submitted to the Congress of the U. S., and if disapproved shall be null and of no effect."

Every free male (white) inhabitant* above the age of twenty-one, who has resided in the county for sixty days before the election, is entitled to vote, and is eligible for office; the right is limited to citizens of the U. S., including those recognised by treaty with the Mexican Republic (2nd Feb. 1848), and excluding, as usual, the military servants of the Federal Government. Great fault was found by Anti-Mormons with the following

* When the venal passage, "We hold these truths to be self-evident; that all men are created equal," written in 1776, is interpreted in 1860, it must be read, "all (free white) men" to be consistent and intelligible. Similarly "persons bound to labour" must be considered a euphuism for slaves. The "American Mirabeau," Jefferson, who framed the celebrated Declaration, certainly did not consider, as the content of his life proves, slaves to be his equals. What he intended the Mormons have expressed.

Again, what can be clearer than that the Constitution contemplated secession? If an adult citizen is allowed to throw off his allegiance, surely the body of citizens called a State, have, *à majori*, a right to withdraw from a "Federal Union."

provisions in the Act regulating elections (Jan. 1853), because they artistically enough abolish the ballot while they retain the vote.*

Sec. 5. Each elector shall provide himself with a copy, containing the names of the persons he wishes elected, and the offices he would have them to fill, and present it neatly folded (!) to the judge of the elections, who shall number and deposit it in the ballot box; the clerk shall then write the name of the elector, and opposite it the number of his vote.

Sec. 6. At the close of the election the judge shall seal up the ballot box, and the list of the names of the electors, and transmit the same without delay to the county clerks.

"In a Territory so governed," remarks Mr. Secretary Ferris, "it will not excite surprise that cases of extortion, robbery, murder, and other crimes should occur and defy all legal redress, or that the law should be made the instrument of crime."

The deduction is unfair. The real cause why crime goes unpunished must, as will presently appear, be sought in an unfriendly and conflicting judiciary. The Act itself can produce nothing but good; it enables the wise few to superintend the actions of the unwise many, and it subjects the "tyrant majority," as ever should be the case, to the will of the favoured minority. As the Conqueror of Sindh often said, "when noses are counted the many are those without brains."

The bad working of a divided executive is as nothing compared with the troubles occasioned by the opposition judiciaries, Federal and Territorial.

An Act (19th Jan. 1855) provides that a Supreme Court of the U. S. be held annually on the first Monday in January, at Fillmore City; each session to be kept open at least one day, and no session to be legal except on adjournment in the regular term. Another Act (4th Feb. 1852) directed that the district

* The first Legislative Assembly was elected in the summer of 1851, and held a session in the following autumn and winter. An historian's office was established, courts were organized, cities incorporated, and a small body of territorial laws were passed. The second Legislative Assembly met on the 25th January 1852, at the Council House, and after the organization of the two Houses, they came together to receive the message of the Governor, Mr. Brigham Young. The Avelum, when notified of the hour, entered, sat down in the Speaker's chair, and on being asked if he had any communication to make, handed his message to the President of the Council, who passed it for reading to the Clerk of the House. The message was a lengthy and creditable document; of course it was severely criticised, but the gravamen of the charges was the invidious phrase used by the prophet on his lingo, "for your guidance."

courts, now three in number, shall exercise original jurisdiction both in civil and criminal cases when not otherwise provided by law, and also have a general supervision over all inferior courts to prevent and correct abuses where no other remedy is provided. The above are officered by the Federal Government.

Section 23rd of the same Act provides for a Judge of Probate — of course a Mormon — *elected by the joint vote of the Legislative Assembly and commissioned by the Governor.* His tenure of office is four years, and he holds regular sessions on the second Mondays of March, June, September, and December of each year. The Probate Court, besides the duties which its name suggests, has the administration of estates, and the guardianship of minors, idiots, and insane persons; with these, its proper offices, however, it combines power to *exercise original jurisdiction both civil and criminal,* regulated only by appeal under certain conditions to the district courts. Of late the anomaly has been acknowledged by the Supreme Court.* Inferior to the Probate Court, and subject to its revision, are the Justices of the Peace, the Municipal Court, and the three Selectmen in each organised

* The Court held—First, that the 9th section of the Organic Act vested all judicial power in the Supreme, District, and Probate Courts, and in Justices of the Peace.

Second. That the only restriction placed upon these Courts was, as to Justices of the Peace, refusing them jurisdiction to try any case involving the title or boundary to land, or any suit where the claim or demand exceeded one hundred dollars.

Third. That by virtue of that clause of the Organic Act which provides that "the jurisdiction of the several courts therein provided for," including the Probate Courts, "*shall be as limited by law,*" that the Legislature had the right to provide by law for the exercise by the Probate Courts of jurisdiction in civil and criminal cases.

Fourth. That as the Organic Act conferred common law and chancery jurisdiction upon the Supreme and District Courts respectively, that this jurisdiction belonged to these courts exclusively, and that the Probate Courts were confined to the jurisdiction conferred by statute, and such jurisdiction might be exercised concurrently with the District Courts to the extent provided by statute.

Fifth. That as the Legislature had passed a law conferring upon the Probate Courts concurrent jurisdiction with the District Courts to hear and determine civil as well as criminal cases within their respective counties, and had provided the manner in which this jurisdiction should be exercised, that the trial, conviction, and sentence of the prisoner were valid and binding in law until reversed by an appellate court.

Although Judge Shaver, one of the best of jurists, tacitly acknowledged the jurisdiction of Probate Courts, Judge Kinney is the first who has dared assert his decision judicially.

county. Besides the Probate Courts, the Mormons have instituted, as will presently appear, Ecclesiastical High Council under the Church authorities and the President, provided with ample powers of civil and criminal jurisdiction, and fully capable of judging between Saint and Saint.

In describing the operations of the two conflicting judiciaries, I shall borrow the words of both parties.

According to the Mormons, the increased chicanery of the Federal Government has arrived at full development in their Territory.* The phrase has been, "anything is good enough for Utah." The salary is too inconsiderable to satisfy any but the worst kind of jack-in-office, and the object of those appointed is to secure notoriety in the Eastern States by obstructing justice, and by fomenting disturbances in the West. The three judges first appointed from Washington in June 1851 became so unpopular, that in the autumn of the same year they were obliged to leave U. T.—one of them with a "flea in his ear" duly inserted by Mr. Brigham Young. I shall not quote names, nor will the reader require them. Another attempted to break the amnesty in 1858, and when asked for suggestions by the Legislative Assembly, proposed an Act for the prevention and punishment of polygamy, and urged the Senate to divide the land between the proposed Territories; finally, this excellent Christian hung a Gentile brother on the Lord's day. Another killed himself with opium; another was a notorious drunkard; and another was addicted to gambling in his cellar. A judge disgraced himself with an Indian squaw, who entered his court and, *coram publico*, demanded her honorarium, and another seated on the bench his mistress,—*la malgre Ada*, as she is termed by M. Remy, the Gentile traveller,—and the Mormons have not yet learned to endure Alice Peirce, or to worship the Goddess of Reason in that shape. Another attempted to convict Mr. Brigham Young of forgery. The marshal was, in one case, a *ci-devant* teamster, who could hardly write his own name. Be-

* The Utah correspondent of the "New York Herald," writing from Salt Lake under date of April 28th, states that the fall of Fort Sumter and the secession of Virginia had created intense interest among the "Saints." The news was read in the tabernacle by Brigham Young, and the disciples were asked to believe that this was merely the prediction of Mr. Joseph Smith about the breaking up of the American Union.

sides the vileness of their characters, their cliqueism and violent hostility have led to prostitution of justice; a Mormon *accused* was invariably found guilty by them, a Gentile was invariably acquitted. Thus the Probate Courts, properly jurisdictors of the dead, were made judges of the living, in all civil and criminal cases, because justice was not obtainable from the Supreme District and the Circuit Judges appointed by the Federal Government. To the envenomed reports of these officials, the Saints attribute all the disturbances in 1857–58, and sundry high-handed violations of the constitutional liberties and the dearest rights of American citizenship. For instance, the Indian war of 1852 cost them $200,000; they repeatedly memorialised Congress to defray, strictly according to precedent, these expenditures, and yet, from 1850 to 1855, they have received, in payment of expenses and treaties, grants and presents, only the sum of $95,940. Though U. T. has practised far more economy than Oregon or California, the drafts forwarded by the Superintendent of Indian Affairs to the Treasury at Washington are totally neglected, or are subjected to delays and frivolous annoyances. The usual treaties with the Indians have not been held by the Federal Government. The Mormons' requisition for becoming a State is systematically ignored, and this ignoble minorhood is prolonged, although they can show five head of souls for three possessed by California at the time of her admittance,—another instance of a "rancorous, persecuting spirit, excited by false and malicious representations." He who lifteth up an ensign on the mountains is now "about to destroy a certain nation under the name of the sour grape (Catawba?);" and the Mormons see in the present civil war at once retribution for their injuries and the fulfilment of the denunciations of Joseph the Seer, against the "Gentile land of strife and wickedness." Assuredly Fate has played marvellously into their hands.

The Federal officials retort with a counter charge against the Saints of systematically obstructing the course of justice. A Mormon must be tried by his peers; however guilty, he will be surely acquitted, as a murdering fugitive slave in the north, or a thievish filibuster in the south. That it is vain to attempt jurisdiction over a people who have an ecclesiastical Star Chamber and Vigilance Committee working out in darkness a sectarian law. That no civilised government could or would admit into a com-

munity of Christian states a power founded on prophethood and polygamy, a theodemocracy, with a grand Lama presiding over universal suffragators. That all accusations of private immorality proceed from a systematic attack upon the Federal Union through its officers; and finally, that, so thin-skinned is Mormon sensibility, a torrent of vituperation follows the least delay made with respect to their "ridiculous pretensions."

The author speaks. Of course there are faults on both sides, and each party has nothing better to do than to spy out the other's sins of omission and commission. The Americans (i. e. anti-Mormons), never very genial or unprejudiced, are not conciliatory; they rage violently when called Gentiles, and their "respectability," a master-passion in Columbian lands, is outraged, maiden-modesty-like, by the bare mention of polygamy. On the other hand, the L. D. Saints, who now flourish in the Mountain Territory, and who expect eventually to flourish over the whole earth, "are naturally prepared to hate and denigrate all beyond the pale of their own faith." If the newly arrived judge fails, within the first week, to wait upon Mr. President, he or his may expect to be the subject of an offensive newspaper article. If another live amongst his co-religionists at Camp Floyd, he is convicted of *aliquisms*, and is forthwith condemned as a foe. Whatever proceeds from the Federal Government is and must be distasteful to them; to every address they reply, "To your tents, O Israel!" "Their nobles shall be of themselves, and their governor shall proceed from the midst of them," is the shaft which they level against the other party, and which recoils upon themselves. The result is that if the territorial judiciary sentences a criminal he appeals to the Federals, and at once obtains execution — and *vice versâ*. The usual procedure in criminal cases is to make oath before a magistrate, who thereupon commands the marshal to take the accused into custody, and "them safely keep," so that he may produce their bodies before the first sessions of the U. S. district courts; if the magistrate be a Mormon, he naturally refuses to prosecute and persecute a brother Saint — and *vice versâ*. Thus many notorious offenders, whom the Mormons would, for their own sakes, willingly see cut off from the congregation — in simple words hung — escape with impunity after the first excitement has settled down: the most terrible crimes are soon forgotten in the party fight,

and in the race to "go-a-head;" after five years they become pabulum for the local antiquary.

I have thus attempted, with feeble hand, to divide the blame between both the great contending parties, and may fairly, I hope, expect to be unanimously rejected by both.

The ordinance to incorporate Gt. S. L. City was approved by the General Assembly of the State of Deseret, on the 19th Jan. 1851, and the body municipal was constituted, like Fillmore, Ogden, and other cities in the Territory. The city council consists of a mayor, four aldermen, and one common-councillor per ward—formerly there were but nine; they are elected by votes, with the usual qualifications; are sworn or affianced to support the Federal and Territorial Constitution, and retain office for two years. They collect the taxes which, however, must not exceed 1·50 per cent. per annum upon the assessed value of all taxable property, real and personal.* They appoint their recorder, treasurer, assessor, collector, marshal, and supervisor of streets,

* The property-tax, like tithes, forming the Church funds and the revenue of the civil government, are general, the octroi ($20 for 100 lbs. of everything entering the Territory from the east, and $25 from the west) and water-tax are local and confined to towns. I cannot find any other recognised imposts. The anti-Mormons declare that the Saints are overburdened with taxation. The Saints assert that their burden is light especially compared with the Mormons' taxation of the Atlantic cities, which averages from double to treble that of London and Paris—a little drawback to Liberty when she must be bought for her weight in gold.

In the Auditor's report accompanying the Governor's Message of 1850, there are some items of general interest to people outside, as well as to those in the Territory. The report states that "the total valuation of property assessed in the Territory for the year 1850 (Green River and Carson Counties excepted), amounts to $4,672,900." Assessors in Utah are, I presume, like assessors everywhere, not likely to obtain an exaggerated estimate of the value of property, as on that estimate assessments are made. Property, therefore, may be set down at a much larger figure than that given in the above extract. The Territorial tax at one-half of one per cent. is $23,369 50-100. As an evidence of the increase of population, and of improvement in property, the excess of Territorial tax is over that of last year $13,276 23-100—five-sixths of which is collected in Great Salt Lake County, and that chiefly in this city. Of the other counties, the report states: "The counties of Weber, Box, Elder, and Juab, each show a decrease in the valuation of property, compared with assessment for 1849, of 16 per cent. and Iron County a decrease of 33 per cent., while the counties of Beaver, Sanpete, and Cache show a more than corresponding increase in the following ratio, viz.: Beaver, 33, Sanpete, 50, and Cache, 900 per cent. The increase in the three last named counties, especially Cache, may account in some measure for the decrease in the other counties named, from the fact that, during the fall of 1849 and the spring of 1850, very many

and have sole charge of the police. They establish and support schools and hospitals, regulate "hacking," "tippling houses," and gambling and billiard-tables; inspect lumber, hay, bread and provisions, and provide against fires — which here, contrary to the rule throughout England and the Eastern States, are rare and little to be feared; — direct night-lighting and the storage of combustibles, and regulate streets, bridges, and fences. They have power to enforce their ordinances by fines and penalties. Appeals from the decisions of the mayor and aldermen are made to the municipal court, composed of the mayor as chief-justice, and the aldermen as associate-justices, and from the municipal court to the Probate Court of Gt. S. L. City.

In the young settlements of the Far West there is a regular self-enforced programme of manufacturing-progress. The first step is to establish flouring or grist mills, and lumber or saw-mills, to provide for food and shelter. After these *sine quâ nons* come the comforts of cotton-spinning, wool-carding, cloth-weaving, tailoring, and shoemaking. Lastly arise the luxuries of life, which penetrate slowly into this territory on account of the delay and expense of transporting heavy machinery across the "wild desert plains." The minor mechanical contrivances, the remarkable inventions of the Eastern States — results of a necessity which removes every limit to human ingenuity — such as sewing-machines, cataract washing-machines, stump-extracting machines, and others, which but for want of hands would never have been dreamed of, are not unknown at Gt. S. L. City.

The subjoined extract, from the list of premiums of the Deseret Agricultural Society, will explain the industry at Gt. S. L.*

wealthy families moved with their stock and effects to form new settlements in Cache and Sanpete counties, and probably the same may be said of Beaver."

The tax of all the counties amounts to $23,369-50; the totals of auditor's awards issued $19,134-36, which together with $6,480-95 payable on appropriations heretofore made, shows that the Mormons have the good sense to keep clear of a territorial debt.

* The Act incorporating the Society, which was established "with a view of promoting the arts of domestic industry, and to encourage the production of articles from the native elements in this Territory," — was approved on January 17, 1856. The Board consists of a President, six Directors, a Treasurer, and a Secretary — the latter my friend Mr. Thomas Bullock.

CLASS E. — FARMING IMPLEMENTS MADE IN THE TERRITORY.

Awarding Committee — Ira Eldredge, Daniel Carter, Levi E. Ritter.

	Dol.		Dol.		Dol.
Best plow	1-00	Best subsoil plow	1.	Best harrow	1.
2d do.	1.	2d do.	1.	2d do.	1.
3rd do.	1.	3rd do.	1.	3rd do.	1.

City in 1860—will prove that the infant colony has supplied all its actual wants, and will show what energy and perseverance

CLASS E.—FANCIFUL ARTICLES MADE IN THE TERRITORY—continued.

Best fish rods	Dol. 5.00	2d best rules	dip	Best whistles	1.
2d do.	2.	Best hay fork	1.	2d do.	dip
Best drill and brush	1.	2d do.	dip	Best chairs	1.
2d do.	dip	Best manure fork	1.	2d do.	dip
Best corn planter	1.	2d do.	dip	Best chest	1.
2d do.	dip	Best spring couch	1.	2d do.	dip
Best 1 horse corn cultivator	1.	2d do.	dip	Best frames fish and birds	1.
2d do.	dip	Best set of garden tools	1.	2d do.	dip
Best grain cradle	1.	2d do.	dip	Best washing machine	1.
2d do.	dip	Best shovel	1.	2d do.	dip
Best horse rake	1.	2d do.	dip	Best spinning wheel	1.
2d do.	dip	Best spade	1.	2d do.	dip
Best garden rake	1.	Best hoe	1.	Best 4 oars complete	1.
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
Best hay rake	1.				

AGRICULTURAL MACHINES.

Best reaping machine	Dol. 10.00	2d best thrashing machine	dip	2d best horse rake	dip
2d do.	5.	Best corn sheller	1.	Grinding machine	dip
3rd do.	dip	2d do.	1.	Best hay and straw cutter	1.
Best thrashing machine	10.	3rd do.	dip	2d do.	1.
2d do.	5.	Best corn and cob mill	1.	3d do.	dip
3rd do.	dip	2d do.	dip	Best vegetable root cutter	1.
Best fanning mill	1.	Best horse and ox Grinding machine	1.	2d do.	dip
2d do.	1.				

CLASS F.—MACHINERY.

Awarding Committee—Frederick Kesler, John Key, William J. Silver.

Best steam engine	Dol. 10.00	2d best lath machine	dip	2d best corn sawing machine	dip
2d do.	dip	Best shingle machine	1.	Best pump for a well	1.
Best fire engine	10.	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
2d do.	dip	Best stone dressing machine	1.	Best water wheel for propelling water for machinery	1.
Best garden engine	1.	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
2d do.	dip	Best tenon sawing machine	1.	3rd do.	dip
Best bellows	1.				
2d do.	dip				
Best lath machine	1.				

CLASS G.—LEATHER.

Awarding Committee—Seth Taft, John Lowe, Francis Platte.

Best side sole leather	Dol. 5.00	Best side skirting	1.	Best pair gentlemen's	
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	single bands	1.
Best side upper cowhide	1.	Best saddler	1.	2d do.	dip
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	Best pair gentlemen's	
Best kip skin	1.	Best light harness	1.	Best thongs	1.
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
Best calf skin	1.	Best heavy harness	1.	Best pair ladies' harness	1.
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
Best Morocco skin	1.	Best bridle	1.	Best pair ladies' shoes	1.
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
Best sole harness	1.	Best pair gentlemen's		Best blacking or polish	1.
2d do.	dip	Best boots	1.	2d do.	dip
		2d do.	dip		

CLASS H.—CLOTHES, DRY GOODS, AND DYE STUFFS.

Awarding Committee—E. R. Young, John Needham, N. H. Felt.

Best pair suit of clothes	Dol. 5.00	Best 5 yards of white flannel	1.	Best 2 yards of white Linsey	1.
2d do.	2.	2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip
3rd do.	dip	3rd do.	dip	Best 5 yards of colored Linsey	1.
Best under suit of buckskin	1.	Best 5 yards of white jeans	1.	2d do.	dip
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	3rd do.	dip
3rd do.	dip	3rd do.	dip	Best 5 yards of harvey	1.
Best 5 yards of colored flannel	1.	Best 5 yards of colored jeans	1.	2d do.	dip
2d do.	dip	2d do.	dip	3rd do.	dip
3rd do.	dip	3rd do.	dip		

ran effect against time and all manner of obstructions. Besides the industries mentioned below there are stores, cutlery shops,

CLASS H.—[illegible], BOOT GOODS, AND DRY STORES—continued.

CLASS I.—FURNITURE, COOPER WARE, &c.

Awarding Committee—Miles Romney, Archibald N. Hill, Thomas Allison.

CLASS J.—PAINTING, ENGRAVING, &c.

Awarding Committee—James M. Barlow, James Beck, John H. Russell.

CLASS K.—CUTLERY, HARDWARE, &c.

Awarding Committee—Levi Richards, Zachariah B. Dunbar, Jonathan Pugmire.

watchmakers and jewellers, painters and glaziers, brush-makers, cabinetmakers, and skilful turners — for the most part English. Iron and brass foundries are in contemplation, and a paper mill is coming across the prairies. The cutlery is good, the swords, spears, and congress knives, the pruning-hooks, saws, and locks are yearly improving, and the imitations of Colt's revolvers can hardly be distinguished from the originals. The distilleries of course cannot expect prizes. The whiskey of U. T., unlike the Monongahela or rye of Pennsylvania, and the Bourbon

CLASS L.—WOOLEN'S WORK.

Awarding Committee—Mrs. Fanny Little, —— Taft, Marion Beatie, Sarah Brown.

Best ornamental needle-work Dol. 1.50	Best hose cap 1.	Best hand embroidered shawl 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best variety of crochet 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best specimen of Ayrshire embroidery 1.	Best group of flowers 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best worsted quilt 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best ornamental corner 1.	Best specimen of wax flowers 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best patch work quilt 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best table cover 1.	Best ornamental shell work 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best specimen knitting 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best worked shawl 1.	Best pair worked slippers 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best shawl knit 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best worked collar and handkerchief 1.	Best pair woollen hose 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best shawl trimmed 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
Best worked gaiters 1.	Best pair cut up hose 1.	3d do. 50
2d do. .50	2d do. .50	Best specimen of braid or galloon 1.
3d do. 50	3d do. 50	2d do. .50
	Best embroidered shawl 1.	3d do. 50
	2d do. .50	
	3d do. 50	

CLASS M.—PRODUCE.

Awarding Committee—Richard Golightly, George Goddard, Eli B. Kelsey.

Best flax, hemp Dol. 2.50	M best gallon molasses 1.	Best pickles, tomatoes 1.
2d do. 1.	2d do. .50	2d do. .50
3d do. .50	Best home-made wine 1.	3d do. .25
Best cheese 1.	2d do. .50	Best do. do. 1.
2d do. .50	3d do. .25	2d do. do. .50
3d do. .25	Best peach rye, preserved 1.	3d do. do. .25
Best loaf 1.	2d do. .50	Best pickles 1.
2d do. .50	3d do. .25	2d do. .50
3d do. .25	Best preserves, tomatoes 1.	3d do. .25
Best honey, comb 1.	2d do. .50	Best vinegar 1.
2d do. .50	3d do. .25	2d do. .50
3d do. .25	Best preserves of any kind 1.	3d do. .25
Best garden vegetables 1.	2d do. .50	
2d do. .50	3d do. .25	
3d do. .25	Best pickles, cucumbers 1.	
	2d do. .50	
	3d do. .25	

CLASS N.—SUNDRIES.

Awarding Committee—President and Board of Directors.

Best stump and implement Dol. 10.00	Best stump and handkerchief 10.	Best stump and largest number 10.
2d do. } silver	2d do. } silver	2d do. } silver
3d do. } medal	3d do. } medal	3d do. } medal

By order of the Board of the Deseret Agricultural and Manufacturing Society.

EDWARD HUNTER, President.

THOMAS BULLOCK, Secretary.

Gt. S. L. City, May 14, 1860.

or maize brandy of Kentucky, is distilled from wheat only; it is, in fact, the Kornschnappe of the trans-rhenine region. This "valley-tan," being generally pure, is better than the alcohol one part and water one part, coloured with burnt sugar and flavoured with green tea, which is sold under the name of cognac. Ale and cakes are in higher favour than the "villainous distillation:" there are two large and eight small breweries in which a palatable Lager-bier is made. The hop grows wild and luxuriant in every kanyon; and there is no reason why in time the John Barleycorn of the Saints should not rival that of the sinners, in lands where no unfriendly legislation tries, or will, it is hoped, ever try,

"To rob a poor man of his beer."

Hand labour obtains $2 per diem, consequently much work is done at home. The fair sex still cards, spins, and weaves, as in Cornwall and Wales, and the plurality system supplies them with leisure for the exercise of the needle. Excellent blankets, the finest linens, and embroidered buckskin garments, varying in prices from $75 to $500—a splendid specimen was, at the time of my stay, being worked for that "Champion of oppressed nationalities," M. Louis Kossuth—are the results.

As in India, the mere necessaries of life at Gt. S. L. City are cheap: the foreign luxuries, and even comforts, are exorbitantly dear. A family may live almost for nothing upon vegetables grown in their own garden, milk from their own cows, wheaten bread, and butter which derives a peculiar sweetness from the bunch grass. For some reason, which no one can explain, there is not, and there never has been, a market at Gt. S. L. City; consequently even meat is expensive. Freight upon every article, from a bar of soap to a bar of iron, must be reckoned at 14 cents (7d.) per lb., coming from the East, and 25–30 cents from the West. Groceries and clothing are inordinately high-priced. Sugar, worth 6 cents in the U. S., here fetches from 37½ to 45 cents per lb. Tea is seldom drunk, and as coffee of 10 cents per lb. in the States here costs 40–50 cents, burnt beans or toasted corn, a caricature of chicory, is the usual succedaneum. Counterblasters will be pleased to hear that tobacco fetches $1 per lb. and cigars from 5 to 6 cents each—a London price. Servants' wages vary from $30 to $40 per

mensem — nearly £100 per annum; consequently master has a strong inducement to marry the "Missus's" Abigail. Thus, the expense of living in U. T. is higher than in the Eastern States, where again it exceeds that of England. In Gt. S. L. City $10,000 (= £2000) per annum would be equal to about £500 in London. Fortunately for the poor, the excessive purity of the air, as in the Arabian Desert, enables them to dispense with, and not to miss, many articles, such as stimulants, which are elsewhere considered necessaries. The subjoined "merrick" of prices current at the General Tithing Office, in Gt. S. L. City, will best explain the state of things in 1860. A remarkable feature, it will be observed, is the price of wheat — $1·50 per bushel — more than double its current value in the Mississippian States.*

* General Tithing Office Prices Current, Great Salt Lake City.

EDWARD HUNTER,
Presiding Bishop.

THE SALT SEA.

CHAP. VII.

THIRD WEEK AT GREAT SALT LAKE CITY.—EXCURSIONS.

Governor Cumming had asked me to accompany Madame and himself to the shores of the Lake, with an ulterior view to bathing and picnicking.

One fine morning, at 10 A.M., duly provided with the *nécessaire* and a thermometer,—which duly snapped in two before immersion,—we set out down the west road, crossed the rickety two-laned bridge that spans the holy stream, and debouched upon a mirage-haunted and singularly ugly plain. Wherever below the line of debouchment of the lake's spring freshet, it is a mere desert; where raised, however, the land is cultivable, from the Wasatch Mountains to Spring Point, at the north of the Oquirrh, giving about eighty square miles of fertile land. The soil, as near the lake generally, is a thin layer of saline humus, overspreading gravel and pebbles. The vegetation is scattered artemisia, rose bushes, the *Euphorbia tuberosa* and other varieties of milk weed, the greasewood, salicornias, and several salsolaceæ. There are numerous salt deposits, all wet and miry in the rainy season; and the animals that meet the sight are the coyote, the

badger, and the hideous phrynosoma. A few blue crabes and sage-chickens, which are eatable till October, were seen; and during winter the wild fowl are found in large flocks, and the sweet water streams are stocked with diminutive fish. In contrast with the bald and shaven aspect of the plain, rose behind us the massive forms of the Wasatch Mountains, robed in forests, mist-crowned, and showing a single streak of white, which entitles them to the poetical boast of eternal snow — snow apparently never being responsible without eternity.

After fifteen miles of good road we came to the Point o' the Mountain — the head of the Oquirrh, also called West Mountain — where pyramidal buttes bound the southern extremity of the lake. Their horizontal lines are cleanly cut by the action of water, and fall in steps towards the plain. Any appearance of regularity in the works of Nature is always pleasing — firstly, because it contrasts with her infinite diversity; and secondly, because it displays her grandeur by suggesting comparison with the minor works of mankind. Ranches and corrals, grass and cattle, now began to appear, and the entrance of a large cave was pointed out to me in the base of the buttes. We drove on, and presently emerged upon the shores of this "dead and desert" — this "still and solitary" sea. It has not antiquity enough to have become the scene of fabulous history; the early Canadian *voyageurs*, however, did their best to ennoble it, and recounted to wondering strangers its fearful submarine noises, its dark and sudden storms, and the terrible maelstrom in its centre, which, funnel-like, descended into the bowels of the earth. I believe that age is its only want; with *quasi*-lifeless waters, a balance of evaporation and supply, — over a mystery to the ignorant, — and a horned frog, the Dead Sea of the New World has claims to preternaturalism at least equal to those of its sister feature, the volcano of depression, in the Old Hemisphere.

The first aspect of Mare Mortuum was by no means unprepossessing. As we stood upon the ledge, at whose foot lies the selvage of sand and salt that bounds the wave, we seemed to look upon the sea of the Cyclades. The sky was light and clear, the water of a deep lapis lazuli blue, flecked here and there with the smallest of white horses — tiny billows, urged by the warm soft wind; and the feeble tumble of the surf upon the miniature sands reminded me, with the first surveyor, "of

towns far, far away, where mightier billows pay their ceaseless tribute to the strand." In front of us, and bounding the extreme north-west, lay Antelope or Church Island, rising in a bold central ridge. This rock forms the western horizon to those looking from the city, and its delicate pink — the effect of a ruddy carpet, woven with myriads of small flowers — blushing in the light of the setting sun, is ever an interesting and beautiful object. Nearer, it has a brown garb, almost without a tinge of green, except in rare, scattered spots; its hummocks, broken by gushes and gullies, rocks and ravines, are counterparts to those on the mainland; and its form and tintage, softened by the damp overhanging air, and contrasting with the light blue sky and the dark ultramarine streak of sea at its base, add greatly to the picturesqueness of the view. The foreground is a strip of sand, yellow where it can be seen, encrusted with flakes of salt, like the icing of a plum-cake, and bearing marks of submergence in the season of the spring freshets. At the water's edge is a broken black line of a peculiar drift, which stands boldly out from the snowy whiteness around. Where my sketch was taken, I looked as through a doorway, whose staples were two detached masses of stone. On the right rose an irregular heap of conglomerate and sandstone, attached to the ledge behind, and leaning forwards, as if about to fall. On the left, the "Black Rock," which can be seen as a dot from the city, a heap of flint conglomerate, imbedded in slaty, burnt, and altered clay, formed the terminating bluff to a neck of light sand and dark stone.

Before proceeding to our picnic, I will briefly resume the history and geography of this Mare Mortuum. The Baron de la Hontan, the French Governor of Placentia, in Newfoundland, about 1690, heard from Indians of a Great Salt Water, which he caused to disembogue through a huge river into the South Sea or Pacific Ocean. Like the Lake Tanganyika, in Central Africa, it was arrayed in the garb of fable, 300 leagues of length, 30 of breadth, with "100 towns about it," like Mr. Cooley's highly imaginative "Zanganica," and navigated in large boats by the savage Mozemleks, who much remind one of the old semi-mythical "Mono-moezi." Doubtless many a trapper and obscure trader has since that time visited it; a name or two has been found upon the adjacent rocks, but those were brave who, to speak metaphorically, lived before the age of Agamemnon. In

1845, Colonel Frémont, then engaged with his second expedition, made a partial flying survey, which, in 1849-50, was scientifically completed by Captain Howard Stansbury.

In geologic ages the lake occupied the space between the Sierra Madre, on the east, and the ranges of Goose Creek and Humboldt River on the west. The length is roughly computed at 500 miles, from north to south, the breadth from 350 to 500, and the area at 175,000 square miles. The waters have declined into the lowest part of the basin, by the gradual upheaval of the land — in places showing thirteen successive steps or benches. A freshet of a few yards would submerge many miles of flat shore, and a rise of 650 feet would, in these days, convert all but the highest peaks of the surrounding eminences into islands and islets, the kanyons into straits, creeks, and sea-arms, and the bluffs into slightly elevated shores. Popular opinion asserts that the process of desiccation is going on at the rate of about half a mile in ten years. But the limits of beach and drift line, laid down by Captain Stansbury, are still well defined, and the shrinking of the volume may be ranked with its "sinking" — like the sink of the Humboldt and other rivers — an empirical explanation, by which the mountaineer removes the difficulty of believing that evaporation can drain off the supplies of so many rivers.

The lake, which is about the size of the African Chad, occupies the north-eastern corner of Utah territory, and lies to the north-west of the Gt. S. L. Valley, which is forty miles long, by about twelve in breadth. The major axis of the irregular parallelogram is sixty to seventy miles in length, from north to south, by thirty to thirty-five, from east to west. Its altitude has been laid down at 4200 feet above, whilst the Dead Sea of Palestine is 1300 feet below, sea level. The principal influents, beginning from the north, are the Bear River, the Weber River, and the Jordan. They supply the balance of evaporation, which from water is greater, and from high lands is usually less, than the rain. The western side is a perfect desert — a salt and arid waste, of clay and sand, with the consistence of mortar when wet, which cannot boast of a single stream; even the springs are sometimes separated by "jornadas" of seventy miles. When the rivers are in flood, the Lake, it is said, rises to a maximum of four feet, overflowing large tracts of level saline plain, winding between the broken walls of rock which

surround it on all sides. Near its shores the atmosphere is reeking, bluish, and hazy, from the effects of active evaporation, and forms a decided change from the purity and transparency of the air elsewhere. Surveyors have observed that it is a labour to use telescopes for geodetic purposes, and that astronomical observations are very imperfect. The quantity of vapour is less, and evaporation has less tension and density from the surface of salt than of fresh water; here, however, the operation is assisted by sunheat sufficient to produce an uniform state, and by a wind brisk enough to prevent the vapour accumulating over the surface.

The water of this remarkable feature, which so curiously reproduces the marvels of Judea, contains nearly one-quarter of solid matter, or about six times and a half more than the average solid constituents of sea water, which may be laid down roughly at three and a half per cent. of its weight, or about half an ounce to the pound.* The Dead Sea is its sole known superior. The specific gravity is 1·170, distilled water being 1·000; the North Atlantic, between latitude 25° N. and longitude 52° W. (G.), 1·020; and the Dead Sea, at 60° Fahrenheit, from 1·22742 to 1·130. The vulgar estimate of its saltness is exaggerated. I have heard at Salt Lake City of one bucket of

* "One hundred parts by weight were," says Dr. Gale, "evaporated to dryness in a water-bath below the boiling point, and then heated in about 500° of the thermometer, and retained at that heat till the mass ceased to lose any weight. It gave solid contents, 22·423 (?), and consisted of"—

Chloride of sodium (common salt)	20·196	Chloride of sodium	97·90
Sulphate of soda	1·644	„ „ calcium	0·61
Chloride of magnesium	0·252	„ „ magnesium	0·34
Chloride of calcium	a trace	Sulphate of soda	0·23
		„ „ lime	1·12
Total	22·292 (?)	Total	100·00

In the Abbé Domenech's work the analysis is taken from Col. Frémont; thus—

The waters of the Dead Sea give solid contents, 21·650, and consist of—

Chloride of sodium	10·680
„ „ calcium	9·220
„ „ magnesium	10·246
Sulphate of soda	·054
Total	24·550

The strongest natural brine in the United States, according to Professor Rock, is that of the Syracuse Saline, New York, which contains 17·35 per cent. of chloride of sodium.

saline matter being produced by the evaporation of three; and that meat can be salted, and corned beef converted into junk, after twelve or fourteen hours in the natural unevaporated brine. It is used without preparation by the citizens, who have not adopted the precautions recommended by Dr. Gale.* It is collected by boys, shovelled into carts, at the points of the beach where the winds dash up the waves,—forming a regular wind-tide,—and is sold in retail at half a cent per pound, or two shillings per hundred pounds. The original basin of geological ages was, doubtless, as the shells have proved, fresh water. The saline substances are brought down by rain, which washes the soil and percolates through the rocky ledges, and by the rivers, which are generally estimated to contain from ten to one hundred grains of salt per gallon†, and here probably more, owing to the abundance of soda. The evaporation is, of course, nearly pure, containing but very minute traces of salts.

It has been generally stated that the water is fatal to organic life. The fish brought down the rivers perish at once in the concentrated brine; but, according to the people, there is a univalve, like a periwinkle, found at certain seasons within the influence of its saline waves; and I observed, floating near the margin, delicate moss-like algæ. Governor Cumming mentioned

* "The salt water" (it is elsewhere called "one of the purest and most concentrated brines known in the world") "yields about 20 per cent. of pure common salt, and about 2 per cent. of foreign salts; most of the objectionable parts of which are the chloride of lime and the chloride of magnesia, both of which being very deliquescent, attract moisture from the damp atmosphere, which has the effect to moisten and partially dissolve the common salt, and then, when the mass is exposed to dry air or heat, or both, a hard crust is formed. I believe I have found a remedy for the caking, which is cheap and easily used. It consists in sprinkling over the salt obtained by the evaporation of the water, and heaped up in a bin or box containing a porous bottom of blankets or other like material, a cold solution of the salt as it is concentrated from the lake till crystals begin to be deposited. This concentrated brine, while it will dissolve none of the common salt, will dissolve all the chlorides of calcium and magnesium, and carry them down through the porous bottom, and thus leave the salt purer and better than any now found in our markets. For persons who are obliged to prepare temporarily the salt, as travellers passing through the country, the water of the lake, without concentration, may be used for washing out the deliquescent chlorides, sprinkling the heap of salt by a watering-pot, at intervals of two or three hours during a single day, and allowing it to drain and dry at night, and be spread to the sun an hour or two the following morning."

† "The Physical Geography of the Sea" (by Capt. Maury), chap. iv. § 502, quoted from "Totman's Chemistry."

his having seen a leaf, of a few inches in length, lined with a sub, which shelters a vermicular animal, of reddish colour, and about the length of the last joint of the little finger. Near the shore also, mucilaginous matter, white, pink, and rusty, like macerated moss, adheres to the rocky bed, and lies in coagulated spots upon the sand. We may fairly doubt the travellers' assertion that this Dead Sea contains no living thing: whereas, neither animalcule nor vestige of animal matter were, according to Lieutenant Lynch, detected by a powerful microscope in the waters of the Asphaltite Lake.

The Great Salt Lake is studded with an archipelago of islands, which would greatly add to its charms were their size commensurate with its diminutive limits. These, beginning from the north, are:—

1. Dolphin Island, so called from its shape, a knoll of rock and shoal, near the north-western end, surrounded by about three feet water.

2. Gunnison's Island, a large rock and small outlier, south-east of the former, and surrounded with water nine to twelve feet deep.

3. Hat Island, south-east of Gunnison's, the smallest of the isles, with a roof sunk about seven feet: it was probably part of the following, and is separated from it by a narrow channel nowhere more than six feet in depth.

4. Carrington Island, so named from the Mormon surveyor, a circular mass with a central peak: the water is from three to six feet deep on every side, except the western and south-western, which are shoals and shallows. It contains no springs, but is rich in plants and flowers, as the sego, also spelt sigo, scasco, and segoes, (*Calochortus luteus*, an onion-like bulb or tuber, about the size of a walnut, more nutritious than palatable, much eaten as a table vegetable by the early Mormons and the root-digging Indians, and even now by white men when half-starved,) a *cleome*, a *malvastrum*, a new species of *malacothrix*, and several others.

5. Stansbury Island, the second largest in the lake, an ovate mass, with a high central ridge dome-shaped above, and rising 3000 feet, twenty-seven miles in circumference and about twelve in length. During the dry season it is formed into a peninsula by a sandbank connecting it with the lake's western shore. Thus, antelopes, deer, and coyotes, pass over to browse upon the

plants and to attack the young of the ducks, geese, plover, gulls, and pelicans, that make their homes upon the cliffs: it is also used for grazing purposes. The principal plants are a *eomandra*, and sundry new species of *heuchera*, *peritylo*, and *stenactis*. Fossils and shells are found in scatters.

6. Antelope, also called Church Island, because the stock of the Saints is generally kept there. Lying to the east and north-east of the preceding, and in shape an irregular and protracted conoid, it is the largest of the islands, sixteen miles long by six of extreme width, with a western ridge and an eastern line of broken peaks, which attain a maximum of 3000 feet above the lake and 7200 above sea-level. It lies twenty miles to the north-west of the city, and the narrow passage between it and the opposite plain is fordable. This island is surrounded, on the north, by a tufa bed twelve feet deep; eastward, by six feet of water; south-east and south, by shoals; and westward, by a deposit of black mud: the deepest sounding in the lake, thirty-five feet, is found between it and Stansbury Island. Off the north-western coast is a rock called after its principal peculiarity Egg Island: in the eastern cliff there is said to be a cave, described to resemble the Blue Grotto at Capri, which has been partially explored. Formerly there was a small pinnace on the "Big Shallow;" it has either been wrecked or broken up for fuel.* Antelope Island contains arid ravines and a few green valleys, besides a spring of pure water, and being safe from Indians, it is much esteemed as a grazing place.

7. Frémont Island, so named by Captain Stansbury, from the first explorer, who called it after the rude dissipation of a dream of "tangled wilderness of trees and shrubbery, teeming with game of every description that the neighbouring region afforded," "Disappointment Island." The Mormons have preferred "Castle Island," suggested by its mural and turreted peak, that rises above the higher levels. It lies north and north-east from Antelope Island, parallel with the mouth of the Weber River, and south of Promontory Point, the bluff termination of a rocky tongue which separates Bear River Bay from the body

* In the "Revue des Deux Mondes" (April, 1861) we are told that, "Pendant l'été un petit bateau à vapeur fait un service régulier sur le Lac Salé." Fresh proof, if it be required, how difficult, or rather how impossible, it is for any amount of talent or ingenuity in a reviewer to supply the want of actual eye-seeing information. The "Lac Salé" is not yet seen.

of the lake. Its shape is a semilune, fifteen miles in circumference, abounding in plants, especially the Indian onion, but destitute of wood and water. Here on the summit Captain Fremont lost the "brass cover to the object-end of his spy-glass" —disdain not, gentle reader, these little reminiscences!—and Captain Stansbury failed to find the relic.

I was surprised by the want of freshness and atmospheric elasticity, in the neighbourhood of the lake; the lips were salted as by sea air, but there the similarity ended. We prepared for bathing by unhitching the mules upon the usual picnicking place, a patch of soft white sand between the raised shore of the lake and the water brink. The bank supplies a plentiful stream of water, potable though somewhat brackish, bitter, and sulphurous: it shows its effects, however, in a clump of plants, wild roses, and the euphorbia of many names, silk plant, *oseille à lait*, vapour *de savarts*, and milk plant. The familiar maggie prevented the solitude of the scene being too impressive. Here was also a vestige of humanity, a kind of "lean-to" of dry-stone wall with the bank for a back-bone: you might have ridden over it without knowing that it belonged to Mrs. Smith of Vermont, now departed, unless warned off by the sudden appearance of what your superior sagacity would have discovered to be a chimney.

The bathing-place is behind the Black Rock. The approach is fast over the fine soft white sand, like that of the sea shore, but shell-less, soppy where it receives the spring-water, and almost a quicksand near the lake. The foot crunches through caked and crusty salt flakes, here white, there dark green, there dun-coloured like *foie de vache*, and everywhere the savans of aromatic, and sinks deep into the everlastingly wet sand below. This leads to the neck of broken, riven stone pavement, whose head is the Black Rock. As the lake is neared, the basalt-like surface becomes red and rusty, the points are diamonded by sparkling spicules, and in the hollows and crevices where the waters have dried to salt it gathers in the form of icy lumps. A dreadful shock then awaits the olfactory nerves. The black mud of peculiar drift before alluded to, proves to be an Assafœtida of insects: banks a full foot high composed of the larvæ, *nymphæ*, and mortal coils of myriads of worms, mosquitoes, gnats, and gallinippers, cast up by the waves, and lining the little bay as they ferment and fester in the burning sun, or

pickle and preserve in the thick brine.* Escaping from this mass of fetor, I reached the further end of the promontory where the Black Rock stood decorously between the bathing-place and the picnic ground, and in a pleasant frame of curiosity, descended into the new Dead Sea.

I had heard strange accounts of its buoyancy. It was said to support a bather as if he were sitting in an arm-chair, and to float him like an unfresh egg. My experience differs in this point from that of others. There was no difficulty in swimming nor indeed in sinking. After sundry immersions of the head, in order to feel if it really stung and removed the skin, like a mustard plaster, — as described, — emboldened by the detection of so much hyperbole, I proceeded to duck under with open eyes, and smarted "for my pains." The sensation did not come on suddenly; at first there was a sneaking twinge, then a bold succession of twinges, and lastly a steady honest burning like what follows a pinch of snuff in the eyes. There was no fresh water at hand, so scrambling upon the rock I sat there for half an hour, presenting to Nature the ludicrous spectacle of a man weeping flowing tears. A second experiment upon its taste was equally satisfactory. I can easily believe with Captain Stansbury, that a man overboard has little chance against asphyxiation; *vox faucibus hæsit* was the least that could be said concerning its effects upon my masticators. Those who try such experiments may be warned that a jug filled at the fresh spring is necessary in more ways than one. The hair on emersion is powdered like the plastered locks of the knights of flamingo-plush and bell-hanging shoulder-knots, and there is a clammy stickiness, which is exceedingly unpleasant. Salt, moreover, may be scraped from the skin, — imaginative bathers have compared themselves to Lot's wife, — and the Ethiop, now promically termed "Nigger," comes out after a bath bleached, whitewashed, and with changed epidermis.

Notwithstanding the *fumet* from the kitchen of that *genius loci* whom I dnrna name, we dined with excellent appetite. Whilst the mules were being hitched to, I found an opportunity of another survey from below the Black Rock: this look-out station is sometimes ascended by those gifted with less than

* According to Mr. T. B. Peale (quoted by Captain Stansbury, App. C.), "More than ⅓ of the mass is composed of the larvæ and ovaria of the chironomus or some species of mosquito — probably undescribed."

the normal modicum of common sense. The lands immediately about the lake, are flat, rising almost imperceptibly to the base of abrupt hills which are broken in places by soft and sandy barriers, irreclaimable for agriculture, but here and there fit for grazing; where springs exist, they burst out at too low a level for irrigation. The meridional range of the Oquirrh, at whose northern point we were standing, divides the Great Salt Lake Valley from its western neighbour Tooele or Tuilla, which in sound curiously resembles the Arabic Tawfiek,—the Long Valley. It runs like most of these formations from north to south: it is divided, by a transverse ridge declining westward and not unaptly called Traverse Mountain, from Rush Valley, which again is similarly separated from Cedar Valley. From the point where we stood, the only way to Tooele settlement is round the north point of West Mountain, a bold headland, rugged with rocks and trees. Westward of Tooele Valley, and separated by a sister range to the Oquirrh, lies Spring Valley, so called because it boasts a sweet fountain, and south of this "Skull Valley,"—an ominous name, but the evil omen was to the bison.

Bidding a long farewell to that inland briny sea, which apparently has no business there, we turned our faces eastwards as the sun was declining. The view had memorable beauties. From the blue and purple clouds, gorgeously edged with celestial fire, shot up a fan of pencilled and coloured light, extending half way to the zenith, while in the south and south-east, lightnings played among the darker mist-masses, which backed the golden and emerald benchlands of the further valley. The splendid sunset gave a reflex of its loveliness to the alkaline and artemisia barrens before us. Opposite, the Wasatch, vast and voluminous, the storehouse of storms, and of the hundred streams that cool the thirsty earth, rose in stern and gloomy grandeur, which even the last smile of day failed to soften, over the subject plain. Northwards, to a considerable distance, the lake-lands lay uninterrupted save by an occasional bench and a distant swell, resembling the upper convexity of a thunder cloud. As we advanced, the city became dimly discernible beyond Jordan, built on ground gently rising away from the lake, and strongly nestling under its protecting mountains. A little to its north-east, a thin white vapour, like the spray of a spouting whale, showed the direction of the Hot Springs: as time wore on it rolled away, condensed by the cooling air, like

the smoke of a locomotive before the evening breeze. Then the prominent features of the city came into view, the buildings separated themselves from their neighbours by patches and shades of several green, the streets opened out their regular rows and formal lines; once more we rolled over Jordan's rickety bridge, and found ourselves again in the Holy City of the Far West.

The ultimate destination of the judiciary, whom I had accompanied, was Carson Valley, in the Sierra Nevada, a distance of some hundreds of miles through a wild country where "lifting of hair," is by no means uncommon. The Judge, though not a sucking diplomat, had greenly relied upon *bona verba* at Washington for transportation, escort, and other necessaries which would be easily procurable at Camp Floyd. It was soon found advisable to apply to the military authorities at the cantonment. The coach, as I have said, had ceased to run beyond Gt. S. L. City. In May 1858, a contract had been made with Major George Chorpenning to transport mails and passengers — the fare being $120 — from Utah to California, he receiving $130,000. This lasted till September 1859, when the drivers, complaining that the road agents charged with paying them for eighteen months had expended the "rocks" in the hells of San Francisco, notably evinced their race's power of self-government by seizing and selling off by auction wagons and similar movable property. On the 20th March 1860 it came into the hands of the proprietors of the Eastern line, Messrs. Russell and Co., who ran a mail wagon first to California, than to Camp Floyd, and lastly, on the 1st of June, finding their expenditure excessive, packed the mails on mules.* Single travellers were sometimes thus pushed through, starting on the Wednesdays, once a fortnight; for a party like ours such a proceeding would have been impossible. Consequently the Judge and I set out for Camp Floyd to see what could be done by "Uncle Sam," and his "eagles."

Mr. Gilbert — of the firm of Gilbert, Gerrish, and Co., general (Gentile) merchants — offered us seats in his trotting-wagon, drawn by a fine tall pair of iron-grey mules, that cost $500 the twain, and were christened Julia and Sally, after, I believe, the fair daughters of the officer who had lately commanded the district.

* They carry 50 to 60 lbs.; and the schedule time to Placerville is sixteen days.

With a fine clear day and a breeze which veiled us with dust-hangings,—the highway must be a sea of mud in wet weather—we set out along the county road, leading from the south-eastern angle of the Holy City. Our route lay over the strip of alluvium that separates the Wasatch Mountains from the waters of Jordan; it is cut by a multitude of streamlets rising from the kanyons, the principal are Mill Creek, Big Cottonwood, Little Cottonwood, Dry Cottonwood and Willow Creek. The names are translated from the Indians, and we saw from the road traces of the aborigines who were sweeping crickets and grass seed into their large conical baskets—amongst these ragged gleaners we looked in vain for a Ruth. Near Big Cottonwood, where there is a settlement distant seven miles from the city, an English woman came across the fields and complained that she had been frightened by four Indian braves who had been riding by to bring in a stolen horse. The waters of the kanyons are exceedingly cool, sweet, and clear, and suggested frequent reference to a superior kind of tap which had been stored away within the trap. In proportion as we left the city, the sterility of the River Valley increased; cultivation was unseen except upon the margin of the streams, and the look of the land was "real mean." In front of us lay the denticulated bench bounding the southern end of the valley.

After twenty miles from the city we reached a ranch on rising ground, near the water-gate of the Jordan. It was built at an expense of $17,000, and was called the Utah Brewery. Despite, however, the plenty of hop and barley, the speculation proved a failure, and the house had become a kind of mail station. Between it and the river were a number of little rush-girt "eyes," round pools, some hot, others cold,—and said to be unfathomable, that is to say, from twenty to thirty fathoms deep. They related that a dragoon, slipping with his charger into one of them, found a watery grave, where a drier death might have been expected. At the ranch we rested for an hour, but called in vain for food. From the Utah Brewery, which is about half way, drivers reckon twenty-two miles to Camp Floyd, making a total of forty-two to forty-three miles between the head quarters of the saint and the sinner, and we therefore looked forward to a "banian day."

About noon we hitched to and proceeded to ascend Traverse Mountain, a ridge-like spur of the Wasatch, running east and

west. It separates the Valley of the Northern or Great Salt Lake from the bason of the Utah or Sweetwater Lake to the southwards, and is broken through by the waters of Jordan. The young river — called Piya Ogwap, or the Big Water, by the Shoshonee — here rushes in a foaming shallow stream, that can barely float a dug-out, over a rocky, pebbly bed, in the sole of a deep but short kanyon, which winds it way through the cross range. The descent is about 100 feet in two miles, after which the course serpentines, the banks fall, and the current becomes gentle.

As we toiled up the Dug-way, the graded incline that runs along the shoulder of the mountain, we saw a fine back view of the Happy Valley through an atmosphere clear as that of the English littoral before rain. Advancing higher, we met, face to face an ambulance full of uniform, *en route* to the Holy City, drawn by four neat mules, and accompanied by strikers, — military servants. We drew up, the Judge was readily recognised, and I was introduced to Captains Heth, Clarke, and Gibson, and to Lieutenant Robinson. They began with an act of charity, supplying ham sandwiches to half-starved men, and I afterwards spent pleasant evenings with them at Gt. S. L. City, and became Captain Heth's guest at Camp Floyd. Their kindness and hospitality lasted to the end of my stay. After the usual "liquoring up," they pointed to Ash Hollow, the depths below, where the Mormons had intended to make a new Thermopylæ. Promising to meet them again, we then shook hands and resumed our road.

The steep descent on the counterslope of Traverse Mountain disclosed to us the first sight of Utah Lake, which is to its sister what Carmel is to Lebanon. It was a soft and sunny, a placid and beautiful, landscape, highly refreshing after the arid lands on the other side. A panorama of lake, plain, and river lay before us. On the east, south, and west were rugged walls and peaks of mountain and hill; and northwards a broad grassy slope rose to the divide between the valleys of the Fresh and of the Salt Lake. From afar the binding of plain round the basin appeared so narrow that the mountains seemed to dip their feet into the quiet reservoir; and beyond the southern point the lone peak of lofty Nebo stood, to adopt the Koranic comparison, like one of the pins which fasten down the plains

of earth. A nearer approach discovers a broad belt of meadow, rich alluvial soil, in parts marshy, and in others arable, wheat and root crop flourishing in the bottom and bunch grass upon the acclivities. The breadth is greater to the west and south of the lake than in other parts. It is cut by many a poplar-fringed stream that issues from the tremendous gorges around,—the American Fork, the Timpanogos* or Provo River, and the Spanish Fork. On the near side, beyond the winding Jordan, lay little Lehi, whose houses were half hid by black trees; and eastward of the Utah water, dimly visible, was Provo City on a plain watered by four creeks. Such were the environs of the Sea of Tiberias.

The Utah Lake, another Judean analogue, derives its supplies from the western versant of the Wasatch. It is in shape an irregular triangle, the southern arm forming a very acute angle. The extreme length is thirty miles, and the greatest breadth is fifteen. It owes its sweetness, which, however, is by no means remarkable, to its northern drainage, the Piyn Ogwap, *alias* Utah Outlet, *alias* Jordan River. Near the shores the water soon deepens to fifteen feet; the bottom is said to be smooth, uniform, and very profound in places; but probably it has never been sounded. The bed where it shows is pebbly, a white chalky incrustation covers the shallower bottom; shells, especially the freshwater clam, are numerous upon the watery margin; the flaggy "Deseret weed" in the tulares is ten feet high†, and thicket is dense in places where rock does not occupy the soil. The western side is arid for want of influents; there is a "lone tree," a solitary cottonwood, conspicuous amidst the grazing ground of bunch grass, sage and grease wood, and the only inhabitants, excepting a single ranch—Evans's—are, apparently, the phrynosoma and the lizard, the raven and the jackass-rabbit. The Utah Lake freezes in December, January, and February. At these months the Jordan rolls down floes of

* From *Timpe*, a rock, and *ogwahe*, contracted to *ogo*, a river, in the Yuta dialect. In English maps published as late as seven years ago, "Timpanogos" is applied to the Great Salt Lake! *Provo* or *Provoste* is the name of a Canadian trapper and trader, who in past times defeated with eighty men a thousand Indians, and was killed at the moment of victory. The Mormons call the City *Provo*, and Gentiles prefer as a "nile" *Timpanogos*.

† Tulare is a marsh of bulrush (*Scirpus lacustris*), which is found extending over immense tracts of river valley in Western America. "Tooly" water, as it is pronounced, is that which is flavoured or tainted by it.

ice, but it is seldom to be traversed on foot. In the flood season it rises two, and the wind tide extends to about three, feet. It is still full of fish, which in former times were carried off in barrels. The white trout weigh thirty pounds. There are many kinds of mountain trout averaging three pounds, while salmon-trout, suckers, and mud fish are uncommonly large and plentiful; water-snakes and "horsehair fish" are also found.

After descending the steep incline we forded the Jordan, at that point 100 feet broad, and deep to the wagon hubs. The current was not too swift to prevent the growth of weeds. The water was of sulphury colour, the effect of chalk, and the taste was brackish, but not unpleasant, — cattle are said to like it. The fording was followed by a long ascent, the divide between Utah Valley and its western neighbour Cedar Valley. About half way between the Brewery and the Camp is a station, held by a Shropshire Mormon, whose only name, as far as I could discover, was Joe Dug-out, so called, like the Watertons de Waterton, from the style of his habitation. He had married a young woman, who deterred him from giving her a sister — every Oriental language has a word to express what in English, which lacks the thing, is rudely translated "a rival wife" — by threatening to have his ears cut off by the "horfficers." Joe, however, seemed quite resigned to the pains and penalties of monogamy, and, what was more to our purpose, had a good brew of porter and lager-bier.

Having passed on the way a road that branches off to the old camp, which was deserted for want of water, we sighted from afar the new cantonment. It lies in a circular basin, surrounded by irregular hills of various height, still wooded with black cedar, where not easily felled, and clustering upon the banks of Cedar Creek, a rivulet which presently sinks in a black puddly mud. For a more thoroughly detestable spot one must repair to Gharra, or some similar purgatorial place in Lower Sindh. The winter is long and rigorous, the summer hot and uncomfortable, the alkaline water curdles soap, and the dust storms remind one of the Punjaub. I lost no time in suggesting to my *compagnon de voyage*, Lieutenant Dana, as a return for his kindness in supplying me with a "Bayonet Exercise," and other papers, our old campaigning habit of hanging wet canvas before every adit, and received the well-

merited thanks of Madame. The hardest part of these hardships is that they are wholly purposeless. Every adobe brick in the places has been estimated to have cost a cent, as at Aden each cut stone was counted a rupee; and the purchase of lumber has enriched the enemy. In 1858 the Peace Commissioners sent by the Supreme Government conceded to the Mormons a point which saved the Saints. The army was not to be "located" within forty miles of Gt. S. L. City; thus the pretty sites about Utah Lake were banned to them, and the Mormons, it is said, "jockeyed" them out of the rich and fertile Cache Valley, eighty miles north of the Head Quarters.

A broken wall surrounds this horrid hole. Julia and Sally carried us in with unflagging vigour. We passed through Fairfield, less euphemously termed Frogtown, the haunt of the cantonment on the other side of the creek. During the days when Camp Floyd contained its full complement of camp followers — 5000 souls — now reduced to 100 or 200 man, it must have been a delectable spot, teeming with gamblers and blacklegs, grogshop-keepers and prostitutes: the revolver and the bowie-knife had nightly work to do there, and the moral Saints were fond of likening Frogtown to certain Cities of the Plains. Of late years it has become more respectable, and now it contains some good stores.

We removed from the wagon the mail-bags containing letters for the camp, and made ourselves at home with the hospitable Gilbert. On the next day, after "morning glory" and breakfast, we called upon the officer commanding the department, Col. P. St. G. Cooke of the 2nd Dragoons, and upon the commandant of the cantonment, Lieut.-Col. C. F. Smith. They introduced us to the greater part of the officers, and though living in camp fashion, did not fail to take in the strangers after the ancient, not the modern, acceptation of the term. It is a sensible pleasure, which every military man has remarked, to exchange the common run of civilian for soldier society in the U. S. The reveillé in the morning speaks of discipline; the guard mounting has a wholesome military sound; there is a habit of 'tention and of saluting which suggests some subordination; the orderlies say "sir," not sirree nor sirree-bob. The stiffness and ungeniality of professionals, who are all running a race for wealth or fame, give way in a service

of seniority, and where men become brothers, to the frankness which belongs to the trade of arms. The Kshatriya, or fighting caste, in the States is distinctly marked. The officers, both of the navy and the army, are, for the most part, Southerners, and are separated by their position from general society. The civilian, as was the case in England twenty years ago, dislikes the uniform. His principal boasts are, that he pays his fighting servants well, and that he — a militia man — is far superior to the regular. A company of cadets, called the Chicago Zouaves, during the summer of 1860, made a sensation throughout the land. The newspaper writers spoke of them in terms far higher than have been lavished upon the flower of the French army: even the military professionals were obliged to join in the cry. As a republican, the citizen looks upon a soldier as a drone. "I hate those cormorants," said to me an American diplomat, who, *par parenthèse*, had made a fortune by the law, as he entered a Viennese café. *L'arte della guerra presto s'impara* is his motto, and he evinces his love of the civilian element by giving away a considerable percentage of commissions in the army to those whose political influence enables them to dispense with the preparation of West Point.

I am here tempted to a few words concerning the cheap defence and the chief pride of the United States, viz. her irregular army. The subjoined extract shows the forces of the militia to be three millions, whilst the regular army does not number 19,000. The institution is, therefore, a kind of public, a writing, speaking, voting body, which makes itself heard and felt, whilst the existence of the regulars is almost ignored. To hint aught against the militia in the United States is sure seriously to "rile up" your civil audience, and Elijah Pogram will perhaps let you know that you cannot know what you are talking about. The outspoken Britisher, despite his title and his rank as a general officer, had a "squeak" for his commission, when in the beginning of the volunteer mania he spoke of the new levies as a useless body of men: it is on the same principle in the U. S. Thus also the liberal candidate declares to his electors his "firm belief, that with all our enormous expenditure the country had not felt itself secure, and straightway a noble arm of defence, springing unbought from the patriotism of the people, had crept into existence, forming a better shield for

our national liberties than all that we had been able to buy with our mounds of gold."* (Cheers.) The civilian in the United States boasts of his military institutions, his West

* MILITIA FORCE OF THE UNITED STATES.

General Abstract of the Militia Force of the United States, according to the latest Returns received at the Office of Adjutant-General.

States and Territories.	Year last Return	Number of Regiments	General Staff Officers.	Field Officers, &c.	Number of Companies	Total commissioned Officers.	Non-commissioned Officers, Musicians, Artificers, and Privates.	Aggregate.
Maine	1850	13	23	36	230	340	73,248	73,588
New Hampshire	1854	11	302	119	596	1,327	32,211	33,538
Massachusetts	1850	10	47	111	353	521	157,347	157,868
Vermont	1848	12	51	224	801	1,096	22,827	23,918
Rhode Island	1850	3	32	106	36	156	16,555	16,711
Connecticut	1853	3	9	82	199	293	51,312	51,605
New York	1850	93	299	1,531	5,495	7,325	320,247	327,235
New Jersey	1853	..	..	..	..	..	..	81,284
Pennsylvania	1850	..	..	..	..	..	..	350,000
Delaware	1837	4	9	71	264	447	8,781	9,228
Maryland	1838	23	68	544	1,765	2,397	44,467	46,864
Virginia	1853	..	..	..	..	..	..	150,000
North Carolina	1846	39	123	657	3,440	4,267	75,181	79,448
South Carolina	1850	20	135	635	1,909	2,699	33,373	36,072
Georgia	1850	39	91	694	4,206	5,050	73,649	78,699
Florida	1843	2	14	96	306	420	11,602	12,122
Alabama	1851	22	143	775	1,888	2,832	73,230	76,062
Louisiana	1850	16	129	542	2,105	2,792	88,532	91,324
Mississippi	1850	15	70	536	246	852	85,289	86,084
Tennessee	1840	35	79	592	2,644	3,007	67,646	73,242
Kentucky	1852	43	145	1,165	3,517	4,970	84,109	88,979
Ohio	1852	..	..	..	..	..	..	279,892
Michigan	1854	20	123	147	2,358	2,628	94,236	97,064
Indiana	1852	21	110	566	2,154	2,861	81,052	83,913
Illinois	1854	..	..	..	..	..	..	257,420
Wisconsin	1853	15	9	215	904	1,142	50,179	51,321
Iowa	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Missouri	1843	..	17	4	67	88	117,959	118,047
Arkansas	1850	10	39	179	911	1,129	46,611	47,740
Texas	1847	15	45	243	940	1,243	18,516	19,766
California	1847	13	198	11	178	330	207,400	207,730
Minnesota	1849	..	..	..	..	..	..	33,972
Oregon.	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Washington Territory.	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Nebraska Territory	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Kansas Territory	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Territory of Utah	1853	2	..	43	235	285	3,536	3,821
Territory of New Mexico.	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
District of Columbia	1853	3	10	28	185	226	7,975	8,201
Grand aggregate	..	515	2,374	9,884	38,687	51,490	3,076,242	3,076,997

Point and his regular army, and never fails to inform a stranger that it is better paid than any force in Europe. On the other hand, he prides himself upon, as he is probably identified with, the militia.

That writing, speaking, and voting, have borne fruit in favour of the militia, may be read in the history of the Americo-Mexican war. The fame of the irregulars penetrated to Calcutta and China: it was stopped only by the orient sea. But who ever heard of the regulars? The "newspaper heroes" were almost all militiamen, rangers, and other guerillas:—"keeping an editor in pay" is now a standing sarcasm. The sages of the revolution initiated a yeomanry second to none in the world: they had, however, amongst them crowds of frontiersmen accustomed to deal with the bear and the Indian, not with the antelope and the deer. The Texan rangers, in later times were a first-rate body of men for irregular purposes, not to be confounded with the militia, yet always put forward as a proof how superior to the "sweepings of cities," as the regular army was once called in the senate, are the irregulars who "never fire a random shot, never draw trigger till their aim is sure," and are "here to-night and to-morrow are fifty miles off." But the true modern militia is pronounced by the best authorities, indeed by all who hold it no economy to be ill served, for any but purely defensive purposes, a humbug which costs in campaigns more blood and gold—neglect of business is perhaps the chief item of the expenditure—than a standing army would. As a "Garde Nationale" it is quite efficient. When called out for distant service, as in the Mexican War, every pelvis fault becomes apparent. Personally the men suffer severely from unaccustomed hardship and exposure; in dangerous climates they die like sheep, half are in hospital, and the other half must nurse them: Nature soon becomes stronger than martial law; under the fatigue of the march they will throw away their rations and military necessaries rather than take the trouble to carry them: improvident and wasteful, their convoys are timid and unmanageable. Mentally they are in many cases men ignoring the common restraints of society, profoundly impressed with insubordination, which displays equality, which has to learn all the wholesome duty of obedience, and which begins with as much respect for discipline as for the campaigns of Frederic the Great. If inclined to retire, they can stay at home and obtain double

or treble the wages: not a few are driven to service by that enthusiasm which, as Sir Charles Napier well remarked, readily makes men run away. Their various defects make organisation painfully slow. In camp they amuse themselves with drawing rations, target practice, asking silly questions, electing officers, holding meetings, issuing orders, disobeying orders, "'cussing and discussing:" the sentinals will sit down to a quiet euchre after planting their bayonets in the ground, and to all attempts at dislodging them, the reply will be, "You go to ——, Cap! I'm as good a man as you." In the field, like all raw levies, they are apt to be alarmed by anything unaccustomed, as the sound of musketry from the rear, or a threatened flank attack: they cannot reserve their fire, they aim wildly to the peril of friend and foe, and they have been accused of unmilitary cruelties, such as scalping and flaying men, shooting and killing squaws and children. And they never fail, after the fashion of such men, to claim that they have done all the fighting.*

Such is, I believe, the United States Militia at the beginning of a campaign. After a reasonable time, say a year, which kills off the weak and sickly, and rubs out the brawler and the mutineer; when men have learned to distinguish the difference between the often Dutch courage of a bowie-knife squabble and the moral fortitude that stands firm in presence of famine or a night attack, then they become regulars. The American — by which I understand a man whose father is born in the United States — is a first-rate soldier, distinguished by his superior intelligence from his compeers in other lands; but he rarely takes to soldiering. There are not more than five of these men per company, the rest being all Germans and Irishmen. The percentage in the navy is greater, yet it is still inconsiderable. The Mexican war, as History writes it, is the triumph of the militia whom old "Rough and Ready" led to conquest, as to a "manifest destiny."† On the other hand, the old and distinguished officer who succeeded General Taylor, has occasionally, it is said, given utterance to opinions concerning the irregulars which contrast strongly with those generally attributed to him.

* These remarks were penned in 1860—I see no reason to alter them in 1861.

† And it will be remembered, the Mexicans were not Americans or Russians.

At Camp Floyd, I found feeling running high against the Mormons. "They hate us, and we hate them!" said an intelligent officer: consequently, every statement here, as in the city, must be received with many grains of salt. At Camp Floyd one hears the worst version of every fact, which as usual hereabouts has its many distinct facets. These anti-Mormons declare that ten murders per annum during the last twelve years, have been committed without punishment in New Zion, whereas New York averages 18·33. They attribute the phenomenon to the impossibility of obtaining testimony, and the undue white-washing action of juries, which the Mormons declare to be "punctual and hardworking in sustaining the dignity of the law," and praise for their "unparalleled habits of industry and sobriety, order, and respect to just rights." Whatever objection I made, was always answered by the deception of appearances, and the assertion that whenever a stranger enters Gt. S. L. City, one or two plausible Mormons are told off to amuse and hoodwink him. Similarly the Mormons charge the Christians with violent injustice. On a late occasion, the Mayor of Springville, Mr. H. F. Macdonald, and the Bishop, were seized simply because they were church dignitaries, on the occasion of a murder, and the former, after durance vile of months at Camp Floyd, made his escape and walks about a free man, swearing that he will not again be taken alive. In 1853, Capt. J. W. Gunnison and seven of his party were murdered near Nicollet on Sevier River, twenty-five miles south of Nephi City. The anti-Mormons declare that the deed was done under high counsel, by "White Indians," to prevent the exploration of a route to California, and the disclosures which were likely to be made. The Mormons point to their kind treatment of the previous expedition upon which the lamented officer was engaged, to the friendliness of his book, to the circumstance that an Indian war was then raging, and that during the attack an equal number of Yuta Indians were killed. M. Remy distinctly refers the murder to Pahvant Indians, some of whom had been recently shot by emigrants to California.* The horrible "Mountain Meadow Massacre"† was, according to

* See Translation, vol. i. p. 462.

† The following is the account of that affair, officially given, of course, by anti-Mormons:—On the 4th or 5th of September 1857, a large emigrant train from

the anti-Mormons, committed by the Saints to revenge the death of an esteemed apostle — Parley P. Pratt — who in the spring of 1857, when travelling through Arkansas, was knived by one Hector M'Lean, whose wife he had converted and taken unto himself. The Mormons deny that the massacre was committed by their number, and ask the Gentiles why, if such be the case, the murderers are not brought to justice? They look upon Mr. P. P. Pratt's proceeding — even in El Islam, the women of the Infidels are like their property *halal* or lawful to those who win them — as perfectly justifiable.* In February,

Arkansas, proceeding to California with horses, mules, and ox-wagons, conveying stores of clothing and valuables, was suddenly attacked near a spring at the west end of Mountain Meadow Valley. The Indians, directed by white men, cut off from water the travellers, who had fortified themselves behind the vehicles, which they filled with earth, and killed and wounded several. When the attacked party, distressed by thirst and a galling fire, showed symptoms of surrender, several Mormons, amongst whom the leaders, John D. Lee, and Elder Isaac C. Haight, are particularly mentioned, approached them with a white flag, and by soft words persuaded them if they would give up their weapons that they should be safely forwarded to Panther Creek and Cedar City. The emigrants unwisely disarmed themselves, and flocked towards the spring. The work of murder and robbery began near a patch of scrub-oak brush, about one mile and a half from water. Between 115 and 120 adults were slain. Three emerged from the valley; of these, two were soon overtaken and killed, and the third was slaughtered at Muddy Creek, distant about fifty miles. One of the Mormons — the name has been variously given — is accused of a truly detestable deed; a girl, sixteen years old, knelt to him, imploring mercy: he led her away into the thicket — and then cut her throat. Seventeen children, aged from two months to seven years, were taken from the Indians by the whites, and were distributed among the several Mormon families in Cedar City, Fort Harmony, Santa Clara, &c. Of these, sixteen were recovered, and the seventeenth was found in the April of 1859. Mr. Jacob Forney, the late Superintendent of Indian Affairs, conducted the investigation, on the part of the Federal Government; he reported that white men joined in the murder and the robbery. The Mormons of course deny, as too, complicity with the Indians, and remark that many trains — for instance, to quote no others, the emigrants at Sublette's Cut Off, Oregon in August 1858, — have similarly suffered, and that they cannot be responsible for the misfortunes which men who insult and ill-treat the natives bring upon themselves.

* The following is an extract from the "Millennial Star," July 24th, 1857. The article is headed, "More of the Assassination:"—"We publish the following extract from a letter written by two gentlemen to the editor of a New York paper. The letter was dated, Flint-Cherokee Nation, Arkansas, May 17th, 1857, and says that after Elder Pratt was arrested in the Indian country, he was 'placed under a strong guard, and by a military escort conveyed in chains to the Supreme Court, Van Buren, Arkansas. The case being promptly investigated, and there being no evidence upon which a bill of indictment could be found, he was liberated on the 12th instant. Brother Pratt being without arms, and without friends to protect

1859, occurred sundry disturbances between the soldiers and citizens at Rush Valley, thirty-five miles west of Gt. S. L. City, in which Mr. Howard Spencer, nephew to Mr. Dan. Spencer, a squatter, whilst being removed from a government reservation by First Sergeant Ralph Pike of the 10th Infantry, raised a pitchfork and received in return a broken head. Shortly afterwards the sergeant having been summoned to Gt. S. L. City, was met in Main Street and shot down before all

him, and knowing that McLean was thirsting for his blood, and that he had the aid of a mass of the corrupt, money-bought citizens of Van Buren, endeavoured to make his escape on horseback, unmolested; but every road and pass-way being under strict watch, he did not succeed in getting far till his path was discovered. McLean and half a dozen other armed fiends pursued him; and Brother Pratt being totally unarmed, they succeeded in killing him without being hurt. Two of the party in advance intercepted his road, and brought him to a halt, while McLean and the others came up in the rear. McLean discharged a six-shooter at him, but the balls took no effect—some passed through his clothes, others lodged in his saddle. The parties now being in immediate contact, McLean stabbed him (both being on horseback) with a heavy bowie-knife twice under the left arm. Brother Pratt dropped from his horse, and McLean dismounted, and probed the fatal wounds still deeper; he then got a Deringer from one of his aids, and, as Brother Pratt lay dying upon his back, shot him in the upper part of the breast, dropping the pistol by the side of the victim. The assassin then mounted his horse and fled. This occurred within a few steps of the residence of a farmer by the name of Wire. Two gentlemen being at the house at the time, saw the whole affair, and have made oath to what they witnessed before a coroner's jury. Brother Pratt survived the work of this assassin two hours and a half, and was enabled to tell those who came to his assistance who he was, that he had been murdered by a fiend for doing his duty, and gave full instructions as to what course should be pursued in interring his body, and the disposition of the means and property connected with his person. His instructions were fully attended to by Elder Higginson and Mrs. McLean, who reached the place of his assassination the same evening. Those who saw his last moments state that Brother Pratt died without a murmur or a groan, and apparently without a pain, perfectly resigned to the will of Heaven. Brother Pratt told Elder Higginson, the morning after his arrest, that his enemies would kill him, and requested Elder Higginson to go through with this spring's emigration to Utah, and carry the news of his death to the Church and his family. This Elder Higginson will do, the Lord helping. After perpetrating this heaven-daring deed, McLean returned to Van Buren, and made it known. After remaining in town several hours, and walking the streets with impunity, he was escorted by a number of citizens of Van Buren to the head, and took his leave of the place. Verily we had long thought that the blood-thirsty mobocrats of Missouri and Illinois were without a parallel in the world, but we now yield the palm to the church-going citizens of Van Buren, for they have proven to the world that they are a den of murderers and assassins.

'GEORGE HIGGINSON.
'GEORGE CROUCH.'"

present. The anti-Mormons of course declare the deed to have been done by Mr. Spencer, and hold it, under the circumstances — execution of duty and summons of justice — an unpardonable outrage; and the officers assert, that they could hardly prevent their man arming and personally revenging the foul murder of a comrade, who was loved as an excellent soldier and an honest man.* The Mormons assert that the "shooting" was done by an unknown hand; that the sergeant had used unnecessary violence against a youth, who single-handed and surrounded by soldiers had raised a pitchfork to defend his head, and that the provocation thus received, converted the case from murder to one of justifiable homicide. In the month of June before my arrival, a Lieutenant Saunders and Assistant Surgeon Covey had tied to a cart's tail and severely flogged Mr. Hennefer, a Mormon. The opposition party assert, that they recognised in him the man who two years before had acted as a spy upon them when sitting in Messrs. Livingston's store, and when ordered to "make tracks," had returned with half a dozen others and had shot Dr. Covey in the breast. Mormons represent Mr. Hennefer to be a peaceful citizen and quiet unoffending man, thus brutally outraged by tyrannical servants of government, and moreover, prove for him an *alibi* from the original cause of quarrel. I have given but a few instances; all are equally contradictory and *tantus componere lites quis audet?*

Strongly disclaiming the idea that the officers who discussed with me the subject at Camp Floyd had any tendency to exaggeration or to set down aught in malice, and quite conscious, as they never failed to remark, that a stranger is allowed to see only the *beau côté* of the New Faith, I cannot but think that their views are greatly warped by causes external to it. This is to be expected. Who, after the massacre of Cawnpore, would have admitted into his mind a shadow of excuse for Nana Sahib? Amongst so many, however blinded and fanatic, and however fond of polygamy — this is ever the first reproach — there must

* On this occasion Cedar Fort, a neighbouring settlement, with cultivation, and a few huts, near Camp Floyd, was attacked at night by camp-followers (soldiers); a single calf was killed (the whole place was burned to the ground), and the damages speedily rose from a dozen to $10,000, claimed from Congress (which did not half repay the injury done).

be some good men. Yet from the "chief impostor" to the last "acolyte" all are represented to be a gang of miscreants. The Mormons are far more tolerant; they have praise for those Gentiles, even Federal officers, who have abstained from injuring them. They speak well of Lieut.-Col. E. J. Steptoe, 9th Regiment of Infantry, and the officers of his force*; of General Wilson, afterwards the Navy Agent at San Francisco, and of the present commandant Col. Cooke. They have nothing to say against Judge Reed, or Mr. John J. Kinney the Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court, and when Judge Leonidas Shaver died in 1855, they put the papers in mourning and buried the Gentile in their cemetery. They do not abuse even their merchant rivals. Mr. J. B. Kimball, to mention no other, is generally praised and trusted. But when they find it necessary or advisable to take away a man's character, they can do it, "and no mistake." At the same time their tolerance and discipline are, to say the least, remarkable. Judge Brocchus†, to quote but one, would run risk of being torn to pieces in almost any fanatical meeting in Europe.

At Camp Floyd I was introduced to Col. G. H. Crosman, Dept.-Quartermaster-General, and Major Montgomery of the same department; to Dr. Porter, who was uncommonly and unnecessarily shy upon the subject of a "sick certificate," and to Lieut. N. A. M. Dudley, when we passed many a merry time over "simpkin." It is hardly necessary to say that the judge, having no authority to demand, did not obtain, either escort or carriage. Col. Cooke frankly told him that he had neither men nor conveyance at liberty, and even if they were that he could not exceed orders. The Secretary of War is ready to "be down" upon such offences, and in the United States Army, probably more officers throw up the service from distress for leave than in the English army. It was clear that we must travel without the dignities, so we inspected an ambulance and a four-mule team, for which the Hungarian refugee, its owner, asked $1000—but little beyond its worth. After an exceedingly satisfactory day in a private

* Mr. Hyde (chap. vi.) gives the official document in which these officers petitioned President Pierce to re-appoint Mr. Brigham Young as Governor and Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Utah Territory, and it speaks volumes in praise of the much-abused Saints.

† Chap. vi.

sense, I passed the evening at Captain Gove's and watched with astonishment the game of Boston. Invented by the French prisoners in the islands of the American Liverpool and abounding in "grand misery," "little misery," and other appropriate terms, it combines all the difficulties of whist, écarté, piquet, brag, and cribbage, and seems to possess the same attractions which beam upon the mind of the advanced algebraic scholar. Fortunately there was an abundance of good commissariat whiskey and excellent tobacco, whose attractions were greater than that of Boston. On the morrow, a gloomy morning, with cold blasts and spatters of rain from the south-west, and the tameness of the snowbirds,—which here represent

"Cock Robin and Jenny Wren,
God Almighty's Cock and Hen,"—

warned us that the fine season was breaking up, and that we had no time to lose. So inspanning Julia and Sally, we set out, and after six hours reached once more the City of the Saints.

CHAP. VIII.

EXCURSIONS CONTINUED.

I HAD long been anxious to visit the little chain of lakes in the Wasatch Mountains, south-east of the city, and the spot where the Saints celebrate their "Great Twenty-fourth of July." At dinner the subject had been often on the carpet, and Anti-Mormons had informed me, hinting at the presence of gold, that no Gentile was allowed to enter Cottonwood Kanyon without a written permit from the President Prophet. Through my friend the elder, I easily obtained the sign manual; it was explained to me, that the danger of fires in a place which will supply the city with lumber for a generation, and the mischievousness of enemies, were at the bottom of the precaution. Before starting, however, two Saints were chosen to accompany me, Mr. S——, and Mr., or rather, Colonel Feramorz, popularly called Ferry, Little. This gentlemen, a partner, relative, and connexion of Mr. Brigham Young, is one of the "Seventies;" of small and spare person, he is remarkable for pluck and hardihood, and in conjunction with Ephe Hanks, the Danite, he has seen curious things on the Prairies.

A skittish, unbroken, stunted, weedy three-year-old for myself, and a tall mule for my companion, were readily lent by Mr. Kennedy, an Irish Gentile and stockdealer, who, being bound on business to California, was in treaty with us for reward, in case of safe conduct. We chose the morning of the 14th September, after the first snow had whitened the peaks, and a glorious cool, clear day it was,—a sky diaphanous, as if earth had been roofed with rock crystal. Whilst awaiting the hour to depart under the verandah of the hotel, Governor Cumming pointed out to me Bill Hickman, once the second of the great

"Danite" triumvirate, and now somewhat notorious for meddling with church property. He is a good-looking fellow, about forty-five, rather stout and square, with high forehead, open countenance, and mild, light blue eye, and owns, I believe, to only three deaths. On the last Christmas-day, upon occasion of a difficulty with a youth named Lot Huntingdon, the head of the youngster party, he had drawn his "bowie," and a "shooting" took place, both combatants exchanging contents of revolvers across the street, both being well filled with slugs, and both living to tell the tale.

"Do you know what that fellow is saying to himself?" asked the governor, reading the thoughts of a fiercely frowning youth, who swaggered past us.

I confessed to the negative.

"He is only thinking, 'D—ned gov'rnor, wonder if he's a better man than me,'" said my interlocutor.

About 4 P.M. we mounted and rode out of the city towards the mouth of the kanyon, where we were to meet Mr. Little. Passing by the sugar mills and turning eastward, after five or six miles we saw at a distance a block of buildings, which presently, as if by enchantment, sank into the earth; an imperceptible wave of ground—a common prairie formation—had intervened. From the summit of the land we again sighted the establishment. It is situated in the broad bed of a dry *fiumara*—which would, by the bye, be a perilous place in the tropics,—issuing from Parley's Kanyon. The ravine, which is sometimes practised by emigrant trains, is a dangerous pass, here and there but a few rods wide, and hemmed in by rocks rising perpendicularly 2000 feet. The principal house was built for defence, the garden was walled round, and the enclosure had but two small doors.

We were met at the entrance by Mr. Little, who, whilst supper was being prepared, led us to the tannery and the grist-mill, of which he is part proprietor. The bark used for the process is the red fir, costing $25 per cord, and the refuse is employed in composts. The hides are received unsalted; to save labour they are pegged to soak upon wheels turned by water-power. The leather is good, and under experienced European workmen, will presently become cheaper than that imported from England.

Beyond the tannery was an adobe manufacture. The brick in this part splits whilst burning, consequently the sun-dried article is preferred; when the wall is to be faced, pegs are driven into it to hold the plaster. The material is clay, or silt, from the creek, puddled with water, and if saltish it is better than sweet soil; unity of colour and formation are the tests of goodness. Each brick weighs, when dry, 16 lbs., and the mould is mostly double. On the day after making they are stacked, and allowed to stand for two months; the season is June, July, and August, after which it becomes too cold. The workman is paid $0·75 per cent.; 400 per diem would be tolerable, 700 good work; thus, an able-bodied bricklayer can make twenty-one shillings a day,—rather a contrast to the wages of an unfortunate labourer in England.

Returning home we walked through Mr. Little's garden, and admired its neatness. The fruit-trees were mostly barren; in this year the city sets down a loss of $100,000 by frost. I tasted, for the first time, the Californian grape, "uvas admodum maturas, ita voluit anni intemperies;" they not a little resembled the northern French. A single vine sometimes bears $100 worth. There was a little rhubarb, but it is not much used where sugar costs forty-five cents per pound. After supping with Mr. Little, his wife and family, we returned to the *andronitis*, and prepared for the night with a chat. The principal point illustrated was the curious amount of connexion caused by polygamy; all men, calling each other brothers, become cousins, and it is hardly possible, amongst the old Mormons, to stop a child in the street without finding that it is a relative. I was surprised at the comfort, even the luxury, of a Mormon householder in these remote wilds, and left it with a most favourable impression.

At the dawn of the next day we prepared to set out; from the city to the mouth of the kanyon the distance is about thirteen, and to the lake's twenty-seven miles. Mr. Little now accompanied us on horseback, and his son James, whom I may here safely call a boy, was driving a buck-board. This article is a light gig-body, mounted upon a thin planking, to which luggage is strapped; it can go where a horse can tread, and is easier to both animals than riding down steep hills. The boy, like Mormon juveniles generally, had a great aptitude at driving, riding,

and using the axe; he attended a school, but infinitely preferred that of nature, and showed all the disposition to become the father of a stout brave western man. As in the wilder parts of Australia, where the pedagogue has less pay than the shepherd, "keep a school" is here equivalent to semi-starvation; there is no superstitious aversion, as the Gentiles have asserted, to a modicum of education, but the state of life renders manual labour more honoured and profitable. Whilst the schoolmaster gains $2·50 per mensem, a ditcher would make the same sum per diem. Besides impatience of study, the boys are ever anxious to become men — "bring up a child and away it goes," says the local proverb, — and literature will not yet enable a youth to marry and to set up housekeeping in the Rocky mountains.

Our route lay over the bench; on our right was a square adobe fort, that had been used during the Indian troubles, and fields and houses were scattered about. Passing the mouth of Parley's Kanyon, we entered the rich bottom land of the Great Cottonwood, beautified with groves of quaking asp, whose foliage was absolute green, set off by paper-white stems. After passing through an avenue of hardheads, *i. e.* erratic granite boulders, which are carted to the city for building the temple, we turned to the left and entered the mouth of the kanyon, where its sides flare out into gentler slopes.

A clear mountain stream breaks down the middle. The bed is a mass of pebbles and blocks; hornblende, a white limestone, almost marble, but full of flaws; red sandstone, greenstone, and a conglomerate like mosaic work. The bank is thick with the poplar from which it derives its name, willow-clumps, the alder, with its dry, mulberry-like fruit; the hop vine, and a birch whose bark is red as the cherry tree's. Above the stream the ravine sides are in places too steep for growth; as a rule the northern is never wooded, save where the narrowness of the gorge impedes the action of the violent south winds. On the lower banks the timber is mostly cleared off. Upon the higher slopes grow the mountain mahogany and the scrub maple, wherever there is a foot of soil. There is a fine sturdy growth of abies. The spruce, or white pine, rises in a beautifully regular cone, often 100 feet high; there are two principal varieties of fir, one with smooth light bark, and the other, which loves a higher range, and looks black as it bristles out of its snowy bed, is of a

dun russet. Already appeared the splendid tints which make the American autumn a fit subject "*pictoribus atque poetis.*" An atmosphere of blue seemed to invest the pines, the maple blushed bright red; and the willow clumps of the bed, and the tapestry of ferns had turned to vegetable gold, whilst snow, bleached to more than usual whiteness by intervals of deep black soil, flecked the various shade of the poison hemlocks and balsam firs, and the wild strawberry, which the birds had stripped of fruit.

Great Cottonwood Kanyon, like the generality of these ravines in the western wall of the Wasach, runs east and west till near the head, when it gently curves towards the north, and is separated from its neighbour by a narrow divide. On both sides the continuity of the gap is cut by deep jagged gullies, rendering it impossible to crown the heights. The road, which winds from side to side, was worked by thirty-two men, directed by Mr. Little, in one season, at a total expense of £16,000. After exhausting Red Buttes, Emigration, and other kanyons, for timber and fuel, Great Cottonwood was explored in 1854, and in 1856 the ascent was made practicable. In places where the gorge narrows to a gut there were great difficulties, but rocks were removed, whilst tree-trunks and boughs were spread like a corduroy, and covered over with earth brought from a distance: Mormon energy overcame every obstacle. It is repaired every summer before the anniversary festival; it suffers during the autumn, and is preserved from destruction by the winter snows. In many places there are wooden bridges, one of which pays toll, and at the end of the season they become not a little rickety. As may be imagined, the water-power has been utilised. Lines and courses carefully levelled, and in parts deeply excavated, lest the precious fluid should spread out in basins, are brought from afar, and provided with water-gates and coffer-dams. The mills are named, after the letters, C, B, A, D, and lastly E. Already 700,000 square feet of lumber have been cut during this summer, and a total of a million is expected before the mills are snowed up; you come upon these ugly useful erections suddenly, round a sharp turn in the bed; they have a queer effect with their whirring saws, and crash of timber, forming a treble to the musical bass of the water-gods.

We halted at the several mills, when Mr. Little overlooked his accounts, and distributed stores of coffee, sugar, and tobacco.

After the first five miles we passed flecks of snow, the thermometer, however, in the shade never showed less than 60° F. In places the hill sides were bald from the effect of avalanches, and we saw where a house had lately been swept away. In others a fine white limestone glistened its deception. After passing mill D, we debouched upon the basin also called the Big Prairie, a dwarf turfy savannah, about 100 yards in diameter, rock and tree-girt, and separated from Parley's Kanyon on the north by a tall, narrow wall. We then ascended a slope of black viscid slippery mud, in which our animals were nearly mired, with deep slush holes and cross roots: as we progressed the bridges did not improve. On our left, in a pretty grove of thin pines, stood a bear-trap. It was a dwarf hut, with one or two doors, which fall when Cuffy tugs the bait from the figure of 4 in the centre. These mountaineers apparently ignore the simple plan of the Tchuvash, who fill up with corn-brandy a hollow in some tree lying across "old Ephraim's" path, and catch him dead drunk. In many places the quaking asp trunks were deeply indented with claw scars, showing that the climbing species is here common. Shortly before, a bear had been shot within a few miles of Gt. S. L. city, and its paws appeared upon the hotel *table d'hôte*.

About mid afternoon we dismounted, and left our nags and traps at Mill E, the highest point, where we were to pass the night. Mr. Little was suffering from a severe neuralgia, yet he insisted upon accompanying us. With visions of Albano, Killarney, and Windermere, I walked up the half mile of hill separating us from Great Cottonwood Lake. In front rose tall pine-clad and snow-strewed peaks, a *cul-de-sac*, formed by the summit of the Wasach. We could not see their feet, but instinct told me that they dropped around the water. The creek narrowed to a jump. Presently we arrived at a kind of punch-bowl, formed by an amphitheatre of frowning broken mountains, highest and most snowy on the south-east and west, and nearly clear of snow and trees on the east. The level ground, perhaps one mile in diameter, was a green sward, dotted with blocks and boulders, based on black humus and granite detritus. Part of it was clear, the rest was ivy-grown, with pines, clumps, and circlets of tall trees, surrounded by their young in bunches and fringes, as if planted by the hand of man. There were signs of

the last season's revelry — heaps of charcoal and charred trunks, rough tables of two planks supported by trestles, chairs or rail-like settles, and the brushy remnants of three "bowries." Two skulls showed that wolves had been busy with the cattle. Freshly caught trout lay upon the table, preserved in snow, and in the distance the woodman's axe awoke with artful sound the echoes of the rocks.

At last we came upon the little tarn which occupies the lowest angle, the western ridge of the punch-bowl or prairie-basin. Unknown to Capt. Stansbury, it had been visited of old by a few mountain men, and since 1854 by the mass of the Mormons. According to my informants it is the largest of a chaplet of twelve pools, two to the S. W. and ten to the S. E., which are probably independent bulges in the several torrent beds. Some are described as having no outlet, yet all are declared to be sweet water. The altitude has not been ascertained scientifically. It is roughly set down between 9500 and 10,000 feet. It was then at its smallest: about half a mile long by one quarter broad. After the melting of the snow it spreads out over the little savannah. The bottom is sandy and gravelly, sloping from ten to twenty feet deep. It freezes over in winter, and about 25–30 May the ice breaks up and sinks. The runnel which feeds it descends from the snow-capped peak to the south, and copious supplies trickle through the soppy margin at the base of the dripping hills around. The surplus escapes through a head to the north, where a gated dam is thrown across to raise the level, and to regulate the water power. The colour is a milky white, the water is warm, and its earthy vegetable taste, the effect of the weeds that margin it, contrasts with the purity of the creek which drains it. The fish are principally mountain trout and the gymnotus eel. In search of shells we walked round the margin, now sinking in the peaty ground, then clambering over the boulders — white stones that, rolled down from the perpendicular rocks above, simulated snow; then fighting our way through the thick willow clumps. Our quest, however, was not rewarded. After satisfying curiosity, we descended by a short cut of a quarter of a mile under tall trees whose shade preserved the snow, and found ourselves once more in Mill E.

The log-hut was of the usual make. A cold wind — the mercury had fallen to 50° F. — rattled through the crannies, and we prepared for a freezing night by a blazing fire. The furniture

—two bunks, with buffalo robes, tables and chairs, which were bits of plank mounted on four legs—was of the rudest. I whiled away the last hours of light by adding to my various accomplishments an elementary knowledge of felling trees. Handling the timber axe is by no means so simple a process as it appears. The woodman does it by instinct: the tyro, who is always warned that he may easily indent or slice off a bit of his leg, progresses slowly and painfully. The principal art is to give the proper angle to the blade, to whirl the implement loosely round the head, and to let it fall by the force of its own weight, the guiding hand gliding down the haft to the other, in order not to break the blow. We ate copiously; appetite appeared to come by eating, though not in the Parisian sense of the phrase,—what a treasure would be such a sanitarium in India! The society was increased by two sawyers, gruff and rugged men, one of whom suffered from ophthalmia, and two boys, who successfully imitated their elders.

Our fireside chat was sufficiently interesting. Mr. S—— described the ceremonies of the last Mormon Independence Day. After the preliminaries had been settled as below*, the caravans

* Extract from the Gt. S. L. correspondent of that amiable and conscientious periodical the "New York Herald."

"*The Great Twenty-fourth of July.*

"In my last I gave your readers a full account of the Mormon demonstrations on the anniversary of American independence. That done, they have now before them the celebration of their own independence. Adhesiveness is largely developed in the Mormon cranium. They will hold on to their notions. On the 24th of July, 1847, Brigham, at the head of the pioneers, entered this now beautiful valley—then a barren wilderness. Forgetful of the means that forced them here, the day was set apart for rejoicing. They laid aside the weeds of mourning and consecrated the day to feasting and dancing. The Twenty-fourth is the day of deliverance that will be handed down to generations when the fourth is immemorially forgotten. Three years ago, two thousand persons were congregated at the head waters of Big Cottonwood, commemorating independence, when messengers from the East arrived with the intelligence that the troops were on the plains. I need not further allude to what was then said and done; suffice it, things have been so disjointed since that Big Cottonwood has been left alone in solitude. Setting aside the restraint of years, it seems that the faithful are to again enjoy themselves. The following card tells the marching orders; the interstices will be filled up with orations, songs, prayers, dances, and every kind of athletic game that the young may choose to indulge in:—

"*Twenty-fourth of July at the Head-quarters of Big Cottonwood.*—President Brigham Young respectfully invites ——— to attend a picnic excursion to the lake in Big Cottonwood Kanyon, on Tuesday, 24th of July.

set out from the Holy City. In 1860 there were 1122 souls, 56 carriages, 163 wagons, 235 horses, 159 mules, and 168 oxen They bivouacked for the night upon the road, and marched with a certain ceremony. The first President issued an order allowing any one to press forward, though not at the expense of others, still no one would precede him; nor would the second advance before the third President—a good example to some who might want teaching. Moreover, the bishops had the privilege of inviting or rather of permitting the people of their several wards, even Gentiles, to attend. The "pioneers"—the survivors of the noble 143 who, guided by their Joshua, Mr. Brigham Young, first attempted the Promised Land—were distinguished by their names on banners, and the bands played lustily "God Save the King!" and the "Star-spangled Banner!" "Happy Land!" and "Du-dah." At six on the fine morning of the 24th, which followed ugly weather, a salute of three guns, in honour of the First Presidency, was fired, with music in the intervals, the stars and the stripes floating on the top of the noblest staff, a tall fir tree. At 9 A.M. a salute of thirteen guns, denoting the age of New Zion, and at 6 P.M. twelve guns, corresponding with the number of the Apostles, were discharged with similar ceremonies. The scene must have been lively and picturesque around the bright little tarn, and under the everlasting hills—a holiday crowd, with wagons and ambulances drawn up, tents and marquees pitched under the groves, and horse races, in which the fair sex joined, over the soft green sward. At 10 P.M., after the dancing in the boweries had flagged,

"*Regulations.*—You will be required to start so as to pass the first mill, about four miles up the kanyon, before twelve o'clock on Monday the 23rd, as no person will be allowed to pass that point after two o'clock P.M. of that day. All persons are forbidden to smoke segars or pipes, or kindle fires at any place in the kanyon, except on the camp ground. The bishops are requested to accompany those invited from their respective wards, and see that each person is well fitted for the trip with good, substantial, steady teams, wagons, harness, hold-backs and locks, capable of completing the journey without repair, and a good driver, so as not to endanger the life of any individual. Bishops, heads of families, and leaders of small parties, will, before passing the first mill, furnish a full and complete list of all persons accompanying them, and hand the same to the guard at the gate.

"*Committee of Arrangements.*—A. O. Smoot, John Sharp, L. W. Hardy, A. Cunningham, E. F. Sheets, F. Kesler, Thomas Callister, A. H. Raleigh, Henry Moon, J. C. Little, Marshal of the day; Colonel R. T. Burton will arrange the Guard.

"Great Salt Lake City, July 19, 1860."

the bands finished with "Home, sweet Home," and the Saints returned to their every-day occupations.

Mr. Little also recounted to us his experiences among the Indians, whom he, like all the Mormons, firmly believed to be children of Israel under a cloud. He compared the Medicine-lodge to a masonic hall, and declared that the so-called Red men had signs and grips like ourselves; and he related how an old chief, when certain symbolic actions were made to him, wept and wailed, thinking how he and his had neglected their observances. The Saints were at one time good masons; unhappily they wanted to be better. The angel of the Lord brought to Mr. Joseph Smith the lost key-words of several degrees, which caused him, when he appeared amongst the brotherhood of Illinois, to "work right a-head" of the highest, and to show them their ignorance of the greatest truths and benefits of masonry. The natural result was that their diploma was taken from them by the Grand Lodge, and they are not admitted to a Gentile gathering. Now heathens without the gate, they still cling to their heresy, and declare that other masonry is, like the Christian faith, founded upon truth, and originally of the eternal Church, but fallen away and far gone in error. There is no race, except perhaps antiquaries, more credulous than the brethren of the Mystic Craft. I have been told, by one who may have deceived himself, but would not have deceived me, that the Royal Arch, notoriously a corruption of the Royal Arras, is known to the Bedouins of Arabia; whilst the dairy of the Neilgherry Todas, with its exclusion of women, and its rude ornamentation of crescents, circles, and triangles, was at once identified with the "old religion of the world whose vestiges survive amongst all people." But these are themes unfit for an "entered apprentice." Mr. Little corroborated concerning the Prairie Indians and the Yutas what is said of the settled tribes, namely, that the comforts of civilisation tend to their destruction. The men, enervated by indoor life for half the year, are compelled at times to endure sudden privation, hardship, and fatigue, of which the results are rheumatism, consumption, and fatal catarrhs. Yet he believed that the "valleys of Ephraim" would yet be full of them. He spoke freely of the actualities and prospects of Mormonism. My companions asserted with truth that there is not among their number a single loafer, rich

or poor, an idle gentleman or a lazy vagabond, a drunkard or a gambler, a beggar or a prostitute. Those honourable professions are membered by the Gentiles. They boasted, indeed, of what is sometimes owned by their enemies, that there are fewer robberies, murders, arsons, and rapes in Utah than in any other place of equal population in the world. They held that the laws of the U. S. are better adapted to secure the happiness of a small community than to consolidate the provinces of a continent into one huge empire, and they looked confidently forward to the spread of Mormonism over the world. They claimed for themselves, like other secessionists, "*le droit sacré d'insurrection*," against which in vain the Gentiles raged and the Federal Government devised vain things. They declared themselves to be the salt of the Union, and that in the fulness of time they shall break the republic in pieces, like a potter's vessel. Of Washington, Jefferson, and the other sages of the revolution, they speak with all respect, describing them as instruments in the hand of the Almighty, and as Latter Day Saints in will if not in deed. I was much pleased by their tolerance, but tolerance in the West is rather the effect of climate and occupation than of the reasoning faculty. Gentiles have often said before me that Mormonism is as good as any other religion, and that Mr. Joseph Smith "had as good a right to establish a Church as Luther, Calvin, Fox, Wesley, or even bluff King Hal." The Mormons are certainly the least fanatical of our faiths, owning, like Hindus, that every man should walk his own way, whilst claiming for themselves superiority in belief and politics. At Nauvoo they are said to have been puffed up by the rapid growth of their power, and to have been presumptuous, haughty, insolent, and overbearing; to have assumed a jurisdiction independent of, and sometimes hostile to, the nine counties around them and to the States; to have attached penalties to speaking evil of the Prophet; and to have denied the validity of legal documents, unless countersigned by him who was also Mayor and General. They are certainly changed for the better in these days. With respect to their future views the Anti-Mormons assert that the Saints have now been driven to the end of their tether, and must stand to fight or deliver; that the new territory of Nevada will presently be a fatal rival to them, that the States will no longer tolerate this theocratic

despotism in the bosom of a democracy; and that presently they must be wiped out. The Mormons already discern the dawning of a brighter day. In the reaction which has taken place in their favour they fear no organised attack by the U. S. on account of lobby influence at Washington, and the *vis inertiæ* inherent in so slow and unwieldy a body as the Federal Government. They count upon secession, quoting a certain proverb touching conjunctures when honest men come in. They believe that the supernatural aid of God, plus their vote, will presently make them a State. "Some time this side of the great Millennium" they will realise their favourite dream, restoration (which might indeed happen in ten years) to their quondam Zion, Independence Mo., the centre of the old terrestrial paradise. Of this promised land their President said, with "something of prophetic strain," "while water runs and grass grows, while virtue is lovely and vice hateful, and while a stone points out a sacred spot where a fragment of American liberty once was,"—Lord Macaulay's well-known Zealander shall apparently take his passage by Cunard's,—"I or my posterity will plead the cause of injured innocence, until Missouri makes atonement for all her sins, or sinks disgraced, degraded, and damned to hell, where the worm dieth not, and the fire is not quenched." Then shall the Jews of the old world rebuild the Temple of Solomon, and the Jews of the new world (the Mormons) recover their own Zion. Gog and Magog, that is to say, the kings of the Gentiles, and their hosts, shall rise up against the Latter Day Saints, who, guided by a prophet that wields the sword of Laban, shall mightily overthrow them at the battle of Armageddon. Then the spears, bows, and arrows (probably an abstruse allusion to the descendants of our Miniés and Armstrongs) shall be burned with fire seven years; the earth and its fulness shall be theirs, and the long looked for Millennium shall come at last. And as prophecy without date is somewhat liable to be vague and indefinite, these great events are fixed, in Mr. Joseph Smith's Autobiography, for the year of grace 1890. Meantime, they can retire, if forbidden the Saskatchewan River and Vancouver's Island, to the rich "minerales" in "Sonora of the Gold Mountains."

On the morning of the next day, Sunday, 16th September, we mounted and rode slowly on. I had neglected to take

"leggings," and the loss of cuticle and cutis was deplorable. Once at the tabernacle was enough: on this occasion, however, non-attendance was a mistake. There had been a little "miff" between Mr. President and the "Gauge of Philosophy," Mr. O. Pratt. The latter gentleman, who is also an apostle, is a highly though probably a self-educated man, not, as is stated in an English work, a graduate of Trinity College, Dublin. The Usman of the New Faith, writer, preacher, theologian, missionary, astronomer, philosopher, and mathematician,—especially in the higher branches,—he has thrust thought into a faith of ceremony which is supposed to dispense with the trouble of thinking; and has intruded human learning into a scheme whose essence is the utter abrogation of the individual will. He is consequently suspected of too much learning, of relying, in fact, rather upon books and mortal paper, than that royal road to all knowledge, inspiration from on high, and his tendencies to let loose these pernicious doctrines often bring him into trouble and place him below his position. In his excellent discourse delivered to-day, he had declared the poverty of the Mormons, and was speedily put down by Mr. Brigham Young, who boasted the Saints to be the wealthiest (*i. e.* in good works and post-obit prospects) people in the world. I had tried my best to have the pleasure of half an hour's conversation with the Gauge, who, however, for reasons unknown to me, declined. At the same meeting Mr. Heber Kimball solemnly consigned to a hotter place than the tropics Messrs. Bell and Livingston, the cause being their supposed complicity in bringing in the Federal troops. I write it with regret, but both of these gentlemen, when the sad tidings were communicated to them, showed a quasi-Pharaonic hardening of the carnal heart. A measure, however, was on this occasion initiated, which more than compensated for these small *ridicules*. To the present date missionaries were sent forth, to Canton even, or Kurrachee, like the apostles of Judea, working their passages and supporting themselves by handiwork; being wholly without purse or scrip, baggage or salary, they left their business to languish, and their families to want. When man has no coin of his own he is naturally disposed to put his hand into his neighbour's pocket, and the greediness of a few unprincipled propagandists, despite the prohibitions of the Prophet, had caused a scandal

by the richness of their "plunder." A new ordinance was therefore issued to the thirty new nominees.* The missionaries were forbidden to take from their converts, and in compensation they would receive regular salaries, for which funds were to be collected in the several wards. On the same evening I was informed a single ward, the 13th, subscribed $3000. That Sunday was an important day to myself also; I posted a "sick certificate," advising extension of leave for six months, signed by W. F. Anderson, M.D., of the University of Maryland. It was not wholly *en règle;* it required two signatures and the counter-signature of H.B.M.'s Consul to affirm that the signatures were *bonâ fide*, not "bogus." But the signer was the only M.D. in the place, H.B.M.'s nearest consul was distant about 600 miles, and to suggest that a gentleman may be quietly forging or falsifying his signature is to incur an unjustifiable personal risk in the Far West.

Still bent upon collecting the shells of the basin, I accepted Mr. S——'s offer of being my guide to Ensign Peak, where they are said to be found in the greatest number. Our route lay through the broken wall which once guarded the land against Lamuel, and we passed close by the large barn-like building called the arsenal, where the military school will also be. Motives of delicacy prevented my asking questions concerning the furniture of the establishment. Anti-Mormons, however, whisper that it contains cannon, mortars, and other large-scaled implements of destruction, prepared, of course, for treasonable purposes. The arsenal naturally led us into conversation concerning the Nauvoo Legion, the Mormon Battalion, the

* The following is a copy of the Elder's Certificate, officially signed by the President and his two Councillors, and supplied to the departing missionary:—

To all Persons to whom this Letter shall come.

"This certifies that the bearer, Elder A. B., is in full faith and fellowship with the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, and by the general authorities of said Church, has been duly appointed a Mission to Liverpool to preach the Gospel, and administer in all the ordinances thereof pertaining to his office.

"And we invite all men to give heed to his teachings and counsels as a man of God, sent to open to them the door of life and salvation, and assist him in his travels, in whatsoever things he may need.

"And we pray God the Eternal Father to bless Elder A. B. and all who receive him and minister to his comfort, with the blessings of heaven and earth, for time and for all eternity, in the name of Jesus Christ: Amen.

"Signed at Great Salt Lake City, Territory of Utah, ——180-, in behalf of said Church."

Danite band, and other things military, of which the reader may not be undesirous of knowing "some."

The Nauvoo Legion was organised in 1840, and was made to include all male Saints between the ages of sixteen and fifty. In 1842 it numbered 2000 men, well officered, uniformed, armed and drilled. It now may amount throughout the territory to 6000—8000 men: the Utah Militia, however, is officially laid down in the latest returns, at 2821. In case of war, it would be assisted by 30,000 or 40,000 Indian warriors. The Legion is commanded by a Lieutenant-General, at present Mr. Daniel C. Wells, the Martin Hofer of this western Tyrol; the Major-General is Mr. C. D. Grant, who, in case of vacancy, takes command. The Lieutenant-General is elected by a majority of the commissioned officers, and is then commissioned by the governor: he organises the legion into divisions, brigades, regiments, battalions, companies, and districts: his staff, besides heads of departments—Adjutant, Commissary Quartermaster, Paymaster and Surgeon-General—consists of three aides and two topographical engineers, with the rank of Colonel, a military secretary, with the rank of Lieutenant-Colonel, and two Chaplains. The present Adjutant-General is Mr. Wm. Ferguson, one of the few Irish Saints, originally Sergeant-Major in the Mormon battalion, who, after the fashion of the western world, combines with the soldier the lawyer and the editor. The minutest directions are issued to the legion in "An act to provide for the further organisation of the Militia of the Territory of Utah (Territorial Laws, chap. 35), and it is divided into military districts as below.* There is, moreover, an independent battalion of Life

* There are eleven originally established, viz.:

1st. The Great Salt Lake Military District shall include all the militia within the boundaries of Great Salt Lake City.

2nd. The Davis Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Davis County.

3rd. Weber Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Weber County.

4th. The Western Jordan Military District shall include all the militia in Great Salt Lake County west of the Jordan River.

5th. The Tooele Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Tooele County.

6th. The Cottonwood Military District shall include all the militia in Great Salt Lake County, south of the south line of Great Salt Lake City and east of the Jordan River.

Guards, in G. S. L. County, not attached to any brigade or division, but subject at all times to the call of the Governor and Lieutenant-General. There are also minute men, picked fighters, ready to mount, at a few minutes' notice, upon horses that range near the Jordan, and to take the field in pursuit of Indians or others, under their commandant Colonel Burton. These corps form the nuclei of what will be, after two generations, formidable armies. The increase of Saintly population is rapid, and from their childhood men are trained to arms: each adult has a rifle and a sable, a revolver and a bowie knife, and he wants only practice to become a good, efficient, and well disciplined soldier. Grants amounting to a total of $5000 have at different times been apportioned to military purposes, buildings, mounting ordnance, and schools: Gentiles declare that it was required for education, but I presume that the Mormons, like most people, claim to know their own affairs best. As in the Land of Liberty generally, there is a modified conscription; "all free male citizens"—with a few dignified exceptions and exempts—are subject to soldier's duty within thirty days after their arrival at any military district in the territory.

That the Mormon battalion did good service in the Mexican war of 1847, is a matter of history. It was sent at a most critical conjuncture. Application was made to the Saints, when upon the point of commencing their Exodus from Egypt, through the deserts of Paran and Sin, where the red Amalekite and the Moabite lay in wait to attack them, and when every male was wanted to defend the old and sick, the women and children, and the valuables of which the Egyptian had not despoiled them. Yet the present prophet did not hesitate to obey the call: he sent off 500 of his best men, who fought through the war and shared in the triumph. Providence rewarded them. It was a Mormon—James W. Marshall—who, when discharged from

7th. The Utah Military District shall include all the militia in Utah County.

8th. The San Pete Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of San Pete County.

9th. The Pauvan Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Millard County.

10th. The Iron Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Iron County.

11th. The Green River Military District shall include all the militia within the limits of Green River County.

service, entered with some comrades the service of a Swiss landowner, Capt. Suter—a remnant of Charles X.'s guard—near Sacramento, on the American River, and who, in January 1848, when sinking a mill-run or water-run, discovered the shining metal which first made California a household word. On the return of the battalion to Gt. S. L. City, laden with nearly half a million of gold, a mint was established, and a $5 piece was added to the one million dollars, which forms the annual circulation of the U. S. It bears, on the reverse, "Holiness to the Lord" surmounting a three-cornered cap, placed over a single eye: the former alludes, I was told, mystically to the first Presidency. The obverse having two hands clasped over the date (1849) and the words "Five Dollars G. S. L. C. P. G. The $5 appeared somewhat heavier though smaller than an English sovereign. Anti-Mormons adduce this coinage as an additional proof of saintly peculiarity, but it was legally done,—a Territory may not stamp precious metal with the Federal arms, but it has a right to establish its own. They adduce moreover a severe charge, namely, that the $5 piece was 15—20 per cent. under weight, and yet was forcibly made current. One remarkable effect the gold certainly had. When the Kirtland Safety Savings Bank, established by Mr. Joseph Smith in February 1831, broke, he stoutheartedly prophesied that before twenty years should elapse the worthless paper should be again at par: The financial vaticination was true to the latter.*

* The Mormons quote two other prophecies both equally offensive to the U. S. and both equally well known.

On the 26th April 1843, Mr. Joseph Smith distinctly declared, in the name of the Lord, that before the arrival of the 5th of May the "question of slavery would cause a rebellion in S. Carolina," and effect a "division of the Southern against the Northern States." It was a calamity easy to be foreseen, but we look with anxiety to the unfulfilled portion, the "terrible bloodshed" which will result.

In 1848, when, humanly speaking, want and destitution stared the Saints in the face, Mr. Brigham Young predicted that within five years they would be wealthier than before. This was palpably fulfilled in 1849, when the passage of emigrants to California enabled the Saints to exchange their supplies of food for goods and valuables at enormous profits.

I commend these "uninspired prophecies" to the simple-minded translator of "Forewarnings, Prophecies on the Church, Antichrist (who was born, we are told, four years ago), and Revelations in the Last Times." Messrs. Smith and Young's vaticinations will be found quite as respectable as the "Visions of an Aged Nun" and the "Predictions of Sister Rose Columba." Prophecy being the highest aim of human inspiration, is apparently universally and equally diffused.

The "Danite band," a name of fear in the Mississippi Valley, is said by anti-Mormons to consist of men between the ages of seventeen and forty-nine. They were originally termed Daughters of Gideon, Destroying Angels,—the Gentiles say Devils,—and finally, Sons of Dan, or Danites, from one of whom it was prophesied that he should be a serpent in the path. They were organized about 1837, under D. W. Patten, popularly called Captain Fearnot, for the purpose of dealing as avengers of blood with Gentiles; in fact, they formed a kind of "Death Society," Desperadoes, Thugs, Hashishiyun—in plain English, assassins in the name of the Lord. The Mormons declare categorically the whole and every particular to be the calumnious invention of the impostor and arch apostate, Mr. John C. Bennett, whilome mayor of Nauvoo, that the mystery and horror of the idea made it equally grateful to the knave and fool who persecuted them, and that not a trader could be scalped, nor a horse-stealer shot, nay a notorious villain of a Gentile knived without the deed of blood being attributed to Danite hands directed by prophetic heads. It was supposed that the Danites exercise savage disguises: "he has met the Indians" was a proverbial phrase, meaning that a Gentile has fallen into the power of the destroying angels. I but express the opinion of sensible and moderate neutrals in disbelieving the existence of an organized band of "Fidus"; where every man is ready to be a Danite, Danites are not wanting. Certainly, in the terrible times of Missouri and Illinois, destroying angels were required to smite secretly, mysteriously, and terribly the first born of Egypt: now the necessity has vanished. This, however, the Mormons deny, declaring the existence of the Danites, like that of spiritual wives, to be, and ever to have been, literally and in substance totally and entirely untrue.

Meanwhile we had nearly ascended the Jebel Nur of this new Meccah, the big-toe of the Wasatch mountains, and exchanged the sunny temperature below for a cold westerly wind, that made us feel snow: the air improved in purity, as we could judge by the effects of sarcasms lying at different heights. The bench up which we trod was gashed by broad ravines, and bore upon its red soil a growth of thin sage and sunflower. A single fossil and two varieties of shells were found: iron and quartz were scattered over the surface, and there is a legend of gold having

been discovered here. Presently, standing upon the topmost bluff, we sat down to enjoy a view which I have attempted to reproduce in a sketch. Below the bench lay the dot-like houses of Zion. We could see with bird's eye glance, the city laid out like a chess board, and all the length and breadth of its bee-line streets and crow-flight avenues which, bordered by distance-dwarfed trees, narrowed to threads as they drew towards a vanishing point. Beyond the suburbs, stretched the valley plain, sprinkled with little plantations clustering round the smaller settlements and streaked by the rivulets which, arising from the frowning pine-clad heights on the left, flowed towards the little Jordan of this young Judea on the right. The extreme south was bounded by the denticulated bench which divided like a scale the valleys of the Gt. Salt and Utah Lakes. Already autumn had begun: the purpling plain and golden slopes shed a dying glory over the departing year, while the mellowing light of evening, and aerial blue from above, toned down to absolute beauty each harsher feature of the scene.

After lingering for a while over the fair *coup-d'œil*, we descended, holding firm the sage bushes, the abrupt western slope, and we passed by the warm Harrowgate spring, with its sulphury blue waters, white lime-like bed, and rushy margins in dark earth, snow-capped with salt efflorescence. As we entered the city, we met a noted Gentile innocently driving out a fair Saint: both averted their faces as they passed us, but my companion's colour darkened. All races have their pet prohibitions and aversions, their likes and dislikes in matters of sin. Among the Mormons, a suspicion of immorality is more hateful than the reputation of bloodshed. So horse-thieving in the Western States is a higher crime than any other; in fact, the sin which is never forgiven: an editor thus unconcernedly sums up the history of one lately shot when plundering stock: "he was buried by those who meted out to him summary justice, not exactly attending to law, but upon a more speedy, economical, and salutary principle, and a stake was placed at the head of his grave, on which was inscribed 'A. B. B——, shot for horse-stealing, July 1, 1860.'"

Entering the city by the north-west, we passed the Academy of the 7th ward. Standing in a 10 acre block, it is a large adobe building with six windows, built for a hotel, and bought for

educational purposes by the prophet. Forms and tables, scattered with the usual school books, were the sole furniture, and the doors were left open as if they had nothing to defend. My companion had a truly brotherly way of treating his co-religionists; he never met one, however surly-looking, without a salute, and when a door was opened he usually walked in. Thus we visited successively, a waterpower-mill, a tannery, and an English coachmaker, painter, and varnisher. Some of the houses which we passed were neat and cleanly curtained, especially that belonging to an Englishwoman whose husband, Capt. R——, had lately left her in widowhood. We finished with the garden of Apostle Woodruff, who introduced us to his wife, and showed us work of which he had reason to be proud. Despite the hard ungrateful soil which had required irrigation for the last ten years there were apricots from Malta, the Hooker strawberries, here worth $5 the plant, plum-trees from Kew Gardens, French and Californian grapes, wild plum and buffalo berry, black currants, peaches and apples—with which last we were hospitably loaded—in numbers. The kitchen garden contained rhubarb, peas, potatoes, Irish and sweet, asparagus, white and yellow carrots, cabbages and huge beets: the sugar-cane had been tried there, but it was not, like the sweet holcus, a success.

The last time I walked out of Gt. S. L. City, was to see the cemetery which lies on the bench to the N.-E. of the settlement. There is but one cemetery for saint and sinner, and it has been prudently removed about three miles from the abodes of the living. The tombs, like the funeral ceremonies, are simple, lacking the "monumental mockery", which renders the country churchyard in England a fitter study for farce than for elegy. On occasions of death, prayers are offered in the house, and the corpse is carried at once to its last home. The graveyard is walled round, and contains a number of occupants, the tombs being denoted by a stone or board, with name and date, and sometimes a religious sentence, at the head and foot.

ENSIGN PEAK. (North End of Great Salt Lake City.)

CHAP. IX.

LATTER-DAY SAINTS.—OF THE MORMON RELIGION.

No less an authority than A. v. Humboldt has characterised positive religions in general as consisting of an historical novelette more or less interesting, a system of cosmogony more or less improbable, and a code of morals mostly pure.* Two-thirds of this description apply to the faith of the Latter Day Saints: they have, however, escaped paleological criticism by adopting Genesitic history, and by "swallowing Eve's apple" in the infancy of their spiritual life.

Before proceeding to comment upon the New Dispensation—for such, though not claiming or owning to be, it is—I may compare the two leading interpretations of the word "Mormon," which, as has been well remarked†, truly convey the widely diverging opinions of the opposers and supporters of Mormonism. Mormon (*μορμών*) signifies literally a lamia, a manicla, a female spectre; the mandrill, for its ugliness, was called Cynocephalus mormon. "Mormon," according to Mr. Joseph Smith's Mormonic, or rather Pantagruelic interpretation, is the best—soil, of mankind. "We say from the Saxon *good*, the Danic *god*, the Goth *goder*, the German *gut*, the Dutch *goed*, the Latin *bonus*, the Greek *kalos*, the Hebrew *tob*, and the Egyptian *mor*. Hence, with the addition of More, or the contraction Mor, we have the word Mormon, which means literally "more good." By faith it is said man can remove mountains: perhaps it will also enable him to believe in the spirit of that philology

* A somewhat free version of "toutes les religions positives offrent trois parties distinctes; un fonds de mauvais portant le même et fade goût, un rêve géologique, et un mythe ou petit roman historique: le dernier élément le plus d'importance." LX Lettre, Dec. 3rd, 1841.

† The Mormons or Latter Day Saints, by Lieutenant J. W. Gunnison of the U.S. Top. Eng. Philadelphia, 1852.

that revealed unto Mr. Joseph Smith his derivation, and rendered it a shibboleth to his followers. This is not the place to discuss a subject so broad and so long, but perhaps—the idea will suggest itself—the mind of man most loves those errors and delusions into which it has become self-persuaded, and is most fanatic concerning the irrationalities and the supernaturalities to which it has bowed its own reason.

Unaccountably enough, seeing that it means "more good," *scil.*, the best of mankind, the word Mormon is distasteful to its disciples, who look upon it as Jew by a Hebrew, Mohammedan by a Muslim, and Rossanist or Puseyite by the sectarian Christian. They prefer to be called Latter Day Saints, or, to give them their title in full, the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, in contradistinction to the Former Day Saints. Latter Day alludes to the long-looked-for convulsion that will end the present quiescent geologic epoch. Its near approach has ever been a favourite dogma and improvement subject of the Christian Church, from the time of St. Paul to that of Mr. Joseph Smith, and Drs. Wolff and Cumming*; for who, inquires Panurge, "is able to tell if the world shall last yet three years?" Others read it as a prophecy that "Gentilism" alias "the corrupted Christianity of the age" is "on its last legs." Even as "Saints" is a term which has been applied from time immemorial in the Apocalypse and elsewhere to the orthodox, i. e. those of one's own doxy, and as Enoch speaks of "saints" before the Flood or Noachian cataclysm, so the honourable title has in these days been appropriated by seers, revelators, and prophets, and conferred upon the Lord's chosen people, i. e. themselves and their followers. According to anti-Mormons the name Latter Day Saints was assumed in 1835 by the Mormons at the suggestion of Sidney Rigdon.

Before beginning a description of what Mormonism really is, I would succinctly lay down a few positions illustrating its genesis.

1. The religious as well as the social history of the progressive Anglo-Saxon race is a succession of contrasts, a system of reactions; at times retrogressive, it has a general onward tendency towards an unknown development. The Unitarians of New England, for instance, arose out of Calvinism. The Puri-

* The Mormon Prophet fixed the "end of the world" for A.D. 1890—Dr. Cumming, I believe, in 1870.

tenets of the present generation is the natural consequence of the Rationalism which preceded it.

2. In what a French author terms "le triste état de dissolution dans lequel gît le Christianisé de nos jours,"—the splitting of the Church into three grand divisions, Roman, Greek, and Eastern, the convulsion of the Northern mind, which created Protestantism, and the minute subdivision of the latter into Episcopalians and Presbyterians, Lutherans and Calvinists, Quakers and Shakers, the multiform Methodists and various Baptists, and to quote no further *variétés des églises*, the Congregationalists, Unitarians, and Universalists—a rationalistic mast finds reason to inquire, "What is Christianity?" and holds itself prepared for a new faith, a regeneration of human thought; in fact, a religious and social change, such as the Reformation of the sixteenth century represented and fondly believed itself to be."

* *Religious Denominations in the United States, according to the Census of 1850.* (From the "American Almanac" of 1851.)

Denominations.	No. of Churches.	Accommodation Afforded.		Total Value of Church Property.	Average Value of Property.
Baptist	8,792	3,196,879	366	$10,491,282	$1,244
Christian	613	208,050	263	346,810	1,041
Congregational	1,674	796,177	476	7,973,963	4,763
Dutch Reformed	326	181,966	561	4,096,750	12,544
Episcopal	1,423	624,512	440	11,261,970	7,919
Free	261	106,606	300	261,255	995
Friends	714	283,832	396	1,709,657	2,394
German Reformed	327	164,963	479	966,290	2,955
Jewish	31	18,578	594	371,000	11,967
Lutheran	1,393	661,100	441	2,947,660	2,115
Mennonite	110	39,900	372	94,245	856
Methodist	13,427	4,209,233	327	14,626,071	1,174
Moravian	331	112,185	353	442,347	1,336
Presbyterian	4,494	2,040,316	445	14,309,692	3,185
Roman Catholic	1,112	920,960	503	5,972,329	5,369
Seventh-day Baptist	15	6,070	399	108,100	7,206
Tunker	52	25,075	574	46,025	885
Union	919	372,502	345	990,065	1,114
Unitarian	363	187,367	866	3,868,132	13,440
Universalist	424	205,463	415	1,766,015	4,676
Minor Sects	235	113,347	534	741,900	3,229
Total	38,011	14,940,209	434	$86,416,656	$2,409

3. Mormonism boasts of few Roman Catholic or Greek converts; the French and Italians are rare, and there is a considerable deficiency of Germans and Irish,—those wretched races without nationality or loyalty—which have overrun the Eastern American States. It is, then, to Protestantism that we must look for the origin of the New Faith.

4. In 1800–1804, and in 1820, a mighty Wesleyan "revival," which in Methodism represents the missions and retreats of Catholicism, had disturbed and excited the public mind in America, especially in Kentucky and Tennessee. The founder of Mormonism, Mr. Joseph Smith, his present successor, and his principal disciples and followers, were Campbellites, Millerites, Rantors, or other Methodists. Wesleyan sectarianism, like the old Arab Paganism in El-Islam, still shows its traces in the worship and various observances of a doxology which by literalism and exaggeration has wholly separated itself from the older creeds of the world. Thus we find Mormonism to be in its origin English, Protestant, anti-Catholic, Methodistic.

It may be advisable briefly to trace the steps by which we arrive at this undesirable end. The birth of Romanism, according to the Reformed writers, dates from certain edicts issued by Theodosius II. and by Valentinian III. and constituting the Bishop of Rome "Rector of the whole Church." The newly-born hierarchy found tender nurses in Justinian, Pepin, and Charlemagne, and in the beginning of the eleventh century St. Gregory VII. (Hildebrand the Great) supplied the prime want of the age by establishing a visible theocracy, with a Vicar of Jesus Christ at its head. To the existence of a mediatorial priestly caste, the officials of a spiritual despotism, claiming power of censure and excommunication, and the gift of the crown terrestrial as well as celestial, anti-papistical writers trace the various vices and corruptions inherent in a semi-barbarous age, the "melancholy duality" of faith and works of religion and morality which seems to belong to the southern mind, and the oriental semi-Pelagianism which taught that man might be self-sanctified or vicariously saved, with its logical deductions, penance, beneficies, indulgences. An oppressive superstition endured for a season. Then set in the inevitable reaction; the extreme religiousness, that characteristic of the earnest quasi-pagan age of the Christian Church, in the fulness

of time fell into the opposite errors, rationalism and its natural consequences, infidelity and irreligion.

Reformers were not wanting before the Reformation. As early as 1170, Pierre Vaud, or Valdo, of Lyons, sold off his merchandise, and appealing from Popery to Scripture and to primitive Christianity, as in a later day did Jeremy Bentham from St. Paul to his Master, attacked the Roman hierarchy. John Wickliffe (1310–1385) is claimed by his countrymen to have originated the "liberal ideas" by which British Protestantism was restored; it is owned even by foreigners that he influenced opinion from Oxford to far Bohemia. He died peacefully, but the Wickliffites, who presently were called Lollards—"tares" sown by the fiend—though supported by the Commons against Henry IV. and his party the dignified clergy, suffered until the repeal of the Act "de hæreticis comburendis," the fiercest persecution. During the reign of Henry V. they gained strength, as the pronunciamento of 20,000 men in St. Giles's Fields under Sir John Oldcastle proves; the cruel death of their leader only served to strengthen them, supported as they were by the lower branch of the Legislature in their opposition to the Crown. On the Continent of Europe the great follower of Wickliffe was John Huss, who preached in Bohemia about a century before the days of Luther, and who, condemned by the Councils of Constance and Basle, perished at the stake in 1422. Jerome Savonarola, tortured and burnt in 1498, and other minor names, urged forward the fated movement until the Northern element once more prevailed, in things spiritual as in things temporal, over the Southern; the rude and violent German again attacked the soft, sensuous Italian, and Martin Luther hatched the egg which the schools of Rabelais and Erasmus had laid. It was the work of rough-handed men; the reformer Zuingle emerged from an Alpine shepherd's hut; Melanchthon, the theologian, from an armourer's shop, as Augustine, the monk, from the cottage of a poor miner. Such, in the 16th century, on the Continent of Europe, were the prototypes and predecessors of Messrs. Joseph Smith, Oliver Cowdery, Sydney Rigdon, and Brigham Young, who arose nearly three centuries afterwards in the New World.

In England, when the unprincipled tyranny of Henry VIII. had established, by robbing and confiscating, hanging and quartering that "reformed new-cast religion," of which Sir

Thomas Brown "disliked nothing but the name," the bigotry of the ultra-reformatory school lost no time in proceeding to any measure. William Chillingworth, born A.D. 1602, and alternately Protestant, Catholic, Socinian, and Protestant, put forth in his "Religion of Protestants, a safe way of salvation," that Chillingworthi Novissima, "the Bible and nothing but the Bible." This dogma swept away ruthlessly all the cherished traditions of a past age—the ancient observed customs of the Church—all in fact that was beautiful and reader venerable a faith, and substituted in their stead a bald Bibliolatry which at once justified credulity and forbade it; which tantalized men with the signs and wonders of antiquity, and yet which, with an unwise contradiction, forbade him to revive or restore them. And as each man became, by Bible-reading, his own interpreter, with fullest right of private judgment, and without any infallible guide—the inherent weakness of reformation—to direct him, the broad and beaten highway of belief was at once cut up into a parcel of little footpaths which presently obtained the entrance of divergence.

One of the earliest products of such "religious freedom" in England was Methodism, so called from the Methodistic physicians at Rome. The founder and arch-priest of the schism, the Rev. John Wesley, son of the Rector of Epworth in Lincolnshire, and born in 1703, followed Luther, Calvin, and other mad-managers in acting upon his own speculative and peculiar opinions. One of his earliest disciples—only eleven years younger than his master—was the equally celebrated George Whitfield of Gloucester. Suffice it to remark, without dwelling upon their history, that both these religionists, and mostly the latter, who died in 1770 at Newberry, New England, converted and preached to thousands in America, there establishing field services and camp-meetings, revivals and conferences, which, like those of the French Convulsionists in the last century, galvanized Christianity with a wild and feverish life. Falling amongst uneducated men, the doctrine, both in England and in the colonies, was received with a bewilderment of enthusiasm, and it soon produced the usual fruits of such frenzy,—prophecies that fixed the end of the world for the 28th February 1763, miraculous discernment of angels and devils, mighty comings of the power of God, and outpourings of the Spirit, rhapsodies and prophecies, dreams and visions, accompanied by rollings

jerks and barks, ravings and convulsions, syncope, catalepsy, and the other hysterical affections and obscure disorders of the brain, forming the characteristic symptoms of religious mania.

Thus, out of the semi-barbarous superstitions of the middle ages, succeeded by the revival of learning, which in the 16th century followed the dispersion of the wise men of the East from captured Byzantium, proceeded "Protestant rationalism," a system which, admitting the right of private judgment, protested against the religion of Southern Europe becoming that of the whole world. From Protestantism sprang Methodism, which restored to man the grateful exercise of his credulity—a leading organ in the human brain—his belief in preternatural and supernatural agencies and appearances, and his faith in miraculous communication between God and man; in fact, in that mysticism and marvel-love which are the columns and cornerstones of religion. Mormonism thus easily arose. It will be found to contain little beyond a literal and verbal interpretation of the only book which Chillingworth recognises as the rule for Christians, and a pointed condemnation of those who make the contents of the Bible typical, metaphysical, or symbolical, "as if God were not honest when he speaks with man, or uses words in other than their true acceptation," or could "palter in a double sense." It proposed as its three general principles, firstly, total immersion in the waters of baptism in the name of the three sacred names; secondly, the commissioning of prophets, apostles, and elders to administer in things holy the revelation and authority of heaven; and thirdly, the ministering of angels. New Tables of the Law appeared in the Golden Plates. Another Urim and Thummim revealed to Mr. Joseph Smith that he was of the house of Israel and the tribe of Joseph, the inheritor of all things promised to that favoured seed. It tempered the superstitions of Popery with the rationalism of the Protestant; it supplied mankind with another sacred book and with an infallible interpreter. Human belief had now its weight to carry: those pining for the excitement of theurgy felt satisfied. The Mormons were no longer compelled to ask "what made miracles cease?" and "why and in which sin was the power taken from the Church?" It relieved them from holding an apparent absurdity, viz. that the voices and visitations, the signs, miracles, and interventions, in fact, all that the Bible

submitted to human faith had ended without reason about the time when our Constantine became king, and do not receive manna now when they are most wanted. The Mormons are forced to think that God is virtually dead in the world; the universally practical tendencies of the New World were given them to develop into practice their contradiction of an influence from which human nature revolts. They claim to be the true Protestants, i.e. those who protest against the doctrines of a sensed fellowship between the Creator and the creature made in his image; they gratify their self-esteem by sneering at those who confine themselves to the old and obsolete revelation, and by pitying the blindness and ignorance that cannot or will not open its eyes to the new light. Hence it follows that few Catholics become Mormons, and that those few become bad Mormons. Man's powers of faith grow, like his physical force, with exercise. He considers over-belief a venial error compared with under-belief, and he progresses more easily in belief than he can retrograde into disbelief. Thus, Catholicism has spread more widely over the world than the less credulous Protestantism, and the more thaumaturgic Mormonism is better adapted to some minds —the Hindu's, for instance—than Catholicism.

In Mormonism, or rather in Mormon sacred literature, there are three epochs which bring us down to the present day. The first is the Monogamic age, that of the books of Mormon, and of Doctrines and Covenants—1830 to 1843. The second is the polygamic, from the first revelation of "celestial marriage" to Mr. Joseph Smith in 1843, and by him communicated to three followers only, until its final establishment by Mr. Brigham Young in 1852, when secrecy was no longer deemed necessary. The third is the materialistic period; the doctrine, "not founded on modern supernatural revelation but on reason and common sense," was the work of 1848–1849.

The first epoch laid the foundations of the Faith. It produced the Book of Mormon, "an abridgment written by the hand of Mormon upon plates taken from the plates of Nephi. Wherefore it is an abridgment of the record of the people of Nephi, and also of the Lamanites; written to the Lamanites, who are a remnant of the House of Israel; and also to Jew and Gentile; written by way of commandment, and also by the spirit of prophecy and of revelation. Written and sealed up, and hid up unto the Lord, that they might not be destroyed;

to come forth by the gift and power of God unto the interpretation thereof: sealed by the hand of Mormon, and hid up unto the Lord, to come forth in due time by the way of Gentile; the interpretation thereof by the gift of God!"

"An abridgment taken from the Book of Ether also; which is a record of the people of Jared; who were scattered at the time the Lord confounded the language of the people, when they were building a tower to get (!) to heaven; which is to show unto the remnant of the House of Israel what great things the Lord hath done for their fathers; and that they may know the covenants of the Lord, that they are not cast off for ever; and also to the convincing of the Jew and Gentile that Jesus is the CHRIST the ETERNAL GOD, manifesting himself to all nations; and now if there are faults they are the mistakes of men; therefore condemn not the things of God, that ye may be found spotless at the Judgment-seat of Christ. Moroni."

"Translated by Joseph Smith, Jun."

This extract is followed by the testimony of three witnesses, Oliver Cowdery, David Whitmer, and Martin Harris, who declare to have seen the Golden Plates with their engravings, which were shown to them by the power of God, not of man; and that they know by the voice of God that the records had been translated by the gift and power of God. Furthermore they "declare with words of soberness that an angel of God came down from heaven and he brought and laid before our eyes, that we beheld and saw the plates and the engravings thereon." They conclude with these solemn words, "And the honour be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost, which is one God, Amen." Then comes "also the testimony of eight witnesses"—four Whitmers, three Smiths, and one Page*—who make it "known unto all nations, kindred, tongues, and people unto whom this work shall come, that Joseph Smith, jun., the translator of this work, has shown unto us the plates of which hath been spoken, which have the appearance of gold; and as many of the leaves as the said Smith has translated we did handle with our hands; and we also saw the engravings thereon, all of which has the appearance of ancient work, and of curious

* The total witnesses are three, exactly the number that bore evidence to the original Christian Miracles.

workmanship. And this we bear record with words of soberness that the said Smith has shown unto us, for we have seen and hefted, and know of a surety that the said Smith has got the plates of which we have spoken. And we give our hands unto the world, to witness unto the world that which we have seen: and we lie not, God bearing witness of it."

The nature of the Latter Day Saints' Biblion will best be understood from the subjoined list of contents.*

* At the end of this chapter I have inserted a synopsis of Mormon chronology.

FIRST BOOK OF NEPHI.
Language of the Record.
Nephi's Abridgement.
Lehi's Dream.
Lehi departs into the wilderness
Nephi slayeth Laban.
Sariah complains of Lehi's Vision.
Contents of the brass plates.
Ishmael goes with Nephi.
Nephi's brethren rebel, and bind him.
Lehi's dream of the tree, rod, &c.
Messiah and John prophesied of.
Olive Branches broken off.
Nephi's Vision of Mary.
Do. the Crucifixion of Christ.
Do. darkness and earthquake.
Great abominable church.
Discovery of the promised land.
Bible spoken of.
Book of Mormon and Holy Ghost promised.
Other books come forth.
Bible and Book of Mormon one.
Promises to the Gentiles.
Two Churches.
The work of the Father to commence.
A man in white robes (John).
Nephites come to knowledge.
Rod of Iron.
The sons of Lehi take wives.
Director found (ball).
Nephi broke his bow.
Directors work by faith.
Ishmael died.
Lehi and Nephi threatened.
Nephi commanded to build a ship.
Nephi about to be worshipped by his brethren.
Ship finished and entered.
Dancing in the ship.
Nephi bound; ship driven back.
Arrived on the promised land.
Plates of ore made.
Zenos, Neum, and Zenock.
Isaiah's Writings.
Holy One of Israel.

SECOND BOOK OF NEPHI.
Lehi to his sons.
Opposition in all things.
Adam fell that men might be.
Joseph saw our day.
A choice seer.
Writings grow together.
Prophet promised to the Lamanites.
Joseph's prophecy on brass plates.
Lehi buried.
Nephi's life sought.
Nephi separated from Laman.
Temple built.
Skin of blackness.
Priests, &c., consecrated.
Make other plates.
Isaiah's words (by Jacob).
Angels to a devil.
Spirits and bodies re-united.
Baptism.
No kings upon this land.
Isaiah prophesieth.
Rod of the stem of Jesse.
Seed of Joseph perish not.
Law of Moses kept.
Christ shall shew himself.
Signs of Christ, birth and death.
Whisper from the dust, book sealed up.
Priestcraft forbidden.
Sealed book to be brought forth.
Three witnesses behold the book.
The words [read this, I pray thee].
Seal up the book again.
Their priests shall contend.
Teach with their learning and deny the Holy Ghost.
Rob the poor.
A Bible, a Bible.
Men judged of the Books.
White and a delightsome people.
Work commences among all people.
Lamb of God baptized.
Baptism by water and Holy Ghost.

BOOK OF JACOB.
Nephi anointed a King.
Nephi died.
Nephites and Lamanites.
A righteous branch from Joseph.
Lamanites shall scourge you.
More than one wife forbidden.
Trees, waves and mountains obey us.
Jews looked beyond the mark.
Tame olive tree.
Nethermost part of the vineyard.
Fruit laid up against the season.
Another branch.
Wild fruit had overcome.
Lord of the vineyard wept.
Branches overcome the roots.
Wild branches plucked off.
Sherem the anti-Christ.
A sign, Sherem smitten.
Enos takes the plates from his Father.

THE BOOK OF ENOS.
Enos, thy sins are forgiven.
Records threatened by Lamanites.
Lamanites eat raw meat.

THE BOOK OF JAROM.
Nephites waxed strong.
Lamanites drink blood.
Fortify cities.
Plates delivered to Omni.

THE BOOK OF OMNI.
Plates given to Amaron.
Plates given to Chemish.
Mosiah warned to flee.
Zarahemla discovered.
Engravings on a stone.
Coriantumr discovered.
His parents came from the tower.
Plates delivered to King Benjamin.

THE WORDS OF MORMON.
False Christs and Prophets.

BOOK OF MOSIAH.
Mosiah made king, and received.
The plates of brass, sword, and director.
King Benjamin teacheth the people.
Their tent doors towards the temple.
Coming of Christ foretold
Beggars not denied.
Sons and daughters.
Mosiah began to reign.
Ammon, &c. bounded and imprisoned.
Limhi's proclamation.
Twenty-four plates of gold.
Seer and Translator.

RECORD OF ZENIFF.
A battle fought.
King Laman died.
Noah made king.
Abinadi the prophet.
Resurrection.
Alma believed Abinadi.
Abinadi cast into prison and scourged with faggots.

The Book of Doctrines and Covenants is what the Vedanta is is to the Vedas, the Talmud to the Old Testament, the Tradi-

Waters of Mormon.
The daughters of the Lamanites stolen by king Noah's priests.
Records on plates of ore.
Past tribute of wine.
Lamanites deep asleep.
King Limhi baptized.
Priest and teachers labour.
Alma saw an angel.
Alma fell (dumb).
King Mosiah's sons preach to the Lamanites.
Translation of records.
Plates delivered by Limhi.
Translated by two stones.
People back to the tower.
Records given to Alma.
Judges appointed.
King Mosiah died.
Alma died.
Kings of Nephi ended.

THE BOOK OF ALMA.

Nehor slew Gideon.
Amlici made king.
Amlici slain in battle.
Amlicites painted red.
Alma baptized in Sidom.
Alma's preaching.
Alma ordained elders.
Commanded to meet often.
Alma saw an angel.
Amulek saw an angel.
Lawyers questioning Amulek.
Coins named.
Zeezrom the lawyer.
Zeezrom trembles.
Election spoken of.
Melchisedek priesthood.
Alma and Amulek stoned.
Records burned.
Prison rent.
Zeezrom healed and baptised.
Nehor's desolation.
Lamanites converted.
Flocks scattered at Sebus.
Ammon smote off arms.
Ammon and King Lamoni.
King Lamoni fell.
Ammon and the Queen.
King and Queen prostrate.
Aaron, &c. delivered.
Jerusalem built.
Preaching in Jerusalem.
Lamoni's Father converted.
Land Desolation and Bountiful.
Anti-Nephi-Lehies.
General council.
Swords buried.
1005 massacred.
Lamanites perish by fire.
Slavery forbidden.
Anti-Nephi-Lehies removed to Jershon, called Ammonites.
Tremendous battle.
Anti-Christ, Korihor.
Korihor struck dumb.
The devil in the form of an angel.
Korihor trodden down.
Alma's mission to Zoramites.
Rameumptom (holy stand).
Alma on hill Onidah.
Alma on faith.
Prophecy of Zenos.
Prophecy of Zenock.
Amulek's knowledge of Christ.
Charity recommended.
Same spirit possess your body.
Believers cast out.
Alma to Helaman.
Plates given to Helaman.
24 Plates and Directors.
Gazelem, a stone (secret).
Liahona, or compass.
Alma to Shiblon.
Alma to Corianton.
Unpardonable sin.
Resurrection.
Restoration.
Justice in punishment.
If, Adam, took, tree, life.
Mercy rob justice.
Moroni's strategem.
Slaughter of Lamanites.
Moroni's speech to Zerahemnah.
Prophecy of a soldier.
Lamanites covenant of peace.
Alma's prophecy 400 years after Christ.
Dwindle in unbelief.
Alma's strange departure.
Amalickiah leadeth away the people, destroyeth the church.
Standard of Moroni.
Joseph's coat rent.
Jacob's prophecy of Joseph's seed.
Fevers in the land, plants and roots for diseases.
Amalickiah's plot.
The king stabbed.
Amalickiah marries the Queen; and is acknowledged king.
Fortifications by Moroni.
Ditches filled with dead bodies.
Amalickiah's oath.
Pahoran appointed judge.
Army against king-men.
Amalickiah slain.
Ammoron made king.
Bountiful fortified.
Dissensions.
2000 Young Men.
Moroni's epistle to Ammoron.
Ammoron's answer.
Lamanites made drunk.
Moroni's strategem.
Helaman's epistle to Moroni.
Helaman's stratagem.
Mothers taught faith.
Lamanites surrendered.
City of Antiparah taken.
City of Cumeni taken.
200 of the 2000 fainted.
Prisoners rebel, slain.
Manti taken by stratagem.
Moroni to the governor.
Governor's answer.
King Pachus slain.
Cords and ladders prepared.
Nephihah taken.
Teancum's stratagem; slain.
Peace established.
Moronihah made commander.
Helaman dies.
Sacred things; Shiblon.
Moroni died.
5400 emigrated north.
Ships built by Hagoth.
Sacred things committed to Helaman; Shiblon died.

THE BOOK OF HELAMAN.

Pahoran died.
Pahoran appointed judge.
Kishkumen slew Pahoran.
Paanchi appointed judge.
Zarahemnah taken.
Paanchi killed.
Coriantumr slain.
Lamanites surrendered.
Helaman appointed judge.
Secret signs discovered and Kishkumen stabbed.
Gadianton fled.
Emigration northward.
Cement houses.
Many books and records.
Helaman died.
Nephi made judge.
Nephites become wicked.
Nephi gave the judgment seat to Cezoram.
Nephi and Lehi preached to the Lamanites.
3000 baptized.
Alma and Nephi surrounded with fire.
Angels administer.
Cezoram and son murdered.
Gadianton's robbers.
Gadianton's robbers destroyed.
Nephi's prophecy.
Gadianton robbers are judges.
Chief judge slain.
Seantum detected.
Keys of the kingdom.
Nephi taken away by the spirit.
Famine in the land.
Gadianton's band destroyed.
Famine removed.
Samuel's prophecy.
Tools lost.
Two days and a night, light.
Sign of the crucifixion.
Samuel stoned, &c.
Angels appeared.

BOOK OF NEPHI.

Lachoneus chief judge.
Nephi receives the records.
Nephi's strange departure.
No darkness at night.
Lamanites became whits.
Giddianhi to Lachoneus.
Gidgiddoni chief judge.
Giddianhi slain.
Zemnarihah hanged.
Robbers surrendered.
Mormon abridges the records.
Church began to be broken up.
Government of the land destroyed.
Chief judge murdered.
Divided into tribes.
Nephi raised the dead.
Sign of the crucifixion.
Cities destroyed, earthquakes, darkness, &c.
Law of Moses fulfilled.
Christ appeared to Nephites.
Print of the nails.
Nephi and others called.
Baptism commanded.
Doctrine of Christ.
Christ the end of the law.
Other sheep spoken of.
Blessed are the Gentiles.
Gentile wickedness on the land of Joseph.
Isaiah's words fulfilled.
Jesus healed the sick.
Christ blessed children.
Little ones encircled with fire.
Christ administered the sacrament.

tions to the Gospel, and the Ahadis to the Koran—a necessary supplement of amplifications and explanations. It contains two parts. The first, of sixty-four pages, is entitled "Lectures on Faith;" although published in the name of the Prophet Joseph, it was written, men say, by Sidney Rigdon. The second, which, with the appendix, concludes the book, is called Covenants and Commandments (*scil.* of the Lord to his servants of the Church of J. C. of L. D. Saints.)

Of the Lectures, the first is upon "Faith itself—what it is." It treats the subject in the normal way, showing how much faith is unconsciously exercised by man in his every-day life, and making it "the principle by which Jehovah acts." The second is concerning "the subject on which Faith rests," and contains an ancient chronology from Adam to Abraham, showing how the knowledge of God was preserved. The third, on the attri-

Christ taught his disciples.
Names of the twelve.
The twelve taught the multitude.
Baptism, Holy Ghost, and fire.
Disciples made white.
Jesus came, second time.
Faith, greed.
Christ breaks bread again.
Miracle, bread and wine.
Gentiles destroyed (Isaiah).
Zion established.
From Gentiles, to your seed.
Sign. Father's work commenced.
He shall be marred.
Gentiles destroyed (Isaiah).
New Jerusalem built.
Work commence among all the tribes.
Isaiah's words.
Saints did arise.
Malachi's prophecy.
Faith tried by the Book of Mormon.
Children's tongues loosed.
The Dead Raised.
Baptism and Holy Ghost.
All things common.
Christ appeared third time.
Moses's Church.
Three Nephites tarry.
The twelve caught up.
Change upon their bodies.
Disciples raiseth Dead.
Zarahemla Re-built.
Other Disciples ordained in their stead.
Nephi died; Amos kept the Records in his stead.
Amos died, and his son Amos kept the Records.
Prisons rent by the three.
Secret Combinations.
Amaron hid Records.

BOOK OF MORMON.

Three disciples taken away.
Mormon forbidden to preach.
Mormon appointed leader.
Samuel's prophecy fulfilled.
Mormon makes a Record.
Lands divided.
The Twelve shall judge.
Desolation taken.
Women and children sacrificed.
Mormon took the Records hid in Shim.
Mormon repented of his oath and took command.
Coming forth of records.
Records hid in Cumorah.
230,000 Nephites slain.
Shall not get gain by the Plates.
These things shall come forth out of the earth.
The state of the World.
Miracles cease, unbelief.
Disciples go into all the World and preach.
Language of the Book.

BOOK OF ETHER.

Twenty-four Plates found.
Jared cried unto the Lord.
Jared went down to the valley of Nimrod.
Deseret, honey-bee.
Barges built.
Decree of God, choice land.
Free from bondage.
Four years in tents at Moriancumer.
Lord talked three hours.
Barges like a dish.
Eight vessels, sixteen stones.
Lord touched the stones.
Finger of the Lord seen.
Jared's brother saw the Lord.
Two stones given.
Stones sealed up.
Went aboard of vessels.
Furious wind blew.
344 days' passage.
Orihah anointed king.
King Shule taken captive.
Shule's son slew Noah.
Jared carries his father away captive.
The daughter of Jared danced.
Jared anointed king by the hand of wickedness.
Jared murdered, and Akish reigned in his stead.
Names of Animals.
Poisonous serpents.
Ripliancb's cruel Reign.
Morianton anointed King.
Poisonous serpents destroyed.
Many wicked Kings.
Moroni on Faith.
Miracles by Faith.
Moroni saw Jesus.
New Jerusalem spoken of
Ether cast out.
Records finished in the cavity of a rock.
Secret Combinations.
War in all the land.
King Shared murdered by his High Priest, the High Priest was murdered by Lib.
Lib slain by Coriantumr.
Dead bodies cover the land and none to bury them.
2,000,000 of men slain.
Hill Ramah.
Cries rend the air
Slept on their Swords.
Coriantumr slew Shiz.
Do. fell to the earth.
Records hid by Ether.

BOOK OF MORONI.

Christ's words to the twelve.
Manner of Ordination.
Order of Sacrament.
Order of Baptism.
Faith, Hope, Charity.
Baptism of little children.
Women fed on their husbands' flesh.
Daughters murdered and eat.
Sufferings of women and children.
Cannot recommend them to God.
Moroni to the Lamanites.
420 years since the Sign.
Records sealed up (Moroni).
Gifts of the Spirit.
God's word shall bias forth.

butes of God, enlarges upon the dogma that "correct ideas of the character of God are necessary in order to the exercise of faith in him for life and salvation." The fourth shows the "connexion there is between correct ideas of the attributes of God, and the exercise of faith in him unto eternal life." The fifth, following those that treat of the being, character, perfection, and attributes of God, "Speaks of the Godhead,"—meaning the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost,—and explains the peculiarities of the "personage of tabernacle." The sixth "treats of the knowledge which persons must have, that the tenor of life which they preserve is according to the will of God, in order that they may be enabled to exercise faith in him unto life and salvation." The seventh and last discusses the effects of Faith. Each lecture is followed by "questions and answers on the foregoing principles," after the fashion of school catechisms, and to asterisk'd sentences a note is appended: "Let the student commit the paragraph to memory." There is one merit in the lectures: like Wesley's Hymns, they are written for the poor and simple; consequently they are read where a higher tone of thought and style would remain unheeded.

The "Index in order of date to Part Second" will explain its contents.* The appendix contains twelve pages of revelation on

* Index in the order of date to Part Second.

Sec.			
30.	Revelation to J. Smith, jun.	July	1828
31.	" to J. Smith, sen.	Feb.	1829
32.	" to J. Smith, jun. and M. Harris	March	"
3.	" to O. Cowdery and J. Smith, jun.	April	"
33.	" whether John tarried on earth	April	"
34.	" to O. Cowdery	April	"
35.	" on translation, to O. Cowdery	April	"
36.	" on losing some of the Book of Mormon	May	"
37.	" to H. Smith	May	"
38.	" to J. Knight, sen.	May	"
39.	" to D. Whitmer	June	"
40.	" to J. Whitmer	June	"
41.	" to P. Whitmer, jun.	June	"
42.	" to O. Cowdrey, D. Whitmer, and M. Harris	June	"
43.	" to Choose Twelve	June	"
44.	" M. Harris	Mar.	1830
2.	" on Church Government	Apr. 6	"
45.	" to J. Smith, jun.	Apr. 6	"
47.	" on Re-baptism	Apr.	"
48.	" to O. Cowdery, H. Smith, and S. H. Smith, &c.	Apr.	"
5.	" to J. Smith, jun., and O. Cowdery	July	"
46.	" to Emma Smith	July	"
49.	Revelation to J. Smith, jun., O. Cowdery, and J. Whitmer	July	1830
50.	" on Sacrament, first paragraph	Aug.	"
50.	" on ditto, 2d & 3d paragraphs	Sep.	"
51.	" to O. Cowdery and the Church	Sep.	"
52.	" to six Elders	Sep.	"
53.	" to E. Whitmer, P. Whitmer, jun., and J. Whitmer	Sep.	"
54.	" to T. B. Marsh	Sep.	"
55.	" to P. P. Pratt and Z. Peterson	Oct.	"
56.	" to E. Thayre and N. Sweet	Oct.	"
11.	" to O. Pratt	Nov.	"
57.	" to J. Smith, jun., and S. Rigdon	Dec.	"
58	" to E. Partridge	Dec.	"
12.	" to J. Smith, jun., and S. Rigdon	Dec.	"
59.	" to the Church	Jan. 2,	1831
60.	" to J. Covill	Jan. 3	"
61.	" concerning J. Covill	Jan.	"
13.	" appointing E. Partridge bishop	Feb. 4	"
14.	" on Laws of the Church	Feb. 9	"
	" to the Church	Feb.	"

marriage, government, and laws in general; and finally the "Manifesto of Joseph Smith" (no longer jun.) "and his twelve Hymns." Respecting the essential acts, the Doctrine and Covenants ends with announcing the following revelation (no date, but between 1835 and 1843): "Inasmuch as this Church of Christ has been reproached with the crime of fornication and polygamy, we declare that we believe that one man should have one wife, and one woman but one husband, except in case of death, when either is at liberty to marry again."

The polygamic era directly followed the miscegenistic: it became the custom of the church, when, on their well-conquered seats in the Great Desert, the Mormons found themselves in comparative security. I give in extenso the late communication of heaven upon the subject of—

CELESTIAL MARRIAGE:

A REVELATION ON THE PATRIARCHAL ORDER OF MATRIMONY, OR PLURALITY OF WIVES.

Given to Joseph Smith, the Seer, in Nauvoo, July 12th, 1843.

1. Verily, thus saith the Lord unto you my servant Joseph, that inasmuch as you have inquired of my hand, to know and understand wherein I, the Lord, justified my servants, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, as also Moses, David, and Solomon, my servants, as touching the principle and doctrine of their having many wives and concubines: Behold! and lo, I am the Lord thy God, and will answer thee as touching this matter: Therefore prepare thy heart to receive and obey the instructions which I am about to give unto you; for all those who have this law revealed unto them must obey the same; for behold! I reveal unto you a new and an everlasting covenant, and if ye abide not that covenant, then are ye damned; for no one can reject this covenant, and be permitted to enter into my glory; for all who will have a blessing at my hands shall abide the law which was appointed for that blessing, and the conditions thereof, as was instituted from before the foundation of the world; and as pertaining to the new and everlasting covenant, it was instituted for the fulness of my glory; and he that receiveth a fulness thereof must and shall abide the law, or he shall be damned, saith the Lord God.

2. And verily I say unto you, that the conditions of this law are these: All covenants, contracts, bonds, obligations, oaths, vows, performances, connections, associations, or expectations, that are not made and entered into, and sealed, by the Holy Spirit of promise, of him who is anointed, both as well for time and for all eternity, and that too most holy, by revelation and commandment, through the medium of mine anointed, whom I have appointed on the earth to hold this power, (and I have appointed unto my servant Joseph to hold this power in the last days, and there is never but one on the earth at a time on whom this power and the keys of the priesthood are conferred,) are of no efficacy, virtue, or force, in and after the resurrection from the dead: for all contracts that are not made unto this end have an end when men are dead.

3. Behold! mine house is a house of order, saith the Lord God, and not a house of confusion. Will I accept of an offering, saith the Lord, that is not made in my name? Or, will I receive at your hands that which I have not appointed? And will I appoint unto you, saith the

Lord, except he be by law, even as I and my Father ordained unto you before the world was? I am the Lord thy God, and I give unto you this commandment, that no man shall come unto the Father but by me, or by my word which is my law, saith the Lord; and everything that is in the world, whether it be ordained of men, by thrones, or principalities, or powers, or things of name, whatsoever they may be, that are not by me, or by my word, saith the Lord, shall be thrown down, and shall not remain after men are dead, neither in nor after the resurrection, saith the Lord your God; for whatsoever things remaineth are by me; and whatsoever things are not by me shall be shaken and destroyed.

4. Therefore, if a man marry him a wife in the world, and he marry her not by me, nor by my word, and he covenant with her so long as he is in the world, and she with him, their covenant and marriage is not of force when they are dead, and when they are out of the world; therefore they are not bound by my law when they are out of the world; therefore, when they are out of the world, they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are appointed angels in heaven, which angels are ministering servants, to minister for them who are worthy of a far more and an exceeding and an eternal weight of glory; for those angels did not abide my law, therefore they cannot be enlarged, but remain separately and singly, without exaltation, in their saved condition, to all eternity, and from henceforth are not Gods, but are angels of God for ever and ever.

5. And again, verily I say unto you, if a man marry a wife, and make a covenant with her for time and for all eternity, if that covenant is not by me or by my word, which is my law, and is not sealed by the Holy Spirit of promise, through him whom I have anointed and appointed unto this power, then it is not valid, neither of force, when they are out of the world, because they are not joined by me, saith the Lord, neither by my word; when they are out of the world, it cannot be received there, because the angels and the Gods are appointed there, by whom they cannot pass; they cannot, therefore, inherit my glory; for my house is a house of order, saith the Lord God.

6. And again, verily I say unto you, if a man marry a wife by my word, which is my law, and by the new and everlasting covenant, and it is sealed unto them by the Holy Spirit of promise, by him who is anointed, unto whom I have appointed this power, and the keys of this priesthood, and it shall be said unto them, ye shall come forth in the first resurrection; and if it be after the first resurrection, in the next resurrection; and shall inherit thrones, kingdoms, principalities and powers, dominions, all heights and depths, then shall it be written in the Lamb's Book of Life, that he shall commit no murder wherby to shed innocent blood; and if ye abide in my covenant and commit no murder wherby to shed innocent blood, it shall be done unto them

in all things whatsoever my servant hath put upon them, in time, and through all eternity, and shall be of full force when they are out of the world; and they shall pass by the angels, and the Gods, which are set there, to their exaltation and glory in all things, as hath been sealed upon their heads, which glory shall be a fulness and a continuation of the seeds for ever and ever.

7. Then shall they be Gods, because they have no end; therefore shall they be from everlasting to everlasting, because they continue; then shall they be above all, because all things are subject unto them. Then shall they be Gods, because they have all power, and the angels are subject unto them.

8. Verily, verily I say unto you, except ye abide my law, ye cannot attain to this glory; for strait is the gate, and narrow the way that leadeth unto the exaltation and continuation of the lives, and few there be that find it, because ye receive me not in the world, neither do ye know me. But if ye receive me in the world, then shall ye know me, and shall receive your exaltation, that where I am, ye shall be also. This is eternal life, to know the only wise and true God, and Jesus Christ whom he hath sent. I am He. Receive ye, therefore, my law. Broad is the gate, and wide the way that leadeth to the death; and many there are that go in thereat; because they receive me not, neither do they abide in my law.

9. Verily, verily I say unto you, if a man marry a wife according to my word, and they are sealed by the Holy Spirit of promise, according to mine appointment, and he or she shall commit any sin or transgression of the new and everlasting covenant whatever, and all manner of blasphemies, and if they commit no murder, wherein they shall shed innocent blood,—yet they shall come forth in the first resurrection, and enter into their exaltation; but they shall be destroyed in the flesh, and shall be delivered unto the buffetings of Satan, unto the day of redemption, saith the Lord God.

10. The blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, which shall not be forgiven in the world, nor out of the world, is in that ye commit murder, wherein ye shed innocent blood, and assent unto my death, after ye have received my new and everlasting covenant, saith the Lord God; and he that abideth not this law, can in no wise enter into my glory, but shall be damned, saith the Lord.

11. I am the Lord thy God, and will give unto thee the law of my Holy Priesthood, as was ordained by me, and my Father, before the world was. Abraham received all things, whatsoever he received, by revelation and commandment, by my word, saith the Lord, and hath entered into his exaltation, and sitteth upon his throne.

12. Abraham received promises concerning his seed, and of the fruit of his loins,—from whom loins ye are, viz. my servant Joseph,—which

were to continue, so long as they were in the world; and as touching Abraham and his seed, out of the world, they should continue; both in the world and out of the world should they continue as innumerable as the stars; or, if ye were to count the sand upon the sea-shore, ye could not number them. This promise is yours also, because ye are of Abraham, and the promise was made unto Abraham; and by this law are the continuation of the works of my Father, wherein he glorifieth himself. Go ye, therefore, and do the works of Abraham; enter ye into my law, and ye shall be saved. But if ye enter not into my law ye cannot receive the promises of my Father, which he made unto Abraham.

12. God commanded Abraham, and Sarah gave Hagar to Abraham to wife. And why did she do it? Because this was the law, and from Hagar sprang many people. This, therefore, was fulfilling, among other things, the promises. Was Abraham, therefore, under condemnation? Verily, I say unto you, *Nay*; for I, the Lord, commanded it. Abraham was commanded to offer his son Isaac; nevertheless, it was written, Thou shalt not kill. Abraham, however, did not refuse, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness.

13. Abraham received concubines, and they bare him children, and it was accounted unto him for righteousness, because they were given unto him for righteousness; because they were given unto him, and he abode in my law: as Isaac also, and Jacob did unto other things than that which they were commanded, and because they did some other things than that which they were commanded, they have entered into their exaltation, according to the promises, and sit upon thrones, and are not angels, but are Gods. David also received many wives and concubines, as also Solomon, and Moses my servant; and also many others of my servants, from the beginning of creation until this time; and in nothing did they sin, save in those things which they received not of me.

15. David's wives and concubines were given unto him, of me, by the hand of Nathan, my servant, and others of the prophets who had the keys of this power; and in none of these things did he sin against me, save in the case of Uriah and his wife; and therefore he hath fallen from his exaltation, and received his portion; and he shall not inherit them out of the world; for I gave them unto another, saith the Lord.

16. I am the Lord thy God, and I give unto thee, my servant Joseph, an appointment, and to restore all things; ask what ye will, and it shall be given unto you, according to my word; and as ye have asked concerning adultery, verily, verily I say unto you, if a man receiveth a wife in the new and everlasting covenant, and if she be with another man, and I have not appointed unto him by the holy anointing, she hath committed adultery, and shall be destroyed. If she be not in the new and everlasting covenant, and she be with another man, she hath com-

unto adultery; and if her husband be with another woman, and he was under a vow, he hath broken his vow, and hath committed adultery; and if she hath not committed adultery, but is innocent, and hath not broken her vow, and she knoweth it, and I reveal it unto you my servant Joseph, then shall you have power, by the power of my Holy Priesthood, to take her and give her unto him that hath not committed adultery, but hath been faithful, for he shall be made ruler over many; for I have conferred upon you the keys and power of the priesthood, wherein I restore all things, and make known unto you, all things in due time.

17. And verily, verily I say unto you, that whatsoever you seal on earth, shall be sealed in heaven; and whatsoever you bind on earth, in my name, and by my word, saith the Lord, it shall be eternally bound in the heavens; and whosesoever sins you remit on earth, shall be remitted eternally in the heavens; and whosesoever sins ye retain on earth, shall be retained in heaven.

18. And again, verily I say, whomsoever you bless I will bless; and whomsoever you curse I will curse, saith the Lord; for I, the Lord, am thy God.

19. And again, verily I say unto you, my servant Joseph, that whatsoever you give on earth, and to whomsoever you give any one on earth, by my word, and according to my law, it shall be visited with blessings, and not cursings, and with my power, saith the Lord, and shall be without condemnation on earth and in heaven; for I am the Lord thy God, and will be with thee even unto the end of the world, and through all eternity: for verily I seal upon you your exaltation, and prepare a throne for you in the kingdom of my Father, with Abraham your father. Behold, I have seen your sacrifices, and will forgive all your sins; I have seen your sacrifices, in obedience to that which I have told you; go, therefore, and I make a way for your escape, as I accepted the offering of Abraham, of his son Isaac.

20. Verily I say unto you, a commandment I give unto mine handmaid, Emma Smith, your wife, whom I have given unto you, that she may remain in my church, and partake not of that which I commanded you to offer unto her; for I did it, saith the Lord, to prove you all, as I did Abraham, and that I might require an offering at your hand, by covenant and sacrifice: and let mine handmaid, Emma Smith, receive all those that have been given unto my servant Joseph, and who are virtuous and pure before me; and those who are not pure, and have said they are pure, shall be destroyed, saith the Lord God; for I am the Lord thy God, and ye shall obey my voice: and I give unto my servant Joseph, that he shall be made ruler over many things, for he hath been faithful over a few things, and from henceforth I will strengthen him.

21. And I command mine handmaid, Emma Smith, to abide and

shalt unto my servant Joseph, and to none else. But if she will not abide this commandment, she shall be destroyed, saith the Lord; for I am the Lord thy God, and will destroy her if she abide not in my law; but if she will not abide this commandment, then shall my servant Joseph do all things for her, even as he hath said; and I will bless him, and multiply him, and give unto him an hundred-fold in this world, of fathers and mothers, brothers and sisters, houses and lands, wives and children, and crowns of eternal lives in the eternal worlds. And again, verily I say, let mine handmaid forgive my servant Joseph his trespasses, and then shall she be forgiven her trespasses wherein she has trespassed against me; and I, the Lord thy God, will bless her and multiply her, and make her heart to rejoice.

93. And again, I say, let not my servant Joseph put his property out of his hands, lest an enemy come and destroy him, for Satan seeketh to destroy; for I am the Lord thy God, and he is my servant; and behold I and he, I am with him, as I was with Abraham thy father, even unto his exaltation and glory.

94. Now, as touching the law of the priesthood, there are many things pertaining thereunto. Verily, if a man be called of my Father, as was Aaron, by mine own voice, and by the voice of him that sent me, and I have conferred upon him the keys of the power of this priesthood, if he do anything in my name, and according to my law, and by my word, he will not commit sin, and I will justify him. Let no one, therefore, set on my servant Joseph; for I will justify him; for he shall do the sacrifice which I require at his hands, for his transgressions, saith the Lord your God.

95. And again, as pertaining to the law of the priesthood: If any man espouse a virgin, and desire to espouse another, and the first give her consent; and if he espouse the second, and they are virgins, and have vowed to no other man, then is he justified; he cannot commit adultery, for they are given unto him; for he cannot commit adultery with that that belongeth unto him, and to none else: and if he have ten virgins given unto him by this law, he cannot commit adultery, for they belong to him, and they are given unto him: therefore is he justified. But if one, or either of the ten virgins, after she is espoused, shall be with another man, she has committed adultery, and shall be destroyed; for they are given unto him to multiply and replenish the earth, according to my commandment, and to fulfil the promise which was given by my Father before the foundation of the world, and for their exaltation in the eternal worlds, that they may bear the souls of men; for herein is the work of my Father continued, that he may be glorified.

96. And again, verily, verily, I say unto you, if any man have a wife who holds the keys of this power, and he teaches unto her the law of my priesthood as pertaining to these things, then shall she believe, and

administer unto him, or she shall be destroyed, saith the Lord your God; for I will destroy her; for I will magnify my name upon all those who receive and abide in my law. Therefore, it shall be lawful in me, if she receive not this law, for him to receive all things whatsoever I, the Lord his God, will give unto him; because she did not believe and administer unto him, according to my word; and she then becomes the transgressor, and he is exempt from the law of Sarah, who administered unto Abraham according to the law, when I commanded Abraham to take Hagar to wife. And now, as pertaining to this law: Verily, verily, I say unto you, I will reveal more unto you hereafter; therefore let this suffice for the present. Behold, I am Alpha and Omega. Amen.

Following the revelation is this explanation:—

PLURALITY OF WIVES is a doctrine very popular among most of mankind at the present day. It is practised by the most powerful nations of Asia and Africa, and by numerous nations inhabiting the islands of the sea, and by the aboriginal nations of the great Western Hemisphere. The one-wife system is confined principally to a few small nations inhabiting Europe, and to those who are of European origin inhabiting America. It is estimated by the most able historians of our day, that about four-fifths of the population of the globe believe and practice, according to their respective laws, the doctrine of a Plurality of Wives. If the popularity of a doctrine is in proportion to the numbers who believe in it, then it follows that the *Plurality* system is four times more popular among the inhabitants of the earth than the *one-wife* system.

Those nations who practise the Plurality doctrine consider it as virtuous and as right for one man to have many wives as to have one only. Therefore, they have enacted laws, not only giving this right to their citizens, but also protecting them in it, and punishing all those who infringe upon the chastity of the marriage covenant by committing adultery with any one of the wives of his neighbour. Those nations do not consider it possible for a man to commit adultery with any one of those women to whom he has been legally married according to their laws. The posterity raised up unto the husband through each of his wives are all considered to be legitimate, and provisions are made in their laws for those children, the same as if they were the children of one wife. Adulteries, fornications, and all unvirtuous conduct between the sexes, are severely punished by them. Indeed, Plurality among them is considered not only virtuous and right, but a great check or preventative against adulteries and unlawful connections, which are among the greatest evils with which nations are cursed, producing a vast amount of suffering and misery, devastation, and death; undermining the very foundations of happiness, and destroying the domestic circle.

Some of the heathen of Europe who believe in the one-wife system, have carefully forbidden a plurality of wives by their laws; and the consequence is, that the whole country among them is overrun with the most detestable practices; whoredom and unlawful connexions prevail through all their villages, towns, cities, and country places, to a most fearful extent. And among some of these nations these evils of whoredom, prostitution, and adultery, are licensed by law; while their piety would be considerably shocked to institute by law the Plurality system, as adopted by many neighbouring nations.

The Constitution and laws of the United States, being founded upon the principles of heathen, do not interfere with marriage relations, but leave the nation free to believe in and practice the doctrine of a Plurality of wives, or to confine themselves to the one-wife system, just as they choose. This is as it should be: it leaves the consciences of men unmolested, and so long as they behave in a peaceable manner, and do not infringe upon the rights of others, let it be left by the Constitution to marry one wife, or many, or none at all; and leave every man responsible to God for the righteousness or unrighteousness of his domestic relations.

The Constitution leaves the several States and Territories to enact such laws as they see proper in regard to Marriages, provided that they do not infringe upon the rights of conscience and the liberties guaranteed in that sacred document. Therefore, if any State or Territory has deemed it most best pertaining to such of its citizens the right to marry many wives, such laws would be perfectly constitutional; hence, the United States and Territories practice the one-wife system out of choice, and not because they are under any obligations so to do by the National Constitution. Indeed, we doubt very much whether any State or Territory has the constitutional right to make laws prohibiting the Plurality doctrine in cases where it is practised by religious societies, as a matter of conscience or as a doctrine of their religious faith. The first Article of the Amendments to the Constitution, says expressly, that "Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof." Now, if even Congress itself has no power to pass a law "prohibiting the free exercise of Religion," much less has any State or Territory power to pass such an Act.

The doctrine of a Plurality of Wives was believed and practised by Abraham, the father of the faithful; and we find that while in this position the angels of God frequently ministered to him, and at one time dined with him; and God continued Himself to him, and entered into familiar conversation with him. Neither God, nor His Angels reproved Abraham for being a Polygamist, but on the contrary, the Almighty greatly blessed him and made promises unto him, concerning both Isaac and Ishmael, clearly showing that Abraham practised what

is called Polygamy, under the sanction of the Almighty. Now if the father of the faithful was thus blessed, certainly it should not be considered irreligious for the faithful, who are called his children, to walk in the steps of their father Abraham. Indeed, if the Lord Himself, through His holy prophets, should give more wives unto His servants as He gave them unto the prophet David, it would be a great sin for them to refuse that which He gives. In such a case, it would become a matter of conscience with them, and a part of their religion, and they would be bound to exercise their faith in this doctrine, and practice it, or be condemned; therefore, Congress would have no power to prohibit the free exercise of this part of their religion; neither would the States or Territories have power, Constitutionally, to pass a law "prohibiting the free exercise thereof." Now a certain religious society, called Shakers, believe it to be wrong for them to marry even one wife; it certainly would be unconstitutional for either the Congress or the States to pass a law, compelling all people to marry at a certain age, because it would infringe upon the rights of conscience among the Shakers, and they would be prohibited the free exercise of their religion.

From the foregoing Revelation, given through Joseph the Seer, it will be seen that God has actually commanded some of His servants to take more wives, and has pointed out certain duties in regard to this marriage ceremony, showing that they must be married for time and for all eternity, and showing the advantages to be derived in a future state by this eternal union and showing still further, that, if they refuse to obey this command, after having the law revealed to them, they should be damned. This revelation, then, makes it a matter of conscience among all the Latter Day Saints; and they esteem it as a part and portion of their religion, and really believe that they cannot be saved and reject it. Has Congress power, then, to pass laws "prohibiting" the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints "the free exercise" of this article of their religion? Have any of the States or Territories a constitutional right to pass laws "prohibiting the free exercise of the religion" which the Church of the Saints conscientiously and sincerely believe to be essential to their salvation? No: they have no such right.

The Latter Day Saints have the most implicit confidence in all the revelations given through Joseph the Prophet; and they would much sooner lay down their lives and suffer martyrdom than to deny the least revelation that was ever given to him. In one of the revelations through him, we read that God raised up wise men and inspired them to write the Constitution of our country, that the freedom of the people might be maintained, according to the free agency which He had given to them; that every man might be accountable to God and not to man, so far as religious doctrines and conscience are concerned. And this more we mention that sacred instrument, framed by the wisdom of our

illustrious fathers, the more we are compelled to believe that an invisible power controlled, directed, and guided them in laying the foundation of liberty and freedom upon this great Western Hemisphere. To this land the Mahometan—the Hindoo—the Chinese can emigrate, and each bring with him his score of wives and his hundred children, and the glorious Constitution of our country will not interfere with his domestic relations. Under the broad banner of the Constitution, he is protected in all his family associations; none have a right to take any of his wives or his children from him. So, likewise, under the broad aegis of the Constitution, the Legislative Assembly of the Territory of Utah have the right to pass laws regulating their matrimonial relations and protecting each of their citizens in the right of marrying one or many wives, as the case may be. If Congress should repeal those laws, they could not do so on the ground of their being unconstitutional. And even if Congress should repeal them, there still would be no law in Utah prohibiting the free exercise of that religious right: neither do the citizens of Utah feel disposed to pass such an unconstitutional act which would infringe upon the most sacred rights of conscience.

Tradition and custom have great influence over nations. Long established customs, whether right or wrong, become sacred in the estimation of Mankind. Those nations who have been accustomed from time immemorial to the practice of what is called Polygamy, would consider a law abolishing it as the very height of injustice and oppression; the very idea of being limited to the one-wife system, would be considered not only oppressive and unjust, but absolutely absurd and ridiculous; it would be considered an innovation upon the long established usages, customs, and laws of numerous and powerful nations; an innovation of the most dangerous character, calculated to destroy the most sacred rights and privileges of family associations—to upset the very foundations of individual rights, rendered dear and sacred by being handed down to them from the most remote ages of antiquity.

On the other hand, the European nations who have been for centuries restricted by law to the one-wife theory, would consider it a shocking innovation upon the customs of their fathers to abolish their restrictive laws, and to give freedom and liberty, according to the plurality system. It is custom, then, in a great degree, that forms the consciences of nations and individuals in regard to the marriage relationships. Custom causes five-fifths of the population of the globe to decide that Polygamy, as it is called, is a good, and not an evil practice; custom causes the balance, or the remaining fifth, to decide in opposition to the great majority.

Those individuals who have strength of mind sufficient to divest themselves entirely from the influence of custom, and examine the doctrine of a Plurality of Wives, under the light of Reason and Revelation,

will be forced to the conclusion that it is a doctrine of Divine origin; that it was embraced and practised under the Divine sanction, by the most righteous men who ever lived on the earth: holy Prophets and Patriarchs, who were inspired by the Holy Ghost — who were servants in the visions of the Almighty — who conversed with holy angels — who saw God face to face, and talked with Him as a man talks with his friend — were "Polygamists," that is, they had many wives — raised up many children by them — and were never reproved by the Holy Ghost, nor by angels, nor by the Almighty, for believing in and practising such a doctrine; on the contrary, each one of these "Polygamists" received by revelation, promises and blessings, for himself, for his wives, and for his numerous children, born unto him by his numerous wives. Moreover, the Lord himself gave revelation to different wives belonging to the same man, revealing to them the great blessings which should rest upon their posterity; angels also were sent to comfort and bless them; and in no instance do we find them reproved for having joined themselves in marriage to a "Polygamist." Indeed, the Lord himself gave laws, not to prohibit "Polygamy," but showing His will in relation to the children raised up by the different wives of the same man; and furthermore, the Lord himself actually officiated in giving David all the wives of Saul; this occurred too when David already had several wives which he had previously taken: therefore, as the Lord did actually give into David's own bosom all the wives of Saul, He must not only have sanctioned "Polygamy," but established and instituted it upon a sure foundation, by giving the wives himself, the same as he gave Eve to Adam. Therefore, those who are completely divested from the influence of national customs, and who judge concerning this matter by the word of God, are compelled to believe that the Plurality of Wives was once sanctioned, for many ages, by the Almighty; and by a still further research of the Divine oracles, they find no intimations that this Divine institution was ever repealed. It was an institution, not originated under the law of Moses, but it was of a far more ancient date; and instead of being abolished by that law, it was sanctioned and perpetuated: and when Christ came to fulfil that law, and to do it away by the introduction of a better covenant. He did not abolish the plurality system; not being originated under that law, it was not made null and void when that law was done away. Indeed there were many things in connection with the law that were not abolished when the law was fulfilled; as, for instance, the ten commandments which the people under the Gospel covenant were still obliged to obey; and until we can find some law of God abolishing and prohibiting a plurality of wives, we are compelled to believe it a Divine institution; and we are, furthermore, compelled to believe, that if this institution be entered into now, under the same principles which governed the Holy Prophets and

Testaments, that God will appreciate it now as much as He did then; and that the persons who do these practices if conscientiously and sincerely, are just as honourable in the sight of God as those who have had one wife. And that which is honourable before God should be honourable before men: and no one should be despised when he acts in all good conscience upon any principle of doctrine; neither should there be laws in any of these States or Territories to compel any individual to act in violation to the dictates of his own conscience; but every one should be left in all matters of religion to his own choice, and thus become accountable to God, and not to his fellow-men.

If the people of this country have generally denied Mormon considerations even upon this subject; and if they have embraced religious which are more congenial to their minds than the religion of the Saints, we say to them, that they are welcome to their own religious views; the laws should not interfere with the exercise of their religious rights. If we cannot convince you by reason nor by the word of God, that your religion is wrong, we will not persecute you, but will sustain you in the privileges guaranteed in the great Charter of American Liberty: we ask from you the same generosity—protect us in the exercise of our religious rights—convince us of our errors of doctrine, if we have any, by reason, by logical arguments, or by the word of God, and we will be ever grateful for the information; and you will ever have the pleasing reflection that you have been the instruments in the hands of God of redeeming your fellow-beings from the darkness which you may see enveloping their minds. Come, then, let us reason together, and try to discover the pure light upon all subjects connected with our temporal or eternal happiness; and if we disagree in our judgments, let us impute it to the weakness and imperfections of our fallen nature, and let us pity each other, and endeavour with patience and meekness to reclaim from error, and save the immortal soul from an endless death.

Mormonism, it will be observed, claims at once to be like Christianity a progressive faith, with that development of spiritualism which the "Tracts for the Times" exemplified, and like El Islam, to be a restoration by revelation of the pure and primeval religion of the world. Convinced that plurality was unforbidden by the founders of the former faiths, the Mormons, as well as the followers of the Arabian prophet, have obeyed the command of their God to restore it, and that too although the Anglo-Scandinavian race everywhere agrees, after the fashion of pagan and monogamic Rome to make it a common law crime. Politically considered, the Mormons deem it necessary to their

existence as a people. Contrary to the scientific modern economists, from Mr. Malthus to Mr. Mill, they hold population, not wealth, learning, civilization, nor virtue, to be the strength of a nation; they believe that numbers decide the rise and fall of empires, and that, as nature works the extinction of her decrepit races by infecundity, and as the decline of a people's destiny is first detected in the diminution of its census, so they look upon the celestial promise of prolificity made to the patriarchs of old, as the highest temporal blessing. They admit in the lawgiver only a right to legislate for the good of those who are to obey his laws, not to gratify his "whimsy whamsies," and that the liberty which man claims by the dignity of his nature, permits him to choose the tie, whether polyandric, monogamic, or polygamic, that connects him with the opposite sex. Mr. Parley P. Pratt ("Marriage and Morals in Utah," p. 3) is explicit upon this subject.

"If we find laws, statutes, covenants, and precedents emanating from God; sworn to by himself to be everlasting; as a blessing to all nations:—if we find these have to do with crowding multiplicity of race, and with family and national organization and increase;—if such institutions are older than Moses, and are found perpetuated and unimpaired by Moses, and the Prophets, Jesus and the Apostles, then it will appear evident that no merely human legislation or authority, whether proceeding from emperor, king, or people, has a right to change, alter, or pervert them."

The third epoch is that of Materialism. In this the Mormons are preceded, to quote but a few schools, by the classic Academics,—by the Jews, who believed in a material and personal Demiurgus, and by many fathers of the Christian Church who held the soul of man whilst immortal to be material. Matter with them, as with Newton, is an aggregate of "solid, massy, hard, impenetrable, and moveable particles." Respecting the intelligence of its units and molecules—the test of true materialism—they are somewhat hazy; they deride the peripatetic dogma of perception by species, or phantasms, and at the same time ignore the doctrine of Hobbes, Spinoza, Priestley, and others, who recognize no separate existence for the mind or spirit*, except as a union of atoms or particles, which unor-

* "If man," says Dr. Priestley, "be a material being, and the power of thinking the result of a certain organization of the brain, does it not follow that all his

greatest have neither feeling nor thought. They define matter as a something that exists in real occupied space between any two instants, and is susceptible of division, and of being removed from one portion of space to another. Unlike other metaphysicians, who confess ignorance as to the substratum of mind and matter, they boast acquaintance with the essence of all substances, solidity, which with them is not a mere property. Although the ultimate atoms of matter cannot come under the cognizance of the senses, they are aware the law governed of their solidity, viz. that they fill a certain amount of space and are capable ever to fill a greater or a lesser — in fact, to believe otherwise would be impossible. They hold to different kinds of matter, for instance, the fleshly body and the spiritual body, which differ in quality as iron and oxygen. Mind and spirit, therefore, are real, objective, positive substances, which, like the astral spirit of the old alchymists, exists in close connexion with the component parts of the person, material body. Immaterialism is, with them, simply absurd; it is a belief which requires a man to put faith in a negation of time, space, and matter, in fact, in the zero of existence, in an entity whose use admits no proof, and which can be described only by negative conditions and qualities, by saying what it is not. They contend that the materiality of spirit once taken away would negative its existence; that an "immaterial being" is a contradiction in terms; and that immateriality is another name for nothing; therefore, that the spirituality of spirit "is an unphilosophical, unscriptural, and atheistical doctrine." The theses supported by Mr. Orson Pratt, the apostle of materialism, are the following:—

I. That Immaterialism is irrational opposed to true Philosophy.

II. That an Immaterial substance (i. e. a something existing which is not matter and is distinct from matter, which is not dependent upon matter for its existence, which possesses no

---

functions must be regulated by the laws of mechanism, and that of consequence all his actions proceed from an irresistible necessity?" It is the glory of the present age, the highest result of our nineteenth century physiological and statistic studies, brought to bear by a master-mind of the age upon the History of Civilization — to establish the fact that mankind progresses by investigating the laws of phenomena, in fact, to prove not to conjecture, that such modification really exists. I need hardly name Mr. Buckle.

properties and qualities in common with matter, and which possesses properties and qualities all entirely different from those of matter) cannot exist.

III. That a real material unchangeable spirit, possessing parts and extension, inhabits the body.

Immaterialists who believe in "an incomprehensible, incomprehensible, imaginary something without extension or parts, as taught in the first of the Thirty-nine Articles," are therefore the worshippers of an immortal Nihil—of a Nothing clothed with almighty powers.

It is abundantly evident that the partition between the spiritualist and the materialist is mainly philological, a dispute of words, a variation of terms, spirit and matter differing about as much as azote and nitrogen. The deductions, however, from the Mormon's premises lead him, as the following extracts prove, far.*

"The Godhead consists of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit. The Father is a material being. The substance of which he is composed is wholly material. It is a substance widely different in some respects from the various substances with which we are more immediately acquainted. In other respects it is precisely like all other materials. The substance of his person occupies space the same as other matter. It has solidity, length, breadth, and thickness, like other matter. The elementary materials of his body are not susceptible of occupying at the same time the same identical space with other matter. The substance of his person, like other matter, cannot be in two places at the same instant. It requires time for him to transport himself from place to place. It matters not how great the velocity of his movement, time is an essential ingredient to all motion, whether rapid or slow. It differs from other matter in the superiority of its powers, being intelligent, all-wise, and possessing the property of self-motion to a far greater extent than the coarser materials of nature. 'God is a spirit;' but that does not make him an immaterial being, a being that has no properties in common with matter."

* From Mr. Apostle Orson Pratt's "Absurdities of Immaterialism," and his treatise on the "Kingdom of God." It is hardly possible not to believe that the author has borrowed most of his theories from Mr. Cahill's "Rapidism."

"All the foregoing statements, in relation to the person of the Father, are equally applicable to the person of the Son."

"The Holy Spirit, being one part of the Godhead, is also a material substance, of the same nature and properties in every respect as the Spirits of the Father and Son. It exists in vast, incommensurable quantities, in connection with all material worlds. This is called God in the Scriptures, as well as the Father and Son. God the Father, and God the Son, cannot be everywhere present; indeed they cannot be even in two places at the same instant; but God the Holy Spirit is omnipresent. It extends through all space, intermingling with all other matter, yet no one atom of the Holy Spirit can be in two places at the same instant, which in all cases is an absolute impossibility. It exists with an incomprehensible quantities, which is the only possible way for any substance to be omnipresent. All the innumerable phenomena of universal nature are produced in their origin by the united presence of this intelligent, all-wise, and all-powerful material substance called the Holy Spirit. It is the most active matter in the universe, producing all its operations according to fixed and definite laws enjoined by itself, in conjunction with the Father and the Son. What are called the laws of nature are nothing more nor less than the fixed manner by which this spiritual matter operates. Each atom of the Holy Spirit is intelligent, and, like other matter, has solidity, form, and size, and occupies space. Two atoms of this Spirit cannot occupy the same space at the same time; neither can one atom, as before stated, occupy two separate spaces at the same time. In all these respects it does not differ in the least from all other matter. Its distinguishing characteristics from other matter are its almighty power and infinite wisdom, and many other glorious attributes which other materials do not possess. If several of the atoms of this Spirit should unite indeed together in the form of a person, then this person of the Holy Spirit would be subject to the same necessity" (N.B., this ast-singhis singhs) "as the other two persons of the Godhead—that is, it could not be everywhere present. No finite number of atoms can be omnipresent. An infinite number of atoms is requisite to be everywhere in infinite space. Two persons receiving the gift of the Holy Spirit do not receive at the same time the same

identical particles, though they each receive a substance exactly similar in kind. It would be as impossible for them to receive the same identical atoms at the same instant as it would be for two men at the same time to drink the same identical pint of water."

I will offer another instance of the danger of meddling with such edged tools as mind and matter — attempting what finite mind knows nothing beyond certain proportion — in the following answer addressed by Mr. Pratt, to the many who have been "traditionized in the absurd doctrines of immutability:" "The resemblance between man and God has reference, as we have already observed, to the shape or figure; other qualities may or may not resemble each other. Man has legs, so has God; as is evident from his appearance to Abraham. Man walks with his legs; so does God sometimes, as is evident from his going with Abraham towards Sodom. God cannot only walk, but he can move up or down through the air without using his legs as in the process of walking (Gen. xviii. 22, and xi. 5, and xxxv. 13)—'a man wrestled with Jacob until the breaking of day:' after which Jacob says—'I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved.' (Gen. xxxii. 24–30.) That this person had legs is evident from his wrestling with Jacob. His image and likeness was so much like man's, that Jacob at first supposed him to be a man. God, though in the figure of a man, has many powers that man has not got. He can go upward through the air. He can waft himself from world to world by his own self-moving powers. These are powers not possessed by man, only through faith, as in the instances of Enoch and Elijah. Therefore, though in the figure of a man, he has powers far superior to man."

This part of the subject may profitably be concluded by quoting the venerable adage, "*Qui nescit dissimulare nescit vivere.*"

I now offer to the reader a few remarks upon the fourteen articles of the Mormon doxology*, leaving him to settle whether it be a kakodoxy or a kakistodoxy.

I. "WE BELIEVE IN GOD, THE ETERNAL FATHER, AND HIS SON JESUS CHRIST, AND IN THE HOLY GHOST." — Of the

* From an article published in the "Millennial Star" and signed by the Apostle Orson Hyde.

thousand sects and systems that have used this venerable Kalmah or formula of Christian faith, none have interpreted it more peculiarly than the Mormons.

The First Person is a perfected man, once a dweller upon earth: advancing in intelligence and power, he became such that in comparison with man he may be called the Infinite. Mr. Joseph Smith, in his last sermon preached at Nauvoo, thus develops his remarkable anthropomorphosis:—"First, God himself who sits enthroned in yonder heavens, is a man like one of yourselves; that is the great secret. If the veil was rent to-day, and the great God who holds this world in its orbit, and upholds all things by his power, if you were to see him to-day, you would see him in all the person, image, and very form as a man: for Adam was created in the very fashion and image of God; Adam received instruction, walked, talked, and conversed with Him, as one man talks and converses with another."

The Second Person is the "Son Jesus Christ," the material offspring of the First by the Virgin Mary who was duly married, after betrothal by the angel Gabriel, to the Eternal Father, on the plains of Palestine: the Holy Babe was the "tabernacle" prepared for and assumed by the Spirit Son. The Son is the Creator: when in the material spirit still, he took of the "unformed chaotic matter element which had an existence from the time God had, and in which dwells all the glory," and formed and peopled this planetary world, which he afterwards redeemed. He is to be worshipped as Lord of all, heir of the Father in power, creation, and dominion. "What did Jesus do?" "Why, I do the things that I saw my Father do when worlds came rolling into existence. I saw my Father work out his kingdom with fear and trembling, and I must do the same." ("Last Sermon," p. 61.)

The Paraclete has already been described: it differs from the other two Persons, in being a merely spirit-material soul or existence without a "tabernacle." Thus the Mormons mingle with a Trinity a very distinct, though not a conflicting Duality.

The Mormon Godhead may be illustrated by a council composed of three men, possessing equal wisdom, knowledge, and truth, together with equal qualifications in every other respect:

each would be a separate person or a substance distinct from the other two, and yet the three would compose but one body. This body consists of three, viz., Elohaim, Jehovah, and Michael, which is Adam. From the Christian apostles and the Apocalypse, the Mormons deduce the dogma of Gods in an *infinitum* ascending series: man, however, must limit his obedience to the last Heavenly Father and Son revealed by the Holy Spirit. And as God is perfect man, so is perfect man God: any individual, by faith and obedience, can, as the Brahminical faith asserts, rise to the position of a deity, until, attaining the power of forming a planet, peopling, redeeming it, and sitting there enthroned in everlasting power. The Mormons, like the Moslems, believe that—"things of earth, customs, and ceremonies, being patterned after things in the Spirit world and future abodes of the Gods"—there are inferior glories and pleasures for "hewers of wood and drawers of water." In the eternal heavens there are three great mansions, the celestial of the sun, the celestial of the stars, and the terrestrial: the other state is called the Lake of Fire, or the Burning Cauldron.

II. "WE BELIEVE THAT MEN WILL BE PUNISHED FOR THEIR OWN SINS, AND NOT FOR ADAM'S TRANSGRESSION."—Yet the Mormons hold the Son to be necessary to reconcile fallen man to the Father and the Holy Spirit, to sanctify and purify the affections of man, and also to dwell in them as a teacher of truth. "The spiritual substance of man was formed in the beginning after the same image, as the spiritual substance of the persons of the Father and the Son. Previously to the fall these Spirits were all moral in their nature; by the fall the spirits of men lost their morality and virtue, but not their essence—that continued the same; by the new birth man regains his morality and virtue, while the essence remains the same; it now becomes a moral, virtuous image, whereas the same substance was before immoral. Paul (1 Cor. xv. 49), in speaking of the resurrection, says, 'As we have borne the image of the earthly, let us bear also the image of the heavenly!'" Unlike the more advanced faiths—El Islam and Unitarianism—the Mormons retain the doctrine of a "fall." It contrasts strangely with their dogma of man's perfectibility. They have not attempted to steer clear

between the Scylla and Charybdis of predestination and free will.

III. "We believe that through the Atonement of Christ all mankind may be saved by obedience to the laws and ordinances of the Gospel."—After Adam had fallen from his primal purity, a council was held in heaven to debate how man should be saved or redeemed from the state of evil. The elder brother Lucifer, son of the morning, the bright star in glory, and the leader of heavenly hosts, declared, when appealed to, that he would save man in his sins. But he who is emphatically called "the Son"—Christ—answered, I will save him *from* his sins. Lucifer, the "archangel ruined," rebelled, was cast out from the planetary abode of the Father, and became, under the name of Satan, the great ruler and "head devil" of evil spirits, and of the lower sort of imps and *succubi*. I cannot say whether in their mysteries the Mormons represent Satanas as the handsome man of El Islam, or the horned, tailed, and cloven-footed monster which monkish Europe fashioned probably after pagan Pan.

IV. "We believe these ordinances are, 1st, Faith in the Lord Jesus; 2nd, Repentance; 3rd, Baptism by immersion for the remission of sins; 4th, Laying on of hands by the gift of the Holy Spirit; 5th, The Lord's Supper."—Faith is not only the "evidence of things that appear not, the substance of things to be hoped for," the first principle of action, and an exercise of the will in intelligent beings towards accomplishing holy works and purposes, with a view to celestial glory, it is also the source of power both on earth and in heaven. We find that by faith God created the world (Heb. xi. 3), and "take this principle or attribute away from the Deity, he would cease to exist." ("Lectures on Faith," sec. 1.) "Faith, then, is the first great governing principle which has power, dominion, and authority over all things." (Ibid.) Of the second ordinance, it was revealed, "Say nothing but repentance unto this generation." ("Covenants and Commandments," sec. 27); a very comprehensive and valuable rule to those under whom their brethren must sin. As regards the third, the child succeeds its parent

in moral responsibility at eight years of age, when it must be baptized "in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, amen," into the church. Infant baptism is regarded as a Babylon or innovation—a sin. Baptism by immersion—any other method being considered a vain ceremony—remits our peccata, but it must be repeated after each mortal act. ("Covenants and Commandments," sec. 2, par. 21.) Vicarious baptism for the dead is founded upon St. Paul's saying concerning the fathers, that they cannot without us be made perfect, and "otherwise what shall they do that are baptized for the dead, if the dead rise not again at all? Why are they then baptized for them?" (1 Cor. xv. 29.) Immersion in water is the symbol of death, emersion, of the resurrection, and the baptismal font is a simile of the grave; but baptism for the dead is acceptable only in the Temple. ("Covenants and Commandments," sec. 103.) There being a probationary state whilst the earth endures in the Spirit world—the purgatorial doctrine of Virgil and others—the dead can by proxy "fulfil all righteousness;" and the saints are enjoined that "the greatest responsibility that God has laid upon us is to look after our dead:" as Mr. Joseph Smith, in his "Last Sermon," says, "Every man who has got a friend in the eternal world can save him, unless he has committed the unpardonable sin; so you can see how you can be a Saviour." A man baptized for deceased relations, traces back the line to one that held the priesthood among his progenitors, who, being a saint, will take the place of sponsor, and relieve him of further responsibility. All thus admitted to salvation will be added at the resurrection to the household of the baptized person, who will reign as a patriarch for ever, his rank and power among kingly spirits being proportioned to his wives and his children—adopted or begotten—and his baptisms. The fourth ordinance, or laying on of hands by the water's side, is a perfection of the regeneration begun in baptism, and whereby the recipient is promoted to the Melchisedek priesthood: the order was revealed, or rather renewed, in 1831. ("Covenants and Commandments," sec. 66.) The fifth ordinance, touching the Eucharist, is instituted "in remembrance of the Lord Jesus:" the elder or priest administers it kneeling with the church, praying and blessing first the bread and then

the wine." ("Covenants and Commandments," sec. 3.) The second element was changed by a direct revelation (Sept. 1830), saying, "Thou shalt not purchase wine nor strong drink of your enemies," since which time water has been substituted. Mormons, young and old, equally take the sacrament every sabbath.

V. "We believe that men must be called of God by inspiration, and by laying on of hands from those who are duly commissioned to preach the Gospel and administer in the ordinances thereof." — The Mormons hold to a regular apostolic succession. "Every elder" (which includes the apostle), "priest, teacher, or deacon, is to be ordained according to the gifts and callings of God unto him; and he is to be ordained by the power of the Holy Ghost, which is in the one who ordains him."

VI. "We believe in the same organization that existed in the primitive Church, viz. Apostles, Prophets, Pastors, Evangelists, &c." — The proper signification of these words will be explained when treating of the Mormon hierarchy.

VII. "We believe in the powers and gifts of the everlasting Gospel, viz. the gift of faith, discerning of spirits, prophecy, revelations, visions, healing, tongues, and the interpretation of tongues, wisdom, charity, brotherly love, &c." — The everlasting gospel means the universal order and arrangement of things springing from the "two self-existing principles of intelligence and element, or matter," and forming the law under which the primordial Gods came into being. According to Mr. Joseph Smith, "God himself could not create himself," and "Intelligence exists upon a self-existent principle: it is a spirit from age to age, and there is no creation about it." In the far eternity two of the elementary material atoms met, composed intelligence, and calling in a third to council, united in what became the first power, superior because prior to all others, and overlooking by the union of other atoms. Under this union arose a "law governing itself and all things"—the everlasting gospel. The new has not left on record the manner in

which the Head God originated: the other Gods, however, sprung from him as children. Heaven has not only kings but queens,—the Sakti of Hindostan, and the various Ario-pagan faiths,—who are the mothers of gods, of man's souls, and of all spiritual existences. St. John saw a portion of the everlasting gospel in the "little book" in the hand of the angel "coming down from heaven" to proclaim again on earth the Church of Christ, a type of Moroni, who taught the fulness of knowledge to Joseph the Seer, that the gladder tidings might be preached to men with the "signs following" which were promised to the primitive apostles.

As regards the discerning of spirits, the human soul is not visible to mortal eyes without a miracle, nor is it ponderable: it passes through the body as the electric fluid through the earth. Yet, in reality, it is more substantial than the body, for it cannot be changed nor destroyed; it "co-existed equal with God," and had no beginning, which would argue the possibility of an end, and "it is immortal as God himself." It is incorrect: "God never did have power to create the spirit of man at all—the very idea lessens man in my estimation—I know better." ("Last Sermon," p. 62.) Spiritual existences have a choice of two paths. Either they must remain cribbed, cabined, and confined in their own ethereal order and proper sphere, to be called and sent as angels, heralds, or ministers, from one planet or planetary system to another; and thus the Mormon, as the Moslem, places angelic nature below human, saying with St. Paul (1 Cor. vi. 3), "Know you not that we shall judge angels?" Or they may choose, like the preexisted spirits of El Islam in the Yaum i Alast—the Day of Am-I-Not (thy God)?—the probation of an earthly tabernacle; and ignoring their past existence, descend below all things to attain a higher than celestial glory, and perfection in the attributes of power and happiness. As with the metempsychosist, there are grades of tabernacles. The lowest of humans is the African, who being a "servant of servants unto his brethren," is "cursed as to the priesthood," and therefore cannot "attain to anything above a dim-shining glory." Above him is the Indian, for the red men, through repentance, obedience, and acceptance of the new Evangelium, can re-become a "fair and delightsome people," worthy of their Hebrew sires. Below the negro is the brute tabernacle, into

which the still rebellious spirit demands, until, yielding to gospel law, it is permitted to retrace its course through the successive changes to splendor and perfection. So "when we are tormented by a refractory horse or an obstinate ass, it may not be amiss to reflect that they were actuated by an aperient soul, and exemplifying a few of the human infirmities." The same words might be spoken orthodoxically by a Jain or a Banyan.

The soul is supposed to take possession of the tabernacle at the quickening of the embryon. At baptism the Saint may ask in faith for some particular spirit or genius — an idea familiar to the Adepts and Spiritualists of this generation. Every one also has evil, false, and seducing spirits at variance with the good, a fancy reminding us of the poetical Moslem picture of the good guardian sitting upon man's right shoulder, and whispering into his ear suggestions against which the bad spirit on the left contends. Revelations are received by prayer and mighty faith, but only when diligence and sagacity fail to secure the desired information — where God has appointed means he will not work by miracles, nor will a "*deus profundis*" act without a more concrete action. Heavenly communications vouchsafed to the seer must be registered, and kept for promulgation when the Saints can bear them; for many "would be offended and turn back if the whole truth" — polygamy, for instance — "were dashed down in a mass before them." Of prophetic times, it may be observed, that the habitat of God the Father is the planet Kolob, whose revolutions — one of which is the beginning and the end of a day equal to 1000 terrestrial years — are the measure of heavenly time. The Deity being finite, employs agents and auxiliaries, *e.g.* light, sound, electricity, inspiration, to communicate knowledge to his world of worlds. An angel commissioned as a messenger to earth is taken either from the chief or from a minor planet, and it naturally measures time by the days and weeks, the months and years, of its own home — a style of computation which must not a little confuse our poor human chronology.

"Tongues" does not signify, as at the date of the first Pentecost, an ability to address heteroglottists in their several languages — which would render the gift somewhat too precise and Mormonism for these days. It means that man moved by

the Spirit shall utter any set of sounds unintelligible even to himself, but which being known to the Lord, may, by special permission, to exercise the "gift of interpretation of tongues," be explained by another to those addressed. The man gifted with "tongues" must "rise on his feet, lean in faith on Christ, and open his lips, utter a song in such cadence as he chooses, and the Spirit of the Lord will give an interpreter, and make it a language." The linguistic feat has of late years been well known in England, where it was of course set down to imposture. It may more charitably be explained by an abnormal affection of the organ of language on the part of the speaker of "tongues," and in the interpreter by the effect of a fervent and fooling faith.

VIII. "WE BELIEVE THE WORD OF GOD RECORDED IN THE BIBLE; WE ALSO BELIEVE THE WORD OF GOD RECORDED IN THE BOOK OF MORMON, AND IN ALL OTHER GOOD BOOKS."—Some Christians have contended that the Bibles of the Jews have been altered; that the last chapter (verse 5) of Deuteronomy, for instance, recording the death and burial of Moses, was not written by Moses. The Moslems assert that the Scripture, of both Hebrew and Christian, has not only been misunderstood, but has designedly been corrupted by Baulús (St. Paul), and other Greekish Jews; that the Gospel of Infancy, and the similar compositions now banished into the apocryphal New Testament, are mere excrescences upon the pure commands of Jesus. The Mormons hold with the latter. They believe, however, that the infinite errors and interpretations have been removed by "Joseph the Seer," to whom was given the "key of all languages,"—he has quoted in his writings only 15 out of 3500,—and the following specimen of his ultra-Bentleian emendations, borrowed from the "Last Sermon," may suffice:—

"I will make a comment on the very first sentence of the history of the creation in the Bible" (i.e. "in King James's version," he had probably never seen even the Douay translation). "It first read, 'The head one of the Gods brought forth the Gods.'* If

* I need hardly say that in the original, the words are "at its head (beginning) the Gods (he) created the Earth and the Heaven."

you do not believe it, you do not believe the learned men of God. And in further explanation it means, 'The Head God called together the Gods, and sat in grand council. The grand councillors sat in yonder heavens, and contemplated the worlds that were created at that time.' The Bible is, therefore, held to be the foundation book." Mr. Joseph Smith's inspired translations or impudent *effusions* is believed to exist in MS.: in due time it will probably be promulgated. But the Word of God is not confined to the Bible; the Book of Mormon and the Doctrine and Covenants are of equal authority, strands of the "three-fold cord," connecting by the church God and man. If these revelations contradict one another, the stumbling-block to the weak in faith is easily removed by considering the "situations" under which they were vouchsafed: "heaven's government is conducted on the principle of adapting revelation to the varied circumstances of the children of the kingdom"—a dogma common to all revelationists. Additional items may be supplied to the Mormons from day to day, a process by which a "flood of light has poured into their souls, and raised them to a view of the glorious things above." The present seer, revelator, translator, and prophet, however, shows his high wisdom by seeing, revealing, translating, and prophesying as little as possible. Yet he even repeats, and probably believes, that revelation is the rock upon which the church is founded.

IX. "WE BELIEVE ALL THAT GOD HAS REVEALED, ALL THAT HE DOES NOW REVEAL, AND WE BELIEVE THAT HE WILL REVEAL MANY MORE GREAT AND IMPORTANT THINGS PERTAINING TO THE KINGDOM OF GOD AND MESSIAH'S SECOND COMING."—Much of this has been explained above. The Second Coming of Christ is for the restoration or restitution of all things, as foretold by the prophet Isaiah. When the living earth was created, the dry land emerged from the waters, which gathered by command into one place. The "Voice of Warning" draws an interesting picture of a state of things hitherto unknown to geologist and palæogeographer. "There was one vast ocean rolling around a single immense body of land, unbroken as to continents and islands; it was a beautiful plain, interspersed with gently rising hills and sloping vales; its climate delight-

fully varied with heat and cold, wet and dry; crowning the year with productions grateful to men and animals, while from the flowery plain or spicy grove sweet odours were wafted on every breeze, and all the vast creation of animated beings breathed nought but health, peace, and joy." Over this paradise, this general garden, "man reigned and talked face to face with the Supreme, with only a dimming veil between." After the diffusion of sin, which followed the fall, came the purification of the Noachian cataclysm, and in the days of Peleg, "the earth was divided," i. e. the Homeric circumambient sea was interposed between portions of land rent asunder, which earthquakes and upheavals subsequently broke into fragments and islands. We learn from the whole and varied Scriptures, that before the Second Coming of Christ, the several pieces shall be dovetailed into one, as they were in the morn of creation, and the retiring sea shall reassume its pristine place, when Samudra Devta was enthroned by the Rishis. The earth is thus restored for a people purified to innocence, and is fitted for the first resurrection of the body to reign with the Saviour for a thousand years.

X. "WE BELIEVE IN THE LITERAL GATHERING OF ISRAEL, AND IN THE RESTORATION OF THE TEN TRIBES; THAT ZION WILL BE ESTABLISHED UPON THE WESTERN CONTINENT; THAT CHRIST WILL REIGN PERSONALLY UPON THE EARTH A THOUSAND YEARS; AND THAT THE EARTH WILL BE RENEWED AND RECEIVE ITS PARADISIACAL GLORY." — The only novelty in this article is the "location" of Zion, which has already been transferred from Palestine to the celestial regions in the valley of the Mississippi; this, in the present era, when the old cradles of civilisation upon the Ganges and Indus, the Euphrates and the Nile, have been well nigh depopulated or exhausted, promises to become one of the vast hives from which the human swarms shall issue. The American continent, as the Book of Mormon informs us, was, at the time of the crucifixion, shaken to its foundation: towns and cities, lakes and mountains, were buried and formed when "the earth writhed in the convulsive throes of agonising nature." After all the seed of Israel shall have been raised from the dead, they shall flock to Zion

in Judea, and the saints of other races shall be gathered to New Jerusalem, in America—both these cities shall be "built with fine stones, and the beauty of all precious things." At the end of the millennium, comes the great sabbath of rest and enjoyment, the earth shall become celestial through the baptism of fire, whilst the two holy cities shall be caught up (literally) into heaven, to descend with the Lord God for their light and their temple, and shall remain for ever on the new earth "under the bright canopy of the new heavens."

XI. "WE BELIEVE IN THE LITERAL RESURRECTION OF THE BODY, AND THAT THE BODY OF THE DEAD HAVE NOT AGAIN UNITE THE TOGETHER THEIR SPIRIT."—Man, it has been shown, is a duality of elements. The body is gross, the spirit—under which the intellect or mind is included—is refined matter, permeating, vivifying, and controlling the former: the union or fusion of the two constitutes the "living soul" alluded to by Moses (Gen. ii. 7) in the Adamical creation. Death followed the fall of the great patriarch, who, we are told, is called in Scripture Michael, the Ancient of Days, with hair like wool, &c. But in technical Mormon phrase, "Adam fell that man might be," and ate the forbidden fruit with a full fore-knowledge of the consequences,—a Shiah belief. The "fall," therefore, was a matter of previous arrangement, in order that spirits choosing to undertake their probations, might be fitted with "tabernacles," and be born of woman. Death separates the flesh and the spirit for a useful purpose, but the latter keeps guard over every particle of the former, until at the fiat of resurrection, the body is again "clothed upon," and perfect man is the result—a doctrine familiar to the moderns. Such is also the orthodox Sunnite faith. The heretical peculiarity of the Mormon resurrection is this:—the body will be the same as before, "except the blood," which is the natural life, and, consequently, the principle of mortality. A man restored to flesh and blood would be subject to death; "flesh and bones," therefore, will be the constitution of the "resurrected" body. This idea clearly derives from the Semitic physiology, which teaches that "the life of the flesh is in the blood." (Levit. xvii. 14.) Life being, according to

the mechanism, not an absolute existence nor objective entity, but a property or condition of the corporeal mechanism; the working, as it were, of the engine until arrested by material lesion. It is confirmed, in the Mormon mind, by the Saviour bidding his disciples to handle his limbs, and to know that he had flesh and bones, not blood.

XII. "WE CLAIM THE PRIVILEGE OF WORSHIPPING ALMIGHTY GOD ACCORDING TO THE DICTATES OF CONSCIENCE UNMOLESTED, AND ALLOW ALL MEN THE SAME PRIVILEGE, LET THEM WORSHIP HOW OR WHERE THEY MAY." — This article embodies the tenets of Roger Williams, who in establishing his simple democracy, provided that the will of the majority should rule, but "only in civil things." The charter of Rhode Island (1644) enshrines the memorable words: "No person within the said colony shall be molested, punished, disquieted or called in question for any differences of opinion in matters of religion, who does not actually disturb the public peace." But how often has this been mouthed — how little it has affected mankind! Would London — boasting in the nineteenth century to be the most tolerant of cities — allow the Cardinal of Westminster to walk in procession through her streets?

XIII. "WE BELIEVE IN BEING SUBJECT TO KINGS, QUEENS, PRESIDENTS, RULERS, AND MAGISTRATES, IN OBEYING, HONORING, AND SUSTAINING THE LAW." — When treating of the hierarchy, it will be made apparent that subjection to temporals and Gentiles must be purely nominal. At the same time it must be owned, that throughout North America, I may say throughout the New World, the Mormon polity is the only fixed and reasonable form of government. The "turnpike-road of history," which Fisher Ames, nearly a century ago, described as "white with the tomb-stones of republics," is in a fair way to receive fresh accessions, whilst the land of the Saints promises continuance and progress.

XIV. "WE BELIEVE IN BEING HONEST, TRUE, CHASTE, TEMPERATE, BENEVOLENT, VIRTUOUS, AND UPRIGHT, AND IN DOING

GOOD TO ANY MAN; INWARD WE MAY SAY THAT WE FOLLOW THE ADMONITION OF PAUL; WE 'BELIEVE ALL THINGS,' WE 'HOPE ALL THINGS,' WE HAVE ENDURED VERY MANY THINGS, AND HOPE TO BE ABLE TO 'ENDURE ALL THINGS.' EVERY THING LOVELY, VIRTUOUS, PRAISEWORTHY, AND OF GOOD REPORT, WE SEEK AFTER, LOOKING FORWARD TO THE 'RECOMPENSE OF REWARD.' BUT AN IDLE OR LAZY PERSON CANNOT BE A CHRISTIAN, NEITHER HAVE SALVATION. HE IS A DRONE, AND DESERVES TO BE STUNG TO DEATH, AND THROWN OUT OF THE HIVE.' — All over the American Union there is an apotheosis of labour, the Latter Day Saints add to it the damnation of ociosity.

This brief outline of Mormon Faith will show its strange, but, I believe, spontaneous agglomeration of tenets which, were its disciples of a more learned and philosophical body, would suggest extensive eclecticism. But as I have already remarked, there is a remarkably narrow limit to religious ideas; the moderns vainly attempt invention when combination is now the only possible process. In the Temarakai decalogue, above quoted, we find syncretised the Semitic Monotheism, the Persian Dualism, and the Triads and Trinities of the Egyptians and the Hindus. The Hebrews also have a personal Theos, the Buddhists avatarns and incarnations, the Brahmans self-apotheosis of man by prayer and penance, and the East generally holds to quietism, a belief that repose is the only happiness, and to a vast complication of status in the world to be. The Mormons are like the Pythagoreans in their procreation, transmigration, and exaltation of souls; like the followers of Leucippus and Democritus in their atomic materialism; like the Epicureans in their pure atomic theories, their *summum bonum*, and their sensuous speculations; and like the Platonists and Gnostics in their belief of the Æon, of ideas, and of moving principles in element. They are Fetishists in their ghostly fancies, their creative, which become souls and spirits. They are Jews in their theocracy, their ideas of angels, their hatred for Gentiles, and their utter segregation from the great brotherhood of mankind. They are Christians, inasmuch as they base their faith upon the Bible, and hold to the divinity of Christ, the fall of man, the atonement, and the regeneration. They are Arians, inasmuch as they hold Christ to be "the first of God's creations,

a "perfect creature but still a creature." They are Moslems in their views of the inferior status of womankind, in their polygamy and in their resurrection of the material body: like the followers of the Arabian Prophet, they hardly fear death, because they have elaborated "continuation." They take no leap in the dark, they spring from this sublunary stage into a known, not into an unknown world: hence also their worship is eminently secular, their sermons are political or commercial, and,—religion being with them not a thing apart but a portion and parcel of every-day life,—the intervention of the Lord in their material affairs becomes natural and only to be expected. Their visions, prophecies, and miracles are those of the Illuminati, their mysticism that of the Druses, and their belief in the Millennium is a completion of the dreams of the Apocalyptic sects. Masonry has evidently entered into their scheme, the Demiurgus whom they worship is "as good at mechanical inventions as at any other business." With their later theories, Methodism, Swedenborgianism — especially in its view of the future state — and Transcendentalism are curiously intermingled. And, finally, we can easily discern in their doctrine of affinity of minds and sympathy of souls the leaven of that Faith-within, beginning with the Mesmer and progressing through the Rochester Rappers and the Poughkeepsie Seer, threatens to extend wherever the susceptible nervous temperament becomes the characteristic of the race.

The Latter Day Saints do not deny this agglomeration.* They maintain that being guided by the Spirit unto all truth, they have sifted it out from the gross mass of error that obscures it, and that whatever knowledge has been vouchsafed to man may be found in their possession. They assert that other sects were to them what the Platonists and the Essenes were to Christianity. Moreover, as has been seen, they declare their faith to be still in its infancy, and that many dark and

* "One of the great fundamental principles of Mormonism" (says Mr. Joseph Smith in his sermon preached 9th July 1843) "is to receive truth, come whence it may." . . . . "Presbyterians, Baptists, Methodists, Catholics, Mohammedans, &c., are they in possession of any truth? Yes, they have all a little truth mixed with error. We ought to gather together all the good and true principles which are in the world and keep them, otherwise we shall never become pure Mormons."

doubtful subjects are still to be decided by better experience or revelation.

I borrow the following résumé of Mormonism from Lieut. Gunnison — a Christian writer — of course, without endorsing any one of his opinions.

"In Mormonism we recognise an intuition of Transcendentalism — intuition, we say, for its founder was no scholar in the idealistic philosophy. He trampled under foot creeds and formulas, and soared away for perpetual inspiration from the God; and by the will, which he calls Faith, he won the realms of truth, beauty and happiness. Such things can only be safely confided to the strong and pure minded, and even they must isolate themselves in self-idolatry, and be 'alone with the alone,' and seek converse with the spirit of man's spirit.

"But this prophet was educated by passion and sought to be social with the weak; he therefore baptised spirituality in the waters of materialism. Instead of evolving the godlike nature of the human spirit, he endeavoured to prove that humanity was already divinity, by investing Deity with what is manlike — men were to be like gods by making gods men."

The form of Mormon government is not new: it is the theocracy of the Jews, of the Jesuit Missions in Brasil, Paraguay, and elsewhere, and briefly of all communities in which, contrary to the fitness of things, Church is made to include or rather exclude State. In opposition to El Islam, they maintain that a hieratic priesthood is necessary to the well-being of a religion. They divide it into two grand heads, of which all other officers and authorities are appendages. The first is called the Melchisedek priesthood, "because Melchisedek was such a great high priest."* The second, which is a supplement to the former, and administers outward ordinances, is the Aaronic or Levitical, "because it was conferred upon Aaron and his seed throughout all their generations." To the Melchisedek belong the high priest, priests and elders; to the Aaronic the bishops, the teachers or catechists and the deacons.

"The power and authority of the higher or Melchisedek priesthood, is to hold the keys of all the spiritual blessings of the church, to have the privilege of receiving the mysteries of

* These and the following quotations are borrowed from sections 2 and 3 of "Covenants and Commandments."

the kingdom of heaven, to have the heavens opened unto them, to commune with the general assembly and church of the Firstborn, and to enjoy the communion and presence of God the Father and Jesus the Mediator of the New Covenant.

"The power and authority of the lesser or Aaronic priesthood, is to hold the keys of the ministering of angels, and to administer in outward ordinances the letter of the Gospel—the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins—agreeable to the covenants and commandments."

The apex of the Mormon hierarchy is the First Presidency, now Messrs. Young, Kimball, and Wells, who have succeeded to Peter, James, and John in the Gospel Church, and who correspond on earth to the Trinity in heaven—*numero Deus impare gaudet*. The presiding high priest over the high priesthood of the church—*par excellence* "the" president, also *ex-officio* seer, revelator, translator, and prophet, is supreme. The two subchiefs or counsellors are *quasi*-equal: the first, however, takes social precedence of the second. This quorum of the presidency of the church, elected by the whole body, is the centre of temporal as of ecclesiastical power. It claims under God the right of life and death, it holds the keys of heaven and hell, and from its decrees there is no appeal except to the general assembly of all the quorums which constitute the spiritual authorities of the Church.

The second in rank is the Patriarch. The present incumbent is a nephew of the first seer, who succeeded Mr. Joseph Smith, sen., the father of Mr. Joseph Smith, jun.* As the sire of the church, his chief duty is to administer blessings: it is an office of dignity held for life; whereas all others expire after the semestre.

Follows the "Second Presidency," the twelve travelling counsellors, "called to be the twelve apostles or special witnesses of the name of Christ in all the world," modelled with certain political modifications after the Primitive Christian Church, and abbreviatively termed "The Twelve." The President of the High Apostolic College, or, in his default, one of the members, acts as coadjutor, in the absence of a member of the First Presidency. The Twelve come nearer the masses, and, acting under direction

* He ruled in revelation until the death of Mr. Joseph Smith, sen.

of the highest authority, build up the church, ordain and set in order all other officers, elders, priests, teachers, and deacons; they are empowered to baptise and to administer bread and wine—the emblems of the flesh and blood of Christ; to confirm those who are baptised into the church, by the laying on of hands for the baptism of fire and the Holy Ghost; to teach, expound, exhort, baptise, and watch over the church, and to take the lead in all meetings. They preside over the several "Stakes of Zion;" there is one, for instance, to direct, under the title of President, the European, and another the Liverpool Mission. If there be several together, the eldest is the standing president of the quorum, and they act as councillors to one another.

The fourth body in rank is the Seventies. The "Seventy" act in the name of the Lord, under direction of the "Twelve," in building up the church, and like them are travelling ministers, sent first to the Gentiles and then to the Jews. Out of the "Seventy" are chosen seven presidents, of whom one presides over the other six councillors: these seven choose other seventy besides the first seventy, "and also other seventy, until seven times seventy, if the labour in the vineyard of necessity requires it." In 1853 the minutes of the Mormon General Conference enumerated the "Seventies" at 1572. Practically the seventy members are seldom complete. The chief of these travelling propagandists, the working bees of the community, is the "President of all the Seventies."

The fifth body is composed of "high priests, after the order of the Melchisedek priesthood, who have a right to officiate in their own standing, under the direction of the presidency, in administering spiritual things," and to "officiate in all the offices of the church when there are no higher authorities present." Thus charged with the execution of spiritual affairs, they are usually aged and fatherly men. Among the high priests are included, *ex-officio*, the Bishops and the high council.

The Mormon *bishop* is a steward, who renders an account of his stewardship both in time and eternity, and who superintends the elders, keeps the Lord's storehouse, receives the funds of the church, administers to the wants of those beneath him, and supplies assistance to those who manage the

"literary concerns," probably editors and magazine publishers. The bishopric is the presidency of the Aaronic priesthood, and has authority over it. No man has a legal right to the office except a literal descendant of Aaron. As these, however, are *non inventi*, and as a high priest of the Melchisedek order may officiate in all lesser offices, the bishop, who never affects a *sede episcopari*, can be ordained by the First Presidency, or Mr. Brigham Young. Thus, the episcopate is a local authority in stakes, settlements, and wards, with the direct ruling of affairs temporal as well as spiritual. This "overseer" receives the tithes on the commutation-labour, which he forwards to the public storehouse; superintends the registration of births, marriages, and deaths, makes domiciliary visits, and hears and determines complaints either laical or ecclesiastic.

The High Council was organised by revelation, in Kirtland (Feb. 17, 1834), for the purpose of settling, when the church or the "Bishop's" council might fail, important difficulties that might arise between two believers. Revelation directed it to consist of twelve high priests, ascertained by lots or ballot, and one or three presidents, as the case might require. The first councillors when named were asked if they would act in that office according to the law of heaven: they accepted, and at once *more americano*—"voted." After deciding that the President of the Church should also be President of the Council, it was laid down that the duty of the twelve councillors should be to cast lots by numbers, and thereby ascertain who of the twelve shall speak first, commencing with number one, and so in succession to number twelve. In an easy case only two speak; in a difficult one, six. The defendant has a right to one half of the council, and "those who draw even numbers, that is, 2, 4, 6, 8, 10, and 12, are the individuals who are to stand up in behalf of the accused, and to prevent insult or injustice." After the evidence is heard, and the councillors, as well as the accuser and the accused, have "said their say," the President decides, and calls upon the "twelve" to sanction his decision by their vote. When error is suspected, the case is subject to a "careful re-hearing;" and in peculiar difficulties the appeal is to revelation. I venture to recommend this form of special jury to those who have lost faith in a certain effete and obsolete "palladium of British liberty" that dates from the

days of Ethelbert. After all, it is sometimes better, *furare in verba magistri*, especially of an inspired master.

The High Council is a standing council. It bears the same relationship to the federal power of the university Sex viri to a court of civil law in England, and it saves the saints the expense of Gentile proceedings, which may roughly be set down at fifty per cent. The sessions take place in the Social Hall. Such an institution, which transfers to St. Peter all the duties, salaries, and honours which Justinianus gives, is, of course, most unpopular amongst the anti-Mormons, who call it Star Chamber, and other ugly names. I look upon it rather as the Punchayat (*quinque viri*) Court of East India, a rough but ready instrument of justice, which, like spontaneous growths generally, have been found far superior to the exotic institutions forced upon the popular mind by professional improvers.

The Latter Day Saint when in a foreign land can be punished for transgression by his own people. The presiding authority calls a council to examine the evidence for and against the offence; and if guilt be proven, the offender, after being officially suspended from his missionary functions and the fellowship of the Church, is sent with a special report to be tried by his own presidency at Gt. S. L. City.

The elders are those from whom the apostles are taken, they are in fact promoted priests charged with all the duties of that order, and with the conduct of meetings, "as they are led by the Holy Ghost, according to the commandments and revelations of God." They hold conferences once in every three months, receive their licences from the elders or from the conferences; they are liable to be sent on missions, and are solemnly enjoined, by a revelation of January 1832, to "gird up their loins, and be sober."

The priest is the master mason of the order. It is his duty to preach, teach, expound, exhort, baptize, administer the sacrament, visit domiciliarily, exhort the saints to pray "vocally and in secret," ordain other priests, teachers, and deacons, take the lead of meetings when there is no elder present, and assist the elder when occasion requires.

Of the Aaronic order, the head are the bishops; under them are two ranks, who form the entered apprentices of the Mormon lodge.

1st. The teachers, who have no authority to baptize, to administer the sacrament, or to lay on hands, but who "warn, expound, exhort, teach, and invite all to come unto Christ, watch over the church and take the lead of meetings in the absence of the elder or priest." Of these catechists one or two is usually attached to each bishop.

2nd. The deacon, or *Sedanes*, an assistant teacher. He also acts as treasurer to the missions in the several branches of the church, collects money for the poor, and attends to the temporal wants of converts.

The rise of the "Church of Christ in these last days, dates from 1830, since the coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ:"—thus, A.D. 1861 is Annus Josephi Smithii 31. In that Year Mirabilis the book of Mormon appeared, the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints was organised, and the Body Ecclesiastic, after the fashion of those preceding it, was exodus'd or hegira'd to Kirtland, Ohio.

The actual composition of the Mormon hierarchy is that of a cadre of officers to a skeleton army of saints and martyrs, which may be filled up *ad infinitum*. It is inferior in simplicity, and therefore in power, to that which the Jesuit organisation is usually supposed to be; yet it is not deficient in the wherewithal of a higher grasp. It makes state government, especially that of Gentile communities, an excrescence upon the clerical body. The first president is the governor, the second is the lieutenant-governor, the third is the secretary of state, the high council is the supreme court; the bishops are justices of peace: briefly, the church is legislative, judiciary, and executive — what more can be required? It has evidently not neglected the masonic, monotheistic, and monocratic element — as opposed to and likely to temper the tripartite rule of Anglo-American civil government. The first president is the worshipful master of the lodge, the second and third are the senior and junior wardens, whilst the inferior ranks represent the several degrees of the master and apprentice. It symbolises the levelling tendencies of Christianity and progressivism, whilst its civil and ecclesiastical despotism and its sharp definition of rank are those of a disciplined army — the model upon which socialism has loved to form itself. In society, whilst all are brothers, there is a distinct aristocracy, called west of the

Atlantic "upper crust:" not of titles and lands, nor of halls and boxes, but of hierarchical position; and, contrary to what might be expected, there is as little real social fusion amongst Mormons as between the "sixties," the "forties," and the "twenties" of silly Guernsey.

Having now attempted, after the measure of my humble capacity, to show what Mormonism is, I will try to explain what Mormonism is not. The sage of Norwich ("Rel. Med." sect. vi.) well remarked that "every man is not a proper champion of truth, nor fit to take up the gauntlet in the cause of verity:" and that "many from the ignorance of these maxims have too rashly charged the troops of error, and remain as trophies to the enemies of truth." The doctrine may fitly be illustrated by pointing out the prodigious aid lent to Mormonism by the self-inflicted defeats of anti-Mormonism.

The Jaredite exodus to America in dish-like "barges, whose length was the length of a tree," and whose voyage lasted 344 days, is certainly a trial of faith. The authority of Mormonic inspiration is supposed to be weakened by its anachronisms and other errors: the mariner's compass, for instance, is alluded to long before the fourteenth century. The Mormons, however, reply that the "Liahona" of their Holy Book is not a compass, and that if it were, nothing could be said against it: the Chinese claim the invention long before the days of Flavio, and the Moslems attribute it to one of their own saints.* The "reformed Egyptian" of the Golden Bible is ridiculed on the supposition that the Hebrew authors would write either in their own tongue, in the Syrian, or in the Chaldaic, at any rate in a Semitic, not in a Coptic language. But the first disciples of the Gospel Church were Jews, and yet the Evangel is now Greek. As regards the Golden Plates, it is contended that the Jews of old were in the habit of writing upon papyrus, parchment and so on, not upon metal, and that such plates have never been found in America. But of late years Himyaritic inscriptions upon brass tablets have been forwarded from Yemen to the British Museum. Moreover in 1843 six brass plates of a bell shape, covered with ancient glyphs, were discovered by a "respectable merchant," near Kinderhook, U. S.,

* First Footsteps in East Africa, chap. i.

proving that such material was not unknown to the ancient Semites, and to the American aborigines. The word "Christ" often occurs ("Book of Mormon," p. 3, &c.) long before the coming of the Saviour. But the Book of Mormon was written in the "reformed Egyptian:" the proper noun in question was translated "Christ" in English by the prophet, an "unlearned young man," according to his own understanding, and for the better comprehension of his readers. The same argument applies to such words as "synagogues," "alpha and omega," "stock," "S. S. E," &c.; also to "elephant," "cow," "horse," "ass," "swine," and other pachyderms and solidungula, which were transported to America after the Columbian discovery:—they are mere translations, like the fabulous unicorn of the Old Testament and the phœnix of the apocryphal New Testament (Clement I. xii. 2): elephant, for instance, manifestly means mastodon, and swine, peccary. Ptolemy's theory of a moving earth is found anticipated. But who shall limit revelation?—and has not the Mosaic Genesis, according to a multitude of modern divines, anticipated all the latest discoveries? The Lord describes America to Jared ("Book of Mormon," p. 78), an "isle of the sea," and the accuracy of the geography is called in question. But in the Semitic and other eastern tongues, insula and peninsula are synonymous. Moreover, if Dr. Kane's open circumpolar ocean prove aught but a myth, the New World is wholly insulated even by ice from the Old. Other little contradictions and inaccuracies, which abound in the inspired books, are as easily pooh-pooh'd as objections to the conflicting genealogies, and the contradictory accounts of the crucifixion by the professors of the older faith.

The "vulgarity" of Mormonism is a favourite theme with the Anti-Mormon. The low origin and "plebbishness" of the Apostles' names and of their institutions (*e.g.* the "Twelve," the "Seventies"), the snuffling Puritanic style which the learned Gibbon hated, and execrable grammar (*e.g.* in the first page "Nephi's brethren rebelleth against him"), and the various Yankee-isms of the New Scriptures are cited as palpable proofs of fraud. But the primitive apostles of Christianity were of inferior social rank and attainments to the first Mormon converts, and of the reformers of Luther's age it may be asked, "Where was then the gentleman?" The Syriac-Greek of the New Tes-

torrent with its manifold flows of filth and foetor, must have produced upon the polite philosophers and gentlemen of Greece and Rome, an effect even more painful than that which the Americanisms of the Book of Mormon exercise upon English nerves. These things are palpably stumbling-blocks disposed sleeper-wise upon the railroad of faith, lest Mr. Christian's progress should become a mere excursion. Gentiles naturally feel disposed to smile when they find in the nineteenth century Prophets, Apostles, Saints; but the church only gains by the reformation and restoration of her primitive discipline. The supernatural action of the Holy Spirit believed in by the Mormons as by the Seekers (1645), the Camisards (1688), the Lowites and Wilkinsonians (1778), is the best answer to that atheistic school which holds that God who once lived is now dead to man. As of the Ayat of El Islam, so of the revelations with which Mr. Joseph Smith was favoured, it is remarked that their exceeding opportuneness excites suspicion. But of what use are such messages from Heaven unless they arrive *à propos*? Mr. O. Hyde contends, after the fashion of wiser men, that ambiguity, and if I may use the word, a certain achronology characterise inspired prophecy: it is evident that only a little more inspiration is wanted to render it entirely unambiguous.

The other sentimental objections to Mormonism may briefly be answered as follows:—

"*That the holiest of words is profanely applied to men.*" But as Moses (Ex. iv. 16) was "instead of God to Aaron" (Ex. vii. 1) and was "made a God" to Pharaoh, and as the Saviour declared that "He called them gods unto whom the word of God came" (John xi. 35), the Mormons evidently use the word in its old and scriptural sense. Thus they assert that Mr. Joseph Smith is the god of this generation, Jesus is his god, Michael or Adam is the god of Jesus, Jehovah is the god of Adam, and Elohim is the god of Jehovah.

"*That credible persons have testified to the bad character of Mr. Joseph Smith, junior, as a money-digger, a cheat, a liar, a vulgar impostor, or at best a sincere and ignorant fanatic.*" The Mormons reply that such has been the history of every prophet. They point with triumph and yearning love to the story of their martyr's life, to his intense affection for his family, and to their devotion to him. They boast of his invincible boldness, energy,

enthusiasm, and moral courage, that he never flinched from his allotted tasks, from the duties which he was commissioned to perform, that he was fifty times dragged by his enemies before the tribunals and was as often acquitted, that he never hesitated for a moment, when such act was necessary, to cut off from the Church those who like Oliver Cowdery had been the depositaries of his intimate secrets, that his career was one long Bartholomew's Day, and that his end was glorious as his life was beautiful. In America Mr. Joseph Smith has by the general suffrage of anti-Mormons been pronounced to be a knave, whilst his successor Mr. Brigham Young, has been declared by the same high authority,—*non diaboli*, the Mormons term it,—to be a self-deluded but true man. I can scarcely persuade myself that great events are brought about by mere imposture, whose very nature is feebleness: zeal, enthusiasm, fanaticism, which are of their nature strong and aggressive, better explain the abnormal action of man on man. On the other hand it is impossible to ignore the dear delights of fraud and deception, the hourly pleasure taken by some minds in finessing through life, in concealing their real selves from the eyes of others, and in playing a part till by habit it becomes a nature. In the estimation of unprejudiced persons Mr. Joseph Smith is a man of rude genius, of high courage, of invincible perseverance, fired by zeal, of great tact, of religious fervour, of extraordinary firmness, and of remarkable talent in governing men. It is conceded that, had he not possessed "strong and invincible faith in his own high pretensions and Divine mission," he would probably have renounced the unprofitable task of prophet, and sought refuge from persecution and misery in private life and honourable industry. Be that as it may, he has certainly taken a place amongst the notabilities of the world,—he has left a footprint upon the sands of time.

"*That Mr. Joseph Smith prophesied lies*," and that "*through greed of gain he robbed the public by appropriating the moneys of the Kirtland Bank.*" The Mormons reply that many predictions of undoubted truth undeniably passed their prophet's lips, and that some — *e. g.* those referring to the Mormon Zion and to the end of the world — may still prove true. With respect to the fact that Martin Harris was induced by the Seer to pay for the publication of the Book of Mormon, it is pleaded

that the Christian Apostles (Acts iv. 35) also received money from their disciples. The failure of the Kirtland Bank (A.D. 1837) is thus explained: during the prophet's absence upon a visit to the Saints at Toronto, the cashier Warren Parrish, flooded the district with worthless paper, and fearing discovery on his master's return, decamped with $25,000, thereby causing a suspension of payment. Regarding other peccadilloes the Mormons remark that no prophet was ever perfect or infallible. Moses, for instance, was not suffered for his sins to enter the Promised Land, and Saul lost by his misconduct the lasting reign over Israel.

"*That the three original witnesses to the 'Book of Mormon' apostatized and denied its truth.*" To this the Mormons add, that after a season those apostates duly repented and were re-baptized; one has died; the second, Martin Harris, is now a Saint in Kirtland, Ohio; and the third, Sidney Rigdon, to whom the faith owed so much, left the community after the prophet's martyrdom, saying that it had chosen the wrong path, but never rejecting Mormonism nor accusing it of fraud. The witnesses to these modern tables of the law (the Golden Plates) were but eleven in toto, and formed only three families interested in the success of the scheme. The same penalty, or rather absence of any testimony which would be valid in a modern court of justice, marks the birth of every new faith, not excluding the Christian. And, finally, wickedness proved against the witnesses does not invalidate the value of their depositions. The Mormons in the conduct of David and Solomon, for instance, do not affect the inspiration of the Psalms and Canticles.

"*That Mormon apostles and elders, as Parley P. Pratt and John Taylor, denied the existence of polygamy, even after it was known and practised by their community.*" The Mormons reply that they never attempted to evade the imputation of the true patriarchal marriage: they merely asserted their innocence of the "spiritual wifeism," the Free Loveism and the Fanny Wrightism of the Eastern States—charges brought against them by the anti-Mormons.

Having thus disposed of the principal allegations, I will more briefly allude to the minor.

"*That the Mormons do not allow Monogamy.*" This I know not to be the fact, as several of my acquaintances had and have but one

wife. "*That a multitude of saints, prophets, and apostles are in full chase after a woman, whom the absence of her husband releases from her vows; that the missionary on duty appoints a proxy or vicarious head to his house, and that his spouses are married* pro tempore *to elders and apostles at home.*" Mrs. Ferris has dreamed out this "abyss of abomination," and then uses it to declaim against. But is it at all credible? Would not such conduct speedily demoralize and demolish a society which even its enemies own to be peculiarly pure? "*That the Mormons are 'jealous fellows'*"—a curious contradiction of the preceding charges. The Saints hold to the semi-seclusion of Athens, Rome, and Syria, where "she was the best of women of whom least is said, either of good or harm," believing with the world generally that opportunity often makes the thief. "*That the Mormons 'swop,' sell, exchange, and transfer their wives to Indians.*" Mrs. Ferris started the story, which carries its own refutation, by chronicling a report of the kind; and Mr. Ward improves upon it by supplying false instances and names. "*That the utmost latitude of manners is allowed in the ball-room and the theatre,*" which are compared to the private *réunions* of Romanus Townsend and other Aspasias. The contrary is notoriously the case. "*That the young Mormons are frequently guilty of the crimes of Absalom and other horrible offences.*" Unprejudiced Gentiles always deny the truth of such accusations. "*That the Mormon has no home, and that Mormon houses are dirty, slovenly, and uncomfortable.*" The Far West is not remarkable for neatness: the only exceptions to the rule of filth which I have seen are in the abodes of the Mormons. "*That 'plurality-families' are in a state of perpetual storm.*" I believe that many a "happy English home" is far stormier, despite the holy presence of monogamy. Even Mrs. Ferris tells of two wives, one young, the other old, "who treated each other with that degree of affectionate cordiality which properly belongs to the intercourse between mother and daughter," and —naïvely wonderstruck by what she could not understand—exclaims, "What a strange spectacle!" "*That women must be married to be saved.*" The orthodox Mormon belief is that human beings are sent into the world to sow seed for heaven; that a woman who wittingly, and for stupid social Belgravian-mother motives, fails in so doing, neglects a vital duty, and that whose

gives and children to the republic has lived in vain—an opinion which the Saints are contented to share with Moses and Mohammed, Augustus Cæsar and Napoleon Bonaparte. "*That the Mormons marry for eternity.*" They believe that Adam and Eve, when wholly pure, were so married, and that redemption signifies a complete restoration to all the privileges lost by the fall. "*That Mormons are 'sealed' to rich old women.*" The *veuve bonte* exists, I believe, almost universally. "*That Mormons marry and seal for the dead.*" As has been seen, it is a principle of faith that all ordinances for the living may vicariously be performed for those departed. "*That Mormon women are pale, thin, badly and carelessly dressed, and poorly fed—that they exhibit a sense of depression and degradation.*" I found them exceedingly pretty and attractive, especially Miss ——. "*That it is dangerous to be the rival of a Mormon elder in love and business.*" This is true only so far that the Saint is probably a better man than the Gentile. I have been assured by Gentiles that they would rather trust the followers of Mr. Joseph Smith than their own people, and that under Mormon rule there never has been, and never can be, a case of bankruptcy. The hunters and Indian traders dislike the Saints for two chief reasons:—in the first place, the hunting-grounds have been narrowed; and secondly, industry and sobriety have taken the place of rollicking and dare-devilism. "*That the Mormons are bigoted and intolerant.*" The Mormon's golden rule is, "Mind your own business, and let your neighbour mind his." At Gt. S. L. City I found all the most violent anti-Mormon books, and have often heard Gentiles talk in a manner which would not be tolerated in Paris, London, and Rome. "*That the church claims possession of, and authority over, a dead disciple's goods and chattels.*" This is done only in cases when heirs fail. "*That it is the Mormon's duty to lay all his possessions at the apostles' feet.*" The Mormons believe that the Lord has ordered his church to be established on earth; that its success involves man's salvation; that the apostles are the pillars of the sacred edifice, and that the disciple is bound, like Barnabas, when called upon, to lay his all at the apostles' feet; practically, however, the measure never takes place. "*That the high dignitaries are enriched by tithes and by plundering the people.*" I believe, for reasons before given,

this assertion to be as wholly destitute of fact as of probability. "*That the elders borrow money from their Gentile disciples, and that the Saints 'milk the Gentiles.*'" The Mormons, like sensible men, do not deny that their net has drawn up bad fish as well as good; they assert, however, and I believe with truth, that their community will bear comparison in point of honesty with any other.

I have already remarked how thoroughly hateful to the petulant fanatical republicans of the New World, is the Mormon state within state, their absolute aristocracy clothed in the wolf-skin of democracy; and I have also shown how little of that "largest liberty," concerning which the traveller in the United States hears so often and sees so seldom, has been extended to them or to their institutions. Let us now consider a few of the political objections to Mormonism.

"*That the Mormon Church overshadows and controverts the actions and opinions, the property, and even the lives of its members.*" The Mormons boast that their Church, which is their state, does so legitimately, and deny any abuse of its power. "*That the Church usurps and exercises the legislative and political business of the territory.*" The foregoing pages disprove this. "*That the Church organises and commands a military force.*" True, for her own protection. "*That the Church disposes of public lands on her own terms.*" The Mormons reply that as squatters they have earned by their improvements the right of preemption, and as the Federal Government delays to recognise their title, that they approve of the Church so doing. "*That the Church has coined money and forced its circulation.*" The former clause is admitted, and the excellence of the Californian gold is warranted: the latter is justly treated with ridicule. "*That the Church levies the tenth part of everything from its members under the charge of tithing.*" The Mormons derive this practice from the laws of Moses, and assert that the gift is purely a free-will offering estimated by the donor, and never taken except from those who are in full communion. "*That the Church imposes enormous taxes upon Gentile citizens.*" The Mormons own that they levy a large cutrel, in the form of a regulated license system, upon ardent spirits, but they deny that more is taken from the Gentile than from the Saint. "*That the Church supervises*

and penetrate into the domestic circle, and enjoins and inculcates obedience to her own counsels, as *articles of faith* paramount to all the *obligations of society and morality, allegiance and love.*" The Mormons reply that the counsel and the obligations run in the same groove.

Mormonism in England would soon have fallen to the level of Lecluse or Irvingism; its teachers to the rank of the Southcotians and Muggletonians. Its unparalleled rise and onward march could have taken place only in a new hemisphere, in another world. Its genius is essentially Anglo-American, without one tablet of Gallic, Teutonic, or Keltic. It is Rationalistic: the analytic powers sharpened by mundane practice, and wholly unencumbered by religious formal discipline, are allowed, in things alike mundane, a scope, a perfect freedom, that savours of irreverence,—thus the Deity is somewhere spoken of as a "right-hand man." It is Exaggerative in matter as in manner: the Pentateuch, for instance, was contented with one ark, Mormonism required eight. It is Simplificative: its fondness for facilitation has led it through literalism into that complete materialism which, to choose one point only, makes the Creator of the same species as his creature. It is Imitative to an extent that not a vestige of originality appears: the Scripture names are carefully moulded in Hebrew shape; and to quote one of many instances, the death bed of the first patriarch ("Life of Joseph Smith, the Prophet," chap. xlii.), is a facsimile of that of Israel, with his prayers, prophecies, and blessings; while the titles of the apostles, *e. g.* Lion of the Lord, are literally borrowed from El Islam. It has a mystic element the other side of its severe rationalism; even as the American character mixes transcendentalism with the purest literalism, as Mr. Emerson, the Sufi, contrasts with the Pilgrim Fathers and Sam Slick. It is essentially Practical, though commonplaces and generalisms are no part of its composition. Finally, it is admirably puffed, as the note upon Mormon bibliography proves—better advertised than Colonel Colt's excellent revolvers.

I had proposed to write a chapter similar to this upon the Mormon annals. After sundry attempts the idea was abandoned in despair. It would be necessary to give two distinct or rather opposite versions,—according to the Mormons and the anti-Mormons,—of every motive and action which have engendered

and produced history. Such a style would not be lively. Moreover, the excessive positivism with which each side maintains its facts, and the palpable sacrifice of truth to party feeling, would make it impossible for any but an eye-witness, who had lived through the scenes, and had preserved his impartiality, to separate the wheat from the chaff. The Mormons declare that if they knew their prophet to be an impostor, they could still love, respect, and follow him in this life to the next. The Gentiles, I can see, would not accept him, even if he were proposed to them by a spirit from the other world. There is little inducement in this case to break the scriptural injunction, "Judge not."

Under these considerations, I have added to the Appendix (No. 5), a detailed chronological table of Mormon events: it is compiled from both parties, and has at least one merit—impartiality.

CHRONOLOGY

OF THE MOST IMPORTANT EVENTS RECORDED IN THE BOOK OF MORMON.

(By Elder James Mavish, and printed in the Compendium of Faith and Doctrine.)

B.C.

600 Lehi, Sariah, and their four sons, Laman, Lemuel, Sam, and Nephi, left Jerusalem by the commandment of God, and journeyed into the wilderness of Arabia (pp. 17, 44, 97; pars. 3, 47, 4).

592 Lehi and his family arrived at the land Bountiful, so called because of its much fruit. Its modern name is Arabia Felix; or Arabia the Happy (p. 36, par. 17).

570 Jacob and Joseph were consecrated Priests and Teachers over the people of Nephi (p. 66, par. 5).

B.C.

560 Nephi was commanded to make a second volume of plates (p. 67, par. 6).

545 Nephi commanded Jacob to write on the small plates such things as he considered most precious (p. 114, par. 1).

421 Jacob having committed the records into the hands of his son Enos, and Enos being old, he gave the records into the hands of his son Jarom (pp. 128, 136; pars. 9, 7).

400 The people of Nephi kept the law of Moses, and they rapidly increased in numbers, and were greatly prospered (p. 137, par. 3).

362 Jarom being old, delivered the records into the hands of his son Omni (p. 138, par. 5).

324 Omni was a wicked man, but he defended the Nephites from their enemies (p. 138, par. 8).

280 Amaron delivered the plates to his brother Chemish (p. 139, par. 5).

124 After Abinadom, the son of Chemish, Amaleki*, the son of Abinadom, King Benjamin, and Mosiah had successively kept the records, Mosiah, the son of King Benjamin, was consecrated king (p. 157, par. 2).

121 Mosiah sent sixteen men to the land of Lehi-Nephi, to inquire concerning their brethren (p. 158, par. 2).

91 Mosiah died, having conferred the records upon Alma, who was the son of Alma. Mosiah also established a republican form of government, and appointed Alma the first and chief judge of the land (pp. 205, 206; pars. 1, 7.)

90 Nehor suffered an ignominious death for apostasy and for killing Gideon (p. 210, pars. 3, 4).

86 The usurper Amlici was slain by Alma. In this year many battles were fought between the Nephites on the one hand, and the Amlicites, who were Nephite revolutionists, and the Lamanites on the other. The Nephites were mostly victorious (pp. 215, 217; pars. 14, 16).

* Whilst Amaleki was keeping the records, Mosiah, the father of King Benjamin, and as many as would hearken to the voice of God, were commanded to go into the wilderness, and were led by the power of the Almighty to the Land of Zarahemla, where they discovered a people who left Jerusalem at the time that Zedekiah was carried away captive into Babylon. They were led by Mulek, the only surviving son of Zedekiah; and on their arrival in America, met with Coriantumr, the last king of the Jaredites, who were slain a little previous to the immigration of Mulek and his people (pp. 196, 44, 131, 532; pars. 3, 7).

B.C.

86 Peace was restored and many were baptized in the waters of Sidon, and became members of the Church (p. 218, par. 1).

84 Peace continued, and three thousand five hundred became members of the Church of God (p. 219, par. 2).

83 The members of the Church became proud because of their great riches (p. 219, par. 3).

82 Alma delivered up the office of Chief Judge to Nephihah, and confined himself wholly to the High Priesthood, after the holy order of God (p. 219, par. 5).

81 Alma performed a mission to the land of Melek, and to the City Ammonihah (p. 230, par. 2, 3).

80 Alma and Amulek were delivered from prison by the mighty power of God (p. 251, par. 11).

79 The Lamanites destroyed the people of Ammonihah (p. 253, par. 2).

76 There was peace during three years, and the church was greatly prospered (p. 254, par. 3).

75 Ammon performed a successful mission among the Lamanites (p. 288, par. 10).

73 Korihor the great Anti-Christ, made his appearance (p. 290, par. 2).

72 Alma committed the record to the keeping of his son Helaman, and commanded him to continue the history of his people (p. 310, par. 5).

71 The Nephites obtained a complete victory over the Lamanites in the borders of Manti (p. 321, par. 16).

71 Helaman performed a successful mission among the Nephites (p. 322, par. 4).

69 Moroni commanded that the Nephites should fortify all their cities. They also built many cities (p. 346, par. 1).

68 This was the most comfortable, prosperous, and happy year that the Nephites had ever seen (p. 346, par. 3).

65 The people of Morianton prevented from escaping to the North or Lake country. Also Nephihah died, and his son Pahoran succeeded him as Chief Judge of the land (p. 349, pars. 5, 8).

64 A contention between the advocates of monarchy on the one hand, and of republicanism on the other, was peaceably settled by the voice of the people. But 4,000 of the monarchy men

B.C.

were slain for refusing to take up arms, in defence of their country, against the Lamanites (p. 350, par. 2).

62 Preparations for war between the Nephites and the Lamanites were made (p. 354, par. 4).

62 The same continued (p. 355, par. 4).

61 Moroni re-took the city of Mulek and obtained a complete victory over the Lamanites (p. 356, par. 13).

60 Moroni, by stratagem, overcame the Lamanites, and liberated his people from prison (p. 363, par. 7).

59 Moroni received an epistle from Helaman, of the city of Judea, in which is set forth the wonderful victories obtained in that part of the land over the Lamanites (p. 364, par. 1).

58 Moroni obtained possession of the city of Nephihah (p. 366, par. 13).

54 Peace having been restored, the Church became very prosperous, and Helaman died (p. 367, par. 3).

53 Shiblon took possession of the sacred records, and Moroni died (p. 367, pars. 1, 2).

52 5,400 men, with their wives and children, left Zarahemla for the North country (p. 368, par. 3).

50 Shiblon conferred the sacred records upon Helaman, the son of Helaman, and then died (p. 368, par. 5).

49 Paloran, the Chief Judge, having died, his son Paloran was appointed to succeed him. This Paloran was murdered by Kishkumen and his brother Pacumeni was appointed by his successor (p. 369, par. 3).

45 Coriantumr led a numerous host against Zarahemla, took the city, and killed Pacumeni; but Moronihah re-took the city, slew Coriantumr, and obtained a complete victory over the Lamanites (p. 370, par. 5).

47 Helaman was appointed Chief Judge, and the band of Gadianton robbers was organized (p. 372, par. 6).

46 Peace reigned among the Nephites (p. 373, par. 1).

45 Peace continued (373, par. 1).

44 Peace continued (p. 373, par. 1).

43 Great contention among the Nephites; many of them travelled northward (p. 374, par. 2).

39 Helaman died, and his son Nephi was appointed Chief Judge.

B.C.

81 The Nephites, because of their wickedness, lost many of their cities, and many of them were slain by the Lamanites (p. 397, par. 8).

38 The Nephites repented at the preaching of Moronihah (p. 397, par. 10).

37 Moronihah could obtain no more possessions from the Lamanites. Nephi vacated the office of Chief Judge in favour of Cezoram (pp. 398, 399, pars. 11, 13). The greater part of the Lamanites became a righteous people (p. 403, par. 25).

36 Nephi and Lehi went northward to preach unto the people (p. 404, par. 26).

23 Cezoram was murdered by an unknown hand as he sat on the judgment-seat. His son, who was appointed to succeed him, was also murdered (p. 404, par. 28).

22 The Nephites became very wicked (p. 406, par. 31).

21 The Lamanites observed the laws of righteousness, and utterly destroyed the Gadianton robbers from among them (p. 406, par. 33).

20 Men belonging to the Gadianton band usurped the judgment-seat (p. 407, par. 1).

18 Nephi prophesied many important things against his people (p. 416, par. 15).

14 Three years' famine brought the people to repentance, and caused them to destroy the Gadianton robbers (p. 417, pars. 2, 3).

13 Peace being restored, the people spread themselves abroad, to repair their waste places (p. 418, par. 4).

12 The majority of the people, both Nephites and Lamanites, became members of the Church (p. 416, par. 4).

9 Certain dissenters among the Nephites stirred up the Lamanites against their brethren, and they revived the secrets of Gadianton (p. 419, par. 6).

5 The Lamanites prevailed against the Nephites, because of their great wickedness (p. 420, par. 7).

1 Samuel the Lamanite performed a mission among the Nephites (p. 422, par. 1).

1 Great signs and wonders were given unto the people, and the words of the Prophets began to be fulfilled (p. 431, par. 10).

Lachoneus was the Chief Judge and Governor of the Land. Nephi gave the records into the hands of his son Nephi (p. 433, par. 1).

The Lord revealed to Nephi that he would come into the world the next day, and many signs of his coming were given (p. 433, par. 8).

A.C.

3 The Gadianton robbers committed many depredations (p. 434, par. 6).

4 The Gadianton robbers greatly increased (p. 434, par. 6).

9 The Nephites began to reckon their time from the coming of Christ (p. 435, par. 8).

13 The Nephites were joined by many of the Lamanites in defence against the robbers, who had now become very numerous and formidable (p. 436, par. 9).

15 The Nephites were worsted in several engagements (p. 436, par. 10).

16 Gidgiddoni, who was a chief judge and a great prophet, was appointed commander-in-chief (p. 436, par. 8).

17 The Nephites gathered themselves together for the purpose of mutual defence, and provided themselves with seven years' provisions (p. 439, par. 4).

19 A great battle was fought between the Nephites and the Gadianton robbers, in which the latter were defeated, and their leader, Giddianhi, was slain (p. 440, pars. 6, 8).

21 The Nephites slew tens of thousands of the robbers, and took all that were alive prisoners, and hanged their leader, Zemnarihah (pp. 441, 442; pars. 9, 10).

25 Mormon made new plates, upon which he made a record of what took place from the time Lehi left Jerusalem until his own day, and also a history of his own times (p. 445, par. 11).

26 The Nephites spread themselves abroad on their former possessions (p. 445, par. 1).

30 Lachoneus, the son of Lachoneus, was appointed governor of the land. He was murdered, and the people became divided into numerous tribes (pp. 446, 447; pars. 3, 4).

31 Nephi having great faith in God, angels did minister to him daily (p. 449, par. 3).

32 The few who were converted through the preaching of Nephi, were greatly blessed of God (p. 449, par. 10).

A.C.

29 Many were baptized into the Church (p. 445, par. 10).

34 A terrible tempest took place, which changed and deformed the whole face of the land. Three days elapsed during which no light was seen.

The voice of Jesus Christ was heard by all the people of the land, declaring that he had caused this destruction, and commanding them to cease to offer burnt offerings and sacrifices (p. 452, pars. 7, 8).

35 In this year Jesus Christ appeared among the Nephites, and unfolded to them at large the principles of the Gospel (p. 452, para. 11, 1). The Apostles of Christ formed a Church of Christ (p. 492, par. 1).

36 Both the Nephites and the Lamanites were all converted, and had all things in common (p. 492, par. 2).

37 Many miracles were wrought by the disciples of Jesus (p. 492, par. 3).

59 The people rebuilt the city of Zarahemla, and were very prosperous (p. 493, par. 3).

100 The disciples of Jesus, whom he had chosen, had all gone to paradise, except the three who obtained the promise that they should not taste of death (p. 493, par. 5).

110 Nephi died, and his son Amos kept the record (p. 493, par. 6).

194 Amos died, and his son Amos kept the record (p. 494, par. 7).

201 The people ceased to have all things in common; they became proud, and were divided into classes (p. 494, par. 7).

210 There were many churches who were opposed to the true Church of Christ (p. 494, par. 8).

230 The people dwindled in unbelief and wickedness from year to year (p. 494, par. 8).

231 A great division took place among the people (p. 495, par. 8).

244 The wicked part of the people became stronger and more numerous than the righteous (p. 495, par. 9).

259 The people began to build up the secret oaths and combinations of Gadianton (p. 495, par. 9).

300 The Gadianton robbers spread themselves all over the face of the land (p. 496, par. 10).

305 Amos died, and his brother Ammaron kept the record in his stead (p. 496, par. 11).

320 Ammaron hid up all the sacred records unto the Lord, and gave commandment unto Mormon concerning them (p. 496, pars. 11, 1).

A.C.

321 A war commenced between the Nephites and Lamanites, in which the former were victorious (p. 497, par. 2).

325 Mormon was restrained from preaching to the people, and because of their wickedness, and the prevalence of sorcerers, witchcrafts, and magic, their treasures slipped away from them (p. 497, par. 2).

326 Mormon was appointed leader of the Nephite armies (p. 498, par. 3).

329 A great battle took place in the land of Joshua, in which the Nephites were victorious (p. 498, par. 3).

344 Thousands of the Nephites were hewn down in their open rebellion against God (p. 498, par. 4).

345 Mormon had obtained the plates according to commandment of Ammaron, and he made an account of the wickedness and abominations of his people (p. 499, par. 5).

346 The Nephites were driven northward to the land of Shem, and there fought and beat a powerful army of the Lamanites (p. 500, par. 6).

349 The Nephites obtained by treaty all the land of their inheritance and a ten years' peace entered (p. 500, par. 6).

350 The king of the Lamanites sent an epistle to Mormon, indicating that they were again preparing for war (p. 501, par. 7).

361 A battle took place near the City of Desolation. The Nephites were victorious (p. 501, par. 8).

362 A second battle ensued with the like result (p. 501, par. 8). Mormon now gave up the command of the Nephite army (p. 501, par. 9).

363 The Lamanites obtained a signal victory over the Nephites, and took possession of the City of Desolation (p. 502, par. 1).

364 The Nephites retook the City of Desolation (p. 502, par. 2).

366 The Lamanites again took possession of the City of Desolation, and also succeeded in taking the City of Teancum (p. 502, par. 3).

367 The Nephites avenged the murder of their wives and children, and drove the Lamanites out of their land; and ten years' peace ensued (p. 502, par. 3).

375 The Lamanites came again to battle with the Nephites, and beat them (p. 504, par. 3).

The Nephites from this time forth were prevailed against by the Lamanites; Mormon therefore took all the records which Ammaron had hid up unto the Lord (p. 504, par. 3).

A.D.

379 Mormon resumed the command of the Nephite armies (p. 504, par. 4).

380 Mormon wrote an abridged account of the events which he had seen (p. 505, par. 5).

384 The Nephites encamped around the hill Cumorah. Mormon hid up in the hill Cumorah, all the plates that were committed to his trust, except a few which he gave to his son Moroni (p. 507, pars. 1, 2).

The battle of Cumorah was fought, in which two hundred and thirty thousand of the Nephites were slain (p. 507, pars. 2, 3).

400 All the Nephites, as a distinct people, except Moroni, were destroyed (p. 509, par. 1).

421 Moroni finished and sealed up all the records, according to the commandment of God (p. 561, par. 1).

CHAP. X.

FURTHER OBSERVATIONS AT ST. S. L. CITY.

One of my last visits was to the Court House, on an interesting occasion. The *Palais de Justice* is near where the old fort once was, in the western part of the settlement. It is an unfinished building of adobe, based on red sandstone, with a flagstaff and a tinned roof, which gives it a somewhat Muscovite appearance, and it cost $20,000. The courts and legislature sit in a neat room, with curtains and chandeliers, and polished pinewood furniture, all as yet unfaded. The occasion which had gathered together the notabilities of the place, was this:—Mr. Peter Dotson, the U. S. Marshal of the Territory, living at Camp Floyd, and being on the opposition side, had made himself—the Mormons say—an unscrupulous partisan. In July 1859 he came from the cantonment armed with a writ issued by Mr. Delana R. Eckels, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and accompanied by two officers of the U. S. army, to the Holy City for the purpose of arresting a Mr. Mackenzie,—now in the Penitentiary for counterfeiting "Quarter Masters' draughts,"—an engraver by profession, and then working in the Deseret Store of Mr. Brigham Young. Forgery and false coining are associated in the Gentile mind with Mormonism, and inveterately so: whether truly or not, I cannot say: it is highly probable that Mr. Bogus's* habitat is not limited by latitude, altitude, or longitude; at the same time the Saints are too much *en évidence* to

* Bogus according to Mr. Bartlett, who quotes the "Boston Courier" of June 13, 1837, is a western corruption of Boghues, "a very corrupt individual who, twenty years ago or more, did a tremendous business in the way of supplying the great West and portions of the South-west, with counterfeit bills and drafts on fictitious banks." The word is now applied in the sense of sham, forged, counterfeit, and so on; there are bogus laws and bogus members; in fact, bogus exists every where.

entertain him publicly. The marshal, probably not aware that the Territory had passed an law enabling the myrmidons of justice to seize suspicious implements and apparatus made *mala fortis*, despite due notice, upon what he found appertaining to Mr. Mackenzie, a Bible, a Book of Mormon, and—here was the rub—the Copper Plates of the Deseret Currency Association. This plunder was deposited for the night with the Governor, and was carried in a sack on the next day to Camp Floyd. Then the anti-Mormons sang In pæans; they had—to use a western phrase—"got the dead wood on Brigham;" letters teemed back to Gentile appeared in the Eastern and other papers, announcing to the public that the prophet was a detected forger. Presently, the true character of the copper plates appearing, they were generously offered back; but an trespass had been committed, to say nothing of libel, and as all concerned in the affair were obnoxious men, it was resolved to try law. A civil suit was instituted, and a sum of $1000 was claimed for damage done to the plates by scratching, and for loss of service, which hindered business in the city. The unfortunate marshal, who was probably a "corpus," had "caught a Tartar;" he possessed a house and furniture, a carriage and horses, all of which were attached, and the case of "Brigham Young, Sen., *v.* P. K. Dotson," ended in a verdict for the plaintiff, viz. value of plates destroyed, $1668; damages, $648·66. The anti-Mormons declared him a martyr, the Mormons, a victorious foe, and sensible Gentiles asserted that he was rightly served for showing evil animus. The case might have ended badly but for the prudence of the Governor; had a descent been made for the purpose of arrest upon the prophet's house, the consequences would certainly have been serious to the last degree.

The cause was tried in the Probate Court, which I have explained to be a Territorial, not a Federal Court. The Hon. Elias Smith presided, and the arguments for the prosecution and the defence were conducted by the ablest Mormon and anti-Mormon lawyers. I attended the house, and carefully watched the proceedings, to detect, if possible, intimidation or misdirection; everything was done with even-handed justice. The physical aspect of the court was that which foreign travellers in the Far West delight to describe and ridicule, wholly forgetting that they have seen the same scene much nearer home.

His Honour sat with his chair tilted back and his boots on the table, exactly as if he had been an Anglo-Indian Collector and Magistrate, whilst by a certain contraction and expansion of the dexter corner of his well-bleached mouth, I suspected the existence of the quid. The position is queer, but not more so than that of a Judge at Westminster sleeping soundly, in the multitude of Pim's leaning attitudes, upon the bench. By the Justice's side sat the portly figure of Dr. Kay, opposite him the reporters, at other tables the attorneys; the witnesses stood up between the tables, the jury were on the left, and the public, including the Governor, was distributed like wall-flowers on benches around the room.

There is a certain monotony of life in Gt. S. L. City which does not render the subject favourable for description. Moreover, a Muslim gloom, the result of austere morals and manners, of the semi-seclusion of the sex, and in my case of a reserve arising towards a stranger who appeared in the train of Federal officials, hangs over society. There is none of that chat which, according to the French author, repose dar *fureurs de minuit*. We rose early,—in America the climate seems to wild-cat one against sluggishness,—and breakfasted at any hour between 6 and 9 A.M. Enstuil "business," which seemed to consist principally of correcting one's teeth, and walking about the town, with occasional "liquoring up." Dinner was at 1 P.M., ominously, not by the natural gong of the Eastern States, which lately so fearfully offended a pair of Anglo-Hibernian ears, but by a handbell which sounded the *pas de charge*. Jostling into the long room of the ordinary, we took our seats, and eating our first proceeded at once to action, after the fashion of Puddingburn house, where

> "They who come not the first call,
> Get no food till the next meal."

Nothing but water was drunk at dinner, except when a gentleman preferred to wash down roast pork with a tumbler of milk; wine in this part of the world is of course dear and bad, and even should the Saints make their own it can scarcely be cheap on account of the price of labour. Feeling exiled with a glass of liquor, not at the bar, because there was none, but in the privacy of one's chamber, which takes from drinking half its charm. Most well-to-do men loved time for a siesta in the

early afternoon. There was supper, which in modern English parlance would be called dinner, at 6 P.M., and the evening was easily spent with a friend.

One of my favourite places of visiting was the Historian and Recorder's Office, opposite Mr. Brigham Young's Block. It contained a small collection of volumes, together with papers, official and private, plans, designs, and other requisites, many of them written in the Deseret alphabet, of which I subjoin a copy.* It is, as will readily be seen, a stenographic modification of Pitman's and other systems. Types have been cast for it, and articles are printed in the newspapers at times; as many, however, prefer two alphabets to one, it will probably share the fate of the "Funetik Nuz." Sir A. Alison somewhere delivers it as his opinion that the future historian of America will be forced to Europe, where alone his material can be found: so far from this being the case, the reverse is emphatically true; everywhere in the States, even in the newest, the Historical Society is an institution, and men pride themselves upon labouring for it. At the office I used to meet Messrs. George A. Smith, the armour-bearer to the prophet in the camp of Zion, who boasts of having sown the first seed, built the first sawmill, and ground the first flour in Southern Utah, whence the nearest settlements, separated by terrible deserts, were distant 200 miles. His companions were Messrs. W. Woodruff, Bishop Bentley, who was preparing for a missionary visit to England, and Wm. Thomas Bullock, an intelligent Mormon, who has had the honour to be soundly abused in Mrs. Ferris's 11th letter. The lady's "wicked Welshman"—I suppose she remembered the well-known line sneer the sons of the Cymri,

"Taffy is a Welshman, Taffy is a thief,"—

is no Cambrian but an aborigine of Leek, Staffordshire, England, and was from 1836 to 1843 an excise officer in H.M.'s Inland Revenue; he kindly supplied me with a plan of the city, and other information, for which he has my grateful thanks.

At the office, the undying hatred of all things Gentile-federal had reached its climax; every slight offered to the faith by anti-Mormons is there laid up in lavender, every grievance is carefully recorded. There I heard how at a general conference of

* See next page.

THE DESERET ALPHABET.

VOCAL SOUNDS.				
Long.	Double.			
𐐀 . . E	𐐁 . . I			
𐐂 . . A	𐐃 . . Ow			
𐐄 . . Ah	𐐅 . . Woo			
𐐆 . . Aw	𐐇 . . Ya			
	Aspirate.			
𐐈 . . O	𐐉 . . H			
𐐊 . . Oo				
Short.	Articulate Sounds.			
𐐋	𐐌 . . P	𐐍 . . Pe	𐐎 . . Ch	𐐏 . . Ha
𐐐	𐐑 . . B	𐐒 . . Bee	𐐓 . . Ge	𐐔 . . Ur
𐐕	𐐖 . . T	𐐗 . . Tee	𐐘 . . Ith	𐐙 . . L
𐐚	𐐛 . . D	𐐜 . . Dee	𐐝 . . The	𐐞 . . M
𐐟	𐐠 . . Ch	𐐡 . . Chee	𐐢 . . S	𐐣 . . N
𐐤	𐐥 . . G	𐐦 . . Gee	𐐧 . . Z	𐐨 . . Eng
𐐩	𐐪 . . K	𐐫 . . Kay	𐐬 . . Zh	
			𐐭 . . Esh	
			𐐮 . . Ur	
			𐐯 . . L	
			𐐰 . . M	
			𐐱 . . N	
			𐐲 . . Eng	

The sounds of the letters are found in the words

The sounds of the letters are found in the words

The sounds of the letters are found in the words

the Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints, in September, 1851, Perry E. Brocchus, a Judge of the Supreme Court, having the design of becoming Territorial delegate to Congress, ascended the rostrum and fully abused their most cherished institution, polygamy.* He was answered with alacrity by Mr. Brigham Young; and really, under the circumstances, the Saints behaved very well in not proceeding to seize *de facto*. Mr. Brocchus, seeing personal danger, left the city in company with Chief Justice L. G. Brandebury and Mr. Secretary Harris, whom the Mormons very naturally accused of carrying away $24,000, the sum appropriated by Congress for the salary and the mileage of the local legislature, thus putting a clog upon the wheels of government. I also heard how Judge Drummond in 1856 began the troubles by falsely reporting to the Federal authority that the Mormons were in a state of revolt; that they had burned the public library, and were, in fact, defying the Union. How, bigotry doing its work, the officials at Washington believed the tale without investigation, and sent an army which was ready to renew the scenes of St. Bartholomew and Nauvoo. The Federal troops were rather pitied than hated; had they been militia they would have been wiped out; but "wretched Dutchmen, and poor devils of Irishmen," acting under orders, were simply despised. Their *fainéantise* was contrasted most unfavourably with the fiery Mormon youth that was spoiling for a fight; that could ride, like part of the horse, down places where no trooper dared venture; that picked up a dollar at full gallop, drove off the invaders' cattle, burned wagons, grass, and provisions, offered to leave the guns, and when they had taken a prisoner, drank with him and let him go. How Governor Cumming after his entry at once certified the untruthfulness of the scandal spread by Judge Drummond, especially that touching the library and archives, and reported that no Federal officer had ever been killed or even assaulted by the Saints. How the effects of these misrepresentations have been and still are serious. In 1857, for instance, the mail was cut off, and a large commercial community was left without postal communication for a whole year;

* On the 6th April, 1860, the Chamber of Representatives at Washington passed a projected law to repress polygamy by a majority of 149 to 60. Fortunately, the Committee of the Senate had no time to report upon it, and the slave discussion caused Mormonism to be forgotten.

the ostensible reason was the troubled state of the territory; the real cause was the desire of the post-office department to keep the advance of the troops dark. The Mormons complain that they have ever been made a subject of political capital. President Van Buren openly confessed to them, "Gentlemen, your cause is just, but I can do nothing for you; if I took your part I should lose the vote of Missouri." Every grievance against them, they say, is listened to and readily believed: as an example, a Mr. John Robinson of Liverpool had lately represented to H.B.M.'s Secretary for Foreign Affairs that his mother and sister were detained in U. T. against their will; the usual steps were taken; the British Minister applied to the U. S. Secretary of State, who referred the affair to the Governor of the Territory; after which process the tale turned out a mere *canard*. This sister had been married to Mr. Ferguson, adjutant-general of the Nauvoo Legion; the mother had left the city of the Saints for Illinois, and had just written to her son-in-law for means by which she could return to a place whence she was to be rescued by British interference. To a false prejudice against themselves the Mormons attribute the neglect with which their project of colonizing Vancouver's Island was treated by the British Government, and the active opposition to be expected should they ever attempt to settle in the valley of the Saskatchewan. And they think it poor policy on the part of England to "bluff off" 100,000 moral, industrious and obedient subjects, who would be a bulwark against aggression on the part of the States, and tend materially to prepare the thousand miles of valley between the Mississippi and the Pacific for the coming railway.

At the office I also obtained details concerning education in Gt. S. L. City. Before commencing the subject it will be necessary to notice certain statements relating to the ingenuous youth of Utah Territory. It is generally asserted that juvenile mortality here ranks second only to Louisiana, and the fault is of course charged upon polygamy. A French author talks of the *mortalité effroyable* amongst the newly-born, whilst owning, somewhat lamely, that the survivors exist *braves et robustes*. I "doubt the fact." Mr. Ferris, moreover, declares that there is "nowhere out of the Five Points of N. Y. City a more filthy, miserable, and disorderly rabble of children than can be found in the streets of Gt. S. L. City." As far as my experience goes,

it is the reverse. I was surprised by their numbers, cleanliness, and health, their hardihood and general good looks. They are bold and spirited. The Mormon father, like the Indian brave, will not allow the barbarous use of the stick; but this is perhaps a general feeling throughout the States, where the English traveller first observes the docility of the horses and the indocility of the children. But as regards rudeness, let a man "with whiskers under his snout," *i. e.* mustachios, ride through a village in Essex or Warwickshire, and he will suffer more contumely at the hands of the infant population in half an hour than in half a year in the U. States or in Utah. M. Remy, despite a "*oeil désir*" to judge favourably of the Saints, could not help owning that the children are mostly *grossiers, menteurs, libertins avant l'âge*, that they use *un langage honteux, comme si les mystères de la polygamie leur avaient fait révéler des l'âge de raison*. Apparently since 1855 *cette corruption précoce* has disappeared. I found less premature depravity than in the children of European cities generally. Mr. J. Hyde also brings against the juvenile Saints severe charges, too general, however, not to be applicable to other lands. "Cheating the confiding is called smart trading;" the same has been said of N. England. "Mischievous cruelty, evidences of spirit;" the attribute of Plato's boys and of the western frontiers generally. "Pompous bravado, manly talk;" not unusual, in N. York, London, and Paris. "Reckless riding, fearless courage;" so apparently thinks the author of "Guy Livingstone." "And if they out-talk their fathers, outwit their companions, whip their school teacher, out-curse a Gentile, they are thought to be promising greatness, and are praised accordingly. Every visitor to Salt Lake will recognise the portrait, for every visitor proclaims them to be the most whiskey-loving, tobacco-chewing, saucy, and precocious children he ever saw." This is the glance of the anti-Mormon eye pure and simple. Tobacco and whiskey are too dear for childhood at the City of the Saints; moreover, twenty years ago, before Tom Brown taught boys not to be ashamed of being called good, a youth at many an English public school would have been "cock of the walk," if gifted with the rare merits described above. I remarked that the juveniles had all the promptness of reply and the presumptuous of information which characterise the Scotch and the people of the Eastern

dustry. A half-educated man cannot afford to own ignorance. He must answer categorically every question, however beyond his reach; and the result is fatal to the diaries of those travellers who cannot diagnostize the disease.

Mormon education is of course peculiar. The climate predisposes to indolence. Whilst the emigrants from the old country are the most energetic and hard-working of men, their children, like the race of backwoodsmen in turn, are averse to any but pleasurable physical exertion. The object of the young colony is to rear a swarm of healthy working bees. The social hive has as yet no room for drones, bookworms, and gentlemen. The work is proportioned to their powers and inclinations. At fifteen a boy can use a whip, an axe, or a hoe—he does not like the plough—to perfection. He sits a bare-backed horse like a centaur, handles his bowie-knife skilfully, never misses a mark with his revolver, and can probably dispose of half a bottle of whiskey. It is not an education which I would commend to the generous youth of Paris and London, but it is admirably fitted to the originator of the situation. With regard to book-work there is no difficulty to obtain in Gt. S. L. City that "mediocrity of knowledge between learning and ignorance" which distinguished the grammar-schools of the Western Islands in the days of Samuel Johnson. Amidst such a concourse of European converts any language, from Hebrew to Portuguese, can be learned. Mathematics and the exact sciences have their votaries. There are graduates of Harvard, Dartmouth, and other colleges. I saw one gentleman who had kept a school in Portsmouth, and another, who had had a large academy in Shropshire, taught in the school of the 14th ward. Music, dancing, drawing, and other artists, which go by the name of accomplishments, have many votaries. Indefatigable travellers there are in abundance. Almost every Mormon is a missionary, and every missionary is a voyager. Captain Gibson, a well-known name for "personal initiative" in the Eastern Main, where he was seized by the Dutch of Java, lately became a convert to Mormonism, married his daughter to Mr. Brigham Young, and in sundry lectures delivered in the Tabernacle, advised the establishment of a stake of Zion in the "Islands of the sea," which signified, I suppose, his intention that the Netherlanders should "smell H—ll." Law is commonly studied, and the practice, as I have shown, is much

simplified by the absence of justice. A solicitor from London is also established here. Theology is the growth of the soil. Medicine is represented by two graduates, one of Maryland; the other, who prefers politics to practice, of New York. I am at pains to discover what gave rise to the Gentile reports that the Mormons, having a veritable horror of medicine, leave curing to the priests, and dare not arrogate the art of healing. Masterships and apprenticeships are carefully regulated by territorial law. Every one learns to read and write; probably the only destitutes are the old European pariahs, and the gleanings from the five or six millions of English illiterati. The Mormons have discovered, or rather have been taught, by their necessities as a working population in a state barely twelve years old, that the time of school drudgery may profitably be abridged. A boy, they say, will learn all that his memory can carry during three hours of book-work, and the rest had far better be spent in air, exercise, and handicraft. To their eminently practical views I would offer one suggestion, the advisability of making military drill and extension movements, with and without weapons, a part of scholarhood. For "setting up" the figure, forming the gait, and exercising the muscles, it is the best of gymnastic systems, and the early habit of acting in concert with others is a long stride in the path of soldiership.

Whilst it is the fashion with some to deride the attempts of this painstaking and industrious community of hard-handed men to improve their minds, other anti-Mormons have taken the popular ground of representing the Saints as averse to intellectual activity, despisers of science, respecters only of manual labour, and "*singulièrement épris de la force brutale.*" It is as ungenerous as to ridicule the proceedings of an English Mechanics' Institute, or the compositions of an "Ed. Mechanics' Mag." The names of their literary institutions are, it is true, somewhat pretentious and grandiloquent; but in these lands there is everywhere a leaning towards the grandiose. Humility does not pay. Modesty *laudatur et alget.*

As early as December 1854, an Act was approved enabling the Chancellor and Board of Regents of the University of the State of Deseret to appoint a superintendent of common schools for the Territory of Utah, and duly qualified trustees were elected to assess and collect for educational purposes a tax upon all

taxable property. In the same year a pathetic memorial was dispatched to Congress, requesting that honourable body to appropriate the sum of $5000 to advance the interests of the University established by law in the City of Gt. S. Lake. I know not whether it was granted. As yet there is no educational tax leviable throughout the Territory. Each district makes its own regulations. A city rate supports a school in each ward. The buildings are of plain adobe, thirty feet by twenty. They also serve as meeting places on Sabbath evenings. There are tutoresses in three or four of the school-houses, who teach all the year round, whereas male education is usually limited by necessity to the three winter months. A certain difficulty exists in finding instructors. As in Australia, the pedagogue is cheaper than a porter, and "turning schoolmaster" is a proverbial phrase about equivalent to coming upon the parish.

The principal educational institutions in Gt. S. L. City have been the following:—

1. The Deseret Universal Scientific.
2. The "Polysophical Society," a name given by Judge Phelps.
3. The Seventies' Variety Club.
4. The Council of Health, a medico-physiologic-clinical and matronly establishment, like the Dorcas Societies of the Eastern States.
5. The Deseret Theological Institution, whose President was Mr. Brigham Young.
6. The Deseret Library and Musical Society.
7. The Phrenological and Horticultural Society.
8. The Deseret Agricultural and Manufacturing Society, which has already been alluded to. It has many branch societies whose members pay an annual subscription of $1.
9. The Academy founded in April 1860, with an appropriation by the local legislature of church money to the extent of $2500. Science and art are to be taught gratis to all who will pledge themselves to learn thoroughly and to benefit the Territory by their exertions. The Superintendent is Mr. Orson Pratt: and his son Mr. O. Pratt, junior, together with Mr. Cobb, a Gentile, acts as teacher. At present those educated are males; in course of time a girl class will be established for accomplishments and practical education.

The Historian's Office was ever to me a place of pleasant resort; I take my leave of it with many expressions of gratitude for the instructive hours passed there.

It will, I suppose, be necessary to supply a popular view of the "peculiar institution," at once the bane and blessing of Mormonism — plurality. I approach the subject with a feeling of despair, so conflicting are opinions concerning it, and so difficult is it to naturalise in Europe the customs of Asia, Africa, and America, or to reconcile the habits of the 19th century A.D. with those of 1000 B.C. A return to the patriarchal ages, we have seen, has its disadvantages.

There is a prevailing idea, especially in England, and even the educated are labouring under it, that the Mormons are Communists or Socialists of Plato's, Cicero's, Mr. Owen's and M. Cabet's school; that wives are in public, and that a woman can have as many husbands as the husband can have wives — in fact, to speak colloquially, that they "all pig together." The contrary is notably the case. The man who, like Messrs. Hamilton and Howard Egan, murders, in cold blood, his wife's lover, is inveriably acquitted, the jury declaring that civil damages mark the rottenness of other governments, and that "the principle, the only one that beats and throbs through the heart of the *entire inhabitants* (!) of this Territory, is simply this: *The man who seduces his neighbour's wife must die, and her nearest relation must kill him.*" Men, like Dr. Vaughan and Mr. Monroe, slain for the mortal sin, perish for their salvation; the Prophet, were they to lay their lives at his feet, would, because unable to hang or behead them, counsel them to seek certain death in a righteous cause as an expiatory sacrifice*; which may save their souls alive. Their two mortal sins are: 1. Adultery; 2. Shedding innocent blood.

This severity of punishing an offence, which modern and civilised society looks upon rather in the light of a sin than of a crime, is clearly based upon the Mosaic code. It is also, *lex loci*, the "common mountain law," a "religious and social custom," and a point of personal honour. Another idea underlies it: the Mor-

* The form of death has yet to be decided. They call this a scriptural practice, viz. "to deliver such a one unto Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus Christ." (1 Cor. v. 5.)

more bold, like the Hebrews of old, "children of chance" is extreme dishonour. They quote the command of God, Deuteronomy (xxiii. 2), "a mamzer shall not enter into the Church of the Lord, till the tenth generation," and ask when the order was repealed. They would expel all impurity from the Camp of Zion, and they adopt every method of preventing what they consider a tremendous evil, viz. the violation of God's temple in their own bodies.

The marriage ceremony is performed in the temple, or, that being impossible, in Mr. Brigham Young's office, properly speaking by the Prophet, who can, however, depute any follower, as Mr. Heber Kimball, a simple apostle, or even an elder, to act for him. When mutual consent is given, the parties are pronounced man and wife, in the name of Jesus Christ, prayers follow, and there is a patriarchal feast of joy in the evening.

The first wife, as among polygamists generally, is the wife, and assumes the husband's name and title. Her "plurality" partners are called sisters — such as sister Anne or sister Blanche — and are the aunts of her children. The first wife is married for time, the others are sealed for eternity. Hence, according to the Mormons, arose the Gentile calumny concerning spiritual wifedom, which they distinctly deny. Girls rarely remain single past sixteen — in England the average marrying age is thirty — and they would be the pity of the community, if they were doomed to a waste of youth so unnatural.

Divorce is rarely obtained by the man who is ashamed to own that he cannot keep his house in order; some, such as the President, would grant it only in case of adultery; wives, however, are allowed to claim it for cruelty, desertion, or neglect. Of late years, Mormon women married to Gentiles are cut off from the society of the Saints, and without uncharitableness men suspect a sound previous reason. The widows of the Prophet are married to his successor, as David took unto himself the wives of Saul; being generally aged, they occupy the position of matron rather than wife, and the same is the case when a man espouses a mother and her daughter.

It is needless to remark how important a part matrimony plays in the history of an individual, and of that aggregate of individuals, a people; or how various and conflicting has been Christian practice concerning it, from the double marriage, civil

and religious, the former temporary, the latter permanent, of the Coptic or Abyssinian church, to the exaggerated purity of Mistress Anne Lee, the mother of the Shakers, who enacted complete continence in a state established according to the first commandment, *crescite et multiplicamini*. The literalism with which the Mormons have interpreted Scripture has led them directly to polygamy. The texts promising to Abraham a progeny numerous as the stars above or the sands below, and that "in his seed (a polygamist) all the families of the earth shall be blessed," induce them, his descendants, to seek a similar blessing. The theory announcing that "the man is not without the woman, nor the woman without the man," is by them interpreted into an absolute command that both sexes should marry, and that a woman cannot enter the heavenly kingdom without a husband to introduce her. A virgin's end is annihilation or absorption, non est perpetua vita *dormiendo*; and so baptism for the dead — an old rite, revived and founded upon the writings of St. Paul quoted in the last chapter, — has been made a part of practice, vicarious marriage for the departed also enters into the Mormon scheme. Like certain British dissenters of the royal burgh of Dundee, who in our day petitioned parliament for permission to bigamize, the Mormons, with Bossuet and others, see in the New Testament no order against plurality*; and in the Old dispensation they find the practice sanctioned in a family, ever the friends of God, and out of which the Redeemer sprang. Finally, they find throughout the nations of the earth, three polygamists in theory to one monogame.

The "chaste and plural marriage" being once legalized, finds a multitude of supporters. The anti-Mormons declare that it is at once fornication and adultery — a sin which absorbs all others. The Mormons point triumphantly to the austere morals of their

* Histoire des Variations, liv. iv. "L'Evangile n'a ni révoqué ni défendu en qui avait été permis dans la loi de Moïse à l'égard du mariage: J.-Christ n'a pas changé la police extérieure, mais il a ajouté seulement la justice et la vie éternelle pour récompense." So in 1540, the Landgrave Philip of Hesse, wishing to marry a second wife while the first was alive, was permitted to "commit bigamy" by the eminent reformers, M. Luther, Kuhorn (M. Bucer) Melanchthon, and others, with the sole condition of secrecy. In the present age, the Right Rev. J. W. Colenso, D.D. and Bishop of Natal, "not only tolerates polygamy in converts, but defends it on the ground of religion and humanity."

community, their superior freedom from unhealthy influences, and the absence of that uncleanness and licentiousness which distinguish the cities of the civilised world. They boast that if it be an evil they have at least chosen the lesser evil, that they practise openly as a virtue what others do secretly as a sin — how full is society of these latent Mormons! — that their plurality has abolished the necessity of concubinage, cryptogamy, contubernium, celibacy, *mariages du troisième arrondissement*, with their terrible consequences, infanticide, and so forth; that they have removed their ways from those "whose end is bitter as wormwood, and sharp as a two-edged sword." Like its sister institution Slavery, the birth and growth of a similar age, Polygamy acquires *vim* by abuse and detraction; the more turpitude is heaped upon it, the brighter and more glorious it appears to its votaries.

There are rules and regulations of Mormonism — I cannot say whether they date before or after the heavenly command to polygamise — which disprove the popular statement that such marriages are made to gratify licentiousness, and which render polygamy a positive necessity. All sensuality in the married state is strictly forbidden beyond the requisite for ensuring progeny, — the practice, in fact, of Adam and Abraham. During the gestation and nursing of children, the strictest continence on the part of the mother is required — rather for a hygienic than for a religious reason. The same custom is practised in part by the Jews, and in whole by some of the noblest tribes of savages; the splendid physical development of the Kaffir race in South Africa is attributed by some authors to a rule of continence like that of the Mormons, and to a lactation prolonged for two years. The anomaly of such a practice in the midst of civilisation is worthy of a place in De Balzac's great repertory of morbid anatomy; it is only to be equalled by the exceptional nature of the Mormon's position, his past fate and his future prospects. Spartan-like the Faith wants a race of warriors, and it adopts the best means to obtain them.

Besides religious and physiological, there are social motives for the plurality. As in the days of Abraham, the lands about New Jordan are broad and the people few. Of the three forms that unite the sexes, polygamy increases, whilst monogamy balances, and polyandry diminishes progeny. The former, as Montesquieu

entirely suggested, acts inversely to the latter, by causing a preponderance of female over male births. "Un fait important à noter," says M. Remy, "c'est qu'il y a en Utah beaucoup plus de naissances de filles que de garçons, résultat opposé à ce qu'on observe dans tous les pays où la monogamie est pratiquée, et parfaitement conforme à ce qu'on a remarqué chez les polygames Musulmans." M. Remy's statement is so distinctly affirmed by Mr. Hyde, the Mormon apostate. In the East, where the census is unknown, we can judge of the relative proportions of the sexes only by the families of the great and wealthy, who invariably practise polygamy, and we find the number of daughters usually superior to that of sons, except where female infanticide deludes the public into judging otherwise. In lands where polyandry is the rule, for instance, in the Jaunsar and Bawur pergunnahs of the Dhun, there is a striking discrepancy in the proportions of the sexes among young children as well as adults: thus, in a village where 400 boys are found there will be 120 girls, and on the other hand, in the Gurkwal Hills, where polygamy is prevalent, there is a surplus of female children. The experienced East Indian official who has published this statement*, is "inclined to give more weight to nature's adaptability to national habit than to the possibility of infanticide," for which there are no reasons. If these be facts, Nature then has made provision for polygamy and polyandry: our plastic mother has prepared her children to practise them all. Even in Scotland modern statists have observed that the proportion of boys born to girls is greater in the rural districts; and attributing the phenomenon to the physical weakening of the parents, have considered it a rule so established as to "afford a valuable hint to those who desire male progeny." The anti-Mormons are fond of quoting Paley:—"it is not the question whether one man will have more children by five wives, but whether these five women would not have had more children if they had each a husband." The Mormons reply that—setting aside the altered rate of production—their colony, unlike all others, numbers more female than male immigrants; consequently that, without polygamy, part of the social field would remain untilled.†

* Hunting in the Himalaya, by R. H. W. Dunlop, C.B. R.G.S. F.R.G.S. London, Richard Bentley, 1860.

† I am sure of the correctness of this assertion, which is thus limited in general

To the unprejudiced traveller it appears that polygamy is the rule where population is required, and where the great social evil has not had time to develop itself. In Paris or London the institution would, like slavery, die a natural death; in Arabia and in the wilds of the Rocky Mountains it maintains a strong hold upon the affections of mankind. Monogamy is best fitted for the large, wealthy, and flourishing communities in which man is rarely the happier because his quiver is full of children, and where the Homers become the executioners of the "plurality-wife." Polyandry has been practised principally by princely and barbarous tribes* who fear most for the increase of their numbers, which would end by driving them to honest industry. It reappears in a remarkable manner in the highest state of social civilisation, where excessive expenditure is an obstacle to freehold property, and the practice is probably on the increase.

The other motive for polygamy in Utah is economy. Servants are rare and costly; it is cheaper and more comfortable to marry them. Many converts are attracted by the prospect of becoming wives, especially from places where, like Clifton, there are sixty-four females to thirty-six males. The old maid is, as she ought to be, an unknown entity. Life in the wilds of Western America is a course of severe toil: a single woman cannot perform the manifold duties of housekeeping, cooking, scrubbing, washing, darning, child-bearing, and nursing a family. A division of labour is necessary, and she finds it by acquiring a sisterhood. Throughout the States whenever a woman is seen at manual or outdoor work, one is certain that she is Irish, German, or Scandinavian. The delicacy and fragility of the Anglo-

tarne by M. Bodin, of the Revue des Deux-Mondes. "A la fin de 1852, on comptait sur le Territoire Mormon 2917 mariés polygames, dont 1117 ayant cinq femmes ou davantage; mais un grand nombre de Mormons n'osaient encore se trouver d'épouses: il est probable même que la plupart des hommes légèrement aisés, des fermiers, comme dans tous les pays peuplés d'européens, n'épousaient encore leur seconde femme que peu à peu, à mesure qu'ils pouvaient s'établir."

* The Mahábhárata thus relates the origin of the practice in India. The five princely Pándava brothers whose contending for a prize offered by the King of Dwara, to the most successful archer, appeal to Siváh to divide it if any of them should gain the virtues. Arjun the eldest was declared victor and received as gift Draupadi, the King's daughter, who thus became the joint-stock property of the whole fraternity. They lived as *faithful* for some years at the foot of Himmah, the remains of which, or rather a Ghoorka structure on the same site, are still visible on a hill near the N.W. corner of the Dhoon. (Hunting in the Himalayas, chap. vii.)

American female nature is at once the cause and the effect of this exemption from toil.

The moral influence diffused over social relations by the presence of polygyny will be intelligible only to those who have studied the workings of the system in lands where seclusion is practised in its modified form, as amongst the Syrian Christians. In America society splits into two parts—men and women—even more readily than in England, each sex is freer and happier in the company of its congeners. At Gt. S. L. City there is a gloom, like that which the late Professor H. H. Wilson described as being cast by the invading Moslem over the luxuriant gaiety of the primitive Hindu. The choice egotism of the heart called Love, that is to say, the propensity elevated by sentiment, and not reflected by reason, subsides into a calm and unimpassioned domestic attachment; respect and reverence are transformed, with the true Mormon concentration, from Love and Liberty to Religion and the Church. The consent of the first wife to a rival is seldom refused, and a *ménage à trois*, in the Mormon sense of the phrase, is fatal to the development of that tender tie which must be confined to two. In its stead there is household comfort, affection, encouraged friendship, and domestic discipline. Womanhood is not petted and spoiled as in the Eastern States; the inevitable cyclical revolution, indeed, has rather placed her below par, where, however, I believe her to be happier than when set upon an uncomfortable and unnatural eminence.

It will be asked what view does the softer sex take of polygyny? A few, mostly from the old country, lament that Mr. Joseph Smith ever asked of the Creator that question which was answered in the affirmative. A very few, like the Curia Electa, Emma, the first wife of Mr. Joseph Smith—who said of her, by-the-bye, that she could not be contented in heaven without rule—apostatize, and become Mrs. Bridemann. The many are, as might be expected of the easily moulded weaker vessel, which proves its inferior position by the delicate flattery of imitation, more in favour of polygyny than the stronger.

For the attachment of the women of the Saints to the doctrine of plurality there are many reasons. The Mormon prophets have expended all their arts upon this end, well knowing that without the hearty co-operation of mothers and wives, sisters and daughters, no institution can live long. They have linked

them with promises of Paradise—they have subjugated them with threats of annihilation. With them once a Mormon always a Mormon. I have said that a modified reaction respecting the immorality of Saints has set in throughout the States; people no longer wonder that their salutations do not show horns and cloven feet, and the Federal officials, the itinerant politicians, the platform orator, and the place-seeking demagogue, can no longer make political capital by bullying, opposing, and abusing them. The tide has turned, and will turn yet more. But the individual still suffers: the apostate Mormon is looked upon by other people as a scamp or a knave, and the woman worse than a prostitute. Again, all the furious of a new faith burst in their bosoms, with a heat which we can little appreciate, and the revelation of Mr. Joseph Smith is considered on this point as superior to the Christian as the latter is to others to the Mosaic Dispensation. Polygamy is a positive command from heaven: if the flesh is mortified by it lend ardour—"no Cross no Crown;" "blessed are they that mourn." I have heard these words from the lips of a well-educated Mormon woman who, in the presence of a Gentile sister, urged her husband to take unto himself a second wife. The Mormon household has been described by its enemies as a hell of envy, hatred, and malice—a den of murder and suicide. The same has been said of the Moslem harem. Both, I believe, suffer from the assertions of prejudice or ignorance. The temper of the new is so far superior to that of the old country, that, incredible as the statement may appear, rival wives do dwell together in unity; and do quote the proverb "the more the merrier." Moreover, they look with horror at the position of the "slavey" of a pauper mechanic, at being required to "nigger it" upon love and starvation, and at the necessity of a numerous family. They know that nine-tenths of the miseries of the poor in large cities arise from early and imprudent marriages, and they would rather be the fiftieth "smiling" of Dives than the toilsome single wife of Lazarus. The French saying concerning motherhood—"la première enfantée, la seconde fait rire, la troisième gâte tout," is here in the Western World. The first child is welcomed; the second is tolerated, the third is the cause of tears and reproaches, and the fourth, if not prevented by gold pills, or some similar monstrosity, causes temper, spleen, and melancholy, with disgust and hatred of the cause. What

the Napoleonic abolition of the law of primogeniture, combined with centralisation of the peasant class in towns and cities, has effected on this side of the Channel, the terrors of maternity, aggravated by a highly nervous temperament, small cerebellum, constitutional frigidity, and extreme delicacy of fibre have brought to pass in the older parts of the Union.

Another curious effect of fervent belief may be noticed in the married state. When a man has four or five wives with reasonable families by each, he is fixed for life: his interests, if not his affections, bind him irrevocably to his New Faith. But the bachelor, as well as the monogamic youth, is prone to back-sliding. Apostacy is apparently so common that many of the new Saints form a mere floating population. He is proved by a mission before being permitted to marry, and even then women, dreading a possible renegade with the terrible consequences of a heavenless future to themselves, are shy of saying yes. Thus it happens that male celibacy is mixed up in a curious way with polygyny; and that also in a Faith whose interpreter advises youth not to remain single after sixteen, nor girls after fourteen. The celibacy also is absolute; any infraction of it would be dangerous to life. Either then the first propensity of the phrenologist is poorly developed in these lands—this has been positively stated of the ruder sex in California—or its action is to be regulated by habit to a greater degree than is usually believed.

I am conscious that my narrative savours of incredibility: the fault is in the subject, not in the narrator. *Exonerwé onimam meam.* The best proof that my opinions are correct will be the following quotation. It is a letter addressed to a sister in New Hampshire by a Mrs. Belinda M. Pratt, the wife of the celebrated apostle. M. Remy has apparently dramatised it (vol. ii. chap. ii.) by casting it into dialogue form, and placing it in the mouth of *une femme distinguée.* Most readers, feminine and monogamic, will remark that the lady shows little heart, or natural affection; the severe calm of her judgment and reasoning faculties and the soundness of her physiology cannot be doubted.

Great Salt Lake City, Jan. 12, 1854.

DEAR SISTER,—Your letter of Oct. 2 was received on yesterday. My joy on its reception was more than I can express. I had waited so long

for your answer to our last, that I had almost concluded my friends were offended, and would write to me no more. Judge, then, of my joy when I read the sentiments of friendship and of sisterly affection expressed in your letter.

We are all well here, and are prosperous and happy in our family circle. My children, four in number, are healthy and cheerful, and fast expanding their physical and intellectual faculties. Health, peace, and prosperity have attended us all the day long.

It seems, my dear sister, that we are no nearer together in our religious views than formerly. Why is this? Are we not all bound to leave this world, with all we possess therein, and reap the reward of our doings here in a never-ending hereafter? If so, do we not desire to be understood, and to know and to do the truth? Do we not all wish in our very hearts to be sincere with ourselves, and to be honest and frank with each other?

If so, you will bear with me patiently, while I give a few of my reasons for embracing, and holding sacred, that particular point in the doctrine of the Church of the Saints to which you, my dear sister, together with a large majority of Christendom, so decidedly object. I mean, a "*plurality of wives.*"

I have a Bible, which I have been taught from my infancy to hold sacred. In this Bible, I read of a holy man named Abraham, who is represented as the friend of God, a faithful man in all things, a man who kept the commandments of God, and who is called, in the New Testament, "the father of the faithful." See James ii. 23; Rom. iv. 16; Gal. iii. 6, 9, 16, 29.

I find this man had a plurality of wives, some of which were called concubines. See Book of Genesis; and for his concubines, see xxv. 6.

I also find his grandson Jacob possessed of four wives, twelve sons, and a daughter. These wives are spoken very highly of, by the sacred writers, as honourable and virtuous women. "*These*," say the Scriptures, "*did build the house of Israel.*"

Jacob himself was also a man of God, and the Lord blessed him and his house, and commanded him to be fruitful and multiply. See Gen. xxx. to xxxv. and particularly xxxv. 10, 11.

I find also that the twelve sons of Jacob, by these four wives, became princes, heads of tribes, patriarchs, whose names are had in everlasting remembrance to all generations.

Now God talked with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob frequently; and His angels also visited and talked with them, and blessed them and their wives and children. He also approved the sins of some of the sons of Jacob, for lusting and selling their brother, and for adultery. But in all His communications with them, He never condemned their family organization; but, on the contrary, always approved of it, and

blessed them in this respect. He even told Abraham that He would make him the father of many nations, and that in him and his seed all the nations and kindreds of the earth should be blessed. See Genesis xviii. 17–19; also xii. 1–3. In later years I find the plurality of wives perpetuated, sanctioned, and provided for in the law of Moses.

David the Psalmist not only had a plurality of wives, but the Lord Himself spoke by the mouth of Nathan the Prophet, and told David that *He* (the Lord) had given his master's wives into his bosom; but because he had committed adultery with the wife of Urish, and had caused his murder, *He* would take *his* wives and give them to a neighbour of his, &c. See 2 Samuel xii. 7–11.

Here, then, we have the word of the Lord, not only sanctioning polygamy, but actually giving to king David the wives of his master (Saul), and afterward taking the wives of David from him, and giving them to another man. Here we have a sample of severe reproof and punishment for adultery and murder, while polygamy is authorised and approved by the word of God.

But to come to the New Testament. I find Jesus Christ spoke very highly of Abraham and his family. He says, "*Many shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of God.*" Luke xiii. 28, 29.

Again he said, "*If ye were Abraham's seed, ye would do the works of Abraham.*"

Paul the Apostle wrote to the saints of his day, and informed them as follows: "As many of you as have been baptised into Christ have put on Christ; and if ye are Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise."

He also sets forth Abraham and Sarah as patterns of faith and good works, and as the father and mother of faithful Christians, who should, by faith and good works, aspire to be counted the sons of Abraham and daughters of Sarah.

Now let us look at some of the works of Sarah, for which she is so highly commended by the Apostles, and by them held up as a pattern for Christian ladies to imitate. "*Now Sarah, Abram's wife, bare him no children; and she had a handmaid, an Egyptian, whose name was Hagar. And Sarah said unto Abram, Behold now, the Lord hath restrained me from bearing: I pray thee go in unto my maid: it may be that I may obtain children by her. And Abram hearkened unto the voice of Sarai. And Sarai, Abram's wife, took Hagar her maid, the Egyptian, after Abram had dwelt ten years in the land of Canaan, and gave her to her husband, Abram, to be his wife.*" See Genesis xvi. 1–3.

According to Jesus Christ and the Apostles, then, the only way to be

saved, is to be adopted into the great family of polygamists, by the Gospel, and then strictly follow their examples.

Again, John the Revelator describes the Holy City of the heavenly Jerusalem, with the names of the twelve sons of Jacob inscribed on the gates. Rev. xxi. 12.

To sum up the whole, then, I find that polygamics were the *Mind* of God; that the family and lineage of a polygamist were selected, in which all nations should be blessed; that a polygamist is named in the New Testament as the father of the faithful Christians of after ages, and cited as a pattern for all generations; that the wife of a polygamist, who encouraged her husband in the practice of the same, and even urged him into it, and officiated in giving him another wife, is named as an honourable and virtuous woman, a pattern for Christian ladies, and the very mother of all holy women in the Christian Church, whose application it should be to be called her daughters; that Jesus Christ has declared that the great fathers of the polygamic family stand as the head in the kingdom of good; in short, that all the saved of after generations should be saved by becoming members of a polygamic family; that all those who do not become members of it are strangers and aliens to the covenant of promise, the commonwealth of Israel, and not heirs according to the promise made to Abraham; that all people from the east, west, north, or south, who enter into the kingdom, enter into the society of polygamists, and under their patriarchal rule and government; indeed, no one can even approach the gates of heaven without beholding the names of twelve polygamists (the sons of four different women by one man) engraven in everlasting glory upon the pearly gates.

My dear sister, with the Scriptures before me, I could never find it in my heart to reject the heavenly vision which has restored to me the fulness of the Gospel, or the Latter Day Prophets and Apostles, merely because in this restoration is included the ancient law of matrimony and of family organization and government, preparatory to the restoration of all Israel.

But, leaving all Scripture, history, or precedent out of the question, let us come to nature's law. What, then, appears to be the great object of the marriage relations? I answer, the multiplying of our species, the rearing and training of children.

To accomplish this object, natural law would dictate that a husband should remain apart from his wife at certain seasons, which, in the very constitution of the female, are untimely; or, in other words, indulgence should be not merely for pleasure or wanton desires, but mainly for the purpose of procreation.

The mortality of nature would teach a mother, that, during nature's process in the formation and growth of embryo man, her heart should be pure, her thoughts and affections chaste, her mind calm, her gentleness

wifehood sentiment, while her body should be burdened with every unnatural confinement to health and vigour, but by no means subjected to anything calculated to disturb, irritate, weary, or exhaust any of its functions.

And while a kind husband should sympathize, comfort, and comfort the wife of his bosom by every kindness and attention consistent with her situation, and with his most tender affection; still he should refrain from all those unnatural combinations which are forbidden in the great constitutional laws of female nature; which laws we are certain will be found the surest natural economy, human wisdom conceived.

Polygamy, then, as practised under the Patriarchal law of God, tends directly to the *debility of women*, and to sexual health and morals in the *constitutions of their offspring*.

You are said, in the law of God, in your Bible, the times and the circumstances under which a woman should remain apart from her husband, during which times she is considered unclean; and should her husband come to her had under such circumstances, he would commit a great sin both against the laws of nature and the wise providence of God's law, as revealed in His word; in short, he would commit an abomination; he would sin both against his own body, against the body of his wife, and against the laws of procreation, in which the health and morals of his offspring are directly concerned.

The polygamic law of God opens to all vigorous, healthy, and virtuous females a door by which they may become honourable wives of virtuous men, and mothers of faithful, virtuous, healthy, and vigorous children.

And here let me ask you, my dear sister, what female in all New Hampshire would marry a drunkard, a man of hereditary disease, a debauchee, an idler, or a spendthrift; or what woman would become a prostitute, or, on the other hand, live and die single, or without forming those unspeakably dear relationships of wife and mother, if the Abrahamic covenant, or Patriarchal laws of God, were extended over your State, and held sacred and honourable by all?

Dear sister, in your thoughtfulness, you inquire, "Why not a plurality of husbands as well as a plurality of wives?" To which I reply: Isa, God has never commanded or sanctioned a plurality of husbands; 2nd, "*Man is the head of the woman*," and not woman and man two heads; 3rd, Such an order of things would work death and not life, or, in plain language, it would multiply diseases instead of children. In fact, the experiment of a plurality of husbands, or rather of one woman for many men, is in active operation, and has been, for centuries, in all the principal towns and cities of "*Christendom!*" It is the genius of "*Christian institutions*," falsely so called. It is the result of "*Mystery Babylon, the great whore of all the earth.*" Or, in other words, it is the result of making void the holy ordinances of God in relation to matri-

[illegible] and [illegible] the love of Money, in which the clergy and [illegible] are [illegible] and [illegible] only permitted to [illegible] with. This love, however, [illegible] as a life of single [illegible] without husband, child, or friend to provide for or comfort them; or to a life of poverty and [illegible], imposed on themselves, the [illegible] affection, or cheerful means to [illegible] to the necessity of [illegible] [illegible] God Him. While the love who has abundance of [illegible] is required to spend it as a [illegible] to others, and in a [illegible] way, the love of God would have given her to him as an [illegible] wife. These circumstances give rise to [illegible] [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], [illegible], poverty, [illegible] death, with all the [illegible] train of [illegible], [illegible] [illegible] want of confidence in [illegible], [illegible] disease, decay, and finally, to this horrible [illegible] system, the [illegible] government, called Christian, forces their fair daughters. I will not say to play the [illegible], but to a [illegible] for her [illegible]; for every species of the [illegible] [illegible], [illegible] [illegible] with [illegible] [illegible], and observe in a great measure the love of nature in preservation.

I again repeat, that nature has constituted the female differently from the male; and for a different purpose. This example of the female sole [illegible] is designed to show in a manner of life, or society and [illegible] the embryo, to bring it forth, and to watch it on her bosom. When nature is not in operation within her in these particulars, and the [illegible] calls, it has wisely provided relief at regular periods, in which that her system may be kept pure and healthy, without exhausting the [illegible] of life on the one hand, or denying up the store of life on the other; till nature says, and an unmistakable change of wants, makes it necessary the law or cease to be fulfilled, and give her an easy [illegible], and enjoy a tranquil life in the midst of that family circle, endeared to her by so many ties, and which may be supposed, at this period of her life, to be approaching the vigour of manhood, and therefore able to comfort and [illegible] her.

But we will close. He has not made [illegible] upon his strength. It is his to move in a wider sphere. If God shall count him worthy of an [illegible] life in this life, of [illegible] and children, and home, and family, and [illegible], he may even aspire to Patriarchal sovereignty, or dignity, to be the prince or head of a tribe, or nation; and like Abraham of old, be able to [illegible] that the children of his posterity, [illegible] and thousands of his own numbers, keep in his own house.

A noble man of God, who is full of the Spirit of the Most High, and in constant [illegible] to [illegible] with Jehovah, or with the Son of God; and to converse with angels, and the spirits of just men made perfect; one who will [illegible] his children, and bring them up in the [illegible] of our

childhood and eternal trash) to more dearly of a hundred wives and children, than the ignorant slave of passion, or of vice and folly, to have one wife and one child. Indeed the God of Abraham is so much better pleased with one than with the other, that he would even take away the one entirely, which is habitually sinned against, or put to an unexpected test, and glory in it, to him who has not sinned.

In the Patriarchal system of family government, the wife is bound to the law of her husband. "Thy husband," saith the Lord, even as Sarah obeyed and honoured Abraham. She lived for him, and to promote his glory, his greatness, his kingdom, our family. Her affections were confined to her God, her husband, and her children.

The children are also under his government, unable without such "Whilst life or strength, or being lasts, or immortality endures," they are bound to obey him as their father and king.

He also had a birth, for which he is responsible. He must keep the commandments of God, and observe His laws. He must not take it with various illicit gleam of this by the law and testimony of God. He must not commit adultery, nor take Hagarites with any women except his own, which was conveyed to him by the holy ceremonies of matrimony.

Hence a system regulated under the law of the Gospel, or in other words, the law of Abraham and the Patriarchs, would have all families there residing as tabernacles, or sanctuaries, dominions, they would be educated. No broken or loathsome words could exist for truths to dwell, or to be blotted of our dictionaries. Wealthy men would have an inducement to keep a children in union, or unitedly. Families would have no grounds for separation in any such broken life. Neither country men planters could emigrate, nor poverty drive them to any such dreams; because the door would be open for every virtuous female to form the honourable and endearing relationships of wife and mother, in some virtuous family, where love, and peace, and plenty would crown her days, and truth and the practice of virtue qualify her to be comprehended with her family circle in that eternal life, where they might multiply their children, without pain, or sorrow, or death; and grow increasing in stature, in wealth, in greatness, in glory, might, majesty, power, and dominion, in worlds without end.

Oh my dear sisters! could the dark veil of darkness be rent from your mind; could you gaze for a moment on the resurrection of the just; could you behold Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and their wives and children, clad in the bloom, freshness and beauty of immortal flesh and bone; clothed in robes of fine white linen, bedecked with precious stones and gold; and surrounded with an offspring of innumerable as numbers as the sand of the sea-shore, or as the grains of sand upon the sea shore; over which they reign as kings and queens for ever and ever; you would then know something of the weight of those words of the

* * *

sacred writers which are quoted in relation to the future state of Israel, the members of the present Dispensation, namely: "Then shall begin the times of Israel!"

O that my dear Brethren could but realize that they have need to repent of this their forgetting and neglecting of these precious promises which are addressed "Christianity," and be baptized, buried in the water, in the likeness of the death and burial of Jesus Christ, and rise to newness of life in the likeness of his resurrection, receiving the Spirit by the laying on of the hands of the Apostle succeeding to Peter, and thereby the remission of sins! Then they would be adopted into the family of Abraham, become his sons and daughters, and rejoice that themselves the children of the Spirit of eternal truth, which is the children of the family order of heaven; and the heavens and glories of eternal kindred then; for my pen can never describe them.

Dear, dear Brethren; remember, according to the New Testament, and the testimony of an ancient Apostle, if you are ever saved in the kingdom of God, it must be by being adopted into the family of polygamists, the family of the great Patriarch Abraham; for in his seed or family, and not out of it, "shall all the nations and kindreds of the earth be blessed."

You say you believe polygamy is "Mormonism;" that it is "abominable," "beastly," &c.; "the prostitution of the best human instincts, or of the devil, spirit, or of some gross or good man who was left or sent into great sins." If you say you are anxious for me to be converted to your faith; and that we may see each other in this life, and be united in one great family in that life which has no end.

Now in order to comply with your wishes, I must reprimand the Old and New Testament; must censure Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, and their families, as licentious, wicked, beastly, abominable characters; Moses, Nathan, David, and the Prophets, as brutes. I must look upon the God of Israel as partaker, in all these abominations, by holding them in fellowship; and even as a minister of such iniquity, by giving king Saul's wives into king David's bosom; and afterwards by taking David's wives from him, and giving them to his neighbour. I must consider Jesus Christ, and Paul, and John, as either living in a dark age, or full of the darkness and ignorance of the human flesh, or else wilfully abominable and wicked, in fellowshipping polygamists and representing them as Saints of the faithful, and rulers in heaven. I must deem them all to hell, with adulterers, fornicators, &c., or else, at least, assign to them somewhere or nowhere in heaven, an ignominious position with, however little, were known with few stripes. While, by analogy, I must learn to consider the Roman Popes, clergy, and nuns, who do not marry at all, as foremost in the ranks of glory; and those Christian and Protestants who have but one wife, as next in order of salvation, glory, immortality, and eternal life.

Now, dear friends, would as I long to see you, and dear as you are to me, I am never come to these regions. I find as through the Gospel has introduced me into the right family, into the right lineage, and into good company. And I neither all these considerations, should I ever be made as comfortable with reference of the Scriptures and heavenly inheritance as to agree with my kindred in New Hampshire, in theory, still my practical circumstances are different, and would, few doubtless to separate us by a wide and almost impassable gulf.

For instance, I have (as you see, in all good conscience, decided on the word of God) formed family and kindred ties, which are inseparable from us, and which I can never bring my feelings to consent to dissolve. I have a good and virtuous husband whom I love. We have four little children, which are naturally and temporally dear to us. And besides this my husband has always taken the lead of me, and also has departed to a better world. He has in all upwards of twenty-five children. All these brothers and children are endeared to me by kindred ties, by natural affection, by acquaintance and association; and this particular, by mutual and long-continued exercises of will, patience, long suffering, and sincerity kindness. We all have our imperfections in this life; but I know that these are good and worthy women, and that my husband is a good and worthy man; one who keeps the commandments of Jesus Christ, and patriarchal in his family like as Abraham. He seeks to provide for them with all diligence; he loves them all, and seeks to comfort them and make them happy. He teaches them the commandments of Jesus Christ, and gathers them about him in the family circle to call upon his God, both morning and evening. He and his family have the confidence, esteem, good-will, and fellowship of this entire territory, and of a wide circle of acquaintance in Europe and America. He is a practical teacher of morals and religion, a promoter of general education, and at present occupies an honourable seat in the Legislative Council of this territory.

Now, as to visiting my kindred in New Hampshire, I would be pleased so to do, were it the will of God. But first, the laws of that state must be so modified by enlightened legislators, and the customs and conscience of its inhabitants, and of my kindred, so altered, that my husband can accompany me with all his wives and children, and be as much respected and honoured in his family organization, and in his holy calling, as he is at home; or in the same manner as the Patriarch Jacob would have been respected, had he, with his wives and children, paid a visit to his kindred. As my husband is yet in his youth, as well as myself, I fondly hope we shall live to see that day. For already the star of Jacob is in the ascendency; the house of Israel is about to be restored; while "*Mystery Babylon*," with all her institutions, awaits her own overthrow. Till this is the case in New Hampshire, my kin-

CHAP. XI.

LAST DAYS AT GT. S. L. CITY.

I now terminate my observations upon the subject of Mormonism. It will be remarked, that the opinions of others and my own—have been recorded as candidly as my means of study have permitted; and that facts, not theories, have been the object of this dissertation.

It will, I think, be abundantly evident, that U. T. has been successful in its colonization. Every where, indeed, in the New World, the analogy applies that a poor man should tarry in Europe, or that a rich man should remain in America—nothing but the strongest ability of habit and the fondest ties reconcile both to their miserable lots. I cannot help thinking, that, morally and spiritually, as well as physically, the prodigals of the Perpetual Emigration Fund gain by being transferred to the Far West. Mormonism is emphatically the faith of the poor; and those acquainted with the wretched condition of the English mechanic, cottier, and agricultural labourer,—it is calculated that a million of them exist on 36*l.* per annum!—who, after a life of ignoble drudgery, of toiling through the year, from morning till night, are ever threatened with the workhouse, must be of the same opinion. Physically speaking there is no comparison between the condition of the Saints and the class from which they are mostly taken. In point of morals morally, the Mormon community is perhaps purer than any other of equal numbers.* If I have no wish to commend their spiritual, or rather their materialistic vagaries—a materialism so levelling in its unauthorised deductions, that even the materialist must [illegible] "I see the world is ignorant."

reject its best with the mind as with the body, but feel it better than none. When wealth shall be less unequally distributed in England, thus doing away with the contrast of excessive splendour and utter destitution, and when Home Missions shall have done their duty in educating and evangelizing the unhappy parishs of town and country, the sons of the land which boasts herself to be the foremost among the nations, will blush no more to hear that the Mormons or Latter Day Saints are mostly English.

About the middle of September, the time of my departure drew nigh. Judge Elsmkin found a change of scene to Carson Valley necessary; Thomas, his son, was to accompany him, and the Reverend Mr. [illegible], a specimen missionary in the Mormon Way—was part of the cortège. Escort and conveyance had been refused; it was impossible to find both. Several proposals were made and rejected. At last an eligible presented himself. Mr. Kennedy, an Irishman from the neighbourhood of Dublin, and an invalid of California, where evil fate had made him a widower, had "swopped" stock, and was about to drive thirty horses and mules to the "El Dorado of the west." For the sum of $160 cash he agreed to convey me, to provide the subsistence which cost him $200, and three pagnes which varied in price from $25 to $75. We had considerable trouble, and of the packing, concerning which we had taken counsel, and as he had lost a horse or two, and had received a bullet through the right arm, in an encounter with the Yuta Indians near Deep Creek, on the 3rd July of the same year, we had little doubt of his behaving well during our journey. He promised also to collect a sufficient armed party, and as the road had lately seen troubles—three drivers had been shot and seventeen Indians had been reported slain in action, by the Federal troops—we were certain that he would keep his word. It was the beginning of the hungry season, when the Indians would be collecting their pine nuts and be plotting midnight upon the spring emigrants.

I prepared for difficulties by having my hair "shingled off," till my head somewhat resembled a painter's dummy, and deeply regretted having left all my wigs behind me. The marshal undertook to lay in our provisions: we bought flour, hard bread or biscuit, eggs and bacon, butter, a few potted luxuries,

not forgetting a goodly allowance of whiskey and horse-scrapers, whose only demerit was that it gave a taste to the next morning. The travelling canteen consisted of a frill-shaw, tin cups and plates, a coffee pot, frying pan, and large ditto for bread baking, with spoons, knives, and forks.

The last preparations were soon made. I wrote to my friends, amongst others to Dr. Norton Shaw, who read me the salutary caution given to explorers; bought a pair of leather leggings for £6, settled with M. Gebow, a Gamalial at whose feet I had sat as a student of the Vale dialect, and discussed the expenses of living, which, though the bill was curiously worded, were exceedingly inexpensive.* Col. Stanistreet favoured me with a parting gift, the "Manual of Surveying Instructions," which I preserve with reverence, and a cocktail whose aroma still lingers in my chamber. My last evening was spent with Mr. [illegible], whose Mr. John Taylor was present, and where, with the kindly aid of Madame, we drank a *café au lait* as good as the *Cafés de Paris* affords. I thanked the governor for his frank and generous hospitality, and made my acknowledgments to his amiable wife. All my affairs were upon an extensive scale, the immediate future being somewhat dark and mysterious.

The start in these regions is exquisitely un in Eastern Africa. We were to depart on Wednesday the 19th September, at 8 A.M. — then 10 A.M. — then 12 A.M. — then, after a deprecatory visit, on the morrow. On the morning of the eventful next day, after the usual amount of "sailing," and a repetition of adieus, I found myself "all aboard," standing seawards, and mentally speculating *Hinc exulgemus quando ulciscemur?*

* The bill is genuine:—

Gt. S. L. City, September 18th, 1857.

Captain Burton to James Townsend, Dr.

Aug. 27.	14 Bottle Beer £0 0
	Salt & Sculland 0 0
	Cleaning Vest and Coat 0 0
	2 Bottles Brandy 1 0
	Washing 0 0
	to Diet, five dollars 0 0
	to 5 weeks 5 days Board 3 15
	£5 15
	Cash, five dollars 0 0
	£7 15

CHAP. XII.

TO HUNT VALLEY.

Morning upon a fine scale, here worth $2000, and "found" to Galifornia $600, and accompanying a Gentile youth who arrived at the ranch of Joe, I proceeded to take my first lesson in road driving. We were conveying our baggage, which, the kiln still declined to load together, and by their struggling made the task of a little difficulty to a lyre. The road was that leading to Camp Floyd before described. At the Brewery near Mountain Point we found some attempts at a rubble, and were charged $1·50 for fifteen potatoes, and for salt, amongst other decorations on the wall was a sheet of prize fighting, in which appeared the portraitures of an old navy, and the champion of the light weights in the English ring, only a Bible in Ot. S. L. City. The day was fine and warm from clear, affording us a splendid back view of the Happy Valley before it was finally shut out from sight, and the Utah Lake looked a very gem of beauty, a diamond in its setting of steadily blue mountains. After fording the Jordan we were overtaken by Mr. Kennedy, who had been delayed by more last words, and at the dugout we drank

[illegible] with Sharpshin Joe the Mormon, who had been busily employed in digging water by a divining rod of peach tree. When moonlight began to appear, Joe the Gentile was relieved by the "Lion" in camp, and with the Mormon, whose fiddle could be heard gently, a considerable while, he played with an air of gambling. It was deep in the night before we entered Briggs' room, where a flaming little Cannon supplied us with supper, and I spread a bed on the counter of my friend Capt. Hinds, who obligingly insisted upon my becoming his guest.

The five days between the 20th and the 25th September spent merrily at my new home, Camp Floyd, not ground for flies, I embraced with pleasure the opportunity of seeing the rest of my Antelope brethren in arms. My host was a son of the Old Dominion of Queen Elizabeth, where still linger traces of the gladsome age, and the noble feudal spirit, which (alas!) have almost disappeared from the mother country, where the genealogical tree still hangs against the wall, where the principal families, the Mylnes, Harrisons, Pages, Gibbons, and Allens, intermarry and breed, decamp to settle, and where the houses, built of brick brought out from England, still wear traces of the seventeenth century. A winter indeed might be passed most pleasantly on the banks of James River and in the West of Virginia,—a refreshing visitor to those who love as I do, the traditions of our ancestors.

From Capt. Hinds I gathered that in former times, in Western America, as in British India, a fair aborigine was not unfrequently the acquisition of an officer's hut or tent. The improved civilization, however, and the frequency of marriage, have abolished the custom by rendering it unfashionable. The Indian squaw, like the Dacian, seldom looked upon her "mate" in any other light but his banker. An abominable beggar, she would beg for all her relations, for all her friends, and all her fellows, rather than not beg at all, and the husband's means required always to be prefaced with the bribe. Officers who were long thrown amongst the Prairie Indians, joined to this the Anglo-Indian, the Arab practice with other nationalities, whilst, if whiskey was present, a cut or stab might momentarily be expected. The skin was painted white, black, and red, the hair was dressed and decorated, and the chief was clad round the waist, whilst head cloth and blanket, leggings and moccasins

completed the costume. The "stock thing to do" when drinking with Indians, and listening to their monotonous songs and tales, was to imitate Indian customs, to become, under the influence of the jolly god, a Hindu. This accordingly generally to throw skins to the sun, blanket to squaw, leggings to a third, to fast to return home in break-sticks. Such system would have been severely treated by a highly respectable government; they have now, however, like many a pleasant hour in British India, had their day, and are sunk, many a fathom deep, in the genuine Anglo-Scandinavian gloom.

I heard more of army grievances during my second stay at Camp Floyd. The term of a soldier's enlistment, five years, is too short, especially for the cavalry branch, and the facilities for desertion are enormous. Between the two one-third of the army disappears every year. The company which should muster 84 has often only 50 men. The soldier has as time to learn his work; his sergeant drives engines, rides hard, rides ready, and build huts and stables. When thoroughly drilled, he can take his discharge, and having filled a purse out of his very liberal pay ($11 per month), he gaily buys ground and becomes a landed proprietor. The officers are equally well situated, but marching, counter-marching, and contingent expenses are heavy enough to make the profession little better than it is in France. The Secretary of War being a civilian, with naturally the highest theoretical idea of discipline and economy combined with economy, is always a martinet; no one can defend the aforesaid clubs, and hence is always obstinate under difficulties. As the larger proportion of the officers are southern men, especially Virginians, and as the soldiers are almost entirely Germans and Irish—the Egyptians of modern times—the Federal army will take little part in the coming contest. It is more than possible that the forts will fall much in two like the soldiers' allies from which it is drawn. As far as I could judge of American officers, they are about as capable in mind and mode of thought as those of the British army. They are aware of the fact that the bauble of state requires a tie, but they prefer, as we all do, King Stork to King Log, and King Log to King Mob.

I took sundry opportunities of attending company inspections, and found the men well dressed and tolerably set up, while the bands, being German, were of course excellent. Mr. Chandless

and officers talk of the U. S. army discipline as something. Draconian; severity is doubtless necessary in a force so constituted, but—a proof of their clemency—desertion is the only crime punishable by flogging. The uniform is a study. The States have attempted in the dress of their army, as in the forms of their government, a moral impossibility. It is expected to be at once cheap and soldier-like, useful and ornamental, light and heavy, pleasantly hot in the arctic regions, and agreeably cool under the tropics. The "military tailors" of the English army suddenly forgot the number of changes required in civilian raiment, and looking to the lightness of the soldier's kit, wholly neglect its efficiency, its capability of preserving the soldier's life. The Federal uniform consists of a brigandlike and bizarre sombrero, with amphitheatrical cock-plume, and of a blue tunic, fastened from the old Kentuckian hunter's garment or wrapper, with innumerable sometimes ready to unbelt, at other times too dark and dingy to please the eye. Its principal merit is a severe republican plainness, very consistent with the professedness of the people, highly fantastical with the customs of military nations. Soldiers love to dress up Mars, not to clothe him like a butcher's boy.

The position of Camp Floyd is a mere brickyard, a basin surrounded by low hills, which an Indian pony would have little difficulty in ascending; sometimes, however, after the fashion of the land, though apparently easy from afar, the ascents assume a mural shape, which would stop anything but a mountain sheep. The rim shows artificial strata, evidencing upheavals, disruptions, and lastly, drainage through the hanyons which break the wall. The principal vegetation is the dwarf cedar above, the sage greenwood and rabbit bush below. The only animals seen upon the plain are jackass-rabbits, which in places afford excellent sport. There are but few Mormons in the valley; they supply the camp with hay and vegetables, and are said to act as spies. The officers cannot but remark the coarse features and the animal expression of their countenances. On the outskirts of camp are a few women that have taken sanctuary among the Gentiles, who have manners too strong for the Saints. The principal amusement noticed as that of walking into and out of the sutlers' stores, the hospitable Messrs. Gilbert's and Livingston's,—a pastime which I have seen at

"Robber Fellow Robert"—and he did certainly look dark, sullen and melancholy, as if we were in the vicinity of Hyderabad, Sindh.

I had often heard of a land-lion, the Thespesian Skippy, and my friends Captains Hath and Grove had obligingly offered to show me the creature. After breakfast on the 23rd Sept. (another bright warm day—we are out in a good double-buggy well provided with the materials of a five days' picnic, behind a fine team of four mules, on the road leading to the Utah Lake. After passing Simple Jack's dug-out we sighted the water about noon; it was of a whitish blue, like the milky ocean of Jocelyn, embosomed in the embrace of hill and bald-headed hills and mountains, whose summits are flakes of the jagged snow. Where the wind curved into shore are patches of white sand strewn with broken shells and dried water-weed. Fish-Pelican Point, a long projecting rocky spit thrusts in a fine feeding ground for geese and ducks, and swimmers and divers may always be seen dotting the surface. On the south rises a conspicuous buttress of black rock, and thirty miles off we could see enormous dust columns curling over the plain. The western part of the valley, cut with sun cracks and saltlicks, and dotted with boulders, slowly gradually upwards from the margin of the lake to small thrills and dwarf-hill ranges, black with cedar bush, and streaked only by wind roads. On the east is the best wheat country in this part of the Territory; it is said to produce 100 bushels per acre.

After crossing rifle we crossed Jordan Bridge, another robbery affair, for which, being Mormon property, we paid $0.50; had we been Saints the expense would have been one half. Two more miles led us to Lehi, a rough imitation of St. S. L. City, for which the only decent house was the bishop's. In British India it would have been the collector and magistrate's. My companions pointed out to me a hut in which an apostate Mormon's throat had been cut by blackened Scots. It is gratifying to observe that throughout the U.S., as in the Old Country, all historical interest gathers before a barbarous murder. As we advanced a wall of rock lay before us; the strata were all uniform as if a convulsion had lately shattered through their frame, and troubled fragments cumbered the hills, running up by precipitous ascents to the middle heights. The colours were as grotesque: the foreground was a mass of emerald scrub; light

and barky; beyond it, the near distance was pink with the beautiful bloom, most unpoetically termed "hogweed," and above with a growth like the celebrated blue grass of Kentucky; whilst the wall itself was a third stone, dark green with cedars, which, 100 feet tall, were dwarfed to an inch,—and all united with autumnal couple; whilst below and around the brightest yellow of the faded willow formed the band, a golden zone.

Two miles and a half from Lehi led us to American Fork, a soft sweet spring of snow water, with dark shells adhering to white stone, and a quantity of trout swimming the limpid stream. The bridge was rickety and loose planked; in fact, the worst I ever saw in the U. S., where as a rule the country bridges can never be crossed without fear and trembling; the moderate toll was $1 both days. Three miles and a half more placed us at Battle Creek, where in 1853 the Yuta Indians fled precipitately from a Mormon charge. Six miles over a dusty bench conducted us to the mouth of the kanyon, a brown tract ruined by a dusty road and many a spring, and showing the base of the opposite wall encumbered with degraded masses, superimposed upon which were miniature castles. The mouth of the ravine was a romantic spot: the flanks were sister giants of brown rock—here sheer, there sloping—whose pines and firs fringed a granulous ruddy-hold, and ringed in long perspective lines, whilst between them, through its channel, verdant with willow, and over a clear, pebbly bed, under the arches and scaurs, coursed a mountain torrent more splendid than Rubicon.

We forded the torrent and pursued the road, now hugging the right then the left side of the chasm. The latter was exceedingly beautiful, misty with the blue of heaven, and rising till its solidity was blent with the tenuity of ether. The rest of the scenery was that of the great Cottonwood Kanyon; painting might express the difference, language cannot. After six miles of a narrow winding road, we reached the place of Cascade, the principal lion of the place, and found that the season had reduced them to two thin milky lines running down blue-coloured slopes of bare rock, bordered by shaggy forests of fir and cedar. The shrinking of the water's volume lay bare the formation of the cascades, two steps and a slope, which at a happier time would have been veiled by a continuous sheet of foam.

After finding a suitable spot we outspanned, and, whilst

unwilling subservient natives, allowed the cattle to roll and ride. After dining and collecting a few shells, we succeeded and drove back through a magnificent mound to American Fork, where the bishop, Mr. Lyman Dayton, of Ohio, had offered us bed and board. The good ephalopist was of course a Mormon, as we could see by his two goggle eyes; he supplied us with an excellent supper as a host, not as an innkeeper. The little settlement was St. S. L. City on a small scale; full of the fair sex; every one by the bye, appeared to be or about to be a mother. False hair, alas! was fair to see,—it was really

"Water, water, every where,
And not a drop to drink!"

Before setting out homewards on the next day we met O. Porter Rockwell, and took him to the house with us. This old Mormon, in days gone by, suffered or did not suffer imprisonment for shooting or not shooting Governor Boggs of Missouri: he now herds cattle for Messrs. Russell and Co. His tastes are apparently rural; his enemies declare that his life would not be safe in the City of the Saints. An attempt had lately been made to assassinate him in one of the kanyons, and the first report that reached my ears when on route to California was the murder of the old Danite by a certain Mr. Marony. He is one of the triumvirate, the First Presidency of "mountaineers," the two others being Ephe Hanks and Bill Hickman — whose names were held in the land; they are now, however, going down; middle age has rendered them comparatively inactive, and the rising generation, Lot Huntington, Ike Clements, and others desperadoes, whose teeth and claws are full grown, are able and willing to stand in their stead. Porter Rockwell was a man about fifty, tall and strong, with ample leather leggings overhanging his huge spurs, and the muzzle-ends of two revolvers peeping from his blouse. His forehead was already a little bald, and he wore his long grisly locks after the ancient fashion of the U. S., plaited and gathered up at the nape of the neck; his beard, grizzled with streaking wrinkles contrasted curiously with his cool determined grey eye, jolly red face, well washed up with "grog," and his laughing good-humoured mouth. He had the manners of a jovial, reckless, devil-may-care English ruffian. The officers called him Porter, and pre-

ferred him to the "shiny fiddles" who will drink with a man and then murder him. After a little preliminary business about a stolen horse, all concluded on the sociable, he pulled out a dollar, and sent to the neighbouring distillery for a bottle of Valley Tan. The spirit-dealer was smuggled in under a cloth, as though we had been respectables in a Mussulman country, and we were asked to join him in a "square drink," which means spirits without water. The mode of drinking was peculiar. Porter, after the preliminary question raised the glass with cocked little finger to his lips, with a twinkle of the eye ejaculated "What!" that is to say "good," and drained the tumbler to the bottom: we acknowledged his civility with a "here's how," and drank Kentucky-fashion, which in English is nobleperson's grog. Of these "square drinks" we had at least four, which, however, did not shake Mr. Rockwell's nerves, and then he went out for more. Meanwhile he told us his last adventure, how when escorting the kanyon he suddenly found himself covered by two long rifles; how he had thrown himself from his horse, drawn his revolver and crept behind a bush, and how he had dared the enemy to come out and fight like men. He spoke of one Ohry, a Frenchman, lately killed in a street quarrel, who rode on business from Santa Fé to Independence, about 600 miles in 110 hours. Porter offered, for the fun of the thing, to assist him by getting over 600 in 144. When he heard that I was preparing for California he gave me abundant good advice—to carry a double-barrelled gun loaded with buck-shot; to "keep my eyes skinned," especially in kanyons and ravines; to make at times a dark camp—that is to say, unhitching for supper and then hitching up and turning a few miles off the road—ever to be ready for attack when the animals were being harnessed and unharnessed, and never to trust to appearances in an Indian country, where the red varmint will follow a man for weeks, perhaps peering through a wisp of grass on a hill top, till the time arrives for striking the blow. I observed that, when thus speaking, Porter's eye assumed the expression of an old mountaineer's, ever rolling as if set in quicksilver. For the purpose of avoiding "White Indians," the worst of their kind, he advised me to shun the direct route, which he represented to be about as fit for travelling on as is—if for a poetic simile, and to journey wid

Fillmore and the weather-beating White Mountains; finally, he comforted me with an assurance that either the Indians would not attempt to attack us and our stock — even a more inquisitive lot than — or that they would vanish us by force and "wipe us out."

When the drinking was finished we exchanged a cordial *parquet de mains* with Porter and our hospitable host, who appeared to be the *arbre de la science* of Utah county, and once found ourselves again without the limits of Camp Floyd.

On the evening of the 26th September, the Judge, accompanied by his son and the Marshal of the Territory, entered the encampment, and our departure was fixed for the next day. The morning of the 27th was spent in exchanging adieux and little gifts with men who had now become friends, and in sleeping-naps which succeeded one another at no longer intervals than quarter hours. Judge Crosbie, who had arrived by the last mail, kindly provided me with fishing tackle which could relieve a diet of eggs and bacon, and made me regret that I had not added to my outfit a Maynard. This, the best of breechloading guns, can also be loaded at the muzzle; a mere sighting in size, it kills at 1800 yards, and in the U. S. costs only $40 or $6. The Judge, a remarkable contrast to the usual Elijah Pogram style that still affects bindings on sprinkled white tie, black satin waistcoat, and swallow-tailed coat of rusty broadcloth, with terminations to match, had been employed for some time in Oregon and at St. Juan; he knew one of my expatriated friends — poor J. de C., whose exile we all lament — and he gave me introductions which I found most useful in Carson Valley. Like the best Americans he spoke of the English as brothers, and freely owned the deficiencies of his Government, especially in dealing with the frontier Indians.

We started from Lieut. Dudley's hospitable quarters, where a crowd had collected to bid us farewell. The saddle-mules, with four mules driven by Mr. Kennedy in person, stood at the door, and the parting stirrup-cup was exhibited with a will. I bade

[illegible] company lately allowed the road, and when aligned by the chiefs of their tribes to abandon their life they defied on the mesas a host of regular troops, which was carried in California an exploring party, otherwise disappointed failed, however, to make the land. At the western extremity of the White Mountains there is a mammoth cave, of which my guide has been explored: it is said to [illegible] and to a prodigious and discouraging depth. Major Egan is eager to visit the cavern.

farewell with a true regret to my kind and gallant hosts, whose brotherly attentions had made even wretched Camp Floyd a pleasant sojourn to me. At the moment I write it is probably desolate; the "Secession" disturbances having necessitated the withdrawal of the unhappies from U. T.

About 4 P.M., as we mounted, a furious dust-storm broke over the plain; perhaps it may account for our night's surprise, which a conscious reader might attribute to our copious libations of whiskey. The road to the first mail station, "Meadow Creek," lay over a sage barren; we lost no time in mixing it by forging to the west. After hopelessly driving about the country till 10 P.M. in the fine cool night, we knocked at a hut and induced the owner to appear. He was a Dane who spoke but little English, and his son, "about" by our forenoon, began at once to hook. At last, however, we were guided by our "forelaper" to "Johnston's settlement," in Rock Valley, and we entered by the uncompanionous process of pulling down the zigzag fence. After some trouble we persuaded a Mormon to quit the bed in which his wife and children lay, to shake down for us sleeping places among the cats and hens on the floor, and to provide our animals with oats and hay. Mr. Grice, the Marshal, one of the handiest of men, who during his volunteer service in Mexico had learned most things from carrying a musket to cooking a steak, was kind enough to prepare our supper, after which, still sorely laden with whiskey dying within us, we turned in.

To Meadow Creek, 27th September.

We rose with the dawn, the cats, and the hens, sleep being impossible after the first blush of light, and I proceeded to inspect the settlement. It is built upon the crest of an earthwork rising from grassy hollows; the haystacks told of stock, and the brush-grass on the borders of the ravines and nullahs rendered the place particularly fit for pasturage. The land is too cold for cereals: in its bleak bottoms frost reigns throughout the year; and there is little bench-ground. The settlement consisted of half a dozen huts, which swarmed, however, with women and children. Mr. Kennedy introduced us to a Scotch widow of mature years, who gave us any amount of butter and butter-milk in exchange for a little tea. She was but a luke-

warm Mormon, declaring polygamy to be an abomination, complaining that she had been inveigled to a distant place, and that the poor in Mormondom were exceedingly poor. Yet the elderly body was neat and fresh; her house was clean and neat; and she washed her children and her pannikin.

We had ventured twenty-five miles out of the right road, and were still distant fifteen to sixteen from the first mail station. For the use of the flour, flies, and permission to boil water, we paid our hostess Mormon $2, and at noon, a little before the bursting of the dusty storm-gusts, which reproduced the horrors of Sinai, we found ourselves once more in the saddle and the ambulance. We passed by a cattle track on rolling ground dotted with sage and greasewood, white shiftless hosts of jackass-rabbits, and the sego with its beautiful lily-like flowers. After crossing sundry nullahs and pitch-holes, with deep and rugged sides, we made the mail station at the west end of Rush Valley, which is about twenty miles distant from Camp Floyd. The little green bottom, with its rush-bordered sinking spring, is called by Capt. Simpson "Meadow Creek." We passed a pleasant day in revolver practice with Al. Huntington, the renowned brother of Lot, who had lately bolted to South California, in attempts at rabbit-shooting — the beasts became very wild in the evening — and in dining on an antelope, which a youth had ridden down and pistolled. With the assistance of the station-master, Mr. Frost, a civil and communicative man, who added a knowledge of books and drugs to the local history, I compiled an account of the several lines of communication between Gt. S. L. City and California.

Three main roads connect the land of the Saints with the Eldorado of the West — the northern, the central, and the southern.

The northern road rounds the upper end of the Great Salt Lake, and falls into the valleys of the Humboldt and Carson Rivers. It was explored in 1846 by Col. Frémont*, who, when

* Explored is used in a modified sense. Every foot of ground, passed over by Colonel Frémont was perfectly well known to the old trappers and traders, as the hunters of Africa to the Arab and Portuguese pombeiros. But this fact takes nothing away from the honours of the man who first surveyed and scientifically observed the country. Amongst those who preceded Colonel Frémont the most remarkable partizan was Sylvester Pattie, a Virginian, who having lost his wife in his adopted home on the Missouri, resolved to trap upon and to trace out the head waters of the Yellow River. The little company of five persons, amongst

passing over the seventy waterless miles of the western, a continuation of the eastern desert, but less sandy and several leagues. The "first overland trip" was followed in 1846 by a party of emigrants under a Mr. Hastings, who gave his name to the "cut off" which has materially shortened the distance. The road has been carefully described in Kelly's California, in Horn's "Overland Guide," and by Mr. Henry. It is still, despite its length, preferred by travellers, on account of the abundance of grass and water; moreover, there are now but two short stretches of desert.

The northern road, viâ Fillmore and San Bernardino, to San Pedro, where the traveller can embark for San Francisco, is long and tedious; water is found at thirty miles distance; there are three deserts; and bunch-grass and other grasses are not plentiful. It has one great merit, namely, that of being rarely snowed up, except between the Rio Virgen and Gt. S. L. City: the best travelling is in spring, when the melting snows from the eastern hills fill the rivulets. This route has been travelled over by Messrs. Chandless and Remy, who have well described it in their picturesque pages. I add a few notes, collected from men who have ridden over the ground for several years, concerning the stations: the information, however, it will be observed, is merely hearsay.*

whose wife Pattie and his son, set out on the 20th June 1824, and on the 2nd August arrived at the head waters of the Platte, where they found General Ashley preparing to return to St. Louis. Pattie in command of 116 men crossed the dividing ridge, descended into the valley of the Rio Grand del Norte, entered Santa Fé and trapped on the Gila River. The party broke up on the 27th November 1826, when Pattie accompanied by his son and six others descended the Colorado, and after incredible hardships reached the Mission-American Mission, where they were received with the customary hospitality. The father died in Mexico city, the son, after being released and recruited at San Diego, reached San Francisco, whence he returned home viâ Vera Cruz and New Orleans after an absence of six years. The whole tale is well told in "Harper's Magazine."

* The distance from Gt. S. L. City to San Bernardino is, according to my informant, about 750 miles, and has been accomplished in fourteen days. The road runs through Provo to Salt Cruz formed by a desert of 60-80 miles, and crossing Sevier River the half-way point to the capital. At Corn Creek is an Indian farm, and Weaver is 94 miles from Fillmore. Ogden Spring is the entrance to Parowan Valley, where as early as 1856 there was a fort and a settlement. Then comes Fillmore, the territorial capital, and 90 miles (Simpson) to pasture through Parowan City in Little Salt Lake Valley. At Cold Creek it forks, the central road being that usually preferred. The next station is Mountain Meadows, the Southern Wall of the Basin, celebrated for its massacre, many

The central route is called Egan's by the Mormons, Simpson's by the Gentiles. Mr. or Major Howard Egan is a Saint and well-known guide, an indefatigable mountaineer, who for some time drove stock to California in the employ of Messrs. Livingstone, and who afterwards became scout agent under Messrs. Chapman and Russell. On one occasion he made the distance in twelve days, and he claims to have explored this present public office route between 1850 and the winter of 1857-1858. Capt. J. H. Simpson, of the Federal army, whose itinerary is given in Appendix I., followed between May and June 1859. He travelled along Egan's path, with a few unimportant deviations, for 300 miles, and left it ten miles west of Ruby Valley, bending northwards to the fords of the Carson River. On his return he pursued a more southerly line, and fell into Egan's route about thirty miles west of Camp Floyd. The employés of the route prefer Egan's line, declaring that on Simpson's there is little grass, that the springs are scarce for want of melted snow, and that the wells are unwholesome. Hill, however, is the best, as the following pages will, I think, prove.

To Tooele, 18th September.

On a cool and cloudy morning, which at 10 A.M. changed into a clear sunny day, we set out, after paying $3 for three fowls, to make the second station. Our road lay over the seven miles of plain that ended Rush Valley: we saw few rabbits, and the sole vegetation was wasted sage. Entered a rough divide, stony and dusty, with ruinous and pitch-holes: it is known by the name of

the Sand Club River, and thence a total of 10 miles, divided into several stages, lead to the Six Virgin. After following the latter for 20-30 miles, the path crosses the fords of Muddy River and ascends a dusty 22-27 miles to mountain looking to Las Vegas. Thirty miles beyond that point lies a group were called "Mountain Springs," a preliminary to "Dry Lake," a second about 40-45 miles beyond, and ending at an alkaline water called Kingston spring. The third desert or salt basin, made by a poor established by the polygamists at Cedar-town and called Mills or Shirley Springs, 115 miles from Las Vegas. The next stage of 35 is to the Indian River, a tributary of the Colorado, where there is another military establishment, the last in New California. Twenty following and crossing the course of the Mohave, the seventh again the Mohave River. After 30 miles down the Mohave valley is San Bernardino, once a thriving Mormon settlement, 90 miles from San Pedro and 120 from San Diego, where water conveyance is found to San Francisco.

General Johnston's Pass. The hills above it are gray and bald-headed, a few hillocks of black cedar protruding from their breasts, and the land wears an uninhabitable look. After two miles of toil we halted near the ruins of an old station. On the right side of the road was a spring half way up the hill; three holes lay full of slightly alkaline water, and the surplus flowed off in a black belt of vegetable mud, which is often dry in spring and summer. At "Point Look Out," near the counterslope of divide, we left on the south Simpson's route, and learned by a sign-post that the distance to Carson is 638 miles. The pass led to Skull Valley, of ominous sound. According to some, the name is derived from the remains of Indians which are found scattered about a fine spring in the southern parts. Others declare that the mortal remains of bison here lie like pavement stones or cannon-balls in the Crimean Valley of Death. Skull Valley stretches nearly S. W. of the Great Salt Lake plain, with which it communicates, and its drainage, as in those parts generally, feeds the lake. Passing out of Skull Valley, we crossed the ruinous and pitch-holes of a broad beach which rose above the edge of the desert, and after seventeen miles beyond the Pass reached the station which Mormons call Egan's Springs, anti-Mormons Simpson's Springs, and Gentiles Last Springs.

Standing upon the edge of the beach, I could see the Tophet in prospect for us till Carson Valley; a road narrowing in perspective to a point, spanned its gritty length, awfully long, and the next mail station hid shrunk to a little black knob. All was desert; the bottom could no longer be called basin or valley: it was a thin fine silt, thirsty dust in the dry season, and putty-like mud in the spring and autumnal rains. The hair of this unlovely skin was sage and greasewood: it was warted with sand-heaps; in places mottled with bald and horrid patches of salt soil, whilst in others minute crystals of salt, glistening like diamond-dust in the sunlight, covered tracts of moist and oozy mud. Before us, but a little to the right or south, and nearly due west of Camp Floyd, rose Granite Mountain, a rough and jagged spine or hogback, inhabited only by wolves and antelopes, hares and squirrels, grasshoppers, and occasionally an Indian family. Small sweet springs are found near its northern and southern points. The traditions of the country declare it to be rich in gold, which, however, no one dares to dig. Our road

it about to round the southern extremity, wheeling successively S. and S.-E., then W. and N.-W., then S.-W. and S.-E., and S.-W. and N.-W.—in fact, round three quarters of the compass; and for three mortal days we shall sight its ugly frowning form. A direct passage leads between it and the corresponding point of southern hill; we contemplate, through the gap, a blue ridge where Mat Wilcox Spring Station, the destination of our after-noon's, but the straight line which gives so much distance is closed by bogs for the greater part of the year, and the sun of the wild sage would impede our wagon wheels.

The great desert of Utah Territory extends in length about 300 miles along the western side of the Great Salt Lake. Its breadth varies: a little further south it cannot be crossed; the water, even where not poisonous, being insufficient. The formation is of bottoms like that described above, bench-lands, with the usual parallel and perfectly horizontal water-lines, leaving regular steps, as the sea settled down, by the gradual upheaval of the land. They mark its former elevation upon the sides of the many detached ridges trending mostly N. and S. Like the rim of the Basin, these hills are not a single continuous mountain range which might be flanked, but a series of disconnected protrusions above the general level of the land. A paying railway through this country is as likely as a profitable canal through the Isthmus of Suez: the obstacles must be struck at right angles, with such assistance as the rough kanyons and the curious of various levels afford.

We are now in a country dangerous to stock. It is a kind of central point, where Pávant, Gosh-Yuts (popularly called Gosh Ute), and Pauté (Bannacks) meet. Watches, therefore, were told off for the night. Next morning, however, it was found that all had stood on guard with unloaded guns.

To Fish Springs, 35th September.

At Lost Springs the party was mustered. The following was found to be the material. The Rae Kaffirs was one Kennedy, an Irishman, whose brogue, doubly-Dublin, sounded startlingly in the Great American Desert. On a late trip he had been stabbed by Indians. The savages had driven off two of his horses, into a kanyon within sight of the Deep Creek Station. In the hurry of pursuit he spurred up the ravine, followed by a

friend, whose sighting jerked most his own property, upon the trees, he gave the word sauve qui peut. As they whirled their horses the Yutas rushed down the hill to intercept them at the mouth of the gorge, calling them in a loud voice dogs and squaws, and firing sundry shots, which killed Kennedy's horse and pierced his right arm. Most men, though they jest at scars before feeling a wound, are temporarily cowed by an infliction of the kind, and of that order was the good Kennedy.

The next was an excellent traveller, by name Howard. On the road between Gt. S. L. City and Camp Floyd I saw two men, who addressed me as Mr. Kennedy the boss, and finding out their mistake, followed us to the place of rendezvous. The party, with one eye grey and the other black, mounted upon a miserable pony, was an American. After a spell at the gold diggings of California he had re-visited the States, and he now wished to return to his adopted country without loss of time. He was a hardy, fine-tempered fellow, exceedingly skilled in driving stock. His companion was a Frenchman and ex-Zouave, who, for reasons best known to himself, declared that he came from Cuba, and that he had forgotten every word of Spanish. Like foreigners amongst Anglo-Scandinavians generally, the poor devil fared badly. He could not hold his own. With the most labour he had the worst of everything. He felt himself *mal placé*, and before the end of the journey he slunk away.

At Lost Springs we were joined by two Mormon fugitives, "pilgrims of love," who had, it was said, secretly left the city at night, fearing the consequences of having "loved not wisely, but too well." The first of the Lotharios was a Mr. P——, an English farrier-blacksmith, mounted upon an excellent horse and leading another. He soon took offence at our slow rate of progress, and afflicted by the thought that the avenger was behind him, left us at Deep Creek, and "made tracks" to Carson City in ten days, with two horses and a total travelling kit of two blankets. We traced him to California by the trail of falsehoods which he left on the road. His comrade, Mr. A——, a New Englander, was also an apostate Mormon, a youth of good family and liberal education, who, after ruining himself by city sites and copper mines on Lake Superior, had permanently compromised himself with society by becoming a Saint. Also a Lothario, he had made his escape, and he proved himself a good and useful mem-

ber of society. I could not but admire the sentence of both these youths, who, flying from justice, had placed themselves under the protection of a judge. They reminded me of a debtor friend who found himself secure from the bailiff only within the walls of Spike Island or Belvidere Place, Southwark.

Another notable of the party was an apostate Jew and self-elected apostle Mormon, who answered to the name of Rose. He had served as missionary in the Sandwich Islands, and he spoke Kanaka like English. His features were those which Mr. Thackeray loves to delineate; his accents those which Dickens delights to imitate. He denied his connection with the Hebrews. He proved it by eating more, by driving a better bargain, by doing less work than any of the party. It was truly refreshing to meet this son of old Houndsditch in the land of the Saints, under the shadow of New Zion, and the only drawback to our enjoyment was the general suspicion that the honourable name of apostate covered the less respectable calling of spy. He contrasted strongly with Jim Gilston of Illinois, a lath-like specimen of humanity, some six feet four in length — a perfect specimen of the Inchumized white, long hair, sun-tanned, and knobby-kneed, running like an ostrich, yelping like a savage, and ready to take scalp at the first provocation. He could not refrain, as the end of the journey drew nigh, from the temptation of deserting without paying his passage. Mr. Gilville, a more determined Yankee, far advanced in years, was equally remarkable. He had $60 in his pocket. He shivered for want of a blanket, and he lived on hard bread, bacon, and tea, of which no man was ever seen to partake. Such were the seven "free men," the independent traders of the company. There were also six "broths of boys," who paid small sums up to $40 for the benefit of our escort, and who were expected to drive and to do general work. Travelling soon makes friends. No illusions of amicable, however, could blind my eyes to the danger of entering an Indian country with such an escort. Untried men, for the most part, they would have discharged their weapons in the air and fled at the whoop of an Indian, all of them, including Jake the Shoshone, who had been permitted to accompany us as guide, and excepting our staunch ones, Howard, "Billy" the colt, and "Brandy" the dog.

The station was thrown somewhat into confusion by the pre-

ounce of a petticoat, an article which in those regions never fails to attract presents of revolvers and sides of bacon. "Gentle Annie," attended by three followers, was passing in an ambulance from California to Denver City, where her "friend" was. To most of my companions' inquiries about old acquaintances in California, she replied, in western phrase, that the individual subject of their solicitude had "got to git up and git," which means that he had found change of air and scene advisable. Most of her sentences ended with a "you bet," even under circumstances where such operation would have been quite uncalled for. So it is related that when Dr. P—— of Camp Floyd was attending Mrs. A. B. C. at a most critical time, he asked her tenderly, "Do you suffer much, Mrs. C.?" to which the new matron replied, "You bet!"

We set out about noon, on a day hot as midsummer by contrast with the preceding nights, for a long spell of nearly fifty miles. Shortly after leaving the station the road forks. The left-hand path leads to a grassy spring in a dwarf kanyon near the southern or upper part of a river bottom, where emigrants are fond of camping. The hills scattered around the basin were of a dark metallic stone, sun-burnt to chocolate. The strata were highly tilted up and the water-lines distinctly drawn. After eight miles we descended into the yellow silty bed of a bald and barren fumara, which was not less than a mile broad. The good Judge sighed when he contrasted it with Monongahela, the "river of the falling banks." It flows northwards, and sinks near the western edge of the Lake. At times it runs three feet of water. The hills around are white-capped throughout the winter, but snow seldom lies more than a week in the bottoms.

After twenty miles over the barren plain we reached, about sunset, the station at the foot of the Dugway. It was a mere "dug out"—a hole four feet deep, roofed over with split cedar trunks, and provided with a rude adobe chimney. The tenants were two rough young fellows—station master and express rider—with their friend, an English bulldog. One of them had amused himself by decorating the sides of the habitation with niches and Egyptian heads. Rude art seems instinctively to take that form which it wears on the banks of Nilus, and should some Professor Rafinesque discover these traces of the aborigines, after a sepulture of a century, they will furnish materials for a

rich chapter on anti-Columbian immigration. Water is brought to the station in casks. The youths believe that some seven miles north of the "Dugway" there is a spring, which the Indians, after the fashion of that folk, sensibly conceal from the whites. Three wells have been sunk near the station. Two soon fell in ruin; the third has descended 120 feet, but is still bone dry. It passes first through a layer of surface silt, then through three or four feet of loose, friable, fusillant, chalky lime, which, when slaked, softened, and mixed with sand, is said to harden. The lowest strata are of quartz gravel, forming in the deeper parts a hard conglomerate. The workmen complained grimly of the increasing heat as they descend. Gold now becomes uppermost in man's mind. The youths using one handle the rubbish at once asked me if I was prospecting for gold.

After roughly supping we sat out, with a fine round moon high in the skies, to ascend the "Dugway Pass" by a rough dusty road winding round the shoulder of a hill, through which a fissure has burst its way. Like other Utah mountains, the highest third rises suddenly from a comparatively gradual incline, a sure formation for cattle, requiring draught to be at least doubled. Arriving on the summit we sat down, while our mules returned to help the luggage waggons, and amused ourselves with the strange aspect of the scene. To the north or before us and far below lay a long broad stretch, white as snow—the Saleratus Desert, west of the Gt. S. Lake. It were a grisly aspect in the silvery light of the moon. Behind us was the brown plain, sparsely dotted with shadows, and dawless in the evening as in the morning. As the party ascended the summit with much noisy shouting, they formed a picturesque group—the well-bred horses wandering to graze, the white-tilted waggon with their panting mules, and the men in felt sugoors and huge leather leggings. In honour of our good star which had preserved every hoof from accident we "liquored up" on that summit, and then began the descent.

Having reached the plain the road ran for eight miles over a broken surface, with severe pitch-holes and waggon tracks which have lasted many a month; it then forked. The left, which is about six miles the longer of the two, must be taken after rains, and leads to the Devil's Hole, a curious formation in a branch under "High Mountain," about ninety miles from

Camp Floyd, and south, with a little westing, of the Gt. S. Lake. The Hole is described as shaped like the frustum of an inverted cone, forty feet in diameter above, twelve to fifteen below. As regards the depth, four lariats, of forty feet each and a line at the end, did not, it is said, reach the bottom. Capt. Simpson describes the water as brackish. The drivers declare it to be half salt. The Devil's Hole is popularly supposed to be an air-vent or shaft communicating with the waters of the Gt. S. Lake, in their subterraneous journey to the sea (Pacific Ocean). An object cast into it, they say, is sucked down and disappears; hence, if true, probably the theory.

We chose the shorter cut, and after eight miles rounded Mountain Point, the end of a dark brown butte falling into the plain. Opposite us and under the western hills, which were distant about two miles, lay the station, but we were compelled to double, for twelve miles, the intervening slough, which no horse can cross without being mired. The road hugged the foot of the hills at the edge of the saleratus basin, which looked like a furrowed field in which snow still lingers. In places warts of earth tufted with greasewood emerged from hard, flakey, curling silt rakes; in others, the salt frosted out of the damp black earth like the miniature sugar-plums upon chocolate bonbons. We then fell into a saline, resembling freshly-fallen snow. The whiteness changes to a slatey blue, like a frozen pond when the water still underlies it; and to make the delusion perfect, the black rutted path looked as if lately cut out after a snow storm. Weird forms appeared in the moonlight. A line of mud-heaps became a row of railroad cars; a raised bench was mistaken for a paling; and the bushes were anything between a cow and an Indian. This part of the road must be terrible in winter; even in the fine season men are often compelled to unpack half a dozen times.

After ascending some mud-hills we halted for the party to form up in case of accident, and Mr. Kennedy proceeded to inspect whilst we prepared for the worst part of the stage—the sloughs. These are three in number, one of twenty and the two others of 100 yards in length. The tule, the bayonet-grass, and the tall rushes enable animals to pass safely over the deep slushy mud, but when the vegetation is well trodden down, horses are in danger of being permanently mired. The principal inconvenience

to man is the infectious odour of the foul swamps. Our cattle were beset with thirst; however, they crossed the three sloughs successfully, although some had nearly made Dixie's Land in the second.

Beyond the sloughs we ascended a bench, and travelled on an improved road. We passed sundry circular ponds, garnished with rush; the water is sulphury, and according to season is warm, hot, or cold. Some of these debard, and went forth what the Somal would call Biyo Gura, "night-flowing streams." About 3 A.M., cramped with cold, we sighted the station, and gave the usual "Yap! Yap!" A roaring fire soon revived us; the strong ate supper and the weak went to bed, thus ending a somewhat fatiguing day.

To Willow Creek, 30th September.

On this line there are two kinds of stations; the mail station, where there is an agent in charge of five or six "boys," and the express station — every second — where there is only a master and an express rider. The boss receives $50 — $75 per mensem, the boy $35. It is a hard life, setting aside the chance of death — no less than three murders have been committed by the Indians during this year — the work is severe; the diet is sometimes reduced to wolf-mutton, or a little boiled wheat and rye, and the drink to brackish water; a pound of tea comes occasionally, but the droughty souls are always "out" of whiskey and tobacco. At "Fish Springs," where there is little danger of savages, two men had charge of the ten horses and mules; one of these was a German Swiss, from near Schaffhausen, who had been digging for gold to little purpose in California.

A clear cool morning succeeding the cold night aroused us betimes. Nature had provided an ample supply of warm water, though slightly sulphury, in the neighbouring pot-holes, and at a little distance from the station was one conveniently cool. The fish from which the formation derives its name, is a perch-like species, easily caught on a cloudy day. The men, like the citizens of Siena, accustom themselves to the "rotten water," as strangers call it, and hardly relish the purer supplies of Simpson's Springs, or Willow Springs: they might have built the station about one mile north, near a natural well of good cool water, but apparently they prefer the warm bad.

The saleratus valley looked more curious in daylight than

in moonlight. The vegetation was in regular scale; smallest, the rich bunch-grass on the beaches; then the greasewood and the artemisia, where the latter can grow; and largest of all the dwarf cedar. All was of lively hue, the herbage bright red, yellow, and sometimes green, the shrubs were grey and glaucous, the cedars almost black, and the rim of hills blue-brown and blue. We had ample time to contemplate these curiosities, for Kennedy, whose wits, like those of Hiranyaka, the mouse, were mightily sharpened by the possession of wealth, had sat up all night and wanted a longer sleep in the morning. After a breakfast which the water rendered truly detestable, we hitched up about 10 A.M. and set out *en route* for Willow Springs.

About an hour after our departure, we met the party commanded by Lieut. Wood, two subaltern officers, ninety dragoons, and ten wagons; they had been in the field since May, and had done good service against the Gosh-Yutas. We halted and "liquored up," and, after American fashion, talked politics in the wilderness. Half an hour then led us to what we christened "Kennedy's Hole," another circular bowl, girt with grass and rush, in the plain under a dark brown rock, with black bands and scatters of stone. A short distance beyond, and also on the right of the road, lay the "Poison Springs," in a rushy bed: the water was temptingly clear, but the bleached bones of many a quadruped skeleton bade us beware of it. After turning a point we saw in front a swamp, the counterpart of what met our eyes last night; it renewed also the necessity of rounding it by a long southerly sweep. The scenery was that of the Takhashshus near Zayla, or the delicious land behind Aden, the Arabian sea-board. Sand-heaps — the only dry spots after rain — fixed by tufts of metallic green salsolæ, and guarded from the desert wind by rusty cane-grass, emerged from the wet and oozy plain, in which the mules often sank to the fetlock. The unique and snowy floor of thin nitre, blueish where deliquescent, was here solid as a sheet of ice, there a net-work of little ridges, as if the salt had expanded by crystallisation, with regular furrows worked by rain. After heavy showers it becomes a soft, slippery, tenacious, and slushy mud, that renders travelling exceeding laborious; the glare is blinding by day, and at night, the refrigerating properties of the salt render the wind bitterly cold, even when the mercury stands at 50° F.

We halted to rest at the half-way house, the fork of the road leading to Diamond Valley, an unpromising place, to which however we discovered on a pleasant evening. As we advanced the land improved, the soil deepened, the grass was plentifully green, and approaching the station we passed Willow Creek, whose poplar-banks and ridges, willows and wild roses, full of life and gladdened the eye. The station boy on a bench by-and the slope. The express rider was a handsome young Mormon, who were in his life but the effigy of a saint; his wife was an Englishwoman, who, to avoid under the circumstances, had completely thrown off the Englishwoman. The station-keeper was an Irishman, one of the few met amongst the Saints. Nothing could be feeder than the log hut, the flies soon drove us out of doors; hospitality, however, was not wanting, and we sat down to salt beef and bacon, for which we were not allowed to pay. The evening was spent in setting a wolf-trap, which consisted of a springy pole and a noose: we strolled about after sunset with a gun, but failed to bag snipe, wild-fowl or hare, and sighted only a few cunning old crows, and black swamp birds with yellow throats. As the hut contained but one room we slept outside; the Goshi-Yuts are apparently not a venturesome people, still it is considered advisable at times to shift one's sleeping quarters, and to acquire the habit of easily awaking.

See Long Creek and Salt, 1st and 2nd Camps, 1858.

A "little war" had been waging near Willow Springs. In June the station was attacked by a small band of Gosh-Yuts, of whom three were shot and summarily scalped; an energetic proceeding which had prevented a repetition of the affair. The savages, who are gathering their pinenut harvest, and are driven by destitution to beg at the stations, to which one meal a week will attach them, are now comparatively peaceful: when the emigration season recommences they are supposed to be troublesome, and their numbers — the Pa-Utahs can bring 12000 warriors into the field — render them formidable. "Jake," the Shoshonee, who had followed us from Low Springs, still considered his life in danger: he was as unwilling to wend his way alone as an Arab Bedouin or an African negro in their respective hinterlands. With regard to ourselves, Lieut. Wood had declared that there was no danger; the station people thought, on the con-

leary, that the snake, which had been scotched not killed, would recover after the departure of the soldiers, and that the work of destruction had not been carried on with sufficient vigour.

At 6 A.M. the thermometer showed 45° F.; we waited two hours, till the world had time to warm. After six miles we reached "Mountain Springs," a water-sink below the bench land, tufted round with cotton-wood, willow, rose, cane, and grass. On our right, or eastward, lay Granite Rock, which we had well nigh rounded, and through a gap we saw Lost Springs Station, distant apparently but a few hours' canter. Between us, however, lay the horrible salt plain,—a continuation of the low lands bounding the western edge of the Gt. S. Lake,—which the drainage of the hills over which we were travelling inundates till June.

After twelve miles over the bench we passed a dark rock, which protects a water called Reading's Springs, and we halted to form up at the mouth of Deep Creek Kanyon. This is a dangerous gorge, some nine miles long, formed by a water-course which sheds into the valley of the Gt. S. Lake. Here I rode forwards with "Jim," a young express rider from the last station, who volunteered much information upon the subject of Indians. He carried two Colt's revolvers, of the dragoon or largest size, considering all others too small. I asked him what he would do if a Gosh-Yuta appeared. He replied, that if the fellow were civil he might shake hands with him, if surly he would shoot him; and at all events, when riding away, that he would keep a "stirrup eye" upon him: that he was in the habit of looking round corners to see if any one was taking aim, in which case he would throw himself from the saddle, or rush on, so as to spoil the shooting—the Indians, when charged, becoming excited, fire without effect. He mentioned four red men who could "draw a bead" against any white, usually, however, they take a minute to load, they require a long aim, and they stint their powder. He pointed out a place where Miller, one of the express riders, had lately been badly wounded, and lost his horse. Nothing, certainly, could be better fitted for an ambuscade than this gorge, with its caves and holes in snow cuts, earth-drops, and lines of strata, like walls of rudely piled stones; in one place we saw the ashes of an Indian encampment; in another a whirlwind, curling, as smoke would rise, from behind a projecting spur, made us advance with the greatest caution.

As we progressed the valley opened out, and became too broad to be dangerous. Near the summit of the pass the land is well lined with white sage, which may be used as fodder, and a dwarf cedar adorns the hills. The ground gives out a hollow sound, and the existence of a spring in the vicinity is suspected. Descending the western watershed, we sighted, in Deep Creek Valley, St. Mary's County, the first patch of cultivation since leaving Gt. S. Lake. The Indian name is Ayhé-pé, or the Clay-coloured Water; pity that America and Australia have not always preserved the native local terms. It is bisected by a rivulet in which three streamlets from the southern hills unite; like these features generally, its course is northward till it sinks: fields extend about one mile from each bank, and the rest of the yellow bottom is a tapestry of wire grass and wheat grass. An Indian model farm had been established here; the war, however, prevented cultivation, the savages had burned down the house, and several of them had been killed by the soldiers. On the west of the valley were white rocks of the lime used for mortar: the hills also showed lias and marble-like limestones. The eastern wall was a grim line of jagged peaks, here bare with granite, there black with cedar; they are crossed by a short cut leading to the last station, which, however, generally proves the longest way, and in a dark ravine Kennedy pointed out the spot where he had of late nearly left his scalp. Coal is said to be found there in chunks, and gold is supposed to abound; the people, however, believing that the valley cannot yet support extensive immigration, conceal it probably by "counsel."

At 4 P.M. we reached the settlement, consisting of two huts and a station-house, a large and respectable-looking building of unburnt brick, surrounded by fenced fields, watercourses, and stacks of good adobe. We were introduced to the Mormon station-master, Mr. Sevier, and others. They are mostly farm labourers, who spend the summer here and supply the road with provisions: in the winter they return to Grantsville, where their families are settled. Amongst them was a Mr. Waddington, an old Pennsylvanian, and a bigoted Mormon. It is related of him that he had treacherously saved 300 Indians by warning them of an intended attack by the Federal troops. He spoke strongly in favour of the despised Yutas, declared that they are ready to work, and can be led to anything by civility. The

anti-Mormons declared that his praise was for interested motives, wishing the savages to labour for him gratis, and I observed that when Mr. Waddington started to cut wood in the kanyon, he sat out at night, lest his dust should be seen by his red friends.

The Mormons were not wanting in kindness; they supplied us with excellent potatoes, and told us to make their house our home. We preferred, however, living and cooking afield. The station was dirty to the last degree: the flies suggested the Egyptian plague, they could be brushed from the walls in thousands, but though sage makes good brooms no one cares to sweep clean. This I repeat is not Mormon but Western: the people, like the Spaniards, apparently disdain any occupation save that of herding cattle, and will do so till the land is settled. In the evening Jako the Shoshone came in, grumbling loudly because he had not been allowed to ride; he stood cross-legged like an African, ate a large supper at the station, and a second with us. No wonder that the savage in civilisation suffers, like the lady's lap-dog, from "liver." He was, however, a first-rate hand in shirking any work except that of peering and peeping into everything; neither gospel nor gunpowder can reform this race. Mr. R——, the English farrier and Lothario, left us on this day, after a little quarrel with Kennedy. We were glad to receive permission to sleep upon the loose wheat in an inner room: at 8 A.M. the thermometer had shown 59° F., but on this night ice appeared in the pails.

The next day was a halt; the stock wanted rest and the men provisions. A "beef"—the Westerns still retain the singular of "beeves"—was killed, and we obtained a store of potatoes and wheat. Default of oats, which are not yet common, this heating food is given to horses:—12 lbs. of grain to 14 of long forage, and the furious riding of the Mormons is the only preventive of its evil effects. The people believe that it causes stumbling by the swelling of the fetlock and knee joint; similarly every E. Indian ghorewalla will declare that wheaten bread makes a horse tokkar khana—"eat trips." The *employés* of the station were quiet and respectable, a fact attributed by some of our party to the want of liquor, which is said to cause frequent fights. Our party was less peaceable; there had been an extensive prigging of blankets, the cold now made them valuable, and this drove the losers "fighting mad."

En route again, 3rd October.

The severity of the last night made us active; the appearance of deep snow upon the mountains and of ice in the valleys was an intelligible hint that the Sierra Nevada which lay before us would be by no means an easy task. Despite, therefore, the idleness always engendered by a halt, and the frigid blasts which poured down from the eastern hills, where rain was falling in torrents, we hitched up, bade adieu to our Mormon host, and set out about 4 P.M. Antelope Springs, the next station, was 30 miles distant; we resolved therefore to divide it, after the fashion of Asia and Africa, by a short forenoon march.

The road runs to the south-west down the Deep Creek Valley, and along the left bank of the western rivulet. Near the divide we found a good bottom with plenty of water and grass; the only fuel was the sage bush, which crackled merrily, like thorns, under the pot, but tainted the contents with its medicinal odour. The wagons were drawn up in a half-circle to aid us in catching the mules, the animals were turned out to graze, the men were divided into watches, and the masters took up their quarters in the wagons. Age gave the Judge a claim to the ambulance, which was admitted by all hands; I slept with "Scotch Joe," an exceedingly surly youth, who apparently preferred anything to work. At 8 P.M. a storm of wind and rain burst upon us from the S.W.: it was so violent that the wagons rocked before the blast, and at times the chance of a capsize suggested itself. The weather was highly favourable for Indian plundering, who on such nights expect to make a successful attack.

To the Wilderness, 4th October.

We awoke early in the frigid S.-W. wind, the thermometer showing 39° F. After a few hundred yards we reached "Eight-Mile Springs," so called from the distance to Deep Creek. The road, which yesterday would have been dusty to the hub, was now heavy and viscid; the rain had washed out the saleratus, and the sight and scent, and the country generally, were those of the environs of a horse-pond. An ugly stretch of two miles, perfectly desert, led to Eight-Mile Spring Kanyon, a jagged

little ravine about 500 yards long, with a portalled entrance of tall rock. It is not, however, considered dangerous.

Beyond the kanyon lay another grisly land, if possible more deplorable than before; its only crops were dust and mud. On the right hand were turreted rocks, around whose base ran Indian trails, and a violent west wind howled over their summits. About 1.30 P.M. we came upon the station at Antelope Springs; it had been burned by the Gosh-Yutas in the last June, and had never been rebuilt. "George," our cook, who had been one of the inmates at the time, told us how he and his *confrères* had escaped. Fortunately the corral still stood: we found wood in plenty, water was lying in an adjoining bottom, and we used the two to brew our tea.

Beyond Antelope Springs was Shell Creek, distant thirty miles by long road and eighteen by the short cut. We had some difficulty in persuading Kennedy to take the latter; property not only sharpens the intellect, it also generates prudence, and the ravine is a well-known place for ambush. Fortunately two express riders came in and offered to precede us, which encouraged us. About 3 P.M. we left the springs and struck for the mouth of the kanyon, which has not been named; Sevier and Farish are the rival claimants. Entering the jagged fir and pine-clad breach we found the necessity of dismounting. The bed was dry—it floods in spring and autumn—but very steep, and in a hole on the right stood water, which we did not touch for fear of poison. Reaching the summit in about an hour we saw below the shaggy foreground of evergreens, or rather everblacks, which cast grotesque and exaggerated shadows in the last rays of day, the snowy-white mountains, gloriously sunlit, on the far side of Shell Creek. Here for the first time appeared the piñon pine (*P. Monophyllus*), which forms the principal part of the Indian's diet; it was no beauty to look upon, a dwarfish tree, rendered shrub-like by being feathered down to the ground. The nut is ripe in early autumn, at which time the savages stow away their winter provision in dry ravines and pits. The fruit is about the size of a pistachio, with a decided flavour of turpentine, tolerably palatable, and at first laxative. The cones are thrown upon the fire, and when slightly burnt the nuts are easily extracted; these are eaten raw, or like the Hindu's toasted grains. The harvest is said to fail every second

year. Last season produced a fine crop, whilst in this autumn many of the trees were found, without apparent reason but frost, dead.

We resumed the descent along a fiumara, which presently "sank," and at 5 P.M. halted in a prairillon somewhat beyond. Bunch-grass, sage-fuel, and water were abundant, but the place was favourable for an attack. It is a golden rule in an Indian country never to pitch near trees or rocks that can mask an approach, and we were breaking it in a place of danger. However, the fire was extinguished early so as to prevent its becoming a mark for Indians, and the pickets placed on both sides of the ravine were directed to lie motionless a little below the crest and to fire at the first comer. I need hardly say we were not murdered; the cold, however, was uncommonly piercing.

To "Robber's Roost," 5th October.

We set out at 6 A.M. the next morning, through a mixture of snow and hail and howling wind, to finish the ravine, which was *in toto* eight miles long. The descent led us to Spring Valley, a bulge in the mountains about eight miles broad, which a sharp divide separates from Shell Valley its neighbour. On the summit we fell into the line of rivulet which gives the lowlands a name. At the foot of the descent we saw a woodman, and presently the station. Nothing could more want tidying than this log-hut, which showed the bullet marks of a recent Indian attack. The master was a Français de France, Constant Dubail, and an ex-lancier: his mother's gossip had received a remittance of 2000 francs from a son in California, consequently he had torn himself from the *sein of sa pauvre mère*, and with three others had started in search of fortune, and had nearly starved. The express riders were three roughs, of whom one was a Mormon. We passed our time whilst the mules were at bait in visiting the springs. There is a cold creek 200 yards below the station, and close by the hut a warm rivulet, said to contain leeches. The American hirudo, however, has a serious defect in a leech—it will not bite; the faculty, therefore, are little addicted to hirudination; country doctors rarely keep the villainous bloodsuckers, and only the wealthy can afford the pernicious luxury, which, imported from Spain, costs $12 per dozen, somewhat the same price as oysters at Nijni Novgorod.

The weather, which was vile till 10 A.M., when the glass showed 40° (F.), promised to amend, and as the filthy hole—still full of flies, despite the cold—offered no attraction, we set out at 2 P.M. for Egan's Station, beyond an ill-omened kanyon of the same name. We descended into a valley by a regular slope,—in proportion as we leave distance between us and the Gt. S. Lake the bench formation on this line becomes less distinct,—and traversed a barren plain by a heavy road. Hares and prairie hens seemed however to like it, and a frieze of willow thicket at the western end showed the presence of water. We in the ambulance halted at the mouth of the kanyon; the stock and the boys had fallen far behind, and the place had an exceedingly bad name. But the cold was intense, the shades of evening were closing in, so we made ready for action, looked to the priming of gun and revolver, and then *en avant!* After passing that kanyon we should exchange the land of the Gosh-Yuta for those of the more friendly Shoshone.

An uglier place for sharpshooting can hardly be imagined. The floor of the kanyon is almost flush with the bases of the hills, and in such formations, the bed of the creek which occupies the sole is rough and winding. The road was vile,—now winding along, then crossing the stream,—hedged in with thicket and dotted with boulders. Ahead of us was a rocky projection which appeared to cross our path, and upon this Point Dangerous every eye was fixed.

Suddenly my eye caught sight of one fire—two fires under the black bunch of firs half-way up the hill-side on our left, and as suddenly they were quenched, probably with snow. Nothing remained but to hear the warwhoop, and to see a line of savages rushing down the rocks. We loosed the doors of the ambulance that we might jump out if necessary and tree ourselves behind it, and knowing that it would be useless to return, drove on at our fastest speed with sleet, snow, and wind in our faces. Under the circumstances, it was cold comfort to find when we had cleared the kanyon that Egan's Station at the further mouth had been reduced to a chimney stack and a few charred posts. The Gosh-Yutas had set fire to it two or three days before our arrival in revenge for the death of seventeen of their men by Lt. Weed's party. We could distinguish the pits from which the wolves had torn up the corpses, and one fellow's arm projected

from the snow. After a hurried deliberation, in which Kennedy swore, with that musical voice in which the Dublin swains delight, that "shure we were all kilt,"—the possession of property not only actuates the mind, and adds industry to its qualities, it also produces a peculiar development of cautiousness,—we unhitched the mules, tethered them to the ambulance, and planted ourselves behind the palisade awaiting all comers, till the boys could bring reinforcement. The elements fought for us: although two tongues of high land directly in front of us would have formed a fine mask for approach, the snow lay in so even a sheet that a prowling coyote was detected, and the hail-like sleet which beat fiercely on our backs would have been a sore inconvenience to a party attacking in face. Our greatest disadvantage was the extreme cold; it was difficult to keep a finger warm enough to draw a trigger. Thomas, the judgeling, so he was called, was cool as a cucumber, mentally and bodily: youths generally are. Firstly they have their "*preuves*" to make; secondly, they know not what they do.

After an hour's freezing, which seemed a day's, we heard with quickened ears the shouts and tramp of the boys and the stock, which took a terrible load off the exile of Erin's heart. We threw ourselves into the wagons, numbed with cold, and forgot, on the soft piles of saddles, bridles, and baggage, and under heaps of blankets and buffaloes, the pains of Barahut. About 3 A.M. this enjoyment was brought to a close by arriving at the end of the stage, Butte Station. The road was six inches deep with snow, and the final ascent was accomplished with difficulty. The good station-master, Mr. Thomas, a Cambrian Mormon, who had, he informed me, three brothers in the British army, bade us kindly welcome, built a roaring fire, added meat to our supper of coffee and doughboy, and cleared by a summary process amongst the snorers places for us on the floor of "Robber's Roost," or "Thieves' Delight," as the place is facetiously known throughout the country-side.

Halt at "Robber's Roost," 6th October.

The last night's sound sleep was allowed to last through the morning. This day was perforce a halt: the old white mare and her colt had been left at the mouth of the kanyon, and one of the Shoshone Indian servants of the station had been

persuaded by a bribe of a blanket and some gunpowder to return for them. About noon we arose, expecting a black fog, and looked down upon Butte Valley, whose northern edge we had traversed last night. Snow still lay there,—that bottom is rarely without frost,—but in the fine clear sunny day, with the mercury at 43° F. in the shade, the lowest levels re-became green, the hill cedars turned once more black, earth steamed like a garment hung out to dry, and dark spots here and there mottled the hills, which were capped with huge turbans of muslin-like mist. Whilst the Shoshone is tracking and driving the old mare, we will glance around the "Robber's Roost," which will answer for a study of the Western man's home.

It is about as civilised as the Galway shanty, or the normal dwelling-place in Central Equatorial Africa. A cabin fronting east and west, long walls thirty feet, with portholes for windows, short ditto fifteen; material, sandstone and bog ironstone slabs compacted with mud, the whole roofed with split cedar trunks, reposing on horizontals which rested on perpendiculars. Behind the house a corral of rails planted in the ground; the enclosed space a mass of earth, and a mere shed in one corner the only shelter. Outside the door — the hingeless and lockless back-board of a wagon, bearing the wounds of bullets — and resting on lintels and staples, which also had formed parts of locomotives, a slab acting stepping-stone over a mass of soppy black soil strewed with ashes, gobs of meat offals, and other delicacies. On the right hand a load of wood; on the left a tank formed by damming a dirty pool which had flowed through a corral behind the "Roost." There was a regular line of drip distilling from the caked and hollowed snow which toppled from the thick thatch above the cedar braces.

The inside reflected the outside. The length was divided by two perpendiculars, the southernmost of which, assisted by a half-way canvass partition, cut the hut into unequal parts. Behind it were two bunks for four men; standing bedsteads of poles planted in the ground, as in Australia and Unyamwezi, and covered with piles of ragged blankets. Beneath the framework were heaps of rubbish, saddles, cloths, harness, and straps, sacks of wheat, oats, meal, and potatoes, defended from the ground by underlying logs, and dogs nestled where they found room. The floor, which also frequently represented bedstead, was rough,

uneven earth, neither tramped nor swept, and the fine end of a spring oozing through the western wall kept part of it in a state of eternal mud. A redeeming point was the fire-place, which occupied half of the northern short wall: it might have belonged to Guy of Warwick's great hall; its ingle nooks boasted dimensions which one connects with an idea of hospitality and jollity; whilst a long hook hanging down it spoke of the bouillon-pot, and the iron oven of hot rolls. Nothing could be more simple than the furniture. The chairs were either posts mounted on four legs spread out for a base, or three-legged stools with reniform seats. The tables were rough-dressed planks, two feet by two, on rickety trestles. One stood in the centre for feeding purposes; the other was placed as buffet in the corner near the fire, with eating apparatus—tin coffee-pot and gamelles, rough knives, "pitchforks," and pewter spoons. The walls were pegged to support spurs and pistols, whips, gloves, and leggings. Over the door in a niche stood a broken coffee-mill, for which a flat stone did duty. Near the entrance, on a board shelf raised about a foot from the ground, lay a tin skillet and its "dipper." Soap was supplied by a handful of gravel, and evaporation was expected to act towel. Under the board was a pail of water with a floating can, which enabled the inmates to supply the drainage of everlasting chaws. There was no sign of Bible, Shakspere, or Milton: a Holywell Street romance or two was the only attempt at literature. *En revanche*, weapons of the flesh, rifles, guns, and pistols, lay and hung all about the house, carelessly stowed as usual, and tools were not wanting—hammers, large borers, axe, saw, and chisel. An almost invariable figure in these huts is an Indian standing cross-legged at the door, or squatting uncomfortably close to the fire. He derides the whites for their wastefulness, preferring to crouch in parties of three or four over a little bit of fuel, than to sit before a blazing log. These savages act, amongst other things, as hunters, bringing home rabbits and birds. We tried our revolvers against one of them, and beat him easily: yet they are said to put, three times out of four, an arrow through a key-hole forty paces off. In shooting they place the thumb and fore-finger of the right hand upon the notch, and strengthen the pull by means of the second finger stretched along the bowstrings. The left hand holds the whipped handle, and the shaft rests upon the knuckle of the index.

From Mr. Thomas we heard an account of the affair which took place near Egan's Kanyon. In the last August, Lieut. Weed happened to be "on a scout," with seventeen mounted riflemen, after Indians. An express-rider from the West had ridden up to the station, which, being in a hollow, cannot be seen from afar, and found it surrounded by Gosh-Yuta Indians. The fellows had tied up the master and the boy, and were preparing with civilised provisions a good dinner for themselves, to be followed by a little treat in the form of burning down the house and roasting their captives. The Indians allowed the soldiers brought up by the express-rider to draw near, thinking that the dust was raised by fresh arrivals of their own people; and when charged, at once fled. The mounted riflemen were armed with revolvers, not with sabres, or they would have done considerable execution: as it was, seventeen of the enemy remained upon the field, besides those who were carried off by their friends. The Indian will always leave a scalped and wounded fellow-tribesman in favour of an unscalped corpse.

In the evening the Shoshone returned bringing with him the white mare and her colt, which he had recovered *selon lui* from the hands of two Gosh-Yutas. The weather still held up: we had expected to be snowed up in five days or so; our departure therefore was joyfully fixed for the morrow.

To Ruby Valley, 7th October.

A frosty night was followed by a Tuscan day: a cold tramontana from the south, and a clear hot sun, which expanded the mercury at 10 A.M. to 70° F. After taking leave of the hospitable station-master, we resumed the road which ran up the short and heavy ascent, through a country here and there eighteen inches deep in snow, and abounding in large sage and little rabbits. A descent led into Long Valley, whose northern end we crossed, and then we came upon a third ascent, where, finding a sinking creek, a halt was called for lunch. The formation of the whole country is a succession of basins and divides. Ensued another twelve miles' descent, which placed us in sight of Ruby Valley, and a mile beyond carried us to the station.

Ruby Valley is a half-way house, about 300 miles from Gt. S. L. City and at the same distance from Carson Valley. It derives its name from the small precious stones which are found

like nuggets of gold in the crevasses of primitive rock. The length of the valley is about 100 miles, by three or four broad, and springs are scattered in numbers along the base of the western mountains. The cold is said to be here more severe than in any place on the line of road, Spring Valley excepted. There is, however, excellent bench land for grazing. In this season the scenery is really pretty. The white peaks tower over hill-land black with cedar, and this looks down upon the green bottom scattered over with white sage—winter above lying by the side of summer below.

We were received at the Ruby Valley Station by Colonel Rogers, better known as "Uncle Billy." He had served in the troublous days of California as marshal, and has many a hair-breadth escape to relate. He is now assistant Indian agent, the superintendent of a Government model farm, and he lives *en garçon*, having left his wife and children at Frogtown. We were soon introduced to the chief of the country, Chÿŭkŭpichyă (the "old man"), a word of unpronounceable slur, changed by whites into Chokop, ("earth"). His lands are long to the north and south, though of little breadth. He commands about 500 warriors, and as Uncle Billy is returning to Frogtown, he is collecting a large hunting-party for the autumnal battue. In 1849 his sister was wantonly shot by emigrants to California. He attacked the train and slew in revenge five men, a fact with which we were not made acquainted till after our departure. His father and grandfather are both alive, but they have abdicated under the weight of years and infirmities, reserving their voices for the pow-wow.

We dined in the Colonel's stone hut, and then saw the lions feed; after us, Chokop and five followers sat down with knife and fork before a huge tureen full of soft pie, amongst which they did terrible execution, champing and chewing with the noisiness of wild beasts, and eating each enough for three able-bodied sailors. The chief, a young man twenty-five years old, had little to denote the Indian, except vermilion where soap should have been; one of his companions, however, crowned with eagle's feathers disposed in tulip shape, whilst the claws depended gracefully down his back, was an object worthy of Guinea. All were, however, to appearance, happy, and for the first time I heard an Indian really laugh outright. Outside

squatted the common herd in a costume which explains the prevalence of rheumatism. The men were in rags, yet they had their coquetry, vermilion streaked down their cheeks and across their foreheads — the Indian fashion of the omnilocal rouge. The women, especially the elders, were horrid objects; shivering and half dressed in breech cloths and scanty capes or tippets of wolf and rabbit skin: the existence of old age, however, speaks well for the race. Both are unclean; they use no water where Asiatics would; they ignore soap, and rarely repair to the stream, except, like animals, in hot weather.

We then strolled about the camp and called upon the two Mistresses Chokop. One was a buxom dame, broad and strong, with hair redolent of antelope marrow, who boasted of a "wikeap" or wigwam in the shape of a conical tent. The other, much her junior, and rather pretty, was sitting apart in a little bower of bushes, with a newly born papoose in a willow cage, to account for her isolation; the poor thing would have been driven out even in the depth of winter, and were she to starve, she must do without meat. As amongst the Jews, whenever the Great Father is angry with the daughters of red men, they sit apart; they never touch a cooking utensil, although it is not held impure to address them, and they return only when the signs of wrath have passed away. The abodes of the poorer clansmen were three-quarter circles of earth, sticks, and sage bush to keep off the southerly wind. A dog is usually one of the occupants. Like the African, the Indian is cruel to his brute, starves it and kicks it for attempting to steal a mouthful: "Love me, love my dog," however, is his motto, and he quarrels with the stranger that follows his example. The furniture was primitive. Upon a branch hung a dried antelope head used in stalking: concerning this sport Uncle Billy had a story of his nearly being shot by being mistaken for the real animal: and tripods of timber supporting cloths and moccasins, pans, camp-kettles, stones for grinding grass seed, and a variety of baskets. The material was mostly willow twig, with a layer of gum, probably from the pine tree. Some were watertight like the "Hán" of Somali land; others, formed like the Roman amphora, were for storing grain, whilst others in giant cocked hat-shape were intended for sweeping in crickets and the grass seeds upon which these Indians feed. The chief gramineæ are

the atriplex and chenopodaceous plants. After inspecting the camp we retired precipitately: its condition was that of an Egyptian army's last nighting place.

About two miles from the station there is a lake covered with waterfowl, from the wild swan to the rail. I preferred, however, to correct my Shoshone vocabulary under the inspection of Moss Wright, an express rider from a neighbouring station. None of your "one-horse" interpreters, he had learned the difficult dialect in his youth, and he had acquired all the intonation of an Indian. Educated beyond the reach of civilisation, he was in these days an oddity; he was convicted of having mistaken a billiard cue for a whip handle, and was accused of having mounted the post supporting the electric telegraph wire in order to hear what it was saying. The evening was spent in listening to Uncle Billy's adventures amongst the whites and reds. He spoke highly of his *prottyts*, especially of their affection and fidelity in married life: they certainly appeared to look upon him as a father. He owed something to leger-demain; here, as in Algeria, a Houdin or a Love would be great medicine-men with whom nobody would dare to meddle. Uncle Billy managed to make the post pay by peltries of the mink, wolf, woodchuck or ground hog, fox, badger, antelope, black-tailed deer, and others. He illustrated the peculiarities of the Federal Government by a curious anecdote. The indirect or Federal duties are in round numbers $100,000,000, of which $60,000,000 are spent, leaving a surplus of forty for the purpose of general corruption: the system seems to date from the days of the "ultimus Romanorum," President Jackson. None but the largest claimants can expect to be recognised. A few years ago one of the Indian Agents in —— was asked by a high official what might be about the cost of purchasing a few hundred acres for a government farm. After reckoning up the amount of beads, wire, blankets, and gunpowder, the total was found to be $240. The high official requested his friend to place the statement on paper, and was somewhat surprised the next morning to see the $240 swollen to $40,000. The reason given was characteristic: "What great government would condescend to pay out of $8,000,000 a paltry $48; or would refuse to give $8,000?"

CHAP. XIII.

TO CARSON VALLEY.

Before resuming the itinerary, it may be advisable briefly to describe the various tribes tenanting this territory.

We have now emerged from the Prairie Indians, the Dakota, Crow, Kiowa, Comanche, Osage, Apache, Cheyenne, Pawnee, and Arapaho. Utah Territory contains a total of about 19,000 souls of two great kindred races, the Shoshone or Snake, and the Yuta, called Uche by the Spaniards and Ute by the Anglo-American trappers. Like the Comanche and Apache, the Pimas, the Lipans, and the people of the Pueblos, they are of the Hispano-American division, once subject to the Conquistadores, and are bounded north by the Pánák* (Bannack) and the once formidable Blackfeet. The Shoshone own about one-third of the territory; their principal settlements lie north of the Gt. S. Lake, and on the line of the Humboldt or Mary River, some 400 miles west and 100 to 125 south of the Oregon line. They number about 4500 souls, and are wildest in the S. E. parts of their motherland. The Yuta claim the rest of the territory between Kansas, the Sierra Nevada, New Mexico, and the Oregon frontier. Of course the two peoples are mortal foes, and might be well pitted against each other. The Snakes would form excellent partisan warriors.

The Shoshone number fourteen tribes, regularly organised;

* The Panak is a small tribe of 500 souls, now considered dangerous: the greater part resides in Oregon, the smaller about ninety miles in the N.E. of the Territory, where they hunt the bison and the elk. For thirty years they have traded with Fort Bridger, and when first known they numbered 1200 lodges. "Horn" their principal chief, visited the place in April 1858. Mr. Forney, the late Superintendent of Indian affairs in U. T., granted them a home in the lands of Washaki, and they have intermarried and lived peaceably with the Shoshone.

the principal, which contains about 12,000 souls, is commanded by Washaki, assisted, as usual, by sub-chiefs, four to six in number. Five bands, numbering near 1000 each, roam about the mountains and kanyons of Gt. S. L. County, Weber, Bear, Cache, and Malad Valleys, extending eighty miles north from the Holy City. These have suffered the most from proximity with the whites, and no longer disdain agriculture. One band, 150 to 180 in number, confines itself to the N. Californian route from Bear and Malad Valleys to the Goose Creek Mountains. Seven bands roam over the country from the Humboldt River to 100 miles south of it, and extend about 200 miles from east to west: the principal chief, Wanamuka, or "the Giver," had a band of 155 souls, and lived near the Honey Lake.

The Yuta claim, like the Shoshone, descent from an ancient people that immigrated into their present seats from the N.W. During the last thirty years they have considerably decreased according to the mountaineers, and have been demoralised mentally and physically by the emigrants: formerly they were friendly, now they are often at war with the intruders. As in Australia, arsenic and corrosive sublimate in springs and provisions have diminished their number. The nation is said to contain a total of 14,000 to 15,000 souls divided into twenty-seven bands, of which the following are the principal:—

The Pá-Yuta (Pey Utes) are the most docile, interesting, and powerful, containing twelve bands*; those in the west of the territory on the Humboldt River number 6000, and in the south 2200 souls; they extend from forty miles west of Stony Point to the Californian line, and N. W. to the Oregon line, and inhabit the valley of the Fenelon River, which rising

* These are, 1. Wanamuka's; 2. San Joaquin, near the forks of that river in Carson Valley, numbering 170; 3. Hadespoko, or Horse Stopper band, of 110, in Gold Kanyon on Carson River; 4. Wabi or Fox-band, on Big Bend of Carson River, 130 in number; 5 and 6. Odakeo, "Tall man band," and Petodeska, "White Spot band," round the Lakes and Sinks of the Carson and Walker Rivers, numbering 454 men, 372 women, and 405 children; 7. Tosarke, "Grey head band," their neighbours; 8. Tenoeiet, "Woman helper band," on the Truckee River below Big Meadows, numbering 280 souls; 9. Tenape, or "Lean man band," on the Truckee River near Long Crossing, 360 souls; 10. Goneqa, the "Dancer band," 290 souls, near the mouth of the Truckee River; 11. Wateiquendo, the "Four Crows," along the shores of Pyramid Lake, 320 souls; 12. The second Wanamuka's band, 500 in number, along the shores of the Northern Mud Lake.

from Lake Bigler empties itself into Pyramid Lake. The term means Water-Yuta, that is to say those who live upon fish which they take from lakes and rivers in wiers and traps of willow, preferring that diet to roots, grass-seed, lizards, and crickets, the food of the other so called Digger tribes.

Gosh Yuta or Gosha Ute is a small band, once *protégés* of the Shoshone, who have the same language and limits. Their principal chief died about five years ago, when the tribe was broken up. A body of sixty under a peaceful leader were settled permanently on the Indian farm at Deep Creek, and the remainder wandered 40 to 200 miles west of Gt. S. L. City. Through this tribe our road lay; during the late tumults they have lost fifty warriors, and are now reduced to about 200 men. Like the Ghuzw of Arabia, they strengthen themselves by admitting the outcasts of other tribes, and will presently become a mere banditti.

Pavant or Paravan Yuta, are a distinct and self-organised tribe, under one principal and several sub-chiefs, whose total is set down at 700 souls. Half of them are settled on the Indian Farm at Corn Creek; the other wing of the tribe lives along Sevier Lake, and the surrounding country in the north-east extremity of Fillmore Valley, fifty miles from the city, where they join the Gosh Yuta. The Pavants breed horses, wear clothes of various patterns, grow grain, which the Gosh Yutas will not, and are as brave and improvable as their neighbours are mean and vile.

Timpenaguchyk*, or Timpana Yuta, corrupted into Tenpenny Utes, who dwell about the kanyon of that name, and on the east of the Sweetwater Lake. Of this tribe was the chief Wakara, who so called himself after Walker, the celebrated trapper; the notorious horse-stealer proved himself a friend to the L. D. Saints. He died at Meadow Creek, six miles from Fillmore city, on the 29th January 1855, and at his obsequies two squaws, two Pa Yuta children, and fifteen of his best horses composed the "customs."

Uinta Yuta, in the mountains south of Fort Bridger, and in the country along the Green River. Of this tribe, which contains a total of 1000, a band of 500, under four chiefs, lately settled on the Indian reservations at Spanish Fork.

* In the Yuta language meaning "water among the stones."

Sampichyk, corrupted to San Pete Utes; about eighty warriors settled on the Indian Farm at San Pete. This and the Spanish Fork Farm number 900 inhabitants.

Elk Mountain Yutas, who are set down at 3000 souls, by some even 3000; they wander over the south-east portion of the Territory: and like the Uinta Yutas, are the most independent of white settlers.

Weber River Yutas are those principally seen in Gt. S. L. City; they are a poor and degraded tribe. Their chief settlement is forty miles to the north, and like the Goah Yutas they understand Shoshone.

Amongst the Yutas are reckoned the Washo, from 500 to 700 souls. They inhabit the eastern slopes of the Sierra Nevada, from Honey Lake to the West Fork of Walker's River in the south. Of this troublesome tribe there are three bands; Captain Jim's, near Lake Bigler, and Carson, Washo, and Eagle Valleys, a total of 342 souls: Paenha's band, 340 souls, in Little Valley, and Deer Dick's band in Long Valley, south-east of Honey Lake. They are usually called Shoshoko*, or "Digger Indians"—a term as insulting to a Shoshone as nigger to an African.

Besides the Parawat Yutas, the Yampas, 200—300 miles south, on the White River; the Tabeehyk, or sun-hunters, about Tête de Biche, near Spanish lands; and the Tash Yuta, near the Navajos; these are scatters of the nation along the Californian road from Beaver Valley, along the Santa Clara, Virgen, Las Vegas, and Muddy Rivers, to New Mexico.

The Indian Bureau of U. T. numbers one superintendent, six agents, and three to six farm-agents. The annual expenditure is set down at $40,000; the Mormons declare that it is iniquitously embezzled, and that the total spent upon the Indians hardly exceeds $1000 per annum. The savages expect blankets and clothing, flour and provisions, arms and ammunition: they receive only a little tobacco, become surly, and slay the settlers. It is understood that the Surveyor-General has recommended to the Federal Government the extinction of the Indian title—somewhat upon the principle of the English in Tasmania† and

* It is said to mean "one who goes on foot."

† Van Diemen's Land in the days of Captain Flinders (A.D. 1800, two generations ago) had a population of 100,000 souls, now well nigh annihilated by strong

New Zealand — to grounds in the U. T. and the establishment of a Land office for the sale of the two millions of acres already surveyed. Until the citizens can own their farms and fields under the existing pre-emption laws, and until the troublesome Indians can be removed by treaty to reservations remote from white settlements, the onward march of progress will be arrested. The savage and the civilised man, like crabbed age and youth, like the black and grey rat, cannot live together: the former starves unless placed in the most fertile spots, which the latter of course covets; the Mormons attempt a peace policy, but the hunting-grounds are encroached upon, and terrible massacres are the result. Here, as elsewhere, the battle of life is fiercely fought. It has been said —

"Man differs more from man
Than least from beast."

Yet everywhere we trace the mighty resemblance.

The three principal farms which now form the nuclei of future reservations, are those at Spanish Fork, San Pete, and Corn Creek. The two latter have often been denuded by the grasshopper: the former has fared better. Situated in Utah Valley, under the shelter of lofty Nebo, it extends northwards within four miles of the Sweetwater Lake, and on the north-east is bounded by the Spanish Fork Creek, rich in trout and other fish. It was begun five years ago for the Yutas, who claim the land, and contains a total of 13,000 acres, of which 500 have been cultivated; 900 have been ditched to protect the crop, and 1000 have been walled round with a fence six feet high. Besides other improvements they have built a large adobe house and two rail corrals, and dug dams and channels for irrigation, together with a good stone-curbed well. Under civilised superintendence the savages begin to labour, and the chiefs aspire to erect houses. Yet the crops have been light, rarely exceeding 2500 bushels. San Pete Farm, in the Valley and on the Creek of the same name, lies 150 miles south of Gt. S. L. City; it supports, besides those who come for temporary assistance, a band of thirty souls; 200 acres have been planted with wheat and potatoes, two adobe

nature and corrosive sublimate. Neither man nor woman was safe in the vicinity of a native tribe; the Anglo-Scandinavian race thus found it necessary to wipe out a people that could not be civilised — a fair instance of the natural selection of species. And New Zealand now threatens to walk the path of Tasmania.

houses and a corral have been made, and irrigating trenches have been dug. Corn Creek Farm, in Fillmore Valley, was begun about four years ago; 300 acres have been broken up, several adobe houses have been built for the Indians and the farm agent, with the usual adjuncts, corral and fences. The crickets and grasshoppers have committed sad havoc amongst the wheat corn and potatoes. It is now tenanted by a Pahvant chief. The Uinta Farm is near Fort Bridger. Those lately opened in Deep Creek and Ruby Valleys have this year lain fallow in consequence of Indian troubles; the soil, however, is rich, and will produce beets, potatoes, onions, turnips, and melons. It is proposed to place the Pa Yutas and Washos in the Truckee Meadows, on the lands "watered by the majestic Kuyuchup, or Salmon Trout River," where, besides fish and piñon-forests, there are 15,000 acres fit for cultivation and herding. The Indian agents report that the cost will be #150,000 dollars, from which the Mormons deduct at least two 0's.

The Yuta, though divided into many tribes and bands, is a distinct race from its prairie neighbours, speaking a single *langua mère* much diversified by dialect. They are a superstitious brood and have many cruel practices—human sacrifices and vivisepulture—like those of Dahomey and Ashantee. Their religion is the usual African and Indian fetishism, that gemmal faith, which under favourable influences and amongst higher races developed itself by natural means—or as explained by a mythical, distinct, and independent revelation—into the higher forms of Judaism, Christianity, and El Islam. In the vicinity of the Mormons many savages have been baptised, and have become nominal Saints. They divide white men into Shwop or Americans and Mormons. Their learned men have heard of Washington, but like the French peasant's superstition concerning Napoleon, they believe him to be still alive. They have a name for the Book of Mormon, and have not learned, like their more civilised eastern neighbours, to look upon it as the work of Mujhe-Manitou, the bad-god, who, like Wiswakarma of the Hindus, amuses himself by caricaturing and parodying the creatures of the good-god. They are not cannibals—the Wendigo is a giant-man-eater of a mythologic type, not an actual anthropophage—but like all Indians, especially those of New England, they "feel good" after eating a bit of the enemy, a natural

display of destructiveness: they will devour the heart of a brave man to increase their courage, or chop it up, boil it in soup, engorge a ladleful, and boast they have drunk the enemy's blood. They are as liable to caprice as their Eastern neighbours. A prisoner who has distinguished himself in battle is as often dismissed unhurt as porcupined with arrows and killed with cruel tortures; if they yield in ingenuity of inflicting pain to the Algonquins and Iroquois, it is not for want of inclination, but by reason of their stupidity. Female captives who fall into their hands are horribly treated; I was told of one who, after all manner of atrocities, scalping included, escaped with life. They have all the savage's improvidence; utility is not their decalogue. Both sexes, except when clothed by a charitable Mormon, are nearly naked, even in the severest weather; they sleep in sleet and snow unclothed, except with a cape of twisted rabbits' furs and a miserable attempt at moccasins, lined with plaited cedar bark; leggings are unknown, even to the women. Their ornaments are vermilion, a few beads, and shell necklaces. They rarely suffer from any disease but rheumatism, brought on by living in the warm houses of the whites, and various consequences of liver complaint, produced by overgorging: as with strong constitutions generally, they either die at once or readily recover. They dress wounds with pine gum, after squeezing out the blood, and their medicine-men have the usual variety of savage nostrums. In the more desert parts of the Territory they are exceedingly destitute. South of Cedar City, even ten years ago, they had fields of wheat and corn of six acres each, and supported emigrants; some of them cultivate yearly along the stream-banks peas, beans, sweet potatoes, and squashes. They live upon the flesh of the bear, elk, antelope, dog, wolf, hare, snake and lizard, besides crickets, grasshoppers, ants, and other vermin. The cactus leaf, piñon-nut and various barks; the seed of the bunch-grass and of the wheat or yellow grass, somewhat resembling rye; the rabbit-bush twigs, which are chewed, and various roots and tubers; the soft sego-bulb, the rootlet of the cat-tail flag, and of the tule, which, when sun-dried and powdered to flour, keeps through the winter and is palatable even to white men, conclude the list of their dainties. When these fail they must steal or starve, and the dilemma is easily solved, to the settler's cost.

The Yutas in the vicinity of the larger white settlements continually diminish; bands of 150 warriors are now reduced to thirty-five. Some of the minor tribes in the southern part of the Territory near New Mexico, can scarcely show a single squaw, having traded them off for horses and arms: they go about killing one another, and on kidnapping expeditions, which further diminish the breed. The complaint which has devastated the South Sea Islands rages around the City of the Saints, and extends to the Rio Virgen. In six months six squaws were shot by red Othellos, for yielding their virtue to the fascinations of tobacco, whiskey, and blankets; the Lotharios were savage as well as civilised. The operation of courting is performed by wrapping a blanket round one's beloved; if she reciprocates, it is a sign of consent. A refusal in these lands is often a serious business; the warrior collects his friends, carries off the recusant fair, and after subjecting her to the insults of all his companions espouses her. There is little of the shame which Pliny attributes to the "Barrus." When a death takes place they wrap the body in a skin or hide, and drag it by the leg to a grave, which is heaped up with stones as a protection against wild beasts. They mourn till the end of that moon, allow a month to elapse, and then resume their lamentations for another moon: the interval is gradually increased till the grief ends. It is usual to make the dead man's lodge appear as desolate as possible.

The Yuta is less servile, and consequently has a higher ethnic status than the African negro; he will not toil, and he turns at a kick or a blow. The emigrant who addresses him in the usual phrase "d —— your eyes, git out of the road or I'll shoot you!" is pretty sure to come to grief. Lately the Yutas demanded compensation for the use of their grass upon the Truckee River, when the emigrants fired, killing Wanamuka the chief. After the death of two or three whites, Mayor Ormsby, of the Militia at Carson Valley, took the field, was decoyed into a kanyon by Indian cunning, and perished with all his men.

To "Chicago" Paper, 8th October 1860.

The morning was wasted in binding two loose tires upon their respective wheels; it was past noon before we were *en route*. We shook hands cordially with Uncle Billy, whose generosity—a virtue highly prized by those who rarely practising expect it

to be practised upon them — has won for him the sobriquet of the "Big-hearted Father." He had vainly, however, attempted to receive my silver pen-holder, whose glitter was too much for Indian virtue. Our route lay over a long divide, cold but not unpicturesque, a scene of light-tinted mountain mahogany, black cedar, pure snowy hill, and pink sky. After ten miles we reached the place where the road forks; that to the right passing through Pine Valley falls into gravelly ford of the Humboldt River, distant from this point eighty to eighty-five miles. After surmounting the watershed we descended over bench-land into a raw and dreary plain, in which greasewood was more plentiful than sage-bush. "Huntingdon Valley" is traversed by Smith's Fork, which flows northward to the Humboldt River; when we crossed it, it was a mere rivulet. Our camping ground was at the farther end of the plain, under a Pass called after the chief Chokop; the kanyon emitted a cold draught like the breathing caves of Kentucky. We alighted at a water near the entrance, and found bunch-grass, besides a little fuel. After two hours the wagon came up with the stock, which was now becoming weary, and we had the usual supper of dough, butter, and coffee. I should have slept comfortably enough upon a shovel and a layer of carpet bags, had not the furious south wind howled like the distant whooping of Indians.

To the Wilderness again, 9th October.

The frosty night was followed by a thaw in the morning. We hastened to ascend Chokop's Pass by a bad steep dugway: it lies south of "Railroad Kanyon," which is said to be nearly flat-soled. A descent led into "Moonshine," called by the Yutas Pahannap Valley, and we saw with pleasure the bench rising at the foot of the pass. The station is named Diamond Springs, from an eye of warm, but sweet and beautifully clear water bubbling up from the earth. A little below it drains off in a deep rushy ditch, with a gravel bottom, containing equal parts of comminuted shells: we found it an agreeable and opportune bath. Hard work had begun to tell upon the temper of the party. The Judge, who ever preferred monologue to dialogue, aweary of the rolling prairies and barren plains, the bald and rocky ridges, the muddy flats, saleratus ponds, and sandy wastes, sighed monotonously for the woodland shades and the

rustling of living leaves near his Pennsylvanian home. The Marshal, with true Anglo-American impatiency, could not endure Paddy Kennedy's "slow and shyure" style of travel; and after a colloquy, in which the hollest of words were freely used as adjectives, participles, and exclamations, offered to fight him by way of quickening his pace. The boys—four or five in number—ate for breakfast a quarter of beef, as though they had been Kafirs or Esquimaux, and were threatened with ration-cutting. The station folks were Mormons, but not particularly civil; they afterwards had to fly before the savages—which perhaps they will be pleased to consider a "judgment" upon them.

Shortly after noon we left Diamond Springs, and carried on for a stretch of seven miles to our lunching ground, a ruby water, black where it overlies mud, and bluish-green where light gravel and shells form the bottom: the taste is sulphury, and it abounds in conferva and animalcule like leeches and little tadpoles. After playing a tidy bowie-knife, we remounted, and passed over to the rough divide lying westward of Moonshine Valley. As night had closed in, we found some difficulty in choosing a camping place: at length we pitched upon a prairillon under the lee of a hill, where we had bunch-grass and fuel, but no water. The wind blew sternly through the livelong night, and those who suffered from cramps in cold feet had little to do with the "sweet restorer, balmy sleep."

To Shermit Creek, 10th October.

At 6 A.M. the mercury was sunk only to 19° F. but the elevation and rapid evaporation, with the fierce gusty wind coursing through the kanyon, rendered the sensation of cold painful. As usual on these occasions, "George," our chief, sensibly preferred standing over the fire, and enwrapping himself with smoke, to the inevitable exposure incurred whilst fetching a coffee-pot or a tea-kettle. A long divide, with many ascents and descents, at length placed in front of us a view of the normal "distance"—heaps of hills, white as bridal cakes, and, nearer, a sand-like plain, somewhat more yellow than the average of those salt bottoms: instinct told us that there lay the station-house. From the hills rose the smoke of Indian fires: the lands belong to the Tuswichya or White-Knives, a band of the Shoshonee under an independent chief. This depression is

known to the Yutas as Sheawit or Willow Creek: the whites call it, from Mr. Bolivar Roberts, the Western agent, "Roberts' Springs Valley." It lies 296 miles from Capt. Floyd: from this point "Simpson's Road" strikes off to the S. E. and as Mr. Howard Egan's ruts here terminate, it is considered the latter end of Mormondom. Like all the stations to the westward, that is to say, those now before us, it was burned down in the late Indian troubles, and has only been partially rebuilt. One of the *employés* was Mr. Moses Wright, of Illinois, who again kindly assisted me with correcting my vocabulary.

About the station loitered several Indians of the White-Knife tribe, which boasts, like the old Sioux and the modern Flat-heads, never to have stained its weapons with the blood of a white man. They may be a respectable race, but they are an ugly: they resemble the Diggers, and the children are not a little like juvenile baboons. The dress was the usual medley of rags and rabbit furs: they were streaked with vermilion; and their hair — contrary to and more sensibly than the practice of our grandfathers — was fastened into a frontal pigtail, to prevent it falling into the eyes. These men attend upon the station, and herd the stock, for an occasional meal, their sole payment. They will trade their skins and peltries for arms and gunpowder, but, African-like, they are apt to look upon provisions, beads, and tobacco in the light of presents.

A long march of thirty-five miles lay before us. Kennedy resolved to pass the night at Sheawit Creek, and, despite their grumbling, sent on the boys, the stock, and the wagons, when rested from their labour, in the early afternoon. We spent a cosy, pleasant evening — such as I have enjoyed in the old Italian days before railroads — of travellers' tittle and Munchausen tattle, in the ingle corner and round the huge hearth of the half-finished station, with its holey walls. At intervals, the roarings of the wind, the ticking of the death watch, (a well known xylophagus,) boring a home in the soft cottonwood rafters, and the howlings of the Indians, who were keening at a neighbouring grave, formed a rude and appropriate chorus. Moses Wright recounted his early adventures in Oregon; how, when he was a greenhorn, the Indians had danced the war-dance under his nose, had then set upon his companions, and after slaying them had displayed their scalps. He favoured us with a

representation of the ceremony, an undue performance,—the bear seems everywhere to have been the sire of Terpsithore,—whilst the right hand repeatedly clapped to his lips quavered the long loud howl into broken sounds:—"Howh! howh! howh! ow! ow! ough! ough! aloo! aloo! loo! loo! oo!" We talked of a curious animal, a breed between the dog and the bear, which represents the wood-fabulous jumard in these regions: it is said to be a cross far more savage than that between the dog and the wolf. The young grizzly is a favourite pet in the western hut, and a canine graft is hardly more monstrous than the progeny of the horse and the deer lately exhibited in London. I still believe that in Africa, and indeed in India, there are accidentally mules bimanous and quadrumanous, and would suggest that such specimens should be sought as the means of settling on a rational basis the genus and species of "homo sapiens."

Mose Wright described the Indian arrow-poison. The rattlesnake—the copperhead and the moccasin he ignored—is caught with a forked stick planted over its neck, and is allowed to fix its fangs in an antelope's liver. The meat, which turns green, is carried upon a skewer when wanted for use: the flint head of an arrow, made purposely to break in the wound, is thrust into the poison, and when withdrawn is covered with a thin coat of glue. Ammonia is considered a cure for it, and the Indians treat snake bites with the actual cautery. The rattlesnake here attains a length of eight to nine feet, and is described as having reached the number of seventy-three rattles, which, supposing (as the theory is) that after the third year it puts forth one per annum, would raise its age to that of man: it is much feared in U. T. We were also cautioned against the poison oak, which is worse than the poison vine east of the Mississippi. It is a dwarf bush with quercine leaves, dark coloured and prickly like those of the holly: the effect of a sting, of a touch, or, it is said, in sensitives of its proximity, is a painful itching, followed by a rash that lasts three weeks, and other highly inconvenient consequences. Strong brine was recommended to us by our prairie doctor.

Amongst the *employés* of the station was an intelligent young mechanic from Pennsylvania, who, threatened with consumption, had sought and soon found health in the pure regions of the Rocky Mountains. He looked forward to revisiting civilisation,

where comforts were attainable. In these wilds little luxuries like tea and coffee are often unprocurable; a dudheen or a cutty pipe sells for a dollar, consequently a hollowed potato or corn-cob with a reed tube is often rendered necessary; and tobacco must be mixed with a myrtaceous leaf called by the natives "timaya," and by the mountaineers "larb"—possibly a corruption of "Pharbe" or "la yerba." Newspapers and magazines arrive sometimes twice a year, when they have weathered the dangers of the way. Economy has deprived the stations of their gardens, and the shrinking of emigration, which now dribbles eastward, instead of flowing in full stream westward, leaves the exiles to amuse themselves.

Th Dry Creek, 11th October.

We arose early, and found that it had not "frosted;" that flies were busy in the station-house; and that the snow, though thick on the northern faces, had melted from the southern shoulders of the hills—these were so many indices of the St. Martin's or Indian summer, the last warm glow of life before the cold and pallid death of the year. At 6 A.M. we entered the ambulance, and followed a good road across the remains of the long broad Sheawit Valley. After twelve miles we came upon a water surrounded by willows, with dwarf artemisia beyond; it grows better on the benches, where the subsoil is damper, than in the bottoms—and there we found our lazy boys, who, as Jim Gilston said, had been last night "on a drunk." Resuming our way, after three miles we reached some wells whose alkaline waters chap the skin. Twenty miles further led to the west end of the Sheawit Valley, where we found the station on a grassy bench at the foot of low rolling hills. It was a mere shell, with a substantial stone corral behind, and the inmates were speculating upon the possibility of roofing themselves in before the winter. Water is found in tolerable quantities below the station, but the place deserved its name, "Dry Creek."

A fraternal recognition took place between Long Jim and his brother, who discovered each other by the merest accident. Gilston, the *employé*, was an intelligent man: at San Francisco he had learned a little Chinese, and at Deep Creek he was studying the Indian dialects. He had missed making a fortune at Carson Valley, where in June or July 1859 the rich and now celebrated silver mines were discovered; and he warned us

against the danger of carrying in Carson City, where revolvers are fired even into houses known to contain "ladies." Col. Totten, the station-master, explained the formation of the gold diggings as built of gravel, from one to 120 feet, overlying slate rock.

Dry Creek station is on the eastern frontier of the western agency; as at Roberts' Creek, supplies and literature from Gt. S. L. City east and Carson City west are usually exhausted before they reach these final points. After a frugal feed, we inspected a grave for two, which bore the names of Lowrie and Applegate, and the date 21st May. These men, *employés* of the station, were attacked by Indians—Pánaks or Shoshonee, or possibly both: the former was killed by the first fire; the latter, when shot in the groin, and unable to proceed, borrowed under pretext of defence a revolver, bade good-bye to his companions, and put a bullet through his own head: the remainder then escaped. Both these poor fellows remain unavenged. The Anglo-American, who is admirably protected by the officials of his government in Europe, Asia, and Africa, is systematically neglected—*tutto* Mexico—in America. The double grave, piled up with stones, showed gaps where the wolves had attempted to tunnel, and bluebottle flies were buzzing over it in expectation. Col. Totten, at our instance, promised that it should be looked to.

The night was comfortably passed at Dry Creek, under the leeward side of a large haystack. The weather was cold, but clear and bright. We slept the sleep of the Just.

To Simpson's Park, 12th October.

At the time of the cold clear dawn, whose grey contrasted strongly with the blush of the most lovely evening that preceded it, the mercury stood at 45° F. Shortly after 8 A.M. we were afield, hastening to finish the long divide that separates Roberts' Creek Valley from its western neighbour, which, as yet unchristened, is known to the Utahs as Smokey Valley. The road wound in the shape of the letter U round the impassable part of the ridge. Crossing the north end of Smokey Valley, we came upon rolling ground, with water-willows and cedars "blazed"—barked with a gash—for sign-posts. Ensued a long kanyon, with a flat sole, not unlike Egan's, a gate by which the swift shallow stream had broken through the mountains: in

places it was apparently a *cul-de-sac*; in others shoulder after shoulder rose in long perspective, with points and projections behind, which an enemy might easily turn. The granite walls were of Cyclopean form, with regular lines of cleavage, as in the Rattlesnake Hills, which gave a false air of stratification. The road was a mere path along and across the rivulet bed, and the lower slopes were garnished with the pepper-grass and the everlasting bunch-grass, so truly characteristic of the "Basin States." Above us, in the pellucid sky, towered the eagle in his pride of place; the rabbit ran before us from the thicket; the ground-squirrel cached himself in the sage bush; and where distance appeared, smokes upcurling in slow heavy masses told us that man was not far distant. A second divide, more abrupt than the former, placed us in sight of Simpson's Park — and such a park! a circlet of tawny stubble, embosomed in sage-grown hills, the "Hiré" or "Look-out," and others, without other tree but the deformed cedars. The bottom is notorious for cold; it freezes even in June and July; and our night was, as may be imagined, none of the pleasantest.

The station-house in Simpson's Park was being rebuilt. As we issued from Mormondom into Christendom, the civility of our hosts perceptibly diminished; the Judge, like the generality of Anglo-Americans, did unnecessary kow-tow to those whom republicanism made his equals, and the "gentlemen" when asked to do anything, became exceedingly surly. Among them was one Giovanni Brutisch, a Venetian, who, flying from conscription had found a home in Halifax: an unfortunate fire which burned down his house drove him to the Far West. He talked copiously of the old country, breathed the usual aspirations of *Italia una*, and thought that Garibaldi would do well "*se non lo molestano*" — a euphuism accompanied by a look more expressive than any nod. The station was well provided with good mules, and the men apparently expected to use them; it was, however, commanded by the neighbouring heights, and the haystacks were exposed to fire at a time of the year when no more forage could be collected. The Venetian made for us some good light bread of wheaten flour, started or leavened with hop-water, and corn bread "shortened" with butter, and enriched with two or three eggs. A hideous Pa-Yute and surly Shoshone, whom I sketched, loitered about the

station: they were dressed in the usual rabbit-skin cape, and carried little horn bows, with which they missed small marks at fifteen paces. The boys, who were now a-weary of watching, hired one of these men for a shirt—tobacco was not to be had, and a blanket was too high pay—to mount guard through the night. Like the Poggi or Damocoes of W. India, one thief is paid to keep off many: the Indian is the best of wardens, it being with him a principle not to attack what the presence of a fellow tribesman defends.

To Reese River, 14th October.

Simpson's Park lies 195 miles from Carson City where we might consider the journey at an end. Yet the cold of night did not allow us to set out before 10 a.m. Our route lay across the park, which was dotted with wheat grass and broom-like reeds rising from a ground impregnated like salt. Presently we began to ascend Simpson's Pass, a long kanyon whose sloping sides and benches were dotted with the green bunch-grass. At the divide we found the "Sage Springs" whose position is too elevated for the infiltration of salt: they are consequently sweet and wholesome. Descending by a rugged road we sighted everywhere on the heights the fires of the natives. They were not symbols of war, but signals — for which smokes are eminently adapted — made by tribes telegraphing to one another, their being on route for their winter quarters. Below us "Reese's River" Valley might have served for a sketch in the African desert: a plain of saleratus, here yellow with sand or hay, there black with fire, there brown where the skin of earth showed through her garb of rags, and beyond it were chocolate-coloured hills, from whose heads curled blue smokes of volcanic appearance.

Bisecting the barren plain, ran a bright little stream, whose banks, however, had been stripped of their "salt grass": pure and clear it flows over a bed of gravel, shoots in a northerly direction, and sinks at a distance of about twenty miles. From afar we all mistook the course, deceived as travellers often are, by the horizontality of the lines. Leaving on the right the road which forks to the lower ford, we followed that on the left hand leading to the station. There cannot be much travelling upon these lines: the tracks last for years, unaffected by snow;

the carcases of animals, however, no longer mummified as in the Eastern prairies, are readily reduced to skeletons.

The station-house in the Reese River Valley had lately been evacuated by its proprietors and burnt down by the Indians: a new building of adobe was already assuming a comfortable shape. The food around it being poor and thin, our cattle were driven to the mountains. At night, probably by contrast with the torrid sun, the frost appeared colder than ever: we provided against it, however, by burrowing into the haystack, and despite the jackal-like cry of the coyote and the near tramping of the old white mare, we slept like tops.

To Smith's Creek, 14th October.

Before 8 A.M. we were under weigh bound for Smith's Creek. Our path stretched over the remainder of Reese's River Valley, an expanse of white sage and large rabbit-bush which affords fuel even when green. After a long and peculiarly rough divide, we sighted the place of our destination. It lay beyond a broad plain or valley, like a huge white "splotch" in the centre, set in dirty brown vegetation backed by bare and rugged hills which are snow topped only on the north; presently we reached the "splotch" which changed its aspect from that of a muddy pool to a yellow floor of earth so hard that the wheels scarcely made a dint, except where a later inundation had caused the mud to cake, flake, and curl,—smooth as ice without being slippery. Beyond that point, guided by streams meandering through willow thickets, we entered a kanyon—all are now wearying of the name—and presently sighted the station deep in a hollow. It had a good stone corral and the usual haystack, which fires on the hill tops seemed to menace. Amongst the station folks we found two New Yorkers, a Belfast man, and a tawny Mexican named Anton, who had passed his life riding the San Bernardino road. The house was unusually neat, and displayed even signs of decoration in the adornment of the banks with cedar work taken from the neighbouring creek. We are now in the lands of the Pa Yuta, and rarely fail to meet a party on the road: they at once propose "shwop" and readily exchange pine-nuts for "white grub," *i. e.* biscuits. I observed, however, that none of the natives were allowed to enter the station-house, whereas, in other places, especially amongst the

Mormons, the savages squeezed themselves into the room, took the best seats near the fire, and never showed a symptom of moving.

To Cold Springs, 16th October.

After a warmer night than usual — thanks to fire and lodging — we awoke and found a genial south wind blowing. Our road lay through the kanyon, whose floor was flush with the plain; the bed of the mountain stream was the initiative of vile travelling, which, without our suspecting it, was to last till the end of the journey. The strain upon the vehicle came near to smashing it, and the prudent Kennedy, with the view of sparing his best animals, gave us his worst, two aged brutes, one of which, in consequence of her squealing habits, had won for herself the title of "Sole Hellion." The divortia aquarum was a fine watershed to the westward, and the road was in V shape, whereas before it had oscillated between U and W.W. As we progressed, however, the valleys became more and more desert, the sage more stunted, and the hills more brown and barren. After a mid-day halt, rendered compulsory by the old white mare, we resumed our way along the valley southwards, over a mixture of pitch-hole and boulder, which forbids me to forget that day's journey. At last, after much stoking and kicking on the part of the cattle, and the mental refreshment of abundant bad language, self-adhibited by the men, we made Cold Springs Station, which by means of a cut across the hills could be brought within eight miles of Smith's Creek.

The station was a wretched place half built and wholly unroofed; the four boys, an exceedingly rough set, ate standing, and neither paper nor pencil was known amongst them. Our animals, however, found good water in a rivulet from the neighbouring hills and the promise of a plentiful feed on the morrow, whilst the humans, observing that a "beef" had been freshly killed, supped upon an excellent steak. The warm wind was a pleasant contrast to the usual frost, but as it came from the south, all the weather-wise predicted that rain would result. We slept however, without such accident, under the haystack, and heard the loud howling of the wolves, which are said to be larger on these hills than elsewhere.

In the morning the wind had shifted from the south to a more pluvial quarter, the south east — in those regions the westerly wind promises the fairest — and stormy cirri mottled the sky. We had a long stage of thirty-five miles before us, and required an early start, yet the lazy boys and the weary cattle saw 10 A.M. before we were en route. Simpson's road lay to our south, we could, however, sight about two miles distant from the station the easternmost formation, which he calls Gibraltar Gate. For the first three miles, our way was exceedingly rough; it gradually improved into a plain cut with nullahs, and overgrown with a chapparal, which concealed a few "burrowing hares." The animals are rare; during the snow they are said to tread in one another's trails after Indian fashion, yet the huntsman easily follows them. After eight miles we passed a spring, and two miles beyond it came to the Middle Gate, where we halted from noon till 5·15 P.M. Water was found in the bed of a river which fills like a mill-dam after rain, and a plentiful supply of bunch grass, whose dark seeds it was difficult to hunk out of the catlike capsules. We spent our halt in practising what Sonyeattine call *to cocoa dogs' excellence*, and in vain attempts to walk round the uncommonly wary hawks, crows, and wolves.

Hitching to as the sun neared the western horizon, we passed through the Gate, narrowly escaping a "spill" down a dwarf precipice. A plain bounded on our left by cretaceous bluffs, white as snow, led to the West Gate, two symmetrical projections like those further eastward. After that began a long divide broken by frequent chuckholes, which, however, had no cassia at the bottom. An ascent of five miles led to a second broad basin, whose white and sounding ground, now stony, then sandy, scattered over with carcass and skeleton, was bounded in front by low dark ranges of hill. Then crossing a long rocky divide, so winding that the mules' heads pointed within a few miles to N., S., E., and W., we descended by narrow passes into a plain. The eye could not distinguish it from a lake, so misty and vague were its outlines: other senses corrected vision, when we sank up to the hub in the loose sand. As we progressed painfully, broken clay and dwarf vegetation assumed in the dim shades fantastic and mysterious forms. I

thought myself once more amongst the ruins of that Arab village concerning which Lebid sang,—

"Ay me! ay me! all lone and drear the dwelling place, the home—
Où Mina, d'ar Rijam and Ghoul, with bones unheeded weary."

Tired out and cramped with cold, we were torpid with what the Bedouin calls El Bakl,—la Bagle du Désert, when part of brain sleeps whilst the rest is wide awake. At last, about 2·30 A.M. thoroughly "knocked up"—a phrase which I should advise the Englishman to eschew in the society of the fair Columbian—we sighted a roofless shed, found a haystack, and reckless of supper or of stamping horses, fell asleep upon the sand.

To Carson Lake, 17th October.

Sand Springs Station deserved its name. Like the Brazos de San Diego and other *mauvaises terres* near the Rio Grande, the land is cumbered here and there with drifted ridges of the finest sand, sometimes 200 feet high and shifting before every gale. Behind the house stood a mound shaped like the contents of an hour-glass, drifted up by the stormy S.E. gale in esplanade shape and falling steep to northward or against the wind. The water near this vile hole was thick and stale with sulphury salts: it blistered even the hands. The station house was no unfit object in such a scene, roofless and chairless, filthy and squalid, with a smoky fire in one corner, and a table in the centre of an impure floor, the walls open to every wind, and the interior full of dust. Hibernia, herself, never produced aught more characteristic. Of the *employés*, all loitered and sauntered about *desœuvrés* as cretins, except one, who lay on the ground crippled and apparently dying by the fall of a horse upon his breast bone.

About 11 A.M. we set off to cross the ten miles of valley that stretched between us and the summit of the western divide still separating us from Carson Lake. The land was a smooth saleratus plain, with curious masses of porous red and black basalt protruding from a ghastly white. The watershed was apparently to the north, the benches were distinctly marked, and the bottom looked as if it were inundated every year. It was smooth except where broken up by tracks, but all off the road was dangerous ground: in one place the horses sank to their hocks and were not extricated without difficulty. After a hot

FIRST VIEW OF CARSON LAKE.

drive—the glass at 9 A.M. showed 74° F.—we began to toil up the divide, a sand formation mixed with bits of granite, red scoria, and dwarf shells, whose lips were for the most part broken off. Over the fine loose surface was a floating haze of the smaller particles, like the film that veils the Arabian desert. Arrived at the summit, we sighted for the first time Carson Lake, or rather the sink of the Carson River. It derives its name from the well known mountaineer whose adventurous roamings long anticipated scientific exploration. Supplied by the stream from the eastern flank of the Sierra Nevada, it is just such a lake as might be formed in any of the basins which we had traversed, a shallow sheet of water which, in the cloudy sky and mitigated glare of the sun, looked pale and muddy. Apparently it was divided by a long narrow ruddy line, like ochre-coloured sand; a near approach showed that water on the right was separated from a saleratus bed on the left by a thick belt of Tule rush. Stones imitated the swamp of the tide, and white particles the colour of a wash.

Our conscientious informant at Sand Springs Station had warned us that upon the summit of the divide we should find a perpendicular drop, down which the wagons could be lowered only by means of lariats affixed to the axle-trees and looked round strong "sticking posts." We were not, however, surprised to find a mild descent of about 30°. From the summit of the divide five miles led us over a plain too barren for sage, and a stretch of stone and saleratus to the watery margin which was troublesome with sloughs and mud. The cattle relished the water, although tainted by the rush; we failed, however, to find any of the fresh water clams, whose shells were scattered along the shore.

Remounting at 5·15 P.M. we proceeded to finish the ten miles which still separated us from the station, by a rough and stony road, perilous to wheel conveyance, which rounded the southern extremity of the lake. After passing a promontory whose bold projection had been conspicuous from afar, and threading a deep kanyon leading towards the lake, we fell into its salvage, which averaged about one mile in breadth. The small crescent of the moon soon ceased to befriend us, and we sat in the sadness of the shade, till presently a light glimmered under Arturus, the road bent towards it and all felt "jolly." But,

"Hee, hee! we always guess how [illegible]!"

A long drill lone still lay before us, and we were approaching civilized lands. "Sink Station" looked well from without; there was a frame house inside an adobe enclosure, and a pile of wood and a stout haystack promised fuel and fodder. The interior, however, were asleep, and it was ominously long before a door was opened. At last appeared a surly cripple, who presently disappeared to arm himself with his revolver. The judge asked civilly for a cup of water, he was told to fetch it from the lake which was not more than a mile off, though as the road was full of quagmires it would be hard to travel at night. Wood the chief would not part with; we offered to buy it, to borrow it, to replace it in the morning; he told us to go for it ourselves, and that after about two miles and a half we might chance to gather some. Certainly our party was a low-abiding and a self-governing; never did I see men so tamely bullied; they threw back the fellow's sticks, and cold, hungry, and thirsty simply began to talk. An Indian standing by asked $20 to herd the stock for a single night. At last, George the Cornish Blue, took courage; some went for water, others broke up a wagon plank, and supper after a fashion was concocted.

I preferred passing the night on a side of bacon in the wagon to using the cripple's haystack, and allowed sleep to steep my senses in forgetfulness, after deeply regretting that the Mormons do not extend somewhat further westward.

To Fort Churchill, 18th October.

The b'hoys and the stock were doomed to remain near the Carson Lake where forage was abundant, whilst we made our way to Carson Valley—an arrangement not effected without excessive grumbling. At last the deserted ones were satisfied with the promise that they should exchange their desert quarters for civilization on Tuesday, and we were permitted to start. Crossing a long plain bordering on the Sink, we "snaked up" painfully a high divide which a little engineering skill would have avoided. From the summit, blank with west wind, we could descry, at a distance of fifty miles, a snowy saddle-back—the Sierra Nevada. When the deep sand had fatigued our cattle, we halted for an hour to bait in a patch of land rich with bunch grass. Descending from the eminence, we saw a gladdening sight: the Carson River, winding through its avenue of dark

cotton woods, and afar off, the quarters and barracks of Fort Churchill. The nearer view was a hard tramped plain, besprinkled with black and red porous stones and a sparse vegetation, with the ruddy and yellow autumnal hues; a miserable range of low, brown sunburnt rocks and hills, whose ravines were choked with white sand drifts, bounded the basin. The further distance used it as a foil, the Sierra developed itself into four distinct magnificent tiers of snow-capped and cloud-veiled mountains, whose dissolving views faded into thin darkness as the sun disappeared behind their gigantic heads.

While we admired these beauties night came on; the paths intersected one another, and despite the glow and gleam of a camp fire in the distance, we lost our way amongst the tall cotton-wood. Dispersing in search of information, the marshal accidentally stumbled upon his predecessor in office, Mr. Smith, who hospitably insisted upon our becoming his guests. He led us to a farm-house already half roofed in against the cold, fetched the whiskey for which our souls craved, gave to each a punch that we might be good boys, and finally set before us a prime beefsteak. Before sleeping we heard a number of "shooting stories." Where the corpse is, says the Persian, there will be the kites. A mining discovery never fails to attract from afar a flock of legal vultures—attorneys, lawyers, and judges. As the most valuable claims are mostly parted with by the ignorant fortunate for a song, it is usual to seek some flaw in the deed of sale, and a large proportion of the property finds its way into the pockets of the acute professional, who works on half profits. Consequently in these parts there is generally a large amount of unscrupulous talent. One gentleman judge had knived a waiter and shot a minister; another, almost as "heavy on the shoot," had in a single season killed one man and wounded another. My informants declared that in and about Carson a dead man for breakfast was the rule; besides accidents perpetually occurring to indifferent as to pistol-shooting parties, they reckoned per annum fifty murders. In a peculiar fit of liveliness an intoxicated gentleman will discharge his revolver in a ball-room, and when a "shooting" begins in the thin walled frame houses, those not concerned avoid bullets and splinters by jumping into their beds. During my three days' stay at Carson City I heard of three murders. A man "heavy

on the shoulder," who can "hit out straight from the hip," is a valuable acquisition. The gambler or professional player, who in the Eastern States is comparatively peaceful, because he fears the publicity of a quarrel, here soon distinguish himself as a fighting man. A curious story was told to illustrate how the ends of justice might, at a pinch, in the case of a popular character, be defeated. A man was convicted of killing his adversary, after saying to the bystanders, "Stoop down while I shoot the son of a dog (female)." Counsel for the people showed malice prepense; counsel for defence pleaded that his client was versed in curs, and manifestly couldn't mean a man, but a dog. The judge ratified the verdict of acquittal.

Such was the state of things, realising the old days of the Californian gold diggings, when I visited in 1860 Carson City. Its miracle, or rather want of rule, has probably long since passed away, leaving no more traces than a dream. California has been transformed by her Vigilance Committee, so ignominiously and unjustly decimated against in Europe and in the Eastern States of the Union, from a savage autocracy to one of the most orderly of the American Republics, and San Francisco, her capital, from a den of thieves and prostitutes, gamblers and miners, the offscourings of nations, to a social system not inferior to any of the most favoured cities.

Harrah Again — to ; 18th October.

This day will be the last of my diary. We have now emerged from the deserts of the Basin Range, and are descending upon lands where ploughs and the electric telegraph ply.

After a cold night at the hospitable Smith's, and losing the mules, we managed to hitch to, and ascend, not without difficulty, the deep bed of the Carson River, which runs over sands glittering with mica. A little beyond it we found the station-house, and congratulated ourselves that we had escaped a twelve hours' descent into the atmosphere of dust, horse-droppings, stale tobacco, flies, and profane mules, not to mention the chance of being "wiped out" in a "difference" between a soldier and a gambler, or a miner and a rider.

From the station-house we walked, accompanied by a Mr. O., — who, after being an editor in Texas, had become a mail rider to U. T., — to the fort. It was, upon the principle of its

distant neighbours, a well-disposed cantonment, containing quarters for the officers and barracks for the men. Fort Churchill had been built during the last few months: it lodged about two companies of infantry, and required at least 2000 men. Capt. F. F. Flint (6th Regt.) was then commanding, and Lieut.-Col. Thos. Swords, a deputy quartermaster-general, was on a tour of inspection. We went straight to the quartermaster's office, and there found Lieut. Moore, who introduced us to all present, and supplied us with the last newspapers and news. The camp was Teetotalist, and avoided cards like good Moslems: we were not, however, expected to drink water except in the form of strong waters, and the desert had disaccustomed us to abstain from whiskey. Finally, Mr. Byrne, the sutler, put into our saddle-bags a substantial lunch, with a bottle of cocktail, and another of cognac, especially intended to keep the cold out.

The dull morning had threatened snow, and shortly after noon the west wind brought up cold heavy showers, which continued with intervals to the end of the stage. Our next station was Miller's, distant 15 to 16 miles. The road ran along the valley of Carson River, whose trees were a repose to our eyes, and we congratulated ourselves when we looked down the stiff clay banks, 20 feet high, and wholly unfenced, that our journey was by day. The desert was now "done." At every few miles was a drinking "calaboose"[1] where sheds were not a kettle hung under a tree, and women peeped out of the log-huts. They were probably not charming, but, next to a sea voyage, a desert march is the finest cosmetic ever invented. We looked upon each as if

> "Her face was like the milky way i' the sky,
> A meeting of gentle lights without a name."

At Miller's Station, which we reached at 2·30 P.M., there really was one pretty girl — which, according to the author of the Art of Pinch, induces proclivity to tumulency. Whilst the rain was heavy we sat round the hot stove, eating bread and cheese, sausages and anchovies, which Rabelais, not to speak of other bonnes drinkers, commended amongst provocatives to thirst. Then we started at

[1] The Spanish is Calabozo, the French Cabanon. In the Hispano-American countries it is used as a "common jail" or a "dog hole," and as usual it corrupted into a verb.

4 P.M. through the cold rain, along the bad road up the river bed, to "liquor up" was manifestly a duty we owed to ourselves. And finally, when my impatient companions betted a supper that we should reach Carson City before 9 P.M., and sealed it with a "smile," I knew that the only way to win was to ply Mr. Kennedy the driver with as many goads as possible.

Colder waxed the weather and heavier the rain as, diverging from the river, we ascended the little bench upon which China-town lies. The line of ranches and frame houses, a kind of length without breadth place, once celebrated in the gold-digging days looked dreary and grim in the evening gloom. At 5·30 P.M. we were still fourteen miles distant from our destination. The benches and the country round about had been turned topsy-turvy in the search for precious metal, and the soil was still burrowed with shaft and tunnel, and crossed at every possible spot by flumes, at which the natives of the Flowery Land still found it worth their while to work. Beyond China-town we quitted the river, and in the cold darkness of night we slowly began to breast the steep ascent of a long divide.

We had been preceded on the way by a young man, driving in a light cart a pair of horses, which looked remarkable by the side of the usual Californian teams, three pair with the near wheeler ridden. Arriving at a bad place he kindly called out to us, just before his warning could be taken a soft and yielding sensation, succeeded by a decided leaning to the right, and ending with a loud crash, announced an overturn. In due time we were extricated, the pieces were picked up, and though the gun was broken the bottle of cocktail fortunately remained whole. The judge, probably and justly offended by my evil habit of laughing out of season, informed us that he had never been thrown before, an announcement which make us expect more "spills." The unhappy Kennedy had jumped off before the wheels pointed up hill; he had not lost a hoof, it is true, on the long march, but he wept spirits and water at the disappointing thought that the ambulance, this time drawn by his best team, and laden with all the dignities, had come to grief, and would not be fit to be seen. After 100 yards more another similar series of sensations announced a repetition of the scene, which deserved the epitaph,

"Hic jacet amphora vini."

This time, however, falling down a bank, we "came to smash," the bottle (chou!) was broken, so was the judge's head, whilst the ear of the judgeling—serve him right for chaffing!—was cut, the pistols and powder flasks were half buried in the sand, a variety of small objects were lost, and the flying gear of the ambulance was a perfect wreck. Unwilling to risk our necks by another trial, we walked over the rest of the rough ground, and, conducted by the good Croly, found our way to "Dutch Nick's," a ranch and tavern, apparently much frequented by the teamsters and other roughs, who seemed, honest fellows! deeply to regret that the accident had not been much more serious.

Remounting, after a time, we spied forwards, and sighted in front a dark line, but partially lit up about the flanks, with a brilliant illumination in the centre, the Kursaal of Mr. Hopkins, the local Crockford. Our entrance to Penrod House, the Fifth Avenue of Carson City, was by no means of a triumphal order; Nature herself seemed to sympathize with us, beplashing us with tears heavier than Mr. Kennedy's. But after a good supper and change of raiment, a cigar, "something warm," and the certainty of a bed combined to diffuse over our minds the calm satisfaction of having surmounted our difficulties *tant bien que mal*.

* * * * * *

CONCLUSION.

The traveller and the lecturer have apparently laid down a law that whether the journey does or does not begin at home it should always end at that "hallowed spot." Unwilling to break through what is now becoming a time-honoured custom, I trespass upon the reader's patience for a few pages more, and make my final salaam in the muddy puddly streets, under the gusty, misty sky of the "Liverpool of the South."

After a day's rest at Carson City, employed in collecting certain necessaries of tobacco and raiment, which, intrinsically vile, were about treble the price of the best articles of their kind in the Burlington Arcade, I fell in with Captain Dall, superintendent of the Ophir mines, for whom I bore a recommendation from Judge Crosbie, of U. T. The valuable silver leads of Virginia City occupied me, under the guidance of that hospitable gentleman, two days, and on the third we returned to Carson City, *viâ* the Steamboat Springs, Washo Valley, and other local lions. On the 24th appeared the boys driving in the stock from Carson Lake; certain of these youths had disappeared; Jim Gilston, who had found his brother at Dry Creek Station, had bolted, of course forgetting to pay his passage. A stage coach, most creditably horsed, places the traveller from Carson City at San Francisco in two days; as Mr. Kennedy, however, wished to see me safely to the end, and the judge, esteeming me a fit Mentor for youth, had entrusted to me Telemachus, alias Thomas, his son, I resolved to cross the Sierra by easy stages. After taking kindly leave of and a last "liquor up" with my old *compagnons de voyage*, the judge and the marshal, we broke ground once more on the 26th of October. At Genoa, pronounce Ge-nóa, the country town built in a valley thirteen miles south of Carson, I met Judge Cradlebaugh, who set me right on grounds where the Mormons had sown some prejudices. Five

VIRGINIA CITY (From the North-east)

days of a very dilatory travel, placed us on the western slope of the Sierra Nevada; the dugways and zigzags reminded me of the descriptions of travellers over the Andes; the snow threatened to block up the roads, and our days and nights were passed amongst travellers *en route*, and in the frame-house inn. On the 30th November, reaching Diamond Springs, I was advised by a Londoner, Mr. George Fryer, of the "Boomerang Saloon," to visit the gold-diggings at Placerville, whither a coach was about to start. At "Hang-town," as the place was less euphoniously termed, Mr. Colburn of the Cary House, kindly put me through the gold washing and "hydraulicking," and Dr. Smith, an old East-Indian practitioner, and Mr. White, who had collected some fine specimens of minerals, made the evenings pleasant. I started on the 1st November by coach to Folsom, and there found the railroad, which in two hours conducts to Sacramento: the negro coachmen, driving hacks and wagons to the station, the whistling of the steam, and the hurry of the train, struck me by the contrast with the calm travel of the desert.

At Sacramento, the newer name for New Helvetia,—a capital mass of shops and stores, groggeries, and hotels,—I snatched a draught, settled old scores with Kennedy, who almost carried me off by force to his location, shook hands with Thomas, and transferred myself from the Golden Eagle on board the steamer Queen City. Eight hours down the Sacramento River, past Benicia,—the birth-place of the Boy,—in the dark to the head waters of the glorious bay, placed me at the "El Dorado of the West," where a tolerable opera, a superior supper, and the society of friends made the arrival exceptionably comfortable.

I spent ten pleasant days at San Francisco. There remained some traveller's work to be done; the Giant Trees, the Yosemite or Yohamite Falls,—the highest cataracts yet known in the world,—and the Almaden Cinnabar Mines, with British Columbia, Vancouver's Island, and Los Angeles, temptingly near. But in sooth I was sweary of the way; for eight months I had lived on board steamers and railroad cars, coaches, and mules; my eyes were full of sight-seeing, my pockets empty, and my brain stuffed with all manner of useful knowledge. It was far more grateful to *flaner* about the stirring streets, to admire the charming faces, to enjoy the delicious climate, and to pay quiet visits like a "ladies' man," than to front wind and rain, muddy

rude, cavilous, and rough tenantry, fit only for Rembrandt, and the solitude of out-stations. The presidential election was also in progress, and I wished to see with my eyes the working of a system which has been facetiously called "universal suffrage and vote by ballot." Mr. Colonel Booker placed my name on the lists of the Union Club, which was a superior institution to that of Lexington; Col. Hooker of Oregon, and Mr. Tracey abated me life in San Francisco; Mr. Gregory Yale, whom I had met at Cuzco City, introduced me to a quiet picture of old Spanish happiness, fast fading from California; Mr. Donald Davidson, an old East Indian, talked East Indian with me; and Lieuts. Macpherson and Brewer accompanied me over the forts and batteries which are intended to make of San Francisco a New World Cronstadt. Mr. Peloton readily refused to cash for me a draught not authorised by my circular letter from the Union Bank. Mr. Booker took a less prudential and mercantile view of the question, and kindly helped me through with the *necessaire*—£100. My return for all this kindness was, I regret to say, a temperate but firm refusal to lecture upon the subject of Mecnah and El Medinah, Central Africa, Indian Cotton, American politics, or everything in general. I nevertheless bade my adieux to San Francisco and the hospitable San Franciscans with regret.

On the 15th November, the Golden Age, Commodore Watkins, steamed out of the Golden Gate, bearing on board amongst other 650 souls, the body that now addresses the public. She was a model steamer with engines and engine room, clean as a club kitchen, and a cuisine whose terrapin soup and devilled crabs à la Baltimore will long maintain their position in my memory,—not so long, however, as the kindness and courtesy of the ancient mariner who commanded the Golden Age. On the 26th we spent the last part of a night at Acapulco, the city of Cortes and of Doña Marina, where my lurking project of passing through ill-conditioned Mexico was finally dispelled. The route from Acapulco to Vera Cruz, over a once well worn highway, was simply and absolutely impassable. Each sovereign and independent State in that miserable caricature of the Anglo-American Federal Union was at daggers drawn with all and every of its next door neighbours; the battles were paper battles, but the plundering and the barbarities—como de

Mejico!—were stern realities. A rich man could not travel because of the banditti; a poor man would have been enlisted almost outside the city gates; a man with many servants would have seen half of them converted to soldiers under his eyes, and have lost the other half by desertion, whilst a man without servants would have been himself press-gang'd; a liberal would have been murdered by the Church, and a churchman—even the frock is no protection—would have been martyred by the liberal party. For this disappointment I found a philosophical consolation in various experiments touching the influence of Mescal-brandy, the Mexican national drink, upon the human mind and body.

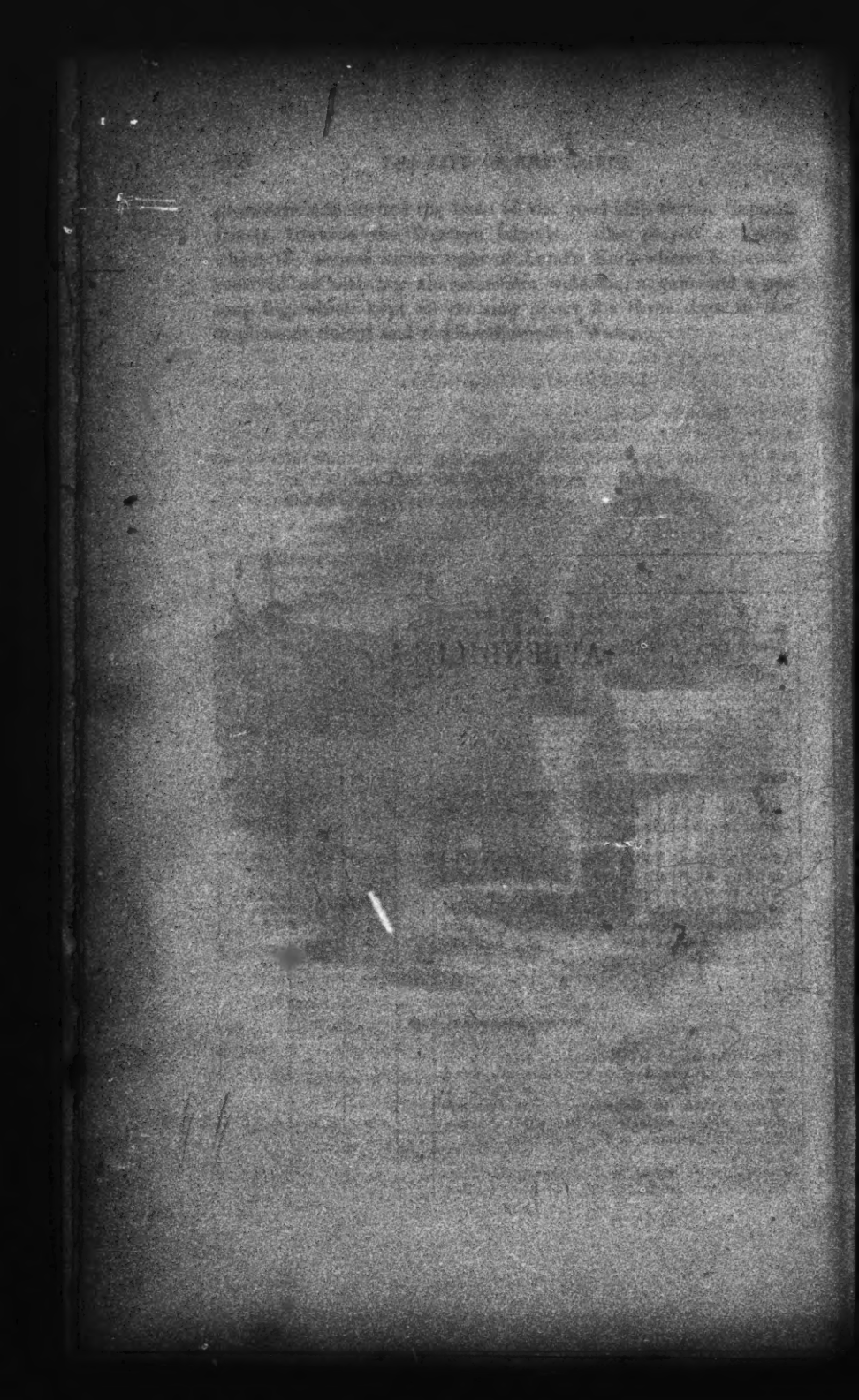
On the 15th December we debarked at Panama; horridly wet, dull, and dirty was the "place of fish," and the "Aspinwall House and its Mivart reminded me of a Parsee hotel in the Fort, Bombay. Yet I managed to spend three pleasant sittings of the sun. A visit to the acting Consul introduced me to M. Hurtado, the Intendente or Military Governor, and to a charming country-woman, whose fascinating society made me regret that my stay there could not be protracted. Though politics were running high, I became acquainted with most of the officers of the U.S. squadron, and only saw the last of them at Colon, alias Aspinwall. Messrs. Boyd and Power of the "Weekly Star and Herald," introduced me to the officials of the Panama R. R., Messrs Nelson, Center, and others, who, had I not expressed an aversion to "deadheading," or gratis travelling, would have offered me a free passage. Last, but not least, I must mention the venerable name of Mrs. Seacole of Jamaica and Balaklava.

On the 8th December I passed over the celebrated Panama railway to Aspinwall, where Mr. Center, the superintendent of the line, made the evening highly agreeable with conversation aided by "Italia," a certain muscatel cognac that has yet to reach Great Britain. We steamed the next morning, under charge of Captain Leeds, over the Caribbean Sea or Spanish Main, bound for St. Thomas. A hard-hearted E.N.E. wind protracted the voyage of the Solent for six days, and we reached the Danish settlement in time, and only just in time, to save a week's delay upon that offensive scrap of negro liberty-land. On the 9th December we bade adieu with pleasure to the little dun-

grass-rock and turned the head of the good ship Swiftsure, Captain Rivett, towards the Western Islands. She played a pretty wheel till almost within sight of Land's End, where Britannia received us with her characteristic welcome, a gale and a pea soup fog, which kept us cruising about for three days in the unpleasant Solent and the Southampton Water.

IN THE SIERRA NEVADA.

APPENDICES



APPENDIX I.

EMIGRANTS' ITINERARY,

Shewing the distances between camping-places, the several mail-stations where mules are changed, the hours of travel, the character of the roads, and the facilities for obtaining water, wood, and grass on the route along the southern bank of the Platte River, from St. Joseph Mo. to Great Salt Lake City, to Cannon Valley. From a Diary kept between the 7th August and the 19th October 1860.

No. of Stat.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
1.	Leave St. Joseph, Missouri, in N. lat. 39° 40', and W. long. 94° 50'. Cross Missouri River by steam ferry. Five miles of bottom land, bend in river and settlements. Over rolling prairie 2000 ft. above sea-level. After 6 miles, Troy, capital of Doniphan Co. Kansas T. about a dozen shanties. Dine and change mules at Cold Spring — good water and grass.	26	A.M.	P.M.	
		26	9.30	3	Aug. 7
	Road from Fort Leavenworth (N. lat. 39° 21' 14", and W. long. 94° 44') falls in at Cold Spring, distant 15 miles.				
	From St. Jo. to Cold Spring there are two routes, one lying north of the other, the former 26, the latter 24 miles in length.				
2.	After 10 miles, Valley Home, a whitewashed shanty. At Small Branch on Wolf River, 12 miles from Cold Spring, is a fountain on north of road, with water, wood, and grass. Here the road from Fort Atchinson falls in. Kennekuk station, 44 miles from St. Joseph. Sup and change mules.	22	P.M.	P.M.	
		22	4	8	Aug. 7
3.	Two miles beyond Kennekuk is the first of the three Grasshopper Creeks, flowing after rain to the Kansas River. Road rough and stony, water, wood, and grass. Four miles beyond the First Grasshopper is Whitehead, a young settlement on Big Grasshopper, water in pools, wood, and grass. Five and a half miles beyond is Walnut Creek, in Elkhorn Co. pass over new-fangled bridge, roadside dotted with shanties. Thence to Lockman's, or Big Muddy Station.	24	P.M.	A.M.	
		24	2	1	Aug. 7, 8
4.	Seventeen miles beyond Walnut Creek, the Third Grasshopper, also falling into the Kansas River.				

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	Good camping-ground. Ten miles beyond lies Richland, deserted site. Thence to Seneca, capital of Nemehaw Co. A few shanties on N. bank of Big Nemehaw Creek, a tributary of the Missouri River, which affords water, wood, and grass.	18	A.M. 3	A.M. 6	Aug. 8
8.	Cross Wildcat Creek and other nullahs. Seven miles beyond Seneca lies Ashpoint, a few wooden huts, thence to "Uncle John's Grocery," where liquor and stores are procurable. Eleven miles from Big Nemehaw water, wood, and grass are found at certain seasons near the head of a ravine. Thence to Vermilion Creek, which heads to the N.-E. and enters the Big Blue 20 miles above its mouth. The ford is miry after rain, and the banks are thickly wooded. Water is found in wells 40—43 feet deep. Guittard's Station.	20	A.M. 8	NOON. 12	Aug. 8
6.	Fourteen miles from Guittards, Marysville, capital of Washington Co. affords supplies and a blacksmith. Then ford the Big Blue, tributary to Kansas River, clear and swift stream. Twelve miles W. of Marysville is frontier line between Kansas and Nebraska. Thence to Cottonwood Creek, fields in hollow near the stream.	26	P.M. 1	P.M. 6	Aug. 8
7.	Store at the crossing very dirty and disorderly. Good water in spring 400 yards N. of the road, wood and grass abundant. Seventeen and a half miles from the Big Blue is Walnut Creek, where emigrants encamp. Thence to West Turkey or Rock Creek in Nebraska T. a branch of the Big Blue: its approximate altitude is 1485 feet.	26	P.M. 6	P.M. 11	Aug. 8
8.	After 19 miles of rough road and mosquitos, cross Little Sandy, 5 miles E. of Big Sandy, water and trees plentiful. There Big Sandy deep and heavy bed. Big Sandy Station.	23	P.M. 12	A.M. 4	Aug. 9
9.	Cross hills forming divide of Little Blue River ascending valley 40 miles long. Little Blue fine stream of clear water falling into Kansas River, everywhere good supplies and good camping-ground. Along left bank to Kiowa.	14	A.M. 6	A.M. 10	Aug. 9
10.	Rough road of spurs and gullies runs up valley 2 miles wide. Well wooded chiefly with cottonwood and grass abundant. Ranch at Liberty Farm on the Little Blue.	25	A.M. 11	P.M. 3	Aug. 9
11.	Cross divide between Little Blue and Platte River, rough road, mosquitos troublesome. Approximate altitude of dividing ridge 2025 feet. Station at Thirty-two Mile-Creek, a small wooded and winding stream flowing into the Little Blue.	24	P.M. 4	P.M. 9	Aug. 9

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
12.	After 27 miles strike valley of the Platte, along southern bank of river, over level ground, good for camping, fodder abundant. After 7 miles Fort Kearny in N. lat. 40° 38′ 45″, and W. long. 98° 58′ 11″: approximate altitude 2500 feet above sea level. Grocery, cloths, provisions, and supplies of all kinds are to be procured from the sutler's store. Beyond Kearny a rough and bad road leads to "Seventeen-Mile-Station."	34	P. M. 10·30	A. M. 8	Aug. 10
13.	Along south bank of Platte. Buffalo chips used for fuel. Sign of buffalo appears. Plum Creek Station on a stream where there is a bad crossing in wet weather.	21	A. M. 9·30	P. M. 1·15	Aug. 10
14.	Beyond Plum Creek. Willow Island Ranch, where supplies are procurable. Road along Platte, wood scarce, grass plentiful, buffalo abounds; after 20 miles "Cold Water Ranch." Halt and change at Midway Station.	25	P. M. 2·30	P. M. 8	Aug. 10
15.	Along Valley of Platte, road muddy after rain, fuel scarce, grass abundant, camp traces everywhere. Ranch at Cottonwood Station, at this season the western limit of buffalo.	27	P. M. 9	A. M. 1·45	Aug. 11
16.	Up Valley of Platte. No wood, buffalo chips for fuel. Good camping-ground, grass on small branch of Platte. To Junction House Ranch and thence to station at Frémont Springs.	30	A. M. 6·15	A. M. 11	Aug. 11
17.	Road passes O'Fallon's Bluffs. "Half-way House" a store and ranch, distant 120 miles from Fort Kearny, 400 from St. Joseph, 40 from the lower crossing, and 68 from the Upper crossing of the South Fork (Platte River). The station is called Alkali Lake.	25	NOON. 12	P. M. 5	Aug. 11
18.	Road along river, no timber, grass, buffalo chips, and mosquitos. Station at Diamond Springs near Lower Crossing.	25	P. M. 6	P. M. 10·15	Aug. 11
19.	Road along river. Last 4 miles very heavy sand, avoided by Lower Crossing. Poor accommodation at Upper Ford or Crossing on the eastern bank, where the mail passes the stream en route to Gt. S. L. city, and the road branches to Denver City and Pike's Peak.	35	P. M. 11	A. M. 3·15	Aug. 12
20.	Ford Platte 600 yards wide, 2·50 ft. deep, bed gravelly and solid, easy ford in dry season. Cross divide between North and South Forks along bank of Lodge Pole Creek. Land arid, wild sage for fuel. Lodge Pole Station.	35	A. M. 6·30	P. M. 12·45	Aug. 12
21.	Up Lodge Pole Creek over spur of table-land, then striking over the prairie finishes the high divide between the Forks. Approximate altitude 3500				

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	feet. On the right is Ash-Hollow, where there is plenty of wood and a small spring. Station is Mud Springs, a poor ranch.	23	P. M. 3	P. M. 5·45	Aug. 12
22.	Route lies over rolling divide between the Forks, crossing Omaha, Lawrence, and other creeks where water and grass are procurable. Cedar is still found in hill-gullies. About half a mile north of Chimney Rock is a ranch where the cattle are changed.	25	A. M. 8	P. M. 12·30	Aug. 13
23.	Road along south bank of North Ford of Platte River. Wild sage only fuel in valley: small spring on top of first hill. Rugged labyrinth of paths abreast of Scott's Bluffs, which lie 5 miles S. of river in N. lat. 41° 48′ 26″, and W. long. 103° 45′ 02″. Water found in first ravine of Scott's Bluffs 200 yards below the road, cedars on heights. To Station.	24	P. M. 1·30	P. M. 5·30	Aug. 13
24.	Road along river, crosses Little Kiowa Creek, a tributary to Horse Creek, which flows into the Platte. Ford Horse Creek, a clear shallow stream with a sandy bottom. No wood below the hills.	16	P. M. 6·30	P. M. 8·30	Aug. 13
25.	Route over sandy and heavy river bottom and rolling ground, leaving the Platte on the right: cottonwood and willows on the banks. Ranch at Laramie City kept by M. Badeau, a Canadian, who sells spirits, Indian goods, and outfit.	26	A. M. 6	P. M. 10·20	Aug. 14
26.	After 9 miles of rough road cross Laramie Fork and enter Fort Laramie, N. lat. 42° 12′ 38″, and W. long. 104° 31′ 26″. Alt. 4519 feet. Military post with post-office, sutler's stores, and other conveniences. Thence to Ward's Station on the Central Star, small ranch and store.	18	P. M. 12·15	P. M. 4	Aug. 14
27.	Rough and bad road. After 14 miles, cross Bitter Cottonwood Creek, water rarely flows, after rain 10 ft. wide and 6 inches deep, grass and fuel abundant. Pass Indian shop and store. At Bitter Creek branch of Cottonwood the road to Salt Lake City forks. Emigrants follow Upper or South road over spurs of Black Hills, some way south of river to avoid kanyons and to find grass. The station is called Horseshoe Creek. Residence of road-agent, Mr. Slade, and one of the worst places on the line.	25	P. M. 5	P. M. 9·30	Aug. 14
28.	Road forks, one line follows Platte, the other turns to left, over "cut off;" highly undulating ridges crooked and deeply dented with dry beds of rivers; land desolate and desert. No wood nor water till end of stage. La Bonté River and Station, unfinished ranch in Valley, water and grass.	25	A. M. 10·45	A. M. 2·45	Aug. 15
29.	Road runs 6 miles (wheels often locked) on rugged				

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	red land, crosses several dry beds of creeks, and springs with water after melting of snow and frosts in dry season, thence into Valley of Platte. After 17 miles it crosses the La Prêle (Rush River), a stream 16 feet wide, where water and wood abound. At Box-Elder Creek Station good ranch and comfortable camping-ground.	25	P. M. 4	P. M. 9	Aug. 15
30.	Along the Platte River now shrunk to 100 yards. After 10 miles, M. Bisonnette, at Deer Creek, a post office, blacksmith's shop, and store near Indian Agency. Thence a waste of wild sage to Little Muddy, a creek with water. No accommodation nor provisions at station.	20	A. M. 8·30	NOON. 12	Aug. 16
31.	After 6 miles cross vile bridge over Snow Creek. Thence up river valley along S. bank of Platte to lower ferry. To Lower Bridge, old station of troops. To Upper Bridge, where ferry has now been done away with.	18	P. M. 1·15	P. M. 4·15	Aug. 16
32.	Road ascends hill 7 miles long, land rough, barren, and sandy in dry season. After ten miles, red spring near the Red Buttes, old trading-place and post-office. Road then leaves Platte River and strikes over high, rolling, and barren prairie. After 18 miles "Devil's Backbone." Station at Willow Springs, wood, water, and grass, good place for encampment, but no accommodation nor provisions. On this stage mineral and alkaline waters dangerous to cattle abound.	28	A. M. 6·30	P. M. 12·50	Aug. 17
33.	After 3 miles, Green Creek, not to be depended upon, and Prospect Hill, a good look out. Then, at intervals of 3 miles, Harper's, Woodworth's, and Greasewood Creeks, followed by heavy sand. At 17 miles "Saleratus Lake" on west of road. Four miles beyond is "Independence Rock," Ford Sweetwater, leaving "Devil's Gate" on right. Pass blacksmith's shop. Sage only fuel. Plante or Muddy Station, family of Canadians, no conveniences.	33	P. M. 2·30	P. M. 9·15	Aug. 17
34.	Along winding banks of Sweetwater. After 4 miles, "Alkali Lake" S. of road. Land dry and stony, stunted cedars in hills. After 12 miles, "Devil's Post-Office," singular bluff on left of road and opposite ranch kept by Canadian. Mail Station "Three Crossings," at Ford No. 3, excellent water, wood, grass, game, and wild currants.	25	A. M. 7	A. M. 11	Aug. 18
35.	Up kanyon of Sweetwater. Ford river 5 times, making total of 8. After 16 miles, "Ice Springs" in swampy valley, and one quarter of a mile beyond "Warm Springs." Then rough descent and waterless stretch. Descend by "Lander's cut off" into fertile bottom. "Rocky Ridge Sta-				

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	tion," at Muskrat Creek good cold spring, grass, and sage fuel.	35	A. M. 5·45	P. M. 12·45	Aug. 19
36.	Up bed of creek, and ascending long hills leave Sweetwater. After 4 miles, 3 alkaline ponds S. of road. Rough path. After 7 miles, "Strawberry Creek," 6 ft. wide, good camping-ground, willows and poplars. One mile beyond is Quaking Asp Creek often dry. Three miles beyond lies M'Achran's Branch 33 × 2. Then "Willow Creek" 10 × 2, good camping-ground. At Ford No. 9 Canadian ranch and store. Long table-land leads to "South Pass" dividing trip between Atlantic and Pacific, and thence 2 miles to station at "Pacific Springs," water, tolerable grass, sage fuel, and mosquitos.	35	A. M. 7·45	P. M. 3	Aug. 20
37.	Cross Miry Creek. Road down Pacific Creek, water scarce for 20 miles. After 11 miles, "Dry Sandy Creek," water scarce and too brackish to drink, grass little, sage and greasewood plentiful. After 16 miles, "Sublette's cut off," or the "Dry Drive," turns N. westwards to Soda Springs and Fort Hall: the left fork leads to Fort Bridger, and Gt. S. L. City. Four miles beyond junction is "Little Sandy Creek" 20—25 × 2, grass, timber, and good camping-ground. Eight miles beyond is "Big Sandy Creek," clear, swift, and with good crossing 110 × 2. Southern route best, along old road, no water for 49 miles. Big Sandy Creek Station.	33	A. M. 8	P. M. 12·30	Aug. 21
38.	Desolate road cuts off bend of river, no grass nor water. After 12 miles "Simpson's Hollow." Fall into Valley of Green River half a mile wide, water 110 yards broad. After 20½ miles, Upper Ford, Lower Ford 7 miles below Upper. Good camping-ground on bottom; at station in Green River grocery, stores, and ferry-boat when there is high water.	32	P. M. 1·45	P. M. 6·30	Aug. 21
39.	Diagonal ford over Green River, good camping-ground in bottom. Follow valley for 4 miles, grass, and fuel. Michel Martin's store and grocery. Road leaves river and crosses waterless divide to Black's Fork 100 × 2, grass and fuel. Wretched station at Ham's Fork.	34	A. M. 8	NOON. 12	Aug. 22
40.	Ford Ham's Fork. After 12 miles road forks at the 2nd striking of Ham's Fork, both branches leading to Fort Bridger. Mail takes left hand path. Then Black's Fork 20 × 2, clear and pretty valley with grass and fuel, cottonwood and yellow currants. Cross stream 3 times. After 12 miles, "Church Butte." Ford Smith's Fork 30 ft. wide and shallow, tributary of Black's Fork. Station at Millersville on Smith's Fork, large store and good accommodation.	30	P. M. 2	P. M. 5·15	Aug. 22

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
41.	Road runs up valley of Black's Fork. After 12 miles, Fort Bridger in N. lat. 41° 19′ 19″, and W. long. 110° 12′ 22″, on Black's Fork of Green River. Commands Indian trade, fuel, corn, little grass. Post-office, sutler's store, grocery, and other conveniences. Thence rough and rolling ground to Muddy Creek Hill, steep and stony descent. Over fertile bottom to Big Muddy and Little Muddy Creek, which empties into Black's Fork below Fort Bridger. At Muddy Creek Station is a Canadian, provisions, excellent milk, no stores.	26	A. M. 8·30	P. M. 12·15	Aug. 23
42.	Rough country. Road winds along ridges to Quaking Asp Hill 7900 (8400 ?) feet above sea-level. Steep descent, rough and broken ground. After 18 miles Sulphur Creek Valley, stagnant stream, flowing after rain, ford bad and muddy. Station in fertile valley of Bear River, which turns northward and flows into E. side of Lake, wood, grass, and water. Poor accommodations at Bear River Station.	20	NOON. 12	P. M. 5·30	Aug. 23
43.	Road runs by Needle Rocks, falls into Valley of Egan's Creek. "Cache Cave" on right hand. Three miles below Cave is Red Fork in Echo Kanyon, unfinished station at entrance. Rough road, steep ascents and descents along Red Creek Station on Weber River, which falls into Salt Lake south of Bear River.	36	A. M. 8·15	P. M. 2·30	Aug. 24
44.	Road runs down Valley of Weber. Ford river. After 5½ miles is a salt spring where the road leaves the river to avoid a deep kanyon and turns left into a valley with rough paths, trying to wheels. Then crosses mountain and ascending long hill descends to Banchmin's Creek, tributary to Weber River. Creek 18 feet wide, swift, pebbly bed, good ford, grass and fuel abundant. Station called Carson's House; accommodations of the worst.	22	P. M. 4·30	P. M. 7·45	Aug. 24
45.	Ford Banchmin's Creek 13 times in 8 miles. After 2 miles along a small watercourse ascend Big Mountain, whence first view of Gt. S. L. City, 13 miles distant. After 14 miles Big Kanyon Creek. Six miles further road leaves Big Kanyon Creek, and after steep ascent and descent makes Emigration Creek. Cross Little Mountain, 2 miles beyond Big Mountain, road rough and dangerous. Five miles from Emigration Kanyon to Gt. S. L. City. Road through "Big Field" 6 miles square.	29	A. M. 7	P. M. 7·15	Aug. 28

Great Salt Lake City N. lat. 40° 46′ 08″
W. long. 112° 08′ 06″ (G.)
Altitude 4300 feet.

The variation of compass at Temple Block in 1849 was 15° 47′ 23″, and in 1860 it was 15° 54′, a slow progress towards the east. (In the Wind River Mts. as laid down by Col. Frémont in 1843 was E. 18°.) In Fillmore Valley it is now 18° 15′, and three years ago was about 17° east, the rapid progression to the east is accompanied with extreme irregularity, which the people attribute to the metallic constituents of the soil.

Total of days between St. Jo. and Gt. S. L. City	19
Total stages	45
Distance in statute miles	1136
From Fort Leavenworth to Gt. S. L. City	1168

ITINERARY OF THE MAIL ROUTE FROM GREAT SALT LAKE CITY TO SAN FRANCISCO.

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
1 and 2.	Road through south of City, due south along right bank of Jordan. Cross many creeks, viz. Kanyon Creek, 4½ miles, Mill Creek, 2½, First or Great Cottonwood Creek 2. Second ditto 4. Fork of road 1½. Dry Creek 3½. Willow Creek 2½. After 22—23 miles, hot and cold springs, and halfway house, the brewery under Point of the Mountain. Road across Ash Hollow or Jordan Kanyon, 2 miles. Fords river, knee deep, ascends a rough divide between Utah Valley and Cedar Valley 10 miles from camp, and finally reaches Cedar Creek and Camp Floyd.	44	10·30	9·30	Sept. 20
3.	Leaves Camp Floyd, 7 miles to divide of Cedar Valley. Crosses divide into Rush Valley, after total of 18·2 miles reaches Meadow Creek, good grass and water. Rush Valley Mail Station 1 mile beyond, food and accommodation.	20	10·30	9·30	Sept. 27
4.	Crosses remains of Rush Valley 7 miles. Up rough divide called Genl. Johnston's Pass. Spring often dry, 200 yards on right of road. At Point				

No. of Mail		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	Look Out leaves Simpson's Road, which runs south. Cross Skull Valley, bad road. To bench on eastern flank of desert. Station called Egan's Springs, Simpson's Springs, or Lost Springs, grass plentiful, water good.	27	A. M. 9·30	4·30	Sept. 28
5.	New station, road forks to S.-E. and leads after 5 miles to grass and water. After 8 miles River Bottom, 1 mile broad. Long line over desert to Express Station, called Dugway, no grass, and no water.	20	12	P. M. 5·30	Sept. 29
6.	Steep road 2½ miles to summit of Dugway Pass. Descend by rough incline, 8 miles beyond road forks to Devil's Hole, 90 miles from Camp Floyd on Simpson's route, and 6 miles S. of Fish Springs. Eight miles beyond fork is Mountain Point, road winds S. and W. and then N. to avoid swamp, and crosses three sloughs. Beyond last is Fish Spring Station on bench, poor place, water plentiful but bad. Cattle here drink for first time after Lost Springs, distant 48 miles.	28	P. M. 6·30	A. M. 3·30	Sept. 29
7.	Road passes many pools. Halfway forks S. to Pleasant Valley (Simpson's line). Road again rounds swamp, crossing S. end of Salt Plain. After 21 miles, "Willow Creek," water rather brackish. Station "Willow Springs" on bench below hills at W. end of Desert, grass and hay plentiful.	22	A. M. 10	3·30	Sept. 30
8.	Road ascending bench turns N. to find Pass. After 6 miles Mountain Springs, good water, grass, and fuel. Six miles beyond is Deep Creek Kanyon, dangerous ravine 9 miles long. Then descends into fertile and well watered valley, and after 7 miles enters Deep Creek Mail Station. Indian farm.	28	A. M. 8	P. M. 4	Oct. 1
9.	Along W. Creek. After 8 miles, "Eight Miles Springs," water, grass, and sage fuel. Kanyon after 2½ miles, 500 yards long and easy. Then 19 miles through Antelope Valley to station of same name, burnt in June 1860 by Indians. Simpson's route from Pleasant Valley, distant 12·5 miles, falls into E. end of Antelope Valley, from Camp Floyd 151 miles.	30	A. M. 8	P. M. 4	Oct. 3, 4
10.	Road over valley for 2 miles to mouth of Shell Creek Kanyon, 6 miles long. Rough road, fuel plentiful. Descends into Spring Valley, and then passes over other divides into Shell Creek, where there is a mail station; water, grass, and fuel abundant.	18	A. M. 6	P. M. 11	Oct. 5
11.	Descends rough road. Crosses Steptoe Valley and bridged creek. Road heavy, sand or mud. After 16 miles Egan's Kanyon, dangerous for Indians.				

No. of Mail.		Miles	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
	Station at W. mouth, burned by Indians in Oct. 1860.	18	P. M. 2	P. M. 6	Oct. 5
12.	Pass divide, fall into Butte Valley, and cross its N. end. Bottom very cold. Mail Station half way up hill, very small spring, grass on N. side of hill. Butte Station.	16	P. M. 8	A. M. 8	Oct. 6
13.	Ascend long divide, 2 steep hills and falls. Cross N. end of Long Valley, all barren. Ascend divide and descend into Ruby Valley, road excellent, water, grass, and bottom, fuel distant. Good Mail Station.	22	A. M. 8	P. M. 1·45	Oct. 7
14.	Long divide, fuel plenty, no grass nor water. After 10 miles road branches, right hand to Gravelly Ford of Humboldt River. Cross dry bottom. Cross Smith's Fork of Humboldt River in Huntington Valley, little stream, bunch-grass and sage fuel on W. end. Ascend Chokop's Pass, Dugway and hard hill, descend into Moonshine Valley. Station at Diamond Springs; warm water but good.	23	A. M. 8	P. M. 1·45	Oct. 8, 9
15.	Cross Moonshine Valley. After 7 miles sulphurous spring and grass. Twelve miles beyond, ascend divide, no water, fuel and bunch-grass plentiful. Then long divide. After 9 miles, station on Roberts' Creek at E. end of Shoswih, or Roberts' Springs Valley.	28	A. M. 8	P. M. 1·45	Oct. 10
16.	Down Valley to west, good road, sage small, no fuel. After 12 miles, willows and water-holes, 3 miles beyond are alkaline wells. Station on bench, water below in dry creek, grass must be brought from 15 miles.	35	A. M. 6·30	P. M. 12·30	Oct. 11
17.	Cross long rough divide to Smokey Valley. At northern end creek called "Wanahoneo," or "Netwood," i. e. trap. Thence long rough kanyon to Simpson's Park, grass plentiful, water in wells 10 feet deep. Simpson's Park in Shoshone country, and, according to Simpson's Itinerary, 348 miles from camp Floyd.	25	A. M. 8·15	P. M. 2·25	Oct. 12
18.	Cross Simpson's Park. Ascend Simpson's Pass, a long kanyon, with sweet, "Sage Springs," on summit, bunch-grass plentiful. Descend to fork of road, right hand to lower, left hand to upper, ford of Reese's River. Water perennial and good, food poor.	15	A. M. 10	P. M. 2	Oct. 13
19.	Through remainder of Reese's River Valley. After long divide Valley of Smith's Creek, saleratus, no water nor grass. At last, station near kanyon, and hidden from view. Land belongs to Pa Yutas.	28	A. M. 7·20	P. M. 2·45	Oct. 14

No. of Mail.		Miles.	Start.	Arrival.	Date.
20.	Ascend rough kanyon, and descend to barren and saleratus plain. Towards south of valley over bench-land, rough with rock and pitch-hole. "Cold Springs Station" half built, near stream, fuel scarce.	25	A. M. 8·15	P. M. 4·15	Oct. 15
21.	At west gate 2 miles from station good grass. After 8 miles, water. Two miles beyond is middle gate, water in flumara, and grass near. Beyond gate 2 basins, long divides, winding road, to "Sand Springs Valley," bad water, little grass.	35	A. M. 9·50	P. M. 2·30	Oct. 16
22.	Cross valley, 10 miles to summit, over slough inundations, and bad road. Summit shifting sand. Descend 5 miles to Carson Lake, water tolerable, tule abundant. Round S. side of lake to sink of Carson River Station, no provisions, pasture good, fuel scarce.	25	A. M. 11	P. M. 9	Oct. 17
23.	Cross long plain. Ascend very steep divide, and sight Sierra 50 miles distant. Descend to Carson River. Fort Churchill newly built. Sutler's stores, &c.	25	A. M. 9·30	P. M. 7·15	Oct. 18
24.	Carson City. Carson City lies on the eastern foot of the Sierra Nevada, distant 552 statute miles, according to Captain Simpson, from Camp Floyd. The present itinerary reduces it to 544, and, adding 44 miles, to a total of 588 from Gt. S. L. City.	35	A. M. 11	P. M. 10·30	Oct. 19

ITINERARY

Of Capt. J. H. Simpson's Wagon Road from Camp Floyd to Genoa, Carson Valley, U. T. Explored by direction of General A. G. Johnston, commanding the Department of Utah between the 2nd May to 12th June 1859.

Places.	Intermediate Distances. Miles.	Camp S Cedar. Miles.	Total from Camp Floyd. Miles.	No. of Camp.	Wood.	Water.	Grass.
Camp Floyd, wood and grass in vicinity .						W	
Meadow Creek	18·2	18·2	18·2	1			
Cross Meadow Creek (Rush Valley), mail station ¼ mile	1						
Spring ¼ mile to right of Gen. Johnston's Pass, just after passing summit. This spring furnishes but little water, even in the spring, and in the summer would be most probably dry . . .	8·9	9·9	28·1	2	W	W	G

Places.	Intermediate Distances. Miles.	Camp to Camp. Miles.	Total from Camp Floyd. Miles.	No. of Camp.	Wood.	Water.	Grass.
Simpson's Springs, mail station	16·2	16·2	44·3	3	W	W	G
Summit, Short-cut Pass	21·6				Willow		
1·6 miles below summit	1·6	23·2	67·5	4	Sage		very little grass
Tolerable grass skirting low range of rocks on right of road	7·6						G
A little grass, sage in valley	4·8				S		G
Devil's Hole, water slightly brackish	6·7					W	
Fish Springs, mail station	5·4	24·7	92·2	5	Ctw	W	G
Warm Springs	3·4				GW	W	G
Grass in considerable quantity of good character	26·4	29·7	12·19	6			G
Alkaline spring to right of road, water not drinkable	1·						
Sulphur springs, water abundant and palatable	1·5	2·5	125·	7	W, S	W	G
Spring, Pleasant Valley, mail station	13·4	13·4	138·4	8	W	W	G
East side Antelope Valley		12·5	150·9	9	W	W	G
Spring Valley, good grass on west bench and slopes		19·	169·9	10	GW	W	G
Cross marsh, road takes up a fine stream, grass all along	3·5						
Leave Creek	3·5				W	W	G
Spring, copious, grass fine	2·8				W	W	G
East side Steptoe Valley, mail station	1·3	11·1	181·0	11	W	W	G
Steptoe Creek; dry in summer	6·5						
Mouth Egan Cañon	6·8	13·6	194·3	12	W	W	G
Spring, source of Egan Creek	1·8				W	W	G
West side of Butte Valley. Mail station, a very small spring, barely sufficient for cooking purposes, near top of hill; grass on N. side of same hill	16·2	18·1	212·4	13	W	W	G
Spring 1 mile west side of summit of range	12·	12·	224·4	14	W	W	G
Ruby Valley, mail station	9·2	9·2	233·6	15	GW	W	G
Smith's Fork, Humboldt R. Huntingdon's Creek	14·4						
Small mountain stream	3·2	17·6	251·2	16	GW	W	G
Spring left of road	1·2				GW	W	G
Near west foot of Cho-kupe Pass	5·3	7·1	258·3	17	GW	W	G
Spring in Pah-hun-nupe Valley	7·8						
Do. west side of Pah-hun-nupe Valley	5·6	13·3	271·6	18	S, W GW	W	G
She-a-wi-to (Willow) Creek	14·9	14·9	286·5	19	S, W	W	G
Bed of Nash R. water in pools, probably not constant	11·6						
Small spring, grass on mountain side, 2 miles off	5·9	17·5	304·	20	S, W	W	G
Wone-in-dam-me, or Antelope Creek	7·	7·	311·	21	W	W	G
Creek	4·3				S, W	W	G
Creek west side of Valley	9·5	13·7	324·7	22	S, W	W	G
Wan-a-ho-no-pe (Netwood trap) Creek	13·6						
Do. do. do.	4·6	18·2	342·9	23	S, W	W	G
Simpson's Park, according to topographer, Lt. Putnam and guide, Col. Reese	4·9	4·9	347·8	24	S, W	W	G

Places.	Intermediate Distances. Miles.	Camp to Camp. Miles.	Total from Camp Floyd. Miles.	No. of Camp.	Wood.	Water.	Grass.
Small spring in Simpson's Pass (same authority)	3·						
Ford of Reese's River	8·2					W	G
Reese's River	2·6	13·8	361·5	25		W	G
Leave Reese's River	3·4					W	G
Small spring to left of road just before reaching summit of Pass	10						
Lt. J. L. Kirby Smith's Creek	7·8	21·2	382·8	26	G W	W	G
Englemanns "	1·6					W	
Lt. Putnam's "	8·6	10·2	393·	27	S, W	W	G
Do. South Fork	2·7				W	W	G
Rock Creek	5·				W	W	G
Do.	3·1	8·7	401·7	28	W	W	G
Do. Sinks	1·7						
Spring water kegs should be filled for 2 days. Camp from this in alkaline flat	5·4					W	
Gibraltar Gate	0·6					W	
Creek joins Gibraltar Creek	4·2						
Middle Gate Spring	3·2	14·7	416·4	29	S, W	W	G
West Gate	3·5						
Dry wells, alkaline valley, very poor camp water and grass alkaline, and little of either. Rabbit bush fuel	21·0	24·5	440·9	30	Rab. bush	W	G
Creek connecting the 2 lakes of Carson. Road can be shortened some 8 or 10 miles by striking across head of Alkaline Valley after getting about 9 miles from camp 30, and then proceeding directly to shore of Carson Lake. It is not necessary to go so far north as the connecting creek referred to		16·6	457·5	31	Dry rush	W	R, G
Leave Carson Lake	9·7					W	R, G
Walker's River	21·5	31·2	488·7	32	W	W	G
Do. do.		10·	498·7	33	W	W	G
Do. North bend		6·3	505·	34	W	W	G
Small spring, not sufficient for large command, grass ½ mile south	14·1				S, W	W	G
Carson River	1·9						
Do. do.	3·0	19·0	524·	35	W	W	G
Pleasant Grove, cross Carson River and get into Old Emigrant Road. Mail station	9·0	9·0	533·	36	W	W	G
China town. Gold diggings	7·4					W	
Carson city. E. foot of Sierra Nevada	11·6	19 0	552·	37		W	G
Genoa Do. do. do.	12·9	12·9	564 9	38	W	W	G

To Brevt.-Major F. J. Porter,
Assist.-Adj.-Genl.
Dept. Utah, Camp Floyd.

(Signed) J. H. Simpson,
Capt. Top. Engineers.

APPENDIX II.

DESCRIPTION OF THE MORMON TEMPLE.

[*Extracted from the Deseret News.*]

THE following is a brief detail of the temple, taken from drawings in my office in Gt. S. L. City.

The Temple Block is 40 rods square, the lines running north and south, east and west, and contains 10 acres. The centre of the temple is 150 feet 6 inches due west from the centre of the east line of the block. The length of said house east and west is 186½ feet including towers, and the width 99 feet. On the east end there are three towers, as also on the west. Draw a line north and south 118½ feet through the centre of the tower, and you have the north and south extent of ground plan including pedestal.

We depress into the earth at the east end, to the depth of 16 feet, and enlarge all around beyond the lines of wall, 3 feet for a footing. The north and south walls are 8 feet thick clear of pedestal; they stand upon a footing of 16 feet wall on its bearing, which slopes 3 feet on each side to the height of 7½ feet. The footing of the towers rise to the same height as the side, and is one solid piece of masonry of rough ashlars, laid in good lime mortar.

The basement of the main building is divided into many rooms by walls, all having footings. The line of the basement floor is 6 inches above the top of the footing. From the towers on the east to the towers on the west, the face of the earth slopes 6 feet, 4 inches above the earth on the east line, begins a promenade walk from 11 to 22 feet wide around the entire building, and approached by stone steps as the earth slopes and requires them. There are four towers on the four corners of the building, each starting from their footing of 20 feet square; these continue 16½ feet high and come to the line of the base string course, which is 8 feet above the promenade walk. At this point the towers are reduced to 25 feet square; they then continue to the height of 88 feet, or the height of the second string course. At this point they are reduced to 23 feet square; they then continue 38 feet high, to the third string course. The string courses continue all around the building, except when separated by buttresses. These string courses are massive mouldings from solid blocks of stone.

The two east towers then rise 25 feet to a string course or cornice. The two west towers rise 19 feet and come to their string course or cornice. The four towers then rise 9 feet to the top of battlements. These towers are cylindrical, having 17 feet diameter inside, within which stairs ascend around a solid column 4 feet in diameter, allowing landings at the various sections of the building. These towers have each five ornamental windows on two sides above the basement. The two centre towers occupy the centre of

the east and west ends of the building, starting from their footings 31 feet square, and break off in sections in line with corner towers, to the height of the third string course. The east centre tower then rises 40 feet to the top of battlements; the west centre tower rises 34 feet to the top of battlements. All these towers have spires, the east centre tower rises 200 feet, while the west centre tower rises 190 feet. All these towers at their corners have octagon turrets, terminated by octagon pinnacles 5 feet diameter at base, 4 feet at first story, and 3 feet from there up. There are also on each side of these towers two buttresses, except where they come in contact with the body of the main building. The top of these buttresses show forty-eight in number, and stand upon pedestals. The space between the buttresses and turrets is 2 feet at first story. On the front of the two centre towers are two large windows, each 32 feet high, one above the other, neatly prepared for that place.

On the two west corner towers, and on the west end a few feet below, the top of battlements may be seen in alto relievo and bold relief, the great dipper or Ursa Major with the pointers ranging nearly towards the north star. (Moral: — the lost may find themselves by the priesthood.)

I will now glance at the main body of the house. I have before stated that the basement was divided into many rooms. The central one is arranged for a baptismal font, and is 59 feet long by 35 feet wide, separated from the main wall by four rooms, two on each side, 19 feet long by 12 feet wide. On the east and west sides of these rooms are four passages, 12 feet wide; these lead to and from by outside doors, two on the north and two on the south. Further east and west from these passages are four more rooms, two at each end 28 feet wide by 38½ long. These two thin walls occupy the basement. All the walls start off their footings, and rise 16½ feet, and there stop with groin ceiling.

We are now up to the line of the base string course, 8 feet above the promenade or steps rising to the temple, which terminates at the cope of pedestal, and to the first floor of said house. This room is joined to the outer courts, these courts being the width between towers, 16 feet by 9 in the clear. We ascend to the floors of these courts (they being on a line with first floor of main house) by four flights of stone steps 9½ feet wide arranged in the basement work; the first step ranging to the outer line of towers. From these courts doors admit to any part of the building.

The size of the first large room is 120 feet long by 80 feet wide; the height reaches nearly to the second string course. The room is arched over in the centre with an elliptical arch, which drops at its flank 10 feet, and has 38 feet span. The side ceilings have one-fourth elliptical arches, which start from the side walls of the main building 16 feet high, and terminate at the capitals of the columns, or foot of centre arch, at the height of 24 feet. The columns obtain their bearings direct from the footings of the said house; these columns extend up to support the floor above. The outside walls of this story are 7 feet thick. The space, from the termination of the foot of the centre arch to the outer wall, is divided into sixteen compartments, eight in each side, making rooms 14 feet by 14, clear of partitions, and 10 feet high, leaving a passage of 6 feet wide next to each flank of centre arch, which is approached from the ends. These rooms are each lighted by an elliptical or oval window, whose major axis is vertical.

The second large room is one foot wider than the room below; this is in

consequence of the wall being but 6 feet thick, falling off 6 inches on the inner and 6 on the outer side. The second string course provides for this on the outer side. The rooms of this story are similar to those below. The side walls have nine buttresses on a side, and have eight tiers of windows, five in each tier.

The foot of the basement windows are 8 inches above the promenade, rise 3 feet perpendicular, and terminate into a semicircular head. The first story windows have 12 feet long of sash to top of semicircular head. The oval windows have 6½ feet length of sash. The windows of the second story are the same as those below. All these frames have 4½ feet width of sash. The pedestals under all the buttresses project at their base 2 feet; above their base, which is 15 inches by 4½ feet wide, on each front is a figure of a globe 3 feet 11 inches across, whose axis corresponds with the axis of the earth.

The base string course forms a cope for those pedestals. Above this cope the buttresses are 3½ feet, and continue to the height of 100 feet. Above the promenade close under the second string course on each of the buttresses, is the moon, represented in its different phases. Close under the third string course or cornice is the face of the sun. Immediately above is Saturn with his rings. The buttresses terminate with a projected cope.

The only difference between the tower buttresses and the one just described is, instead of Saturn being on them, we have clouds and rays of light descending.

All of these symbols are to be chiselled in bas-relief on solid stone. The side walls continue above the string course or cornice 8½ feet, making the walls 90 feet high, and are formed in battlements interspersed with stars.

This roof is quite flat, rising only 8 feet, and is to be covered with galvanised iron or some other metal. The building is to be otherwise ornamented in many places. The whole structure is designed to symbolise some of the great architectural work above. The basement windows recede in from the face of outer wall to sash frame 23 inches, and are relieved by a large cavetto, while on the inside they are approached by stone steps.

Those windows above the base recede from face of wall to sash frame 3 feet, and are surrounded by stone jambs formed in mouldings, and surmounted by labels over each, which terminate at their horison, excepting the oval windows whose labels terminate as columns, which extend from an enriched string course at the foot of each window to the centre of major axis. My chief object in the last paragraph is to show to the judgment of any who may be baffled how those windows can be come at, &c. &c. All the windows in the towers are moulded, and have stone jambs; each being crowned with label mouldings. The whole house covers an area of 21,850 feet.

For further particulars, wait till the house is done, then come and see it.

(Signed) TRUMAN O. ANGELL, *Architect.*

APPENDIX III.

THE MARTYRDOM OF JOSEPH SMITH.

BY APOSTLE JOHN TAYLOR.

Being requested by George A. Smith and Willford Woodruff, Church historians, to write an account of events that transpired before and took place at the time of the martyrdom of Joseph Smith, in Carthage jail, in Hancock County, State of Illinois, I write the following principally from memory, not having access to any public documents relative thereto, further than a few desultory items contained in Ford's "History of Illinois." I must also acknowledge myself considerably indebted to George A. Smith, who was with me when I wrote it, and who, although not there at the time of the bloody transaction, yet from conversing with several persons who were in the capacity of Church historians, and aided by an excellent memory, has rendered me a considerable service. These and the few items contained in the notes at the end of this account is all the aid I have had. I would further add that the items contained in the letter, in relation to dates especially, may be considered strictly correct.

After having written the whole, I read it over to the Hon. J. M. Bernhisel, who, with one or two slight alterations, pronounced it strictly correct. Brother Bernhisel was present most of the time. I am afraid, that from the length of time that has transpired since the occurrence, and having to rely almost exclusively on my memory, there may be some slight inaccuracies, but I believe that in the general it is strictly correct; as I figured in those transactions from the commencement to the end, they left no slight impression on my mind.

In the year 1844, a very great excitement prevailed in some parts of the counties of Hancock, Brown, and other neighbouring counties, in relation to the "Mormons," and a spirit of vindictive hatred and persecution was exhibited among the people, which was manifested in the most bitter and acrimonious language, as well as by acts of hostility and violence, frequently threatening the destruction of the citizens of Nauvoo and vicinity, and utter annihilation of the "Mormons" and "Mormonism," and in some instances breaking out in the most violent acts of ruffianly barbarity; persons were kidnapped, whipped, prosecuted, and falsely accused of various crimes; their cattle and houses injured, destroyed, or stolen; vexatious prosecutions were instituted to vex, harass and annoy. In some remote neighbourhoods they were expelled from their homes without redress, and in others violence was threatened to their persons and properties; whilst in others every kind of insult and indignity was heaped upon them, to induce them to abandon their homes, the county, or the State.

These annoyances, prosecutions and persecutions, were instigated through diffirent agencies and by various classes of men, actuated by different

motives, but all uniting in the one object, prosecution, persecution, and extermination of the Saints.

There were a number of wicked and corrupt men living in Nauvoo and its vicinity, who had belonged to the Church, but whose conduct was incompatible with the Gospel; they were accordingly dealt with by the Church and severed from its communion; some of these had been prominent members and held official stations, either in the city or Church. Among these was John C. Bennett, formerly Mayor; William Law, Councillor to Joseph Smith; Wilson Law, his natural brother and general in the Nauvoo legion; Dr. R. D. Foster, a man of some property but with a very bad reputation; Francis and Chauncey Higbee, the latter a young lawyer and both sons of a respectable and honoured man in the Church, known as Judge Elias Higbee, who died about twelve months before.

Besides these, there were a great many apostates, both in the city and country, of less notoriety, who, for their deliquencies, had been expelled from the Church. John C. Bennett and Francis and Chauncey Higbee were cut off from the Church; the former was also cashiered from his generalship for the most flagrant acts of seduction and adultery; and such was the scandalous nature of the developments in their cases, that the high council, before whom they were tried, had to sit with closed doors.

William Law, although councillor to Joseph, was found to be his most bitter foe and maligner, and to hold intercourse, contrary to all law, in his own house, with a young lady resident with him, and it was afterwards proved that he had conspired with some Missourians, to take Joseph Smith's life, and was only saved by Josiah Arnold, who, being on guard at his house, prevented the assassins from seeing him. Yet, although having murder in his heart, his manners were generally courteous and mild, and he was well calculated to deceive.

General Wilson Law was cut off from the Church for seduction, falsehood, and defamation; both the above were also courtmartialled by the Nauvoo legion and expelled. Foster was also cut off, I believe, for dishonesty, fraud, and falsehood. I know he was eminently guilty of the whole, but whether these were the specific charges or not, I don't know, but I do know that he was a notoriously wicked and corrupt man.

Besides the above characters and "Mormonic" apostates, there were other three parties. The first of these may be called religionists, the second politicians, and the third counterfeiters, blacklegs, horsethieves, and cutthroats.

The religious party were chagrined and maddened because "Mormonism" came in contact with their religion, and they could not oppose it from the Scriptures; and thus, like the ancient Jews, when enraged at the exhibition of their follies and hypocrisies by Jesus and his Apostles, so these were infuriated against the Mormons because of their discomfiture by them, and instead of owning the truth and rejoicing in it, they were ready to gnash upon them with their teeth, and to persecute the believers in principles which they could not disprove.

The political party were those who were of opposite politics to us. There were always two parties, the whigs and democrats, and we could not vote for one without offending the other, and it not unfrequently happened that candidates for office would place the issue of their election upon opposition to the "Mormons," in order to gain political influence from religious prejudice, in which case the "Mormons" were compelled, in self-defence,

to vote against them, which resulted almost invariably against our opponents. This made them angry, and although it was of their own making, and the "Mormons" could not be expected to do otherwise, yet they raged on account of their discomfiture, and sought to wreak their fury on the "Mormons." As an instance of the above, when Joseph Duncan was candidate for the office of Governor of Illinois, he pledged himself to his party, that, if he could be elected, he would exterminate or drive the "Mormons" from the State.* The consequence was that Governor Ford was elected. The whigs, seeing that they had been outgeneraled by the democrats in securing the "Mormon" vote, became seriously alarmed, and sought to repair their disaster by raising a kind of crusade against that people. The whig newspapers teemed with accounts of the wonders and enormities of Nauvoo, and of the awful wickedness of a party which could consent to receive the support of such miscreants. Governor Duncan, who was really a brave, honest man, and who had nothing to do with getting the "Mormon" charters passed through the legislature, took the stump on this subject in good earnest, and expected to be elected governor almost on this question alone. The third party, composed of counterfeiters, blacklegs, horsethieves, and cutthroats, were a pack of scoundrels that infested the whole of the western country at that time. In some districts their influence was so great as to control important state and county offices. On this subject Governor Ford says the following:—

"Then again the northern part of the State was not destitute of its organized bands of rogues, engaged in murders, robberies, horse-stealing, and in making and passing counterfeit money. These rogues were scattered all over the north, but the most of them were located in the counties of Ogle, Winnebago, Lee, and De Kalb.

"In the county of Ogle they were so numerous, strong, and well organized, that they could not be convicted for their crimes. By getting some of their numbers on the juries, by producing a host of witnesses to sustain their defence by perjured evidence, and by changing the venue of one county to another, by continuances from term to term, and by the inability of witnesses to attend from time to time at distant and foreign counties, they most generally managed to be acquitted."†

There was a combination of horsethieves extending from Galena to Alton. There were counterfeiters engaged in merchandising, trading, and store keeping in most of the cities and villages, and in some districts, I have been credibly informed by men to whom they have disclosed their secrets, that the judges, sheriffs, constables and jailers, as well as professional men, were more or less associated with them. These had in their employ the most reckless, abandoned wretches, who stood ready to carry into effect the most desperate enterprises, and were careless alike of human life and property. Their object in persecuting the "Mormons" was in part to cover their own rascality, and in part to prevent them from exposing and prosecuting them; but the principal reason was plunder, believing that if they could be removed or driven they would be made fat on Mormon spoils, besides having in the deserted city a good asylum for the prosecution of their diabolical pursuits.

* See his remarks as contained in his History of Illinois, p. 253.

† Ford's History of Illinois, p. 245.

This conglomeration of apostate Mormons, religious bigots, political fanatics, and combination of blacklegs, all united their forces against the "Mormons," and organised themselves into a party, denominated "Anti-Mormons." Some of them, we have reason to believe, joined the Church in order to cover their nefarious practices, and when they were expelled for their unrighteousness only raged with greater violence. They circulated every kind of falsehood that they could collect or manufacture against the Mormons. They also had a paper to assist them in their propagations called the "Warsaw Signal," edited by a Mr. Thomas Sharp, a violent and unprincipled man, who shrunk not from any enormity. The Anti-Mormons had public meetings which were very numerously attended, where they passed resolutions of the most violent and inflammatory kind, threatening to drive, expel and exterminate the "Mormons" from the State, at the same time accusing them of all the vocabulary of crime.

They appointed their meetings in various parts of Hancock, McDonough, and other counties, which soon resulted in the organisation of armed mobs, under the direction of officers, who reported to their head-quarters, and the reports of which were published in the anti-Mormon paper, and circulated through the adjoining counties. We also published in the "Times and Seasons" and the "Nauvoo Neighbour" (two papers published and edited by us at that time), an account, not only of their proceedings, but our own. But such was the hostile feeling, so well arranged their plans, and so desperate and lawless their measures, that it was with the greatest difficulty that we could get our papers circulated; they were destroyed by postmasters and others, and scarcely ever arrived at the place of their destination, so that a great many of the people, who would have been otherwise peaceable, were excited by their misrepresentations, and instigated to join their hostile or predatory bands.

Emboldened by the acts of those outside, the apostate "Mormons," associated with others, commenced the publication of a libellous paper in Nauvoo, called the "Nauvoo Expositor." This paper not only reprinted from the others, but put in circulation the most libellous, false, and infamous reports concerning the citizens of Nauvoo, and especially the ladies. It was, however, no sooner put in circulation, than the indignation of the whole community was aroused; so much so, that they threatened its annihilation; and I do not believe that in any other city in the United States, if the same charge had been made against the citizens, it would have been permitted to remain one day. As it was among us, under these circumstances, it was thought best to convene the City Council to take into consideration the adoption of some measures for its removal, as it was deemed better that this should be done legally than illegally. Joseph Smith, therefore, who was then Mayor, convened the City Council for that purpose; the paper was introduced and read, and the subject examined. All, or nearly all present, expressed their indignation at the course taken by the "Expositor," which was owned by some of the aforesaid apostates, associated with one or two others:—Wilson Law, Dr. Foster, Charles Ivins, and the Higbees before referred to, some lawyers, storekeepers, and others in Nauvoo who were not "Mormons," together with the "Anti-Mormons" outside of the city, sustained it. The calculation was, by false statements, to unsettle the minds of many in the city, and to form combinations there similar to the Anti-Mormon associations outside of the city. Various

attempts had therefore been made by the party to annoy and irritate the citizens of Nauvoo; false accusations had been made, vexatious lawsuits instituted, threats made, and various devices resorted to to influence the public mind; and, if possible, to induce us to the commission of some overt act that might make us amenable to the law. With a perfect knowledge, therefore, of the designs of these infernal scoundrels who were in our midst, as well of those who surrounded us, the City Council entered upon an investigation of the matter. They felt that they were in a critical position, and that any move made for the abating of that press, would be looked upon, or at least represented, as a direct attack upon the liberty of speech; and that so far from displeasing our enemies, it would be looked upon by them as one of the best circumstances that could transpire to assist them in their nefarious and bloody designs. Being a member of the City Council, I well remember the feeling of responsibility that seemed to rest upon all present; nor shall I soon forget the bold, manly, independent expressions of Joseph Smith on that occasion, in relation to this matter. He exhibited in glowing colours the meanness, corruption, and ultimate designs of the "Anti-Mormons;" their despicable characters and ungodly influences, especially of those who were in our midst; he told of the responsibility that rested upon us as guardians of the public interest, to stand up in the defence of the injured and oppressed, to stem the current of corruption, and as men and saints put a stop to this flagrant outrage upon this people's rights. He stated there is no man a stronger advocate for the liberty of the speech and of the press than himself; yet, when this noble gift is utterly prostituted and abused, as in the present instance, it loses all claim to our respect, and becomes as great an agent for evil as it can possibly be for good, and notwithstanding the apparent advantage we should give our enemies by this act, yet it behoved us, as men, to act independent of all secondary influences, to perform the part of men of enlarged minds, and boldly and fearlessly discharge the duties devolving upon us by declaring as a nuisance, and removing this filthy, libellous, and seditious sheet from our midst.

The subject was discussed in various forms, and after the remarks made by the Mayor, every one seemed to be waiting for some one else to speak. After a considerable pause, I arose and expressed my feelings frankly, as Joseph had done, and numbers of others followed in the same strain; and I think, but am not certain, that I made a motion for the removal of that press as a nuisance. This motion was finally put, and carried by all but one; and he conceded that the measure was just, but abstained through fear.

Several of the members of the City Council were not in the Church. The following is the bill referred to:—

*Bill for Removing of the Press of the "Nauvoo Expositor."**

Resolved by the City Council of the city of Nauvoo, that the printing office, from whence issues the "Nauvoo Expositor," is a public nuisance; and also all of said "Nauvoo Expositors" which may be or exist in said establishment, and the Mayor is instructed to cause said establishment and papers to be removed without delay, in such manner as he shall direct.

Passed June 10th, 1844.

W. Richards, Recorder. Geo. W. Harris, President, *pro tem.*

* Dtt. News, No. 19, Sept. 25, 1857, p. 226.

After the passage of the bill, the Marshal, John P. Greim, was ordered to abate or remove, which he forthwith proceeded to do by summoning a posse of men for that purpose. The press was removed or broken, I don't remember which, by the Marshal, and the types scattered in the street.

This seemed to be one of those extreme cases that require extreme measures, as the press was still proceeding in its inflammatory course. It was feared that, as it was almost universally execrated, should it continue longer, an indignant people might commit some overt act which might lead to serious consequences, and that it was better to use legal than illegal means.

This, as was foreseen, was the very course our enemies wished us to pursue, as it afforded them an opportunity of circulating a very plausible story about the "Mormons" being opposed to the liberty of the press and of free speech, which they were not slow to avail themselves of. Stories were fabricated, and facts perverted; false statements were made, and this act brought in as an example to sustain the whole of their falsehoods; and, as if inspired by Satan, they laboured with an energy and zeal worthy of a better cause. They had runners to circulate their reports, not only through Hancock Co., but in all the surrounding counties; these reports were communicated to their "Anti-Mormon" societies, and these societies circulated them in their several districts. The "Anti-Mormon" paper, the "Warsaw Signal," was filled with inflammatory articles and misrepresentations in relation to us, and especially to this act of destroying the press. We were represented as a horde of lawless ruffians and brigands, anti-American and anti-republican, steeped in crime and iniquity, opposed to freedom of speech and of the press, and all the rights and immunities of a free and enlightened people; that neither persons nor property were secure, that we had designs upon the citizens of Illinois and of the United States, and the people were called upon to rise *en masse*, and put us down, drive us away, or exterminate us as a pest to society, and alike dangerous to our neighbours, the State, and Commonwealth.

These statements were extensively copied and circulated throughout the United States. A true statement of the facts in question was published by us both in the "Times and Seasons" and the "Nauvoo Neighbour," but it was found impossible to circulate them in the immediate counties, as they were destroyed at the post-offices or otherwise by the agents of the anti-Mormons, and in order to get the mail to go abroad, I had to send the papers a distance of thirty or forty miles from Nauvoo, and sometimes to St. Louis (upwards of two hundred miles), to insure its proceeding on its route, and then one-half or two-thirds of the papers never reached the place of destination, being intercepted or destroyed by our enemies.

These false reports stirred up the community around, of whom many, on account of religious prejudice, were easily instigated to join the "anti-Mormons," and embark in any crusade that might be undertaken against the "Mormons;" hence their ranks swelled in numbers, and new organizations were formed, meetings were held, resolutions passed, and men and means volunteered for the extirpation of the "Mormons."

These also were the active men in blowing up the fury of the people, in hopes that a popular movement might be set on foot, which would result in the expulsion or extermination of the "Mormon" voters. For this purpose public meetings had been called, inflammatory speeches had been made,

exaggerated reports had been extensively circulated, committees had been appointed, who rode night and day to spread the reports and solicit the aid of neighbouring counties, and at a public meeting at Warsaw resolutions were passed to expel or exterminate the "Mormon" population. This was not, however, a movement which was unanimously concurred in. The county contained a goodly number of inhabitants in favour of peace, or who at least desired to be neutral in such a contest. These were stigmatized by the name of "Jack Mormons," and there were not a few of the more furious exciters of the people who openly expressed their intention to involve them in the common expulsion or extermination.

A system of excitement and agitation was artfully planned and executed with tact. It consisted in spreading reports and rumours of the most fearful character. As examples:—On the morning before my arrival at Carthage, I was awakened at an early hour by the frightful report, which was asserted with confidence and apparent consternation, that the "Mormons" had already commenced the work of burning, destruction, and murder, and that every man capable of bearing arms was instantly wanted at Carthage for the protection of the county.

We lost no time in starting, but when we arrived at Carthage we could hear no more concerning this story. Again, during the few days that the militia were encamped at Carthage, frequent applications were made to me to send a force here, and a force there, and a force all about the country, to prevent murders, robberies, and larcenies which, it was said, were threatened by the "Mormons." No such forces were sent, nor were any such offences committed at that time, except the stealing of some provisions, and there was never the least proof that this was done by a "Mormon." Again, on my late visit to Hancock County, I was informed by some of their violent enemies that the larcenies of the "Mormons" had become unusually numerous and insufferable. They admitted that but little had been done in this way in their immediate vicinity, but they insisted that sixteen horses had been stolen by the "Mormons" in one night near Lima, and upon inquiry was told that no horses had been stolen in that neighbourhood, but that sixteen horses had been stolen in one night in Hancock County. This last informant being told of the Hancock story, again changed the venue to another distant settlement in the northern edge of Adams.*

In the meantime legal proceedings were instituted against the members of the City Council of Nauvoo. A writ, here subjoined, was issued upon the affidavit of the Laws, Foster, Higbee, and Ivins, by Mr. Morrison, a justice of the peace in Carthage, the county seat of Hancock, and put into the hands of one David Butterworth, a constable of the same place.

Writ issued upon affidavit by Thomas Morrison, J.P., State of Illinois, Hancock County, &c.

The people of the State of Illinois to all constables, sheriffs, and coroners of said State, greeting!

Whereas complaint hath been made before me, one of the justices of the peace in and for the County of Hancock, aforesaid, upon the oath of Francis M. Higbee, of said county, that Joseph Smith, Samuel Bennett, John

* Ford's History of Illinois, pp. 329, 331.

Taylor, William W. Phelps, Hyrum Smith, John P. Green, Stephen Perry, Dimick B. Huntington, Jonathan Dunham, Stephen Markham, William Edwards, Jonathan Holmes, Jesse P. Harmon, John Lytle, Joseph W. Coolidge, Harvey D. Redfield, Porter Rockwell, and Levi Richards, of said county, did on the 10th day of June instant commit a riot, at and within the county aforesaid, wherein they with force and violence broke into the printing office of the "Nauvoo Expositor," and unlawfully and with force burned and destroyed the printing press, type, and fixtures of the same, being the property of William Law, Wilson Law, Charles Ivins, Francis M. Higbee, Chauncey L. Higbee, Robert D. Foster, and Charles A. Foster.

These are therefore to command you forthwith to apprehend the said Joseph Smith, Samuel Bennett, John Taylor, William W. Phelps, Hyrum Smith, John P. Green, Stephen Perry, Dimick B. Huntington, Jonathan Dunham, Stephen Markham, William Edwards, Jonathan Holmes, Jesse P. Harmon, John Lytle, Joseph W. Coolidge, Harvey D. Redfield, Porter Rockwell, and Levi Richards, and bring them before me, or some other justice of the peace, to answer the premises, and further to be dealt with according to law.

Given under my hand and seal at Carthage, in the county aforesaid, this eleventh day of June A.D. 1844.

THOMAS MORRISON, J. P. (Seal.)*

The council refused not to attend to the legal proceedings in the case, but as the law of Illinois made it the privilege of the persons accused to go "or appear before the issuer of the writ, or any other justice of peace," they requested to be taken before another magistrate, either in the City of Nauvoo or at any reasonable distance out of it.

This, the constable, who was a mobocrat, refused to do, and as this was our legal privilege, we refused to be dragged, contrary to law, a distance of eighteen miles, when at the same time we had reason to believe that an organized band of mobocrats were assembled for the purpose of extermination or murder, and among whom it would not be safe to go without a superior force of armed men. A writ of Habeas Corpus was called for, and issued by the municipal court of Nauvoo, taking us out of the hands of Bettesworth, and placing us in the charge of the city marshal. We went before the municipal court, and were dismissed. Our refusal to obey this illegal proceeding was by them construed into a refusal to submit to law, and circulated as such, and the people either did believe, or professed to believe, that we were in open rebellion against the laws and the authorities of the State. Hence mobs began to assemble, among which all through the country inflammatory speeches were made, exciting them to mobocracy and violence. Some they scattered their proclamations of our outside settlements, kidnapping some, and whipping and otherwise abusing others.

The persons thus abused fled to Nauvoo as soon as practicable, and related their injuries to Joseph Smith, then mayor of the city, and lieutenant-general of the Nauvoo Legion; they also went before magistrates, and made affidavits of what they had suffered, seen, and heard. These affidavits, in connection with a copy of all our proceedings, were forwarded by Joseph Smith to Mr. Ford, then Governor of Illinois, with an expression of our

* Dem. News, No. 20, Sept. 20 1857, p. 369.

desire to abide law, and a request that the governor would instruct him how to proceed in the case of the arrival of an armed mob against the city. The governor sent back instructions to Joseph Smith, that as he was lieutenant-general of the Nauvoo Legion, it was his duty to protect the city and surrounding country, and issued orders to that effect. Upon the reception of these orders Joseph Smith assembled the people of the city, and laid before them the governor's instructions; he also convened the officers of the Nauvoo Legion for the purpose of conferring in relation to the best mode of defence. He also issued orders to the men to hold themselves in readiness, in case of being called upon. On the following day General Joseph Smith, with his staff, the leading officers of the legion, and some prominent strangers, who were in our midst, made a survey of the outside boundaries of the city, which was very extensive, being about five miles up and down the river, and about two and a half back in the centre, for the purpose of ascertaining the position of the ground, and the feasibility of defence, and to make all necessary arrangements in case of an attack.

It may be well here to remark that numbers of gentlemen, who were to us strangers, either came on purpose or were passing through Nauvoo, who, upon learning the position of things, expressed their indignation against our enemies, and avowed their readiness to assist us by their council or otherwise; it was some of these who assisted us in reconnoitering the city, and finding out its adaptability for defence, and the best mode of protection against an armed force. The legion was called together and drilled, and every means made use of for defence; at the call of the officers both old and young men came forward, both denizens from the city and from the outside regions, and I believe at one time they mustered to the number of about five thousand.

In the meantime our enemies were not idle in mustering their forces and committing depredations, nor had they been; it was, in fact, their gathering that called ours into existence; their forces continued to accumulate, they assumed a threatening attitude, and assembled in large bodies, armed and equipped for war, and threatened the destruction and extermination of the "Mormons." An account of their outrages and assemblages was forwarded to Governor Ford almost daily, accompanied by affidavits furnished by eye-witnesses of their proceedings. Persons were also sent out to the counties around, with pacific intentions, to give them an account of the true state of affairs, and to notify them of the feelings and dispositions of the people of Nauvoo, and thus, if possible, quell the excitement. In some of the more distant counties these men were very successful, and produced a salutary influence upon the minds of many intelligent and well disposed men. In neighbouring counties, however, where "anti-Mormon" influence prevailed, they produced little effect. At the same time guards were stationed around Nauvoo, and picket-guards in the distance. At length opposing forces gathered so near, that more active measures were taken; reconnoitering parties were sent out, and the city proclaimed under martial law. Things now assumed a belligerent attitude, and persons passing through the city were questioned as to what they knew of the enemy; whilst passes were in some instances given to avoid difficulty with the guards. Joseph Smith continued to send on messengers to the governor (Philip B. Lewis and other messengers were sent). Samuel James, then residing at La Harpe, carried a message and despatches to him, and in a day or two after

Bishop Edward Hunter and others went again with fresh despatches, representations, affidavits, and instructions; but as the weather was excessively wet, the rivers swollen, and the bridges washed away in many places, it was with great difficulty that they proceeded on their journeys. As the mobocracy had at last attracted the governor's attention, he started in company with some others from Springfield to the scene of trouble, and missed, I believe, both Brothers James and Hunter on the road, and of course did not see their documents. He came to Carthage, and made that place, which was a regular mobocratic den, his head-quarters; as it was the county-seat, however, of Hancock County, that circumstance might, in a measure, justify his staying there.

To avoid the appearance of all hostility on our part, and to fulfil the law in every particular, at the suggestion of Judge Thomas, Judge of that judicial district, who had come to Nauvoo at the time, and who stated that we had fulfilled the law; but in order to satisfy all, he would counsel us to go before Esquire Wells *, who was not in our Church, and have a hearing. We did so, and after a full hearing we were again dismissed.

The governor on the road collected forces, some of whom were respectable; but on his arrival in the neighbourhood of the difficulties, he received as militia all the companies of the mob forces who united with him. After his arrival at Carthage, he sent two gentlemen from there to Nauvoo, as a committee to wait upon General Joseph Smith, informing him of the arrival of his excellency, with a request that General Smith would send out a committee to wait upon the governor and represent to him the state of affairs in relation to the difficulties that then existed in the county. We met this committee while we were reconnoitering the city, to find out the best mode of defence as aforesaid. Dr. J. M. Bernhisel and myself were appointed as a committee by General Smith to wait upon the governor. Previous to going, however, we were furnished with affidavits and documents in relation both to our proceedings and those of the mob; in addition to the general history of the transaction, we took with us a duplicate of those documents which had been forwarded by Bishop Hunter, Brother James and others. We started from Carthage in company with the aforesaid gentlemen at about 7 o'clock on the evening of the 21st of June, and arrived at Carthage at about 11 P.M. We put up at the same hotel with the governor, kept by a Mr. Hamilton; on our arrival we found the governor in bed, but not so with the other inhabitants. The town was filled with a perfect set of rabble and rowdies, who, under the influence of Bacchus, seemed to be holding a grand saturnalia, whooping, yelling, and vociferating, as if Bedlam had broken loose.

On our arrival at the hotel, and while supper was preparing, a man came to me, dressed as a soldier, and told me that a man named David Carn had just been taken prisoner, and was about to be committed to jail, and wanted me to go bail for him: believing this to be a ruse to get me out alone, and that some violence was intended, after consulting with Dr. Bernhisel, I told the man that I was well acquainted with Mr. Carn, that I knew him to be a gentleman, and did not believe that he had transgressed law, and, moreover, that I considered it a very singular time to be holding courts and calling for security, particularly as the town was full of rowdyism.

* Now a member of the First Presidency.—Ed.

I informed him that both Dr. Bernhisel and myself would, if necessary, go bail for him in the morning, but that we did not feel ourselves safe among such a set at that late hour of the night.

After supper, on retiring to our room, we had to pass through another, which was separated from ours only by a board partition, the beds in each room being placed side by side with the exception of this fragile partition. On the bed that was in the room which we passed through, I discovered a man by the name of Jackson, a desperate character, and a reputed, notorious cutthroat and murderer. I hinted to the Doctor that things looked rather suspicious, and looked to see that my arms were in order. The Doctor and I both occupied one bed. We had scarcely laid down when a knock at the door, accompanied by a voice, announced the approach of Chauncey Higbee, the young lawyer and apostate before referred to.

He addressed himself to the Doctor, and stated that the object of his visit was to obtain the release of Daniel Carn; that Carn he believed to be an honest man, that if he had done anything wrong, it was through improper counsel, and that it was a pity that he should be incarcerated, particularly when he could so easily released; he urged the Doctor, as a friend, not to leave so good a man in such an unpleasant a situation; he finally prevailed upon the Doctor to go and give bail, assuring him that on his giving bail Carn would be immediately dismissed.

During this conversation I did not say a word. Higbee left the Doctor to dress, with the intention of returning and taking him to the Court. As soon as Higbee had left, I told the Doctor that he had better not go; that I believed this affair was all a ruse to get us separated; that they knew we had documents with us from General Smith to show to the governor; that I believed their object was to get in possession of those papers, and, perhaps, when they had separated us, to murder one or both. The Doctor, who was actuated by the best of motives in yielding to the assumed solicitude of Higbee, coincided with my views; he then went to Higbee, and told him that he had concluded not to go that night, but that he and I would both wait upon the justice and Mr. Carn in the morning.

That night I lay awake with my pistols under my pillow, waiting for any emergency. Nothing more occurred during the night. In the morning we arose early, and after breakfast sought an interview with the governor, and were told that we could have an audience, I think at 10 o'clock. In the meantime we called upon Mr. Smith, a Justice of the Peace, who had Mr. Carn in charge. We represented that we had been called upon the night before by two different parties to go bail for a Mr. Daniel Carn, whom we were informed he had in custody, and that, believing Mr. Carn to be an honest man, we had come now for that purpose, and were prepared to enter into recognizances for his appearance, whereupon Mr. Smith, the magistrate, remarked, "that under the present excited state of affairs, he did not think he would be justified in receiving bail from Nauvoo, as it was a matter of doubt whether property would not be rendered valueless there in a few days.

Knowing the party we had to deal with, we were not much surprised at this singular proceeding; we then remarked that both of us possessed property in farms out of Nauvoo in the country, and referred him to the county records. He then stated that such was the nature of the charge against Mr. Carn, that he believed he would not be justified in receiving any bail

We were thus confirmed in our opinion that the night's proceedings before, in relation to their desire to have us give bail, was a mere ruse to separate us. We were not permitted to speak with Carn, the real charge against whom was that he was travelling in Carthage or its neighbourhood: what the fictitious one was, if I then knew, I have since forgotten, as things of this kind were of daily occurrence.

After waiting the governor's pleasure for some time we had an audience; but such an audience! He was surrounded by some of the vilest and most unprincipled men in creation; some of them had an appearance of respectability, and many of them lacked even that. Wilson, and I believe William Law were there, Foster, Frank and Chauncey Higbee, Mr. Mar, a lawyer from Nauvoo, a mobocratic merchant from Warsaw, the aforesaid Jackson, a number of his associates, amongst whom was the governor's secretary, in all some fifteen or twenty persons, most of whom were reverent to virtue, honour, integrity, and everything that is considered honourable among men. I can well remember the feelings of disgust that I had in seeing the governor surrounded by such an infamous group, and on being introduced to men of so questionable a character; and had I been on private business, I should have turned to depart, and told the governor that if he thought proper to associate with such questionable characters, I should beg leave to be excused; but coming as we did on public business, we could not, of course, consult our private feelings.

We then stated to the governor that, in accordance with his request, General Smith had, in response to his call, sent us to him as a committee of conference; that we were acquainted with most of the circumstances that had transpired in and about Nauvoo lately, and were prepared to give him all information, that moreover we had in our possession testimony and affidavits, confirmatory of what we should say, which had been forwarded to him by General Joseph Smith; that communications had been forwarded to his Excellency by Mr. Hunter, James, and others, some of which had not reached their destination, but of which we had duplicates with us. We then in brief related an outline of the difficulties, and the course we had pursued from the commencement of the troubles up to the present, and handing him the documents, respectfully submitted the whole. During our conversation and explanations with the governor, we were frequently rudely and impudently contradicted by the fellows he had around him, and of whom he seemed to take no notice.

He opened and read a number of the documents himself, and as he proceeded, he was frequently interrupted by "that's a lie, that's a God damned lie," "that's an infernal falsehood," "that's a blasted lie," &c.

These men evidently winced at an exposure of their acts, and thus vulgarly, impudently, and falsely repudiated them. One of their number, Mr. Mar, addressed himself several times to me, while in conversation with the governor. I did not notice him until after a frequent repetition of his insolence, when I informed him "that my business at that time was with Governor Ford," whereupon I continued my conversation with his excellency. During the conversation the governor expressed a desire that Joseph Smith, and all parties concerned in passing or executing the city law, in relation to the press, had better come to Carthage; that however repugnant it might be to our feelings, he thought it would have a tendency to allay public excitement, and prove to the people what we professed, that we wished to

be governed by law. We represented to him the course he had taken in relation to this matter, and willingness to go before another magistrate, other than the municipal court; the illegal refusal of our request by the constable; our dismissal by the municipal court, a legally constituted tribunal, our subsequent trial before Squire Wells at the instance of Judge Thomas (the Circuit Judge), and our dismissal by him. That we had fulfilled the law in every particular, that it was our enemies who were breaking the law and having murderous designs, were only making use of this as a pretext to get us into their power. The governor stated that the people viewed it differently, and that notwithstanding our opinions, he would recommend that the people should be satisfied. We then remarked to him, that should Joseph Smith comply with his request, it would be extremely unsafe in the present excited state of the country, to come without an armed force; that we had a sufficiency of men, and were competent to defend ourselves; but that there might be danger of collision should our forces and that of our enemies be brought in such close proximity. He strenuously advised us not to bring any arms, and *pledged his faith as governor, and the faith of the State, that we should be protected, and that he would guarantee our perfect safety.*

We had at that time about five thousand under arms, one thousand of which would have been amply sufficient for our protection.

At the termination of our interview, and previous to our withdrawal, after a long conversation and the perusal of the documents which we had brought, the governor informed us that he would prepare a written communication for General Joseph Smith, which he desired us to wait for. We were kept waiting for this instrument some five or six hours.

About 5 o'clock in the afternoon we took our departure with not the most pleasant feelings. The associations of the governor, the spirit that he manifested to compromise with these scoundrels, the length of time that he had kept us waiting, and his general deportment, together with the infernal spirit that we saw exhibited by those whom he admitted to his councils, made the prospect anything but promising.

We returned on horseback, and arrived at Nauvoo I think at about 8 or 9 o'clock at night, accompanied by Captain Yates in command of a company of mounted men, who came for the purpose of escorting Joseph Smith and the accused in case of their complying with the governor's request, and going to Carthage. We went directly to Brother Joseph's, when Captain Yates delivered to him the governor's communication. A council was called consisting of Joseph's brother Hyrum, Dr. Richards, Dr. Bernhisel, myself, and one or two others, when the following letter was read from the governor:—

Governor Ford's Letter to the Mayor and Common Council of Nauvoo.

Head Quarters, Carthage,
June 21st, 1844.

To the Hon. the Mayor and Common Council of the City of Nauvoo.

Gentlemen,—Having heard of the excitement in this part of the country, and judging that my presence here might be necessary to preserve

the peace and enforce the laws, I arrived at this place this morning. Both before and since my arrival, complaints of a grave character have been made to me of certain proceedings of your honourable body. As chief magistrate it is my duty to see that impartial justice shall be done, uninfluenced by the excitement here or in your city.

I think, before any decisive measure shall be adopted, that I ought to hear the allegations and defences of all parties. By adopting this course I have some hope that the evils of war may be averted; and at any rate I will be enabled by it to understand the true merits of the present difficulties, and shape my course with reference to law and justice.

For these reasons I have to request that you will send out to me, at this place, one or more well-informed and discreet persons, who will be capable of laying before me your version of the matter, and of receiving from me such explanations and resolutions as may be determined on.

Colonel Elam S. Freeman will present you this note in the character of a herald from the governor. You will respect his character as such, and permit him to pass and repass free from molestation.

Your messengers are assured of protection in person and property, and will be returned to you in safety.

I am, Gentlemen, with high considerations, most respectfully, your obedient servant,

THOMAS FORD,
Governor and Commander-in-Chief."*

We then gave a detail of our interview with the governor. Brother Joseph was very much dissatisfied with the governor's letter, and with his general deportment, and so were the council, and it became a serious question as to the course we should pursue. Various projects were discussed, but nothing definitely decided upon for some time. In the interim two gentlemen arrived; one of them, if not both, sons of John C. Calhoun. They had come to Nauvoo, and were very anxious for an interview with Brother Joseph. These gentlemen detained him for some time, and as our council was held in Dr. Bernhisel's room in the Mansion-house, the Doctor lay down, and as it was now between 2 and 3 o'clock in the morning, and I had had no rest on the previous night I was fatigued, and thinking that Brother Joseph might not return, I left for home and rest.

Being very much fatigued I slept soundly, and was somewhat surprised in the morning by Mrs. Thompson entering my room about 7 o'clock, and exclaiming in surprise: "What, you here? the brethren have crossed the river some time since." "What brethren?" I asked. "Brother Joseph, and Hyrum, and Brother Richards." I immediately arose upon learning that they had crossed the river, and did not intend to go to Carthage. I called together a number of persons in whom I had confidence, and had the type, stereotype plates, and most of the valuable things removed from the printing-office, believing that should the governor and his force come to Nauvoo, the first thing they would do would be to burn the printing-office, for I knew that they would be exasperated if Brother Joseph went away. We had talked over these matters the night before, but nothing was

* Doc. Hist., No. 33, Oct. 31, 1857, p. 257.

decided upon. It was Brother Joseph's opinion that should we leave for a time, public excitement, which was then so intense, would be allayed; that it would throw on the governor the responsibility of keeping the peace; that in the event of any outrage the onus would rest upon the governor, who was amply prepared with troops, and could command all the forces of the State to preserve order; and that the acts of his own men would be an overwhelming proof of their seditious designs, not only to the governor but to the world. He moreover thought that, in the east, where he intended to go, public opinion would be set right in relation to these matters, and its expression would partially influence the west, and that after the first ebullition things would assume a shape that would justify his return. I made arrangements for crossing the river, and Brother Elias Smith and Joseph Cain, who were both employed in the printing-office with me, assisted all that lay in their power, together with Brother Brower and several hands in the printing-office. As we could not find out the exact whereabouts of Joseph and the brethren, I crossed the river in a boat furnished by Brethren Cyrus H. Wheelock and Alfred Bell; and after the removal of the things of the printing-office, Joseph Cain brought the account books to me, that we might make arrangements for their adjustment; and Brother Elias Smith, cousin to Brother Joseph, went to obtain money for the journey, and also to find out and report me the location of the brethren. As Cyrus H. Wheelock was an active, enterprising man, and in the event of not finding Brother Joseph I calculated to go to Upper Canada for the time being, and should need a companion, I said to Brother Wheelock: "Can you go with me ten or fifteen hundred miles?" He answered, "Yes." "Can you start in half an hour?" "Yes." However I told him that he had better see his family, who lived over the river, and prepare a couple of horses and the necessary equipage for the journey; and that, if we did not find Brother Joseph before, we would start at nightfall. A laughable incident occurred on the eve of my departure. After making all the preparations I could previous to leaving Nauvoo, and having bid adieu to my family, I went to a house adjoining the river owned by Brother Eddy. There I disguised myself so as not to be known, and so effectually was the transformation, that those who had come after me with a boat did not know me. I went down to the boat, and sat in it. Brother Bell, thinking it was a stranger, watched my moves for some time very impatiently, and then said to Brother Wheelock, "I wish that old gentleman would go away; he has been pottering around the boat for some time, and I am afraid Elder Taylor will be coming." When he discovered his mistake, he was not a little amused. I was conducted by Brother Bell to a house that was surrounded by timber on the opposite side of the river. There I spent several hours in a chamber with Brother Joseph Cain, adjusting my accounts; and I made arrangements for the stereotype plates of the "Book of Mormon," and "Doctrine and Covenants," to be forwarded east, thinking to supply the company with subsistence money through the sale of these books in the east.

My horses were reported ready by Brother Wheelock, and funds on hand by Brother Elias Smith. In about half an hour I should have started, when Brother Elias Smith came to me with word that he had found the brethren, that they had concluded to go to Carthage, and wished me to return to Nauvoo and accompany them. I must confess that I felt a good deal disappointed at this news, but I immediately made preparations to go.

Escorted by Brother Elias Smith, I and my party went to the neighbourhood of Montrose, where we met Brother Joseph, Hyrum, Brother Richards, and others. Dr. Bernhisel thinks that W. W. Phelps was not with Joseph and Hyrum in the morning, but that he met him, myself, Joseph, and Hyrum, W. Richards, and Brother Calhoun, in the afternoon, near Montrose, returning to Nauvoo. On meeting the brethren I learnt that it was not Brother Joseph's desire to return, but that he came back by request of some of the brethren, and that it coincided more with Brother Hyrum's feelings than with those of Brother Joseph. In fact, after his return, Brother Hyrum expressed himself as perfectly satisfied with the course taken, and said that he felt much more at ease in his mind than he did before. On our return the calculation was to throw ourselves under the immediate protection of the governor, and to trust to his word and faith for our preservation.

A message was, I believe, sent to the governor that night, stating that we should come to Carthage in the morning; the party that came along with us to escort us back, in case we returned to Carthage, having returned. It would seem from the following remarks of General Ford that there was a design on foot, which was, that if we refused to go to Carthage at the governor's request, that there should be an increased force called for by the governor, and that we should be destroyed by them. In accordance with this project, Captain Yates returned with his posse, accompanied by the constable who held the writ. The following is the governor's remark in relation to this affair:—"The constable and his escort returned. The constable made no effort to arrest any of them, nor would he or the guard delay their departure one minute beyond the time, to see whether an arrest could be made. Upon their return they reported that they had been informed that the accused had fled, and could not be found. I immediately proposed to a council of officers to march into Nauvoo with the small force then under my command, but the officers were of opinion that it was too small, and many of them insisted upon a further call of the militia. Upon reflection I was of opinion that the officers were right in the estimate of our force, and the project for immediate action was abandoned. I was soon informed, however, of the conduct of constable and guard, and then I was perfectly satisfied that a most base fraud had been attempted; that, in fact, it was feared that the 'Mormons' would submit, and thereby entitle themselves to the protection of the law. It was very apparent that many of the bustling, active spirits were afraid that there would be no occasion for calling out an overwhelming militia force, for marching it into Nauvoo, for probable mutiny when there, and for the extermination of the 'Mormon' race. It appeared that the constable and the escort were fully in the secret, and acted well their part to promote the conspiracy."*

In the morning Brother Joseph had an interview with the officers of the legion, with the leading members of the City Council, and with the principal men of the city. The officers were instructed to dismiss their men, but to have them in a state of readiness to be called upon in any emergency that might occur.

About half-past 6 o'clock the members of the City Council, the marshal, Brothers Joseph and Hyrum, and a number of others started for Carthage,

* Ford's History of Illinois, page 333.

all on horseback. We were instructed by Brother Joseph Smith not to take any arms, and we consequently left them behind. We called at the house of Brother Fellows on our way out. Brother Fellows lived about four miles from Carthage. While at Brother Fellows' house, Captain Dunn, accompanied by Mr. Coolie, one of the governor's aide-de-camps, came up from Carthage *en route* for Nauvoo, with a requisition from the governor for the State arms. We all returned to Nauvoo with them; the governor's request was complied with, and, after taking some refreshments, we all returned to proceed to Carthage. We arrived there late in the night. A great deal of excitement prevailed on and after our arrival. The governor had received into his company all of the companies that had been in the mob; these fellows were riotous and disorderly, hallooing, yelling, and whooping about the streets like Indians, many of them intoxicated; the whole presented a scene of rowdyism and low-bred ruffianism only found among mobocrats and desperadoes, and entirely revolting to the best feelings of humanity. The governor made a speech to them to the effect that he would show Joseph and Hyrum Smith to them in the morning. About here the companies with the governor were drawn up into line, and General Demming, I think, took Joseph by the arm and Hyrum (Arnold says that Joseph took the governor's arm), and as he passed through between the ranks, the governor leading in front, very politely introduced them as General Joseph Smith and General Hyrum Smith.* All were orderly and courteous except one company of mobocrats—the Carthage Greys—who seemed to find fault on account of too much honour being paid to the Mormons. There was afterwards a row between the companies, and they came pretty near having a fight; the more orderly not feeling disposed to endorse or submit to the rowdyism of the mobocrats.

* The "Deseret News" gives the following account of Joseph and Hyrum Smith's passing through the troops in Carthage:—

"Carthage, June 26th, 1844.

"Quarter-past 9. The governor came and invited Joseph to walk with him through the troops. Joseph solicited a few moments' private conversation with him, which the governor refused.

"While refusing, the governor looked down at his shoes, as though he was ashamed. They then walked through the crowd, with Brigadier-General Miner, R. Demming, and Dr. Richards, to General Demming's quarters. The people appeared quiet until a company of Carthage Greys flocked round the doors of General Demming in an uproarious manner, of which notice was sent to the governor. In the meantime the governor had ordered the M'Donough troops to be drawn up in line, for Joseph and Hyrum to pass in front of them, they having requested that they might have a clear view of the General Smiths. *Joseph had a conversation with the governor for about ten minutes, when he again pledged the faith of the State that he and his friends should be protected from violence.*

"Robinson, the postmaster, said on report of martial law being proclaimed in Nauvoo, he had stopped the mail, and notified the postmaster-general of the state of things in Hancock County.

"From the general's quarters Joseph and Hyrum went in front of the lines, in a hollow square of a company of Carthage Greys; at seven minutes before 10 they arrived in front of the lines, and passed before the whole; Joseph being on the right of General Demming and Hyrum on his left, Elders Richards, Taylor, and Phelps following. Joseph and Hyrum were introduced by Governor Ford about twenty times along the line as General Joseph Smith and General Hyrum Smith, the governor walking in front on the left. The Carthage Greys refused to receive them by that introduction, and some of the officers threw up their hats, drew their swords, and said they would introduce themselves to the damned Mormons in a different style. The governor loudly entreated them not to act so rudely, but their excitement increased; the governor, however, succeeded in pacifying them by making a speech, and promising them that they should have 'full satisfaction.' General Smith and party returned to their lodgings at five minutes past 10."—*Dec. News*, No. 39, Nov. 4, 1857, page 274.

The result was that General Demming, who was very much of a gentleman, ordered the Carthage Greys, a company under the command of Captain Smith, a magistrate in Carthage, and a most violent mobocrat, under arrest. This matter, however, was shortly afterwards adjusted, and the difficulty settled between them. The mayor, aldermen, councillors, as well as the marshal of the city of Nauvoo, together with some persons who had assisted the marshal in removing the press in Nauvoo, appeared before Justice Smith, the aforesaid captain and mobocrat, to again answer the charge of destroying the press; but as there was so much excitement, and as the man was an unprincipled villain before whom we were to have our hearing, we thought it most prudent to give bail, and consequently became security for each other in $500 bonds each, to appear before the County Court at its next session. We had engaged as counsel a lawyer by the name of Wood, of Burlington, Iowa; and Reed, I think, of Madison, Iowa. After some little discussion the bonds were signed, and we were all dismissed.

Almost immediately after our dismissal, two men—Augustine Spencer and Norton—two worthless fellows, whose words would not have been taken for five cents, and the first of whom had a short time previously been before the mayor in Nauvoo for maltreating a lame brother, made affidavits that Joseph and Hyrum Smith were guilty of treason; and a writ was accordingly issued for their arrest, and the constable Butterworth, a rough, unprincipled man, wished immediately to hurry them away to prison without any hearing. His rude, uncouth manner in the administration of what he considered the duties of his office made him exceedingly repulsive to us all. But, independent of these acts, the proceedings in this case were altogether illegal. Providing the Court was sincere, which it was not, and providing these men's oaths were true, and that Joseph and Hyrum were guilty of treason, still the whole course was illegal.

The magistrate made out a mittimus, and committed them to prison without a hearing, which he had no right legally to do. The statute of Illinois expressly provides that "all men shall have a hearing before a magistrate before they shall be committed to prison;" and Mr. Robert H. Smith, the magistrate, had made out a mittimus committing them to prison contrary to law without such hearing. As I was informed of this illegal proceeding, I went immediately to the governor and informed him of it. Whether he was apprised of it before or not, I do not know; but my opinion is that he was.

I represented to him the characters of the parties who had made oath, the outrageous nature of the charge, the indignity offered to men in the position which they occupied, and declared to him that he knew very well it was a vexatious proceeding, and that the accused were not guilty of any such crime. The governor replied, "He was very sorry that the thing had occurred; that he did not believe the charges, but that he thought the best thing to be done was to let the law take its course." I then reminded him that we had come out there at his instance, not to satisfy the law, which we had done before, but the prejudices of the people, in relation to the affair of the press; that at his instance we had given bonds, which we could not by law be required to do to satisfy the people, and that it was asking too much to require gentlemen in their position in life to suffer the degradation of being immured in a gaol, at the instance of such worthless scoundrels as those who had made this affidavit.

The governor replied, "That it was an unpleasant affair, and looked hard; but that it was a matter over which he had no control, as it belonged to the judiciary; that he, as the executive, could not interfere with their proceedings, and that he had no doubt but that they would immediately be dismissed." I told him, "that we had looked to him for protection from such insults, and that I thought we had a right to do so from the solemn promises which he had made to me and to Dr. Bernhisel in relation to our coming without guard or arms; that we had relied upon his faith, and had a right to expect him to fulfil his engagements after we had placed ourselves implicitly under his care, and complied with all his requests, although extra-judicial."

He replied, "that he would detail a guard, if we required it, and see us protected, but that he could not interfere with the judiciary." I expressed my dissatisfaction at the course taken, and told him, "that if we were to be subject to mob rule, and to be dragged, contrary to law, into prison at the instance of every infernal scoundrel whose oath could be bought for a dram of whiskey, his protection availed very little, and we had miscalculated his promises."

Seeing there was no prospect of redress from the governor, I returned to the room, and found the constable Bettesworth very urgent to hurry Brothers Joseph and Hyrum to prison, whilst the brethren were remonstrating with him. At the same time a great rabble was gathered in the streets and around the door, and from the rowdyism manifested I was afraid there was a design to murder the prisoners on the way to the jail.

Without conferring with any person, my next feeling was to procure a guard, and seeing a man habited as a soldier in the room, I went to him and said, "I am afraid there is a design against the lives of the Messrs. Smith, will you go immediately and bring your captain; and, if not convenient, any other captain of a company, and I will pay you well for your trouble?" He said he would, and departed forthwith, and soon returned with his captain, whose name I have forgotten, and introduced him to me. I told him of my fears, and requested him immediately to fetch his company; he departed forthwith, and arrived at the door with them just at the time when the constable was hurrying the brethren down stairs. A number of the brethren went along, together with one or two strangers; and all of us, safely lodged in prison, remained there during the night.

At the request of Joseph Smith for an interview with the governor, he came the next morning, Thursday, June 20th, at half-past 9 o'clock, accompanied by Colonel Geddes, when a lengthy conversation was entered into in relation to the existing difficulties; and after some preliminary remarks, at the governor's request, Brother Joseph gave him a general outline of the state of affairs in relation to our difficulties, the excited state of the county, the tumultuous mobocratic movements of our enemies, the precautionary measures used by himself (Joseph Smith), the acts of the city council, the destruction of the press, and the moves of the mob and ourselves up to that time.

The following report is, I believe, substantially correct:—

Governor.—"General Smith: I believe you have given me a general outline of the difficulties that have existed in the country in the documents forwarded to me by Dr. Bernhisel and Mr. Taylor; but, unfortunately, there

seems to be a great discrepancy between your statements and those of your enemies. It is true that you are substantiated by evidence and affidavit, but for such an extraordinary excitement as that which is now in the country, there must be some cause, and I attribute the last outbreak to the destruction of the 'Expositor,' and to your refusal to comply with the writ issued by Esquire Morrison. The press in the United States is looked upon as the great bulwark of American freedom, and its destruction in Nauvoo was represented and looked upon as a high-handed measure, and manifests to the people a disposition on your part to suppress the liberty of speech and of the press. This, with your refusal to comply with the requisitions of a writ, I conceive to be the principal cause of this difficulty; and you are moreover represented to me as turbulent, and defiant of the laws and institutions of your country."

General Smith.—"Governor Ford: you, sir, as governor of this State, are aware of the persecutions that I have endured. You know well that our cause has been peaceable and law-abiding, for I have furnished this State ever since our settlement here with sufficient evidence of my pacific intentions, and those of the people with whom I am associated, by the endurance of every conceivable indignity and lawless outrage perpetrated upon me and upon this people since our settlement here; and you yourself know that I have kept you well posted in relation to all matters associated with the late difficulties. If you have not got some of my communications, it has not been my fault.

"Agreeably to your orders, I assembled the Nauvoo Legion for the protection of Nauvoo and the surrounding country against an armed band of marauders, and ever since they have been mustered. I have almost daily communicated with you in regard to all the leading events that have transpired, and whether in the capacity of mayor of the city, or lieutenant-general of the Nauvoo Legion, I have striven, according to the best of my judgment, to preserve the peace and to administer even-handed justice; but my motives are impugned, my acts are misconstrued, and I am grossly and wickedly misrepresented. I suppose I am indebted for my incarceration to the oath of a worthless man who was arraigned before me and fined for abusing and maltreating his lame, helpless brother. That I should be charged by you, sir, who know better, of acting contrary to law, is to me a matter of surprise. Was it the Mormons or our enemies who first commenced these difficulties? You know well it was not us; and when this turbulent, outrageous people commenced their insurrectionary movements, I made you acquainted with them officially, and asked your advice, and have followed strictly your counsel in every particular. Who ordered out the Nauvoo Legion?—I did, under your direction. For what purpose?—To suppress the insurrectionary movements. It was at your instance, sir, that I issued a proclamation calling upon the Nauvoo Legion to be in readiness at a moment's warning to guard against the incursions of mobs, and gave an order to Jonathan Dunham, acting major-general, to that effect.

"Am I, then, to be charged for the acts of others? and because lawlessness and mobocracy abound, am I, when carrying out your instructions, to be charged with not abiding law? Why is it that I must be made accountable for other men's acts? If there is trouble in the country, neither I nor my people made it; and all that we have ever done, after much endurance on our part, is to maintain and uphold the constitution and institutions of

our country, and to protect an injured, innocent, and persecuted people against misrule and mob violence.

"Concerning the destruction of the press to which you refer, men may differ somewhat in their opinions about it; but can it be supposed that after all the indignities to which they have been subjected outside, that people could suffer a set of worthless vagabonds to come into their city, and, right under their own eyes and protection, vilify and calumniate not only themselves, but the character of their wives and daughters, as was impudently and unblushingly done in that infamous and filthy sheet?

"There is not a city in the United States that would have suffered such an indignity for twenty-four hours. Our whole people were indignant, and loudly called upon our city authorities for a redress of their grievances, which, if not attended to, they themselves would have taken into their own hands, and have summarily punished the audacious wretches as they deserved. The principles of equal rights that have been instilled into our bosoms from our cradles as American citizens, forbid us submitting to every foul indignity, and succumbing and pandering to wretches so infamous as these. But independent of this, the course that we pursued we considered to be strictly legal; for, notwithstanding the result, we were anxious to be governed strictly by law, and therefore we convened the city council; and being desirous in our deliberations to abide by law, we summoned legal counsel to be present on the occasion. Upon investigating the matter, we found that our city charter gave us power to remove all nuisances. Furthermore, after consulting Blackstone upon what might be considered a nuisance, it appeared that that distinguished lawyer, who is considered authority, I believe, in all our courts, states among other things that 'a libellous and filthy press may be considered a nuisance, and abated as such.' Here, then, one of the most eminent English barristers, whose works are considered standard with us, declares that a libellous and filthy press may be considered a nuisance; and our own charter, given us by the legislature of this State, gives us the power to remove nuisances; and by ordering that press to be abated as a nuisance, we conceived that we were acting strictly in accordance with law. We made that order in our corporate capacity, and the city marshal carried it out. It is possible there may have been some better way, but I must confess that I could not see it.

"In relation to the writ served upon us, we were willing to abide the consequences of our own acts, but were unwilling, in answering a writ of that kind, to submit to illegal exactions, sought to be imposed upon us under the pretence of law, when we knew they were in open violation to it. When that document was presented to me by Mr. Bettesworth, I offered, in the presence of more than twenty persons, to go to any other magistrate, either in our city, in Appanoose, or in any other place where we should be safe, but we all refused to put ourselves into the power of a mob. What right had that constable to refuse our request? He had none according to law; for you know, Governor Ford, that the statute law in Illinois is, that the parties served with the writ 'shall go before him who issued it, or some other justice of the peace.' Why, then, should we be dragged to Carthage, where the law does not compel us to go? Does not this look like many others of our persecutions with which you are acquainted? and have we

not a right to expect foul play? This very act was a breach of law on his part, an assumption of power that did not belong to him, and an attempt, at least, to deprive us of our legal and constitutional rights and privileges. What could we do under the circumstances, different from what we did do? We sued for, and obtained a writ of habeas corpus from the municipal court, by which we were delivered from the hands of Constable Bettesworth, and brought before and acquitted by the municipal court. After our acquittal, in a conversation with Judge Thomas, although he considered the acts of the party illegal, he advised that, to satisfy the people, we had better go before another magistrate who was not in our church. In accordance with his advice we went before Esquire Wells, with whom you are well acquainted; both parties were present, witnesses were called on both sides, the case was fully investigated, and we were again dismissed. And what is this pretended desire to enforce law, and wherefore are these lying, base rumours put into circulation but to seek through mob influence, under pretence of law, to make us submit to requisitions which are contrary to law and subversive of every principle of justice? And when you, sir, required us to come out here, we came, not because it was legal, but because you required it of us, and we were desirous of showing to you, and to all men, that we shrunk not from the most rigid investigation of our acts. We certainly did expect other treatment than to be immured in a jail at the instance of these men, and I think, from your plighted faith, we had a right so to expect, after disbanding our own forces, and putting ourselves entirely in your hands. And now, after having fulfilled my part, sir, as a man and an American citizen, I call upon you, Governor Ford, to deliver us from this place and rescue us from this outrage, that is sought to be practised upon us by a set of infamous scoundrels."

Governor Ford.—"But you have placed men under arrest, detained men as prisoners, and given passes to others, some of which I have seen."

John P. Green, City Marshal.—"Perhaps I can explain. Since these difficulties have commenced, you are aware that we have been placed under very particular circumstances; our city has been placed under a very rigid police guard; in addition to this, frequent guards have been placed outside the city to prevent any sudden surprise, and those guards have questioned suspected or suspicious persons as to their business. To strangers, in some instances, passes have been given to prevent difficulty in passing those guards; it is some of these passes that you have seen. No person, sir, has been imprisoned without a legal cause in our city."

Governor.—"Why did you not give a more speedy answer to the posse that I sent out?"

General Smith.—"We had matters of importance to consult upon; your letter showed anything but an amiable spirit. We have suffered immensely in Missouri from mobs, in loss of property, imprisonment, and otherwise. It took some time for us to weigh duly these matters: we could not decide upon matters of such importance immediately, and your posse were too hasty in returning; we were consulting for a large people, and vast interests were at stake. We had been outrageously imposed upon, and knew not how far we could trust any one; besides a question necessarily arose, how shall we come? Your request was that we should come unarmed. It became a matter of serious importance to decide how far promises could be trusted, and how far we were safe from mob violence."

Colonel Geddes.—"It certainly did look, from all I have heard, from the general spirit of violence and mobocracy that here prevails, that it was not safe for you to come unprotected."

Governor Ford.—"I think that sufficient time was not allowed by the posse for you to consult and get ready. They were too hasty, but I suppose they found themselves bound by their orders. I think, too, there is a great deal of truth in what you say, and your reasoning is plausible, but I must beg leave to differ from you in relation to the acts of the city council. That council, in my opinion, had no right to act in a legislative capacity and in that of the judiciary. They should have passed a law in relation to the matter, and then the municipal court, upon complaint, could have removed it; but for the city council to take upon themselves the lawmaking and the execution of the law, is in my opinion wrong; besides, those men ought to have had a hearing before their property was destroyed; to destroy it without was an infringement on their rights; besides, it is so contrary to the feelings of American people to interfere with the press. And furthermore, I cannot but think that it would have been more judicious for you to have gone with Mr. Bettesworth to Carthage, notwithstanding the law did not require it. Concerning your being in jail, I am sorry for that; I wish it had been otherwise. I hope you will soon be released, but I cannot interfere."

Joseph Smith.—"Governor Ford, allow me, sir, to bring one thing to your mind that you seem to have overlooked. You state that you think it would have been better for us to have submitted to the requisition of Constable Bettesworth, and to have gone to Carthage. Do you not know, sir, that that writ was served at the instance of an 'Anti-Mormon' mob, who had passed resolutions and published them to the effect, that they would exterminate the 'Mormon' leaders, and are you not informed that Captain Anderson was not only threatened when coming to Nauvoo, but had a gun fired at his boat by this said mob in Warsaw, when coming up to Nauvoo, and that this very thing was made use of as a means to get us into their hands; and we could not, without taking an armed force with us, go there without, according to their published declarations, going into the jaws of death? To have taken a force, would only have formed the excitement, and they would have stated that we wanted to use intimidation; therefore we thought it the most judicious to avail ourselves of the protection of law."

Governor Ford.—"I see, I see."

Joseph Smith.—"Furthermore, in relation to the press, you say that you differ from me in opinion. Be it so, the thing after all is only a legal difficulty, and the courts, I should judge, are competent to decide on that matter. If our act was illegal, we are willing to meet it, and although I cannot see the distinction that you draw about the acts of the city council and what difference it could have made in point of fact, law, or justice between the city councils acting together or separate, or how much more legal it would have been for the municipal court, who were a part of the city council, to act separate instead of with the councillors, yet, if it is deemed that we did a wrong in destroying that press, we refuse not to pay for it; we are desirous to fulfil the law in every particular, and are responsible for our acts. You say that the parties ought to have had a hearing. Had it been

a civil suit, this of course would have been proper, but there was a flagrant violation of every principle of right — a nuisance; and it was abated on the same principle that any nuisance, stench, or putrified carcase would have been removed. Our first step, therefore, was to stop the foul, noisome, filthy sheet, and then the next in our opinion would have been to have prosecuted the man for a breach of public decency. And furthermore, again let me say, Governor Ford, I shall look to you for our protection. I believe you are talking of going to Nauvoo; if you go, sir, I wish to go along. I refuse not to answer any law, but I do not consider myself safe here."

Governor.—"I am in hopes that you will be acquitted, and if I go I will certainly take you along. I do not, however, apprehend danger. I think you are perfectly safe either here or anywhere else. I cannot, however, interfere with the law. I am placed in peculiar circumstances, and seem to be blamed by all parties."

Joseph Smith.—"Governor Ford, I ask nothing but what is legal; I have a right to expect protection, at least from you, for, independent of law, you have pledged your faith and that of the State for my protection, and I wish to go to Nauvoo."

Governor.—"And you shall have protection, General Smith. I did not make this promise without consulting my officers, who all pledged their honour to its fulfilment. I do not know that I shall go to-morrow to Nauvoo, but if I do I will take you along."

At a quarter past ten o'clock the governor left.

At about half past twelve o'clock Mr. Reed, one of Joseph's counsel, came in, apparently much elated; he stated, that "upon an examination of the law, he found that the magistrate had transcended his jurisdiction, and that having committed them without an examination, his jurisdiction ended; that he had him upon a pinhook; that he ought to have examined them before he committed them, and that, having violated the law in this particular, he had no further power over them; for once committed, they were out of his jurisdiction, as the power of the magistrate extended no further than their committal; and that now they could not be brought out except at the regular session of the circuit court, or by a writ of habeas corpus; but that if Justice Smith would consent to go to Nauvoo for trial, he would compromise matters with him, and overlook this matter."

Mr. Reed further stated, that "the 'Anti-Mormons' or mob had concocted a scheme to get out a writ from Missouri, with a demand upon Governor Ford, for the arrest of Joseph Smith and his conveyance to Missouri; and that a man by the name of Wilson had returned from Missouri the night before the burning of the press, for this purpose."

At half past two o'clock Constable Bettesworth came to the jail with a man named Simpson, professing to have some order, but would not send up his name, and the guard would not let him pass. Dr. Bernhisel and Brother Wasson went to inform the governor and council of this. At about twenty minutes to three Dr. Bernhisel returned, and stated, that he thought the governor was doing all he could. At about ten minutes to three Hyrum Kimball appeared with news from Nauvoo.

Soon after Constable Bettesworth came with an order from Esquire Smith, to convey the prisoners to the court-house for trial. He was informed, that the process was illegal, that they had been placed there

contrary to law, and that they refused to come unless by legal process. I was informed, that Justice Smith (who was also Captain of the Carthage Greys) went to the governor, and informed him of the matter, and that the governor replied: "You have your forces, and of course can use them." The constable certainly did return, accompanied by a guard of armed men, and by force, and under protest, hurried the prisoners to the court.

About four o'clock the case was called by Capt. Robert F. Smith, J.P. The counsel of the prisoners called for subpœnas to bring witnesses. At twenty-five minutes past four he took a copy of the order to bring the prisoners from jail to trial, and afterwards he took names of witnesses.

Counsel present for the State: Higbee, Skinner, Sharpe, Emmons, and Morrison. Twenty-five minutes to five the writ was returned as served June 25th.

Many remarks were made at the court, that I paid but little attention to, as I considered the whole thing illegal and a complete burlesque. Wood objected to the proceedings in toto, in consequence of its illegality, showing that the prisoners were not only illegally committed, but that being once committed, the magistrate had no further power over them; but as it was the same magistrate, before whom he was pleading, who imprisoned them contrary to law, and the same, who as captain forced them from jail, his arguments availed but little. He then urged that the prisoners be remanded until witnesses could be had, and applied for a continuance for that purpose. Skinner suggested until twelve o'clock next day. Wood again demanded until witnesses could be obtained, that the court meet at a specified time, and that, if witnesses were not present, again adjourn, without calling the prisoners. After various remarks from Reed, Skinner, and others, the court stated, that the writ was served yesterday, and that it will give until to-morrow at twelve M. to get witnesses.

We then returned to jail. Immediately after our return Dr. Bernhisel went to the governor, and obtained from him an order for us to occupy a large, open room, containing a bedstead. I rather think that the same room had been appropriated to the use of debtors; at any rate, there was free access to the jailer's house, and no bars or locks, except such as might be on the outside door of the jail. The jailer, Mr. George W. Steghall, and his wife, manifested a disposition to make us as comfortable as they could; we ate at their table, which was well provided, and of course paid for it.

I do not remember the names of all who were with us that night and the next morning in jail, for several went and came; among those that we considered stationary, were Stephen Markham, John S. Fulmer, Capt. Dan Jones, Dr. Willard Richards, and myself. Dr. Bernhisel says, that he was there from Wednesday, in the afternoon, until eleven o'clock next day. We were, however, visited by numerous friends, amongst whom were Uncle John Smith, Hyrum Kimball, Cyrus H. Wheelock, besides lawyers, as counsel. There was also a great variety of conversation, which was rather desultory than otherwise, and referred to circumstances that had transpired; our former and present grievances, the spirit of the troops around us, and the disposition of the governor; the devising for legal and other plans for deliverance; the nature of testimony required; the gathering of proper witnesses; and a variety of other topics, including our religious hopes, &c.

During one of these conversations, Dr. Richards remarked: "Brother

Joseph, it is necessary that you die in this matter, and if they will take me in your stead, I will suffer for you." At another time, when conversing about deliverance, I said, "Brother Joseph, if you will permit it, and say the word, I will have you out of this prison in five hours, if the jail has to come down, to do it." My idea was, to go to Nauvoo, and collect a force sufficient, as I considered the whole concern a legal farce, and a flagrant outrage upon our liberty and rights. Brother Joseph refused.

Elder Cyrus Wheelock came in to see us, and when he was about leaving drew a small pistol, a six-shooter, from his pocket, remarking at the same time: "Would any of you like to have this?" Brother Joseph immediately replied: "Yes, give it to me;" whereupon he took the pistol, and put it in his pantaloon pocket. The pistol was a six-shooting revolver, of Allen's Patent; it belonged to me, and was one that I furnished to Brother Wheelock, when he talked of going with me to the east, previous to our coming to Carthage. I have it now in my possession. Brother Wheelock went out on some errand, and was not suffered to return. The report of the governor having gone to Nauvoo without taking the prisoners along with him, caused very unpleasant feelings, as we were apprised that we were left to the tender mercies of the Carthage Greys, a company strictly mobocratic, and whom we knew to be our most deadly enemies, and their Captain, Esquire Smith, was a most unprincipled villain. Besides this, all the mob forces, comprising the governor's troops, were dismissed, with the exception of one or two companies, which the governor took with him to Nauvoo. The great part of the mob was liberated, the remainder was our guard.

We looked upon it, not only as a breach of faith on the part of the governor, but also as an indication of a desire to insult us, if nothing more, by leaving us in the proximity of such men. The prevention of Wheelock's return was among the first of their hostile movements.

Col. Markham then went out, and he was also prevented from returning. He was very angry at this, but the mob paid no attention to him; they drove him out of town, at the point of the bayonet, and threatened to shoot him if he returned; he went, I am informed, to Nauvoo, for the purpose of raising a company of men for our protection. Brother Fulmer went to Nauvoo after witnesses: it is my opinion that Brother Wheelock did also.

Some time after dinner we sent for some wine. It has been reported by some, that this was taken as a sacrament. It was no such thing; our spirits were generally dull and heavy, and it was sent for to revive us. I think it was Captain Jones who went after it, but they would not suffer him to return. I believe we all drank of the wine, and gave some to one or two of the prison guards. We all of us felt unusually dull and languid, with a remarkable depression of spirits. In consonance with those feelings I sang the following song, that had lately been introduced into Nauvoo, entitled, "A poor wayfaring man of grief," &c.

1.

A poor wayfaring man of grief
Hath often cross'd me on my way;
Who sued so humbly for relief,
That I could never answer, Nay.

2.

I had not power to ask his name,
Whither he went, or whence he came;
Yet there was something in his eye
That won my love, I know not why.

3.

Once, when my scanty meal was spread,
He enter'd — not a word he spake!
Just perishing for want of bread;
I gave him all: he blest'd it, brake,

4.

And ate, but gave me part again;
Mine was an angel's portion then,
For while I fed with eager haste,
The crust was manna to my taste.

5.

I spied him where a fountain burst
Clear from the rock — his strength was gone —
The heedless water mock'd his thirst,
He heard it, saw it hurrying on —

6.

I ran and rais'd the suff'rer up,
Thrice from the stream he drain'd my cup,
Dipp'd, and return'd it running o'er;
I drank, and never thirsted more.

7.

'Twas night, the floods were out, it blew
A winter hurricane aloof;
I heard his voice abroad, and flew
To bid him welcome to my roof.

8.

I warm'd, I cloth'd, I cheer'd my guest,
I laid him on my couch to rest;
Then made the earth my bed, and seem'd
In Eden's garden, while I dream'd.

9.

Stripp'd, wounded, beaten nigh to death,
I found him by the highway side;
I rear'd his pulse, brought back his breath,
Reviv'd his spirit, and supplied

10.

Wine, oil, refreshment — he was heal'd;
I had myself a wound conceal'd:
But from that hour forgot the smart,
And peace bound up my broken heart.

11.

In prison I saw him next — condemn'd
To meet a traitor's doom at morn;
The tide of lying tongues I stemm'd,
And honour'd him 'mid shame and scorn.

12.

My friendship's utmost zeal to try,
He asked if I for him would die;
The flesh was weak, my blood ran chill;
But the free spirit cried, "I will."

13.

Then in a moment to my view,
The stranger started from disguise;
The tokens in his hands I knew,
The Saviour stood before mine eyes.

14.

He spake — and my poor name he named —
"Of me thou hast not been asham'd;
These deeds shall thy memorial be;
Fear not, thou didst them unto me."

The song is pathetic, and the tune quite plaintive, and was very much in accordance with our feelings at the time, for our spirits were all depressed, dull, and gloomy, and surcharged with indefinite, ominous forebodings. After a lapse of some time, Brother Hyrum requested me again to sing that song. I replied, "Brother Hyrum, I do not feel like singing;" when he remarked, "Oh! never mind, commence singing, and you will get the spirit of it." At his request I did so. Soon afterwards I was sitting at one of the front windows of the jail, when I saw a number of men, with painted faces, coming round the corner of the jail, and aiming towards the stairs. The other brethren had seen the same, for, as I went to the door, I found Brother Hyrum Smith and Dr. Richards already leaning against it; they both pressed against the door with their shoulders, to prevent its being opened, as the lock and latch were comparatively useless. While in this position, the mob, who had come up stairs, and strove to open the door, probably thought it was locked, and fired a ball through the keyhole; at this Dr. Richards and Brother Hyrum leaped back from the door, with their faces towards it; almost instantly another ball passed through the pannel of the door, and struck Brother Hyrum on the left side of the nose, and entering his face and head; simultaneously, at the same instant, another ball from the outside entered his back, passing through his body and striking his watch. The ball came from the back, through the jail window, opposite the door, and must from its range have been fired from the Carthage Greys, as the balls of fire-arms, shot close by the jail, would have entered the ceiling, we being in the second story, and there never was a time after that Hyrum could have received the latter wound. Immediately, when the balls struck him, he fell flat on his back, crying as he fell, "I am a dead man!" He never moved afterwards.

I shall never forget the feeling of deep sympathy and regard, manifested in the countenance of Brother Joseph, as he drew nigh to Hyrum, and leaning over him, exclaimed, "Oh! my poor, dear brother, Hyrum." He, however, instantly arose, and with a firm, quick step, and a determined expression of countenance, approached the door, and pulling the six-shooter, left by Brother Wheelock, from his pocket, opened the door slightly, and snapped the pistol six successive times; only three of the barrels, however, were discharged. I afterwards understood that two or three were wounded by these discharges, two of whom, I am informed, died. I had in my hands a large, strong hickory stick, brought there by Brother Markham, and left by him, which I had seized as soon as I saw the mob approach; and while Brother Joseph was firing the pistol, I stood close behind him. As soon as he had discharged it he stepped back, and I immediately took his place next the door, whilst he occupied the one I had done while he was shooting. Brother Richards, at this time, had a knotty walking-stick in his hands, belonging to me, and stood next to Brother Joseph, a little further from the door, in an oblique direction, apparently to avoid the rake of the fire from the door. The firing of Brother Joseph made our assailants pause for a moment; very soon after, however, they pushed the door some distance open, and protruded and discharged their guns into the room, when I parried them off with my stick, giving another direction to the balls.

It certainly was a terrible scene: streams of fire as thick as my arm passed by me as these men fired, and unarmed as we were, it looked like certain death. I remember feeling as though my time had come, but I do not know when, in any critical position, I was more calm, unruffled, and energetic, and acted with more promptness and decision. It certainly was far from pleasant to be so near the muzzles of those fire-arms as they belched forth their liquid flame and deadly balls. While I was engaged in parrying the guns, Brother Joseph said, "That's right, Brother Taylor; parry them off as well as you can." These were the last words I ever heard him speak on earth.

Every moment the crowd at the door became more dense, as they were unquestionably pressed on by those in the rear, ascending the stairs, until the whole entrance at the door was literally crowded with muskets and rifles; whilst with the swearing, shouting, and demoniacal expressions of those outside the door and on the stairs, and the firing of guns, mingled with their horrid oaths and execrations, made it look like Pandemonium let loose, and was indeed a fit representation of the horrid deed in which they were engaged.

After parrying the guns for some time, which now protruded thicker and further into the room, and seeing no hope of escape or protection there, as we were now unarmed, it occurred to me that we might have some friends outside, and that there might then be some chance of escape, but here there seemed to be none. As I expected them every moment to rush into the room, and nothing but extreme cowardice that kept them out, as the tumult and pressure increased, without any other hope I made a spring for the window, which was right in front of the jail door, where the mob was standing, and also exposed to the fire of the Carthage Greys, who were stationed some ten or twelve rods off. The weather was hot, we all of us had our coats off, and the window was raised to admit air; as I reached the

window, and was on the point of leaping out, I was struck by a from ball the door, about midway of my thigh, which struck the bone, and flattened out almost to the size of a quarter dollar, and then passed on through the fleshy part to within about half an inch of the outside. I think some prominent nerve must have been severed or injured, for as soon as the ball struck me I fell like a bird when shot, or an ox struck by a butcher, and lost entirely and instantaneously all power of action or locomotion. I fell on to the window sill, and cried out, "I am shot!" Not possessing any power to move, I felt myself falling outside of the window, but immediately I fell inside from some, at that time, unknown cause; when I struck the floor my animation seemed restored, as I have seen sometimes squirrels and birds after being shot. As soon as I felt the power of motion I crawled under the bed, which was in a corner of the room, not far from the window, where I received my wound. While on my way and under the bed I was wounded in three other places; one ball entered a little below the left knee, and never was extracted; another entered the forepart of my left arm, a little above the wrist, and, passing down by the joint, it lodged in the fleshy part of my hand, about midway in my hand, a little above the upper joint of my little finger; another struck me on the fleshy part of my left hip, and tore away the flesh as large as my hand, dashing the mangled fragments of flesh and blood against the wall.

My wounds were painful, and the sensation produced was as though a ball had passed through and down the whole length of my leg. I very well remember my reflections at the time. I had a very painful idea of becoming lame and decrepit, and being an object of pity, and I felt as though I had rather die than be placed in such circumstances.

It would seem that immediately after my attempt to leap out the window, Joseph also did the same thing, of which circumstance I have no knowledge only from information. The first thing that I noticed was a cry that he had leapt out of the window. A cessation of firing followed, the mob rushed down stairs, and Dr. Richards went to the window. Immediately afterwards I saw the doctor going towards the jail door, and as there was an iron door at the head of the stairs, adjoining our door, which led into the cells for criminals, it struck me that the doctor was going in there, and I said to him, "Stop, Doctor, and take me along." He proceeded to the door, and opened it, and then returned and dragged me along to a small cell prepared for criminals.

Brother Richard was very much troubled, and exclaimed: "Oh! Brother Taylor, is it possible that they have killed both Brother Hyrum and Joseph! it cannot surely be, and yet I saw them shoot him;" and elevating his hands two or three times, he exclaimed, "Oh Lord, my God, spare thy servants!" He then said: "Brother Taylor, this is a terrible event;" and he dragged me further into the cell, saying, "I am sorry I cannot do better for you;" and taking an old, filthy mattress, he covered me with it, and said, "That may hide you, and you may yet live to tell the tale, but I expect they will kill me in a few moments." While laying in this position I suffered the most excruciating pain.

Soon afterwards Dr. Richards came to me, informing me that the mob had precipitately fled, and at the same time confirming my worst fears, that Joseph was assuredly dead. I felt a dull, lonely, sickening sensation at the

news. When I reflected that our noble chieftain, the prophet of the living God, had fallen, and that I had seen his brother in the cold embrace of death, it seemed as though there was an open void or vacuum in the great field of human existence to me, and a dark gloomy chasm in the kingdom, and that we were left alone. Oh! how lonely was that feeling! how cold, barren, and desolate! In the midst of difficulties he was always the first in motion; in critical position his counsel was always sought. As our prophet he approached our God, and obtained for us His will; but now our prophet, our counsellor, our general, our leader was gone, and amid the fiery ordeal that we then had to pass through, we were left alone without his aid, and as our future guide for things spiritual or temporal, and for all things pertaining to this world or the next, he had spoken for the last time on earth.

These reflections and a thousand others flashed upon my mind. I thought, why must the good perish, and the virtuous be destroyed? Why must God's nobility, the salt of the earth, the most exalted of the human family, and the most perfect types of all excellence, fall victims to the cruel, fiendish, hate of incarnate devils?

The poignancy of my grief, I presume, however, was somewhat allayed by the extreme suffering that I endured from my wounds.

Soon afterwards I was taken to the head of the stairs, and laid there, where I had a full view of our beloved and now murdered brother Hyrum. There he lay as I had left him, he had not moved a limb; he lay placid and calm, a monument of greatness even in death, but its noble spirit had left his tenement, and was gone to dwell in regions more congenial to his exalted nature. Poor Hyrum! he was a great and a good man, and my soul was cemented to his. If ever there was an exemplary, honest, and virtuous man, an embodiment of all that is noble in the human form, Hyrum Smith was its representative.

While I lay there a number of persons came around, among whom was a physician. The doctor on seeing a ball lodged in my left hand, took a penknife from his pocket and made an incision in my hand, for the purpose of extracting the ball therefrom, and having obtained a pair of carpenter's compasses, made use of them, to draw or pry out the ball; alternately using the penknife and compasses. After sawing for some time with a dull penknife, and prying and pulling with the compasses, he ultimately succeeded in extracting the ball, which was about a half ounce one. Some time afterwards he remarked to a friend of mine, that "I had nerves like the devil to stand what I did in its extraction." I really thought I had need of nerves, to stand such surgical butchery, and that whatever my nerves may be, his practice was devilish.

This company wished to remove me to Mr. Hamilton's hotel, the place where we had stayed previous to our incarceration in jail. I told them, however, that I did not wish to go, I did not consider it safe. They protested that it was, and that I was safe with them; that it was a perfect outrage for men to be used as we had been; that they were my friends; that it was for my good they were counselling me, and that I could be better taken care of there than here.

I replied, "I don't know you. Who am I among? I am surrounded by assassins and murderers; witness your deeds! Don't talk to me of kindness

or comfort, look at your murdered victims. Look at me! I want none of your counsel nor comfort. There may be some safety here; I can be assured of none anywhere," &c.

They "God damned their souls to hell," made the most solemn asseverations, and swore by God and the devil, and everything else that they could think of, that they would stand by me to death and protect me. In half an hour every one of them had fled to the town.

Soon after a coroner's jury were assembled in the room over the body of Hyrum. Among the jurors was Captain Smith, of the "Carthage Greys," who had assisted in the murder, and the same justice, before whom we had been tried. I heard the name of Francis Higbee as being in the neighbourhood; on hearing his name mentioned, I immediately rose and said: "Captain Smith, you are a justice of the peace; I have heard his name mentioned, I want to swear my life against him." I was informed that word was immediately sent to him to leave the place, which he did.

Brother Richards was busy during this time attending to the coroner's inquest, and to the removal of the bodies, and making arrangements for their removal from Carthage to Nauvoo.

When we had a little leisure, he again came to me, and at his suggestion I was removed to Hamilton's Tavern; I felt that he was the only friend, the only person, that I could rely upon in that town. It was with difficulty that sufficient persons could be found to carry me to the tavern; for immediately after the murder a great fear fell upon all the people, and men, women, and children fled with great precipitation, leaving nothing nor anybody in the town but two or three women and children and one or two sick persons.

It was with great difficulty that Brother Richards prevailed upon Mr. Hamilton, hotel-keeper, and his family, to stay; they would not until Brother Richards had given a solemn promise that he would see them protected, and hence I was looked upon as a hostage. Under these circumstances, notwithstanding, I believe they were hostile to the "Mormons," and were glad that the murder had taken place; yet they did not actually participate in it, and feeling that I should be a protection to them, they stayed.

The whole community knew that a dreadful outrage had been perpetrated by those villains, and fearing lest the citizens of Nauvoo, as they possessed the power, might have a disposition to visit them with a terrible vengeance, they fled in the wildest confusion. And, indeed, it was with very great difficulty, that the citizens of Nauvoo could be restrained; a horrid, barbarous murder had been committed; the most solemn pledge violated, and that, too, whilst the victims were, contrary to the requirements of the law, putting themselves into the hands of the governor, to pacify a popular excitement. This outrage was enhanced by the reflection, that we were able to protect ourselves against, not only all the mob, but against three times their number and that of the governor's troops put together. These were exasperated by the speech of the governor in town. The whole events were so faithless, so dastardly, so mean, cowardly, and contemptible, without one extenuating circumstance, that it would not have been surprising, if the citizens of Nauvoo had arisen, *en masse*, and blotted the wretches out of existence. The citizens of Carthage knew they would have done so under such circumstances, and judging us by themselves, they were all panic-stricken, and fled. Colonel Markham, too, after his expulsion from Carthage, had

gone home, related the circumstances of his ejectment, and was using his influence to get a company to go out. Fearing, that when the people heard that their Prophet and Patriarch had been murdered under the above circumstances they might act rashly, and knowing that if they once get roused, like a mighty avalanche, they would lay the country waste before them, and take a terrible vengeance; as none of the twelve were in Nauvoo, and no one perhaps with sufficient influence to control the people, Dr. Richards, after consulting me, wrote the following note, fearing that my family might be seriously affected by the news; I told him to insert that I was slightly wounded.

*William Richards's note from Carthage Jail to Nauvoo.**

Carthage Jail, 8 o'clock, 5 min. P.M.
June 27th, 1844.

Joseph and Hyrum are dead. Taylor wounded, not very badly. I am well. Our guard was forced, as we believe, by a band of Missourians, from 100 to 200. The job was done in an instant, and the party fled towards Nauvoo instantly. This is as I believe it. The citizens here are afraid of the Mormons attacking them; I promise them, no!

W. Richards.

N.B. The citizens promise us protection; alarm guns have been fired.

John Taylor.

I remember signing my name as quickly as possible, lest the tremor of my hand should be noticed, and their fears too excited.

A messenger was despatched immediately with that note; but he was intercepted by the governor, who on hearing a cannon fired at Carthage, which was to be the signal for the murder, immediately fled with his company, and fearing that the citizens of Nauvoo, when apprised of the horrible outrage, would immediately rise and pursue, he turned back the messenger, who was George D. Grant. A second one was sent, who was treated similarly, and not until a third attempt could news be got to Nauvoo.

Samuel H. Smith, brother to Joseph and Hyrum, was the first brother that I saw after the outrage; I am not sure whether he took the news or not; he lived at the time at Plymouth, Hancock County, and was on his way to Carthage to see his brothers, when he was met by some of the troops, or rather mob, that had been dismissed by the governor, and who were on their way home. On learning that he was Joseph Smith's brother, they sought to kill him, but he escaped, and fled into the woods, where he was chased for a length of time by them; but after severe fatigue, and much danger and excitement, he succeeded in escaping, and came to Carthage. He was on horseback when he arrived, and was not only very much tired with the fatigue and excitement of the chase, but was also very much distressed in feelings on account of the death of his brother. These things produced a fever, which laid the foundation for his death, which took place the 30th of July. Thus another of the brothers fell a victim, although not directly, but indirectly to this infernal mob.

* "Dem. News," No. 28, Nov. 20, 1844, p. 227.

I lay from about five o'clock until two next morning without having my wounds dressed, as there was scarcely any help of any kind in Carthage, and Brother Richards was busy with the dead bodies, preparing them for removal. My wife, Leonora, started early the next day, having had some little trouble in getting a company or a physician to come with her; after considerable difficulty she succeeded in getting an escort, and Dr. Samuel Bennet came along with her. Soon after my father and mother arrived from Quakie, near which place they had a farm at that time, and hearing of the trouble, hastened along.

General Demming, Brigadier-General of the Hancock County Militia, was very much of a gentleman, and showed me every courtesy, and Colonel Jones also was very solicitous about my welfare.

I was called upon by several gentlemen of Quincy and other places, among whom was Judge Ralston, as well as by our own people, and a medical man extracted a ball from my left thigh, that was giving me much pain: it lay about half an inch deep, and my thigh was considerably swollen. The doctor asked me if I would be tied during the operation; I told him, no; that I could endure the cutting associated with the operation as well without, and I did so; indeed, so great was the pain I endured, that the cutting was rather a relief than otherwise.

A very laughable incident occurred at the time; my wife, Leonora, went into an adjoining room to pray for me, that I might be sustained during the operation; while on her knees at prayer, a Mrs. Bedell, an old lady of the Methodist association entered, and patting Mrs. Taylor on her back with her hand, said: "There's a good lady, pray for God to forgive your sins; pray that you may be converted, and the Lord may have mercy on your soul."

The scene was so ludicrous, that Mrs. Taylor knew not whether to laugh or be angry. Mrs. Taylor informed me, that Mr. Hamilton, the father of the Hamilton who kept the house, rejoiced at the murder, and said in company, "that it was done up in the best possible style, and showed good generalship," and she further believed that the other branches of the family sanctioned it; these were the associates of the old lady referred to, and yet she could talk of conversion and saving souls in the midst of blood and murder; such is man and such consistency.

The ball being extracted, was the one that first struck me which I before referred to; it entered on the outside of my left thigh, about five inches from my knee, and passing rather obliquely towards my body, had, it would seem, struck the bone, for it was flattened out nearly as thin and large as a quarter dollar.

The governor passed on, staying at Carthage only a few minutes, and he did not stop until he got fifty miles from Nauvoo. There had been various opinions about the complicity of the governor in the murder, some supposing that he knew all about it, and assisted or winked at its execution. It is somewhat difficult to form a correct opinion; from the facts presented it is very certain that things looked more than suspicious against him.

In the first place, he positively knew that we had broken no law.

Secondly. He knew that the mob had not only passed inflammatory resolutions, threatening extermination to the "Mormons," but that they had actually assembled armed mobs and commenced hostilities against us.

Thirdly. He took those very mobs that had been arrayed against us, and enrolled them as his troops, thus legalising their acts.

Fourthly. He disbanded the Nauvoo legion, which had never violated law, and disarmed them, and had about his person in the shape of militia known mobocrats and violators of the law.

Fifthly. He requested us to come to Carthage without arms, promising protection, and then refused to interfere in delivering us from prison, although Joseph and Hyrum were put there contrary to law.

Sixthly. Although he refused to interfere in our behalf, yet, when Captain Smith went to him and informed him that the persons refused to come out, he told him that "he had a command and knew what to do," thus sanctioning the use of force in the violation of law when opposed to us; whereas he would not for us interpose his executive authority to free us from being incarcerated contrary to law, although he was fully informed of all the facts of the case, as we kept him posted in the affairs all the time.

Seventhly. He left the prisoners in Carthage jail contrary to his plighted faith.

Eighthly. Before he went he dismissed all the troops that could be relied upon, as well as many of the mob, and left us in charge of the "Carthage Greys," a company that he knew were mobocratic, our most bitter enemies, and who had passed resolutions to exterminate us, and who had been placed under guard by General Demming only the day before.

Ninthly. He was informed of the intended murder, both before he left and while on the road, by several different parties.

Tenthly. When the cannon was fired in Carthage, signifying that the deed was done, he immediately took up his line of march and fled. How did he know that this signal portended their death if he was not in the secret?" It may be said some of the party told him. How could he believe what the party said about the gun signal if he could not believe the testimony of several individuals who told him in positive terms about the contemplated murder?

He has, I believe, stated that he left the "Carthage Greys" there, because he considered that as their town was contiguous to ours, and that, as the responsibility of our safety rested solely upon them, they would not dare suffer any indignity to befal us. This very admission shows that he did really expect danger, and then he knew that these people had published to the world that they would exterminate us, and his leaving us in their hands and talking of their responsibilities, was like leaving a lamb in charge of a wolf, and trusting to its humanity and honour for its safe keeping.

It is said again, that he would not have gone to Nauvoo, and thus placed himself in the hands of the "Mormons," if he had anticipated any such event, as he would be exposed to their wrath. To this it may be answered that the "Mormons" did not know their signals, whilst he did, and they were also known in Warsaw as well as in other places, and as soon as the gun was fired, a merchant of Warsaw jumped upon his horse and rode directly to Quincy, and reported "Joseph and Hyrum killed, and those who were with them in jail." He reported further, "that they were attempting to break jail, and were all killed by the guard." This was their story; it was anticipated to kill all, and the gun was to be the signal that the deed was accomplished. This was known in Warsaw. The governor also knew

it and fled, and he could really be in no danger in Nauvoo, for the Mormons did not know it, and he had plenty of time to escape, which he did.

It is said that he made all his officers promise solemnly that they would help him to protect the Smiths; this may be or may not be. At any rate, some of these same officers helped to murder them.

The strongest argument in the governor's favour, and one that would bear more weight with us than all the rest put together, would be that he could not believe them capable of such atrocity, and thinking that their talk and threatenings were a mere ebullition of feeling, a kind of braggadocio, and that there was enough of good moral feeling to control the more violent passions, he trusted to their faith. There is, indeed, a degree of plausibility about this, but when we put it in juxtaposition to the amount of evidence that he was in possession of it weighs very little. He had nothing to inspire confidence in them, and everything to make him mistrust them. Besides, why his broken faith? why his disregard of what was told him by several parties? Again, if he knew not the plan, how did he understand the signal? Why so oblivious to everything pertaining to the "Mormon" interest, and so alive and interested about the mobocrats? At any rate, be this as it may, he stands responsible for their blood, and it is dripping on his garments. If it had not been for his promises of protection, they would have protected themselves; it was plighted faith that led them to the slaughter; and, to make the best of it, it was a breach of that faith and a non-fulfilment of that promise, after repeated warnings, that led to their death.

Having said so much, I must leave the governor with my readers and with his God. Justice, I conceive demanded this much, and truth could not be told with less; as I have said before, my opinion is that the governor would not have planned this murder, but he had not sufficient energy to resist popular opinion, even if that opinion led to blood and death.

It was rumoured that a strong political party, numbering in its ranks many of the prominent men of the nation, were engaged in a plot for the overthrow of Joseph Smith, and that the governor was of this party, and Sharp, Williams, Captain Smith and others were his accomplices, but whether this was the case or not I don't know. It is very certain that a strong political feeling existed against Joseph Smith, and I have reason to believe that his letters to Henry Clay were made use of by political parties opposed to Mr. Clay, and were the means of that statesman's defeat. Yet, if such a combination as the one referred to existed, I am not apprised of it.

While I lay at Carthage, previous to Mrs. Taylor's arrival, a pretty good sort of a man, who was lame of a leg, waited upon me, and sat up at night with me; after Mrs. Taylor, my mother and others waited upon me.

Many friends called upon me, among whom were Richard Ballantyne, Elizabeth Taylor, several of the Perkins family, and a number of the brethren from Macedonia and La Harpe. Besides these, many strangers from Quincy, some of whom expressed indignant feelings against the mob and sympathy for myself. Brother Alexander Williams called upon me, who suspected that they had some designs in keeping me there, and stated "that he had at a given point in some woods fifty men, and that if I would say the word he would raise other fifty, and fetch me out of there. I thanked him, but told him I thought there was no need. However, it would seem that I was in some danger, for Colonel Jones, before referred to, when

absent from me, left two loaded pistols on the table in case of an attack, and some time afterwards, when I had recovered and was publishing the affair, a lawyer, Mr. Backman, stated that he had prevented a man by the name of Jackson, before referred to, from ascending the stairs, who was coming with a design to murder me, and that now he was sorry he had not let him do the deed.

There were others also of whom I heard, that said I ought to be killed, and they would do it, but that it was too damned cowardly to shoot a wounded man; and thus by the chivalry of murderers I was prevented from being a second time mutilated or killed. Many of the mob too came around and treated me with apparent respect, and the officers and people generally looked upon me as a hostage, and feared that my removal would be the signal for the rising of the Mormons.

I do not remember the time that I stayed there, but I think three or four days after the murder, when Brother Marks with a carriage, Brother James Aldred with a waggon, Dr. Ells, and a number of others on horseback, came for the purpose of taking me to Nauvoo. I was very weak at the time occasioned by loss of blood and the great discharge of my wounds, so that when Mrs. Taylor asked me if I could talk I could barely whisper no. Quite a discussion arose as to the propriety of my removal, the physicians and people of Carthage protesting it would be my death; whilst my friends were anxious for my removal if possible.

I suppose the former were actuated by the above named desire to keep me. Colonel Jones was, I believe, sincere, he has acted as a friend all the time, and he told Mrs. Taylor she ought to persuade me not to go, for he did not believe I had strength enough to reach Nauvoo. It was finally agreed, however, that I should go, but as it was thought that I could not stand riding in a wagon or carriage, they prepared a litter for me; I was carried down stairs and put upon it. A number of men assisted to carry me, some of whom had been engaged in the mob. As soon as I got down stairs, I felt much better and strengthened, so that I could talk; I suppose the effect of the fresh air.

When we had got near the outside of town, I remembered some woods that we had to go through, and telling a person near to call for Dr. Ells, who was riding a very good horse, I said: "Doctor, I perceive that the people are getting fatigued with carrying me; a number of Mormons live about two or three miles from here, near our route; will you ride to their settlement as quiet as possible, and have them come and meet us!" He started off on a gallop immediately. My object in this was to obtain protection in case of an attack, rather than to obtain help to carry me.

Very soon after the men from Carthage made one excuse after another, until they had all left, and I felt glad to get rid of them. I found that the tramping of those carrying me produced violent pain, and a sleigh was produced and attached to the hind end of Brother James Alred's waggon, a bed placed upon it, and I propped up on the bed. Mrs. Taylor rode with me, applying ice and ice-water to my wounds. As the sleigh was dragged over the grass, on the prairie, which was quite tall, it moved very easily and gave me very little pain.

When I got within five or six miles of Nauvoo, the brethren commenced to meet me from the city, and they increased in number as we grew nearer,

until there was a very large company of people of all ages and both sexes, principally, however, men.

For some time there had been almost incessant rain, so that in many low places in the prairie, it was from one to three feet deep in water, and at such places the brethren whom we met took hold of the sleigh, lifted it, and carried it over the water, and when we arrived in the neighbourhood of the city, where the roads were excessively muddy and bad, the brethren tore down the fences, and we passed through the fields.

Never shall I forget the difference of feeling that I experienced between the place that I had left and the one that I had now arrived at. I had left a lot of reckless, bloodthirsty murderers, and had come to the City of the Saints, the People of the Living God; Friends of Truth and Righteousness, thousands of whom stood there with warm, true hearts, to offer their friendship and services, and to welcome my return. It is true it was a painful scene, and brought sorrowful remembrances to mind, but to me it caused a thrill of joy to find myself once more in the bosom of my friends, and to meet with the cordial welcome of true, honest hearts. What was very remarkable, I found myself very much better after my arrival at Nauvoo than I was when I started on my journey, although I had travelled eighteen miles.

The next day, as some change was wanting, I told Mrs. Taylor that if she could send to Dr. Richards, he had my purse and watch, and they would find money in my purse.

Previous to the Doctor leaving Carthage, I told him that he had better take my purse and watch, for I was afraid the people would steal them. The Doctor had taken my pantaloon pocket, and put the watch in it with the purse, cut off the pocket, and tied a string round the top; it was in this position when brought home. My family, however, were not a little startled to find that my watch had been struck with a ball. I sent for my vest, and upon examination it was found that there was a cut, as if with a knife, in the vest pocket which had contained my watch. In the pocket the fragments of the glass were found literally ground to powder. It then occurred to me that a ball had struck me at the time I felt myself falling out of the window, and that it was this force that threw me inside. I had often remarked to Mrs. Taylor the singular fact of finding myself inside the room, when I felt a moment before, after being shot, that I was falling out, and I never could account for it until then; but here the thing was fully elucidated, and was rendered plain to my mind. I was indeed falling out, when some villain aimed at my heart. The ball struck my watch, and forced me back; if I had fallen out I should assuredly have been killed, if not by the fall by those around, and this ball, intended to despatch me, was turned by an overruling Providence into a messenger of mercy, and saved my life. I shall never forget the feelings of gratitude that I then experienced towards my heavenly Father; the whole scene was vividly portrayed before me, and my heart melted before the Lord. I felt the Lord had preserved me by a special act of mercy, that my time had not yet come, and that I had still a work to perform upon the earth.

(Signed) JOHN TAYLOR.

NOTES.

In addition to the above I give the following:—

Dr. Bernhisel informed me that Joseph, looking him full in the face, and as solemn as eternity, said: "I am going as a lamb to the slaughter, but I am as calm as a summer's morning. I have a conscience void of offence towards God and man." I heard him state, in reply to an interrogatory, made either by myself or some one in my hearing, in relation to the best course to pursue, "I am not now acting according to my judgment; others must counsel, and not me, for the present," or in words to the same effect.

The governor's remarks about the press may be partially correct, so far as the legal technicality was concerned, and the order of administering law. The proper way would perhaps have been for the City Council to have passed a law in regard to the removal of nuisances, and then for the Municipal Court to have ordered it to be abated on complaint. Be this as it may, it was only a variation in form, not in fact, for the Municipal Court formed part of the City Council, and all voted; and furthermore, some time after the murder, Governor Ford told me that the press ought to have been removed, but that it was bad policy to remove it as we did; that if we had only let a mob do it, instead of using the law, we could have done it without difficulty, and no one would have been implicated. Thus the governor, who would have winked at the proceedings of a mob, lent his aid to, or winked at, the proceedings of mob violence in the assassination of Joseph and Hyrum Smith, for removing a nuisance according to law, because of an alleged informality in the legal proceedings or a legal technicality.

I must here state that I do not believe Governor Ford would have planned the murder of Joseph and Hyrum Smith; but being a man that courted popular opinion, he had not the firmness to withstand the mob, even when that mob were seeking to imbrue their hands in the blood of innocence; he lent himself to their designs, and thus became a partaker of their evil deeds.

I will illustrate this vexed question with the following official paper, which appeared in the "Deseret News," No. 30:—

Two of the brethren arrived this evening (June 18th, 1844), from Carthage, and said that about 300 mobbers were assembled there, with the avowed intention of coming against Nauvoo. Also that Hamilton was paying a dollar per bushel for corn to feed their animals.

The following was published in the Warsaw Signal Office; I insert it as a specimen of the unparalleled corruption and diabolical falsehood of which the human race has become capable in this generation:—

At a mass meeting of the citizens of Hancock County, convened at Carthage on the 11th day of June, 1844, Mr. Knox was appointed President, John Doty and Lewis F. Evans, Vice-presidents, and William Y. Head, Secretary.

Henry Stephens, Esq., presented the following resolutions, passed at a meeting of the citizens of Warsaw, and urged the adoption of them as the sense of this meeting:—

PREAMBLE AND RESOLUTIONS.

WHEREAS information has reached us, about which there can be no question, that the authorities of Nauvoo did recently pass an ordinance declaring a Printing Press and Newspaper published by the opponents of the Prophet a nuisance, and in pursuance thereof did direct the Marshal of the city and his adherents to enter by force the building from whence the paper was issued, and violently (if necessary) to take possession of the press and printing materials, and thereafter to burn and destroy the same: And WHEREAS, in pursuance of said ordinance, the Marshal and his adherents, together with a mob of Mormons, did, after sunset on the evening of the 10th inst., violently enter said building in a tumultuous manner, burn and destroy the press and other materials found on the premises:

And WHEREAS Hyrum Smith did, in presence of the City Council and the citizens of Nauvoo, offer a reward for the destruction of the printing press and materials of the "Warsaw Signal,"—a newspaper also opposed to his interest:

And WHEREAS the liberty of the press is one of the cardinal principles of our Government, firmly guaranteed by the several constitutions of the States, as well as the United States:

And WHEREAS Hyrum Smith has within the last week publicly threatened the life of one of our valued citizens, THOS. C. SHARP, the editor of the "Signal:"

Therefore be it solemnly *Resolved* by the citizens of Warsaw in public meeting assembled,

That we view the recent ordinance of the city of Nauvoo, and the proceedings thereunder, as an outrage of an alarming character, revolutionary and tyrannical in its tendency, and being under colour of law, as calculated to subvert and destroy in the minds of the community all reliance on the law.

Resolved, That as a community we feel anxious, when possible, to redress our grievances by legal remedies; but the time has now arrived when the law has ceased to be a protection to our lives and property; a mob at Nauvoo, under a city ordinance, has violated the highest privilege in our government, and to seek redress in the ordinary mode would be utterly ineffectual.

Resolved, That the public threat made in the council of the city, not only to destroy our printing press, but to take the life of its editor, is sufficient, in connexion with the recent outrage, to command the efforts and the services of every good citizen to put an immediate stop to the career of the mad Prophet and his demoniac coadjutors. We must not only defend ourselves from danger, but we must resolutely carry the war into the enemy's camp. We do therefore declare that we will sustain our press and the editor at all hazards. That we will take full vengeance, terrible vengeance, should the lives of any of our citizens be lost in the effort. That we hold ourselves at all times in readiness to co-operate with our fellow-citizens in this State, Missouri, and Iowa, *to exterminate*, UTTERLY EXTERMINATE, the wicked and abominable Mormon leaders, the authors of our troubles.

Resolved, That a committee of five be appointed forthwith to notify all persons in our township *suspected* of being the tools of the Prophet to leave immediately on pain of INSTANT VENGEANCE. And we do recommend the

inhabitants of the adjacent townships to do the same, hereby pledging ourselves to render all the assistance they may require.

Resolved, That the time, in our opinion, has arrived when the adherents of Smith, as a body, should be driven from the surrounding settlements into Nauvoo; that the Prophet and his miscreant adherents should then be demanded at their hands, and if not surrendered, A WAR OF EXTERMINATION SHOULD BE WAGED, to the entire destruction, if necessary for our protection, of his adherents. And we do hereby recommend this resolution to the consideration of the several townships, to the Mass Convention to be held at Carthage, hereby pledging ourselves to aid to the utmost the complete consummation of the object in view, that we may thereby be utterly relieved of the alarm, anxiety, and trouble to which we are now subjected.

Resolved, That every citizen arm himself, to be prepared to sustain the resolutions herein contained.

Mr. Roosevelt rose and made a brief but eloquent speech, and called upon the citizens throughout the country to render efficient aid in carrying out the spirit of the resolutions. Mr. Roosevelt then moved a committee of seven be appointed by the chair to draft resolutions expressive of our action in future.

Mr. Catlin moved to amend the motion of Mr. Roosevelt, so that the committee should consist of one from each precinct; which motion, as amended, was adopted.

The chair then appointed the following: — Col. Levi Williams, Rocky Run Precinct; Joel Catlin, Augusta; Saml. Williams, Carthage; Elisha Worrell, Chili; Capt. Maddison, St. Mary's; John M. Ferris, Fountain Green; James Rice, Pilot Grove; John Carns, Bear Creek; O. L. Higbee, Nauvoo; Geo. Robinson, La Harpe; and Geo. Rockwell, Warsaw, were appointed said committee.

On motion of Mr. Sympson, Walter Bagby, Esq. was requested to address the meeting during the absence of the committee. He spoke long and eloquently upon the cause of our grievances, and expressed his belief that the time was now at hand when we were individually and collectively called upon to repel the innovations upon our liberties, and suggested that points be designated as places of encampment, at which to rendezvous our forces, that we may be ready when called upon for efficient action.

Dr. Barns, one of the persons who went with the officers to Nauvoo for the purpose of arresting the rioters, having just arrived, came into the meeting, and reported the result of their proceedings,—which was, that the persons charged in the writs were duly arrested, but taken from the officer's hands on a writ of *habeas corpus* from the Municipal Court, and discharged, and the following potent words entered upon the records, — HONOURABLY DISCHARGED.

On motion of O. C. Skinner, Esq., a vote of thanks was tendered to Dr. Barns for volunteering his services in executing said writs.

Francis M. Higbee was now loudly called for. He stated his personal knowledge of the Mormons from their earliest history, throughout their hellish career in Missouri and this State, which had been characterised by the darkest and most diabolical deeds which had ever disgraced humanity.

The committee appointed to draft resolutions brought in the following report, which after some considerable discussion was unanimously adopted:

Whereas the officer charged with the execution of a writ against Joseph

Smith and others, for riot in the County of Hancock, which said writ said officer has served upon said Smith and others; and whereas said Smith and others refuse to obey the mandate of said writ; and whereas, in the opinion of this meeting, it is impossible for said officer to raise a posse of sufficient strength to execute said writ; and whereas, it is the opinion of this meeting, that the riot is still progressing, and that violence is meditated and determined on, it is the opinion of this meeting that the circumstances of the case require the interposition of executive power: Therefore,

Resolved, That a deputation of two discreet men be sent to Springfield, to solicit such interposition.

2nd. *Resolved*, That said deputation be furnished with a certified copy of the resolution, and be authorized to obtain evidence by affidavit and otherwise in regard to the violence which has already been committed, and is still further meditated.

Dr. Evans here rose and expressed his wish that the above resolutions would not retard our operations, but that we would each one arm and equip ourselves forthwith.

The resolutions passed at Warsaw were again read by Dr. Barns, and passed by acclamation.

On motion of A. Sympson, Esq., the suggestion of Mr. Bagby, appointing places of encampment, was adopted, to wit: Warsaw, Carthage, Green Plains, Spilman's Landing, Chili, and La Harpe.

On motion, O. C. Skinner and Walter Bagby, Esqrs. were appointed a committee to bear the resolutions adopted by this meeting to his Excellency the Governor, requiring his executive interposition.

On motion of J. H. Sherman, a Central Corresponding Committee was appointed.

Ordered, That J. H. Sherman, H. T. Wilson, Chauncy Robinson, Wm. S. Freeman, Thos. Morrison, F. M. Higbee, Lyman Prentiss, and Stephen H. Tyler be said committee.

On motion of Geo. Rockwell,

Resolved, That constables in the different precincts hold themselves in readiness to obey the officer in possession of the writs, whenever called upon, in summoning the posse.

On motion the meeting adjourned.

JOHN KNOX, President.
JOHN DOTY, } Vice-presidents.
LEWIS F. EVANS, }
W. Y. HEAD, Secretary.

The following will conclude the "Expositor Question."

Nauvoo, June 14th, 1844.

SIR,—I write you this morning briefly to inform you of the facts relative to the removal of the press and fixtures of the "Nauvoo Expositor" as a nuisance.

The 8th and 10th instant were spent by the City Council of Nauvoo in receiving testimony concerning the character of the "Expositor," and the character and designs of the proprietors.

In the investigation it appeared evident to the Council that the proprietors were a set of unprincipled, lawless debauchees, counterfeiters, bogus

makers, gamblers, peace disturbers, and that the grand object of said proprietors was to destroy our constitutional rights and chartered privileges; to overthrow all good and wholesome regulations in society; to strengthen themselves against the municipality; to fortify themselves against the church of which I am a member, and destroy all our religious rights and privileges by libels, slanders, falsehoods, perjury, &c., and sticking at no corruption to accomplish their hellish purposes, and that said paper of itself was libellous of the deepest dye, and very injurious as a vehicle of defamation, tending to corrupt the morals, and disturb the peace, tranquillity, and happiness of the whole community, and especially that of Nauvoo.

After a long and patient investigation of the character of the "Expositor," and the characters and designs of its proprietors, the constitution, the charter (see addenda to Nauvoo charter from the Springfield charter, sec. 7), and all the best authorities on the subject (see Blackstone iii. 5, and n. &c. &c.)

The City Council decided that it was necessary for the "peace, benefit, good order, and regulations" of said city, "and for the protection of property," and for "the happiness and prosperity of the citizens of Nauvoo," that said "Expositor" should be removed; and declaring said "Expositor" a nuisance, ordered the Mayor to cause them to be removed without delay, which order was committed to the Marshal by due process, and by him executed the same day, by removing the paper, press, and fixtures into the streets, and burning the same; all which was done without riot, noise, tumult, or confusion, as has already been proved before the municipality of the city; and the particulars of the whole transaction may be expected in our next "Nauvoo Neighbour."

I send you this hasty sketch that your Excellency may be aware of the lying reports that are now being circulated by our enemies, that there has been a "*mob* at *Nauvoo*," and "*blood and thunder*," and "*swearing that two men were killed*," &c. &c., as we hear from abroad, are false, false as Satan himself could invent, and that nothing has been transacted here but what has been in perfect accordance with the strictest principles of law and good order on the part of the authorities of this city; and if your Excellency is not satisfied, and shall not be satisfied, after reading the whole proceedings, which will be forthcoming soon, and shall demand an investigation of our municipality before Judge Pope, or any legal tribunal at the Capitol, you have only to write your wishes and we will be forthcoming; we will not trouble you to file a writ or send an officer for us.

I remain as ever, a friend to truth, good order,

And your Excellency's humble servant,

(Signed) JOSEPH SMITH.

His Excellency Thomas Ford.

APPENDIX IV.

I THINK that the unpalatable assertion in the text will be proved by the following contrasted extracts from the London "Times," and the "Deseret News."

THE BLACK COUNTRY. — The reports of the assistant-commissioners engaged in the recent education inquiry contain some very painful notices of the state of morals in some parts of the kingdom. In collier villages in Durham, where the men earn high wages, which they know no way of spending but in the gratification of animal appetites, the condition of the people in respect to morals and manners, it is said, may not be described. Adultery is made a matter of mere jest, and incest also is frightfully common and seems to excite no disgust. In some of those parts girls mingle with boys at school till 13, 14, or 15 years of age, and that in schools not superintended by women; it is impossible to state the coarseness of manners that prevails in these schools. Coming south, into Staffordshire, we are told that in the union of Dudley, where boys and girls can earn high wages, their independence of their parents' aid to maintain them leads to a remarkable independence of conduct, and, in fact, no restraint is put upon their inclinations either by their parents or the opinion of the neighbourhood. It is held rather a shame to an unmarried woman, not to have had a child; and the assistant-commissioner, Mr. Coode, says that the details given to him by the most respectable and trustworthy witnesses would, if they could be reported, be discredited by most men of the world only acquainted with the ordinary profligacy of the poor; but he adds that, notwithstanding all this, the behaviour and manners in other respects of girls and women is not in public less decent than that in places of better repute, and it is generally asserted that this early corruption of females does not hinder them from being very good neighbours and excellent hard-working and affectionate wives and mothers. Education in this district is not much prized; it is a common saying, "The father went to the pit and he made a fortune, the son went to school and he lost it." But so much has been done by the upper classes in providing schools for the lower that education is gradually making its way, and many who cannot read are ashamed of their deficiency, and desirous to have their children taught. In a village where an energetic clergyman, who has adopted a rough, strong style of preaching, has succeeded in filling his church, Mr. Coode noticed during the service that all the people affected to find the place in the books furnished to them, but full half the books were held upside down, and within his observation not one was open at the right place, except where some young person taught to read in the school was by to find it.

An Ordinance relating to Houses of Ill-fame and Prostitution.

Sec. 1. Be it ordained by the City Council of Great Salt Lake City, that any person or persons who shall be found guilty of keeping, or shall be an

inmate of any house of ill-fame, or place for the practice of fornication, or adultery; or knowingly own or be interested as proprietor or landlord of any such house; or any person or persons harbouring or keeping about his, her or their private premises any whoremaster, strumpet or whore, knowing them to be guilty of following a lewd course of life; shall be liable to a fine for each offence not exceeding one hundred dollars, or imprisonment not exceeding six months, or both fine and imprisonment at the discretion of the court having jurisdiction. In a prosecution under this section, the person having charge of any house or place shall be deemed the keeper thereof.

Sec. 2. It shall be lawful on the trial of any person before said court, charged with either of the offences named in the preceding section, for the city to introduce in support of such charge, testimony of the general character and reputation of the person or place touching the offence, or charge set forth in the complaint, and the defendant may likewise resort to testimony of a like nature for the purpose or disproving such charge.

Sec. 3. No person shall be incapacited or excused from testifying, touching any offence committed by another, against any of the provisions set forth in the first section of this ordinance by reason of his or her having participated in such crime; but the evidence which may be given by such person shall in no case be used against the person so testifying.

Sec. 4. The word adultery as made use of in this ordinance shall be construed to mean the unlawfully cohabiting together of two persons when either one or both of such persons are married; and the word fornication shall be construed to mean the cohabiting together of two unmarried persons.

Passed Dec. 30th, 1860.

A. O. Smoot, Mayor.

Robert Campbell, City Recorder.

APPENDIX V.

CHRONOLOGICAL ABSTRACT OF MORMON HISTORY.

1801. June 1. Birth of Mr. Brigham Young, at Wittingham, Vermont, U. S. In this year Mr. Heber C. Kimball also was born (June 14th).

1805. Dec. 23. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., son of Mr. Joseph Smith, sen., generally called "Old Father Smith," and Lucy Mack, known as "Mother Smith," born at Sharon, Windsor Co. Vermont.

1812. A book called the "Manuscript Found" was presented to Mr. Patterson, a bookseller at Pittsburgh, Penn., by Mr. Solomon Spalding, or Spaulding, of Crawford, Penn.; born in Ashford Co., and a graduate of Dartmouth College. The author died, the bookseller followed him in 1826, and the book fell into the hands of a printer's compositor, Sidney Rigdon, one of the earliest Mormon converts. Anti-Mormons identify parts of the "Book of Mormon" with the "Manuscript Found." The Saints deny the existence of a Patterson, and assert that Mr. Spaulding's book was a mere historical and idolatrous romance concerning the Ten Lost Tribes, altogether different from their Biblion. They trace the calumny to a certain Doctor (so called because a seventh son) Philastus Hurlbert, or Hurlbut, an apostate excommunicated for gross immorality, and bound over in $500 to keep the peace, after threatening to murder Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. And they observe that in those early days their Prophet was too unlearned a man to adapt or to alter a manuscript.

1814. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., powerfully awakened by the preaching of Mr. Lane, an earnest Methodist minister.

1815. Mr. and Mrs. Smith removed with their family—Alvin, Hyrum, Sophronia, Joseph, Samuel, Ephraim, William, and Catherine from Vermont to New York. They first lived at Palmira, Wayne Co., for ten years, and then passed on to Manchester, Ontario Co., the site of the Hill Cumorah, where they tarried eleven or twelve years.

1820. Many religious revivals in Western New York. Mr. Joseph Smith becomes partial to Methodism (J. Hyde, chap. viii). Early in the spring of the year occurred Mr. Joseph Smith, jun.'s first or preparatory vision announcing his ministry.

1823. Sept. 20. Second vision; the Angel of the Lord revealed in rather a solemn way to Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., the existence of the Gold Plates, which, according to Anti-Mormons, he and his brother Hyrum had been employed in forging and fabricating for some years. On the next day (22nd), Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. opened the place where the Plates were deposited and saw them.

1825. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., was employed by a person called Stronds to dig for him, near Hartwich, Oswego City, N. Y. Money diggers were then common in that part of the State, seeking the buried treasures of Capt. Kidd, the buccaneer. Near Hartwich, between the years 1818-1832, lived Mrs. Spaulding, and Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., stole the "Manuscript Found" from a trunk full of papers. (J. H.)

1827. Jan. 18. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., married Miss Emma Hale, daughter of Isaac Hale, of South Bainbridge, Chenango Co., N. Y. This person afterwards became the Cyria Electa, or Elect Lady, and ended by apostatising and marrying a Gentile.

Sept. 22. The Golden Plates which the angel announced were taken up from the Hill Cumorah with a mighty display of celestial machinery, and the Breast Plate and the Urim and Thummim were found. According to Gentiles, the latter was a "peep stone stolen from Willard Chase."

1828. Feb. Martin Harris, a farmer from whom Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. had borrowed $50 to defray expenses of printing the "Book of Mormon," submitted a transcript of the Characters to Prof. Anthon and Dr. Mitchell of N. Y. The former pronounced them to be a "singular scroll," and "evidently copied after the Mexican Calendar given by Humboldt."

July. Translation of "Book of Mormon" suspended in consequence of Martin Harris stealing (116–118?) pages of the manuscript, which were never replaced. For this reason he was not enrolled amongst the glorious first six converts to Mormonism.

1829. April 16. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. saw O. Cowdery the first time. Translation of "Book of Mormon" resumed; O. Cowdery acting as secretary.

May 15. John the Baptist ordained into the Aaronic priesthood Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. and O. Cowdery, his amanuensis, who forthwith baptized each other.

June or July. The Plates of the "Book of Mormon" were shown by the Angel of God to the three earthly witnesses—Oliver Cowdery, David Whitmer, and Martin Harris.

1830. The "Book of Mormon" was translated and published, and this year is No. 1 of the Mormon Æra.

April 6. The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints was organised at Manchester, N. Y. It began with six members or elders being ordained, viz.: Mr. Joseph Smith, sen., Mr. Hyrum Smith, Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., Mr. Samuel Smith, Mr. Oliver Cowdery, and Mr. Joseph Knight. The Sacrament was adminis-

tured, and hands were laid on for the gift of the Holy Ghost on this first occasion in the Church.

April 11. Oliver Cowdery preached the first public discourse on this dispensation, and the principles of the Gospel as revealed to Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. During this month the first miracle was performed by the power of God in Colesville, Broom Co. N.Y.

June 1. First Conference of the Church at Fayette, Seneca Co. N. Y. During this month Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. was twice arrested on false pretences, tried, and acquitted; whilst his wife, by special revelation, was entitled "Elect Lady" and "Daughter of God."

Aug. Parley P. Pratt and Sidney Rigdon were converted.

Sept. 19. O. Pratt baptized.

Oct. The first missionaries to the Lamanites were appointed.

Dec. Sidney Rigdon visited the Prophet.

1831. Jan. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. set out for Kirtland, the birthplace of Sidney Rigdon.

Feb. 1. Mr. Joseph Smith jun. arrived at Kirtland, Ohio, the first of his many Hegiras.

Feb. 9. God commanded the elders to go forth in pairs and preach.

March 8. John Whitmer was appointed Church recorder and historian by revelation.

June 6. The Melchisedek, or Superior Priesthood, was first conferred upon the elders.

June 10–19. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. and sundry Saints transferred themselves from Kirtland, Ohio, to Jackson Co. Missouri, where they arrived in the middle of July. The Land of Zion was dedicated and consecrated for the gathering of the Saints, and the first log was laid in Kaw township, twelve miles west of Independence, Mo.

Aug. 2–3. Site for the temple of New Zion dedicated, a little west of Independence.

Aug. 4. First Conference of the Church in the land of Zion held.

Aug. 9. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. returned from Independence to Kirtland, and arriving about the end of the month (27th?) established the fatal "Kirtland Safety Society Bank."

1832. March 25. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. and Sidney Rigdon were tarred and feathered by a mob for attempting to establish communism and dishonourable dealing, forgery, and swindling. (J. H.)

March 26. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. acknowledged the President of the High Priesthood at a General Council of the Church; visited his flock in Missouri.

April 2. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. left Ohio for Missouri, and arrived at Independence on the 24th.

April 14. Mr. Brigham Young, converted by Elder Samuel Smith, and baptised by Eleazar Millard, in this year went to Kirtland, Ohio, and became a devoted follower of the Prophet.

May 1. At an Œcumenical Council held at Independence, Mo., it was decided to print the "Book of Doctrines and Covenants."

May 6. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. left Missouri for Kirtland, where he arrived in June.

June. The first Mormon periodical, the "Evening and Morning Star," was published by the Church, under the superintendence of Mr. W. W. Phelps, at Independence, Mo., where the Saints numbered 1200 souls.

Nov. 6. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun.'s son Joseph born at Kirtland, Ohio.

In this year Mr. Heber C. Kimball was baptized.

1833. Jan. 22. Gift of tongues conferred.

Feb. 2. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. finished his inspired retranslation of the New Testament.

March 18. The Quorum of Three High Priests, viz. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., Sidney Rigdon, a Campbellite or reformed Baptist preacher, and Frederick G. Williams, an early convert, was organised as a Presidency of the Church in Kirtland, and forthwith proceeded to have visions of the Saviour, of concourses of angels, &c. &c.

July 2. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. finished the translation of the Bible.

July 20. A mob of Missourians in Jackson City, tore down the new newspaper office, tarred, feathered, and whipped the Saints. Thereupon, three days afterwards, the Saints agreed with their persecutors to leave Jackson Co., and laid the corner-stone of the Lord's House in Kirtland.

Sept. 11. A printing press was established at Kirtland for the publication of the "Latter Day Saints' Messenger and Advocate," Bishop Partridge being at the head of the Church in Zion.

Oct. 8. Elders W. W. Phelps and O. Hyde presented to the Governors of Missouri a petition from the Saints of Jackson City praying for redress.

Oct. 31. Ten Mormon houses destroyed by the populace in Jackson Co. Two of a mob were killed by the Saints. "This was the first blood shed, and the Mormons shed it" (J. H.). Until Nov. 4, the persecutions continued, till the Saints evacuated Jackson Co. and fled to Clay Co.

Dec. Persecutions raged against the Saints in Van Buren Co., Mo.

Dec. 18. Mr. Joseph Smith, sen. was ordained Patriarch.

Dec. 27. The mob permitted Messrs. Davis and Kelley to carry the establishment of the "Evening and Morning Star" to Liberty, Clay Co., Mo., where they began to publish the "Missouri Enquirer."

1834. Feb. 17. A First Presidency of Three, and a High Council of Twelve, were first organised.

Feb. 20. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. began to raise a small army for carrying out his dreams of physical conquest and temporal sovereignty (J. H.); also to defend himself against the Missourian mob.

May 8. At a Conference of Elders in Kirtland, the body ecclesiastic was first named "The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-Day Saints." The body of Zelph, the Lamanite, was dug up by Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. in Illinois.

May 5. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. marched on Missouri with 150 Mormons (?). In other words, left Kirtland for Missouri with a company for the redemption of Zion.

June 10. The cholera broke out in "Zion's Camp" soon after its arrival in Missouri, and a terrible storm scattered the mob.

June 26. The Camp, after suffering from cholera, arrived at Liberty, Clay Co., Mo.

June 29 (or Nov. 29?). Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. and Oliver Cowdery, first make a "Conditional Covenant with the Lord" that they would pay tithing. This was its first introduction among the Latter-Day Saints.

July 9. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. left Clay Co. and returned to Kirtland, where he arrived about the end of the month.

1835. Feb. 14. A Quorum of Twelve Apostles was organised, amongst whom were Brigham Young and Heber Kimball. The former, being then thirty-four years old, was appointed the head of the Apostolic College, and receiving the gift of tongues, was sent on a missionary tour towards the East.

Feb. 21. First meeting of the Twelve Apostles.

Feb. 28. The organisation of the Quorum of Seventies began.

May 3. The Twelve left Kirtland on their first mission.

July. The rolls of Egyptian papyrus, which contained the writings of Abraham and Joseph in Egypt *, were obtained in the early part of this month.

Aug. 17. At a General Assembly at Kirtland, the "Book of Doctrines and Covenants" was accepted as a rule of faith and practice, including the "Lectures on Faith" delivered by Sidney Rigdon.

1836. Jan. 4. A Hebrew professorship established at Kirtland.

Jan. 21. The authorities of the Church in Kirtland met in the Temple School-room, and anointed and blessed one another, when visions of heaven were opened to many.

March 24–27. The House of the Lord in Kirtland, costing $40,000, was dedicated.

April 3. In the House of the Lord, the Saviour, Moses, Elias, and Elijah appeared to Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. and O. Cowdery, and delivered the keys of the several priesthoods, and unlimited power in things temporal and spiritual.

May. The Mormons were requested by the citizens to remove from Clay Co., Mo., to Carroll, Davies, and Caldwell Counties, and founded the city of "Far West" in Caldwell Co.

1837. June 19. Messrs. H. Kimball and O. Hyde, and on the 13th W.

* "Nemo mortalium omnibus horis sapit." is well proved by the Mormon attempts to decipher hieroglyphics. M. Remy has given, with the assistance of M. Théodule Devéria, a terrible blow to the Book of Abraham in the seventeenth note at the end of his second volume.

Richards, set out to convert England (returned in July, 1838). This was the first organised foreign mission.

July 20. Elders H. C. Kimball, O. Hyde, W. Richards, J. Goodson, T. Russell, and Priest J. Fielding, leaving Kirtland on June 13, sailed from N. Y. in the ship "Garrick" (July 1), and landed at Liverpool. Three days afterwards Preston had the honour of first hearing the preaching of the Gospel as revealed to Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. The first baptism by divine authority was performed by immersion in the river Ribble (July 30), and the first confirmation of members took place at Walkerford Chaidgey (August 4).

July 27. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. was prosecuted with a vexatious lawsuit at Painsville, Ohio.

Sept. 27. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. left Kirtland to establish gathering places, and visit the Saints in Missouri, and arrived in Far West about the last of October or the first of November.

Dec. 10. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. arrived in Kirtland from Missouri.

Dec. 25. The first Conference of Mormons in England was held in the Cock Pit, Preston. An extensive apostacy befell during this month in Kirtland, Ohio; and the "Safety Society Bank" failed, to the great scandal of Mormondom.

1838. Jan. 12. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and Sidney Rigdon fled from Kirtland to escape mob violence, and arrived at Far West on March 14.

April 12 and 13. Martin Harris, Oliver Cowdery, and David Whitmer, the three witnesses to the "Book of Mormon" (others say O. Cowdery, D. Whitmer, and L. E. Johnson), charged with lying, theft, counterfeiting, and defaming the Prophet's character, were cut off from the church (J. H.). Orson Hyde, Thos. B. Marsh, W. W. Phelps, and others apostatised, accused the Prophet of being accessory to several thefts and murders, and of meditating a tyranny over that part of Missouri, and eventually over the whole republic (J. H.).

April 20. Elders H. C. Kimball and O. Hyde sailed from Liverpool on their return home.

July 4. Sidney Rigdon in an anniversary discourse called "Sidney's Last Sermon," threatened Gentiles and apostates with violence; the "Danite Band," according to Anti-Mormons, was at once organised.

July 6. The Saints were again persecuted; 565 Saints left Kirtland for Missouri, and Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. was carried before Judge King.

Aug. 6. Troubles in Gallatin Co., occasioned by elections. The Mormons say that persecutions of the Saints commenced in Davies Co., Mo.

Aug. and Sept. Emeutes between the mob and the Mormons: the latter seized 60 to 80 stand of arms at Richmond, and fired on the militia, mistaking them for the mob. The militia, after losing several of their number, returned the fire, killing Mr. D. W. Patten (J. H.).

Sept. 7. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun. was tried before Judge King of Davies Co.

Sept. 25. The Saints, attempting political rule in Davies Co., were attacked by the citizen mob, who murmured at being placed under Mormon rule (J. H.), and forced the intruders to vacate. Mr. Brigham Young fled for his life to Quincy, Ill.

Oct. 1. After a battle in Carroll Co., Mo., the Saints agreed to evacuate the town of De Witt, Carroll Co. (Oct. 11).

Oct. 25. At the battle of Crooked River, D. W. Patten, alias Capt. Fearnot, the head of the Danites, was killed (Mormon calendar).

Oct. 27. Gen. Lilburn W. Boggs, of Mo., issued his "extermination order" to Gen. J. B. Clark.

Oct. 30. The militia (mob), to revenge the death of their comrades, slaughtered 16 Mormons and 2 boys, at Haun's Mills.

Oct. 31. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and others, were betrayed by J. M. Hinckle.

Nov. 1. Gen. J. B. Clark, with a military force, surrounded Far West, and took prisoner (by stratagem) Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., Mr. Hyrum Smith, and 40 others, who were placed in jail, tried by court-martial, and sentenced to be shot — a catastrophe prevented by Gen. Doniphan. The Saints gave up their arms, and Far West was plundered by the mob.

Nov. 2. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and his fellow prisoners, left Far West for Independence.

Nov. 4. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and his fellow prisoners were kindly received at Independence.

Nov. 12. Mr. Joseph Smith, and 52 others, were tried at Richmond, Ray Co., Mo., and after a narrow escape from being shot by the militia, were handed to the civil authorities, placed in close confinement in Liberty jail and released.

Dec. The Saints withdrew into Illinois.

1839. Feb. 14 and March 26. Mr. Brigham Young and others fled from Far West to Illinois, and attempted to relay the foundations of the Temple at the New Jerusalem, 12 miles west of Independence, Jackson Co., Mo.

April 6. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and his fellow prisoners, were removed for trial from Richmond to Gallatin, Davies Co.

April 9. The trial of the prisoners commenced before Judge King.

April 15. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., and his companions, left Davies for Boone Co., and on the way escaped from their jailor-guards.

April 18–22. The Saints evacuated Far West, and arrived with Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., at Quincy, Illinois.

April 26. Mr. Brigham Young privily laid the foundation of a Temple at Independence (M. Remy). A Conference was held at the Temple Lot, in Far West, in fulfilment of a revelation given, July 8, 1838. (Appendix to "Compendium of Faith and Doctrines," &c.)

May 9. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., visited Commerce, Hancock Co., Ill., at the invitation of Dr. Isaac Galland, of whom he obtained, gratis, a large tract of land to induce the Mormons to immigrate,

and upon the receipt of revelation called his people around him, and sold them the town lots (J. H.).

June 11. The first house was built by the Saints at Commerce, a new "State of Zion," afterwards called Nauvoo — the beautiful site — which presently contained 15,000 souls.

June 27. Orson Hyde, the Apostle, returned to the Church.

July 4. P. P. Pratt and Morris Phelps escaped from the jail in Columbia, Boone Co., Mo.

Aug. 29. Elders P. P. Pratt and O. Pratt set out on their first mission to England, followed on Sept. 18 by Elders Brigham Young and H. C. Kimball, and on Sept. 20, 21 by Elders G. A. Smith, R. Hedlock, and T. Turley: O. Hyde, though previously appointed by revelation, did not accompany them (J. H.). The result was a body of 769 converts.

Oct. 29. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., S. Rigdon, E. Higbee, and O. P. Rockwell, the Chief of the Danites, set out from Nauvoo as delegates from the Church to the General Government, and arrived on the 28th Nov. at Washington, D. C., seeking to obtain redress from Congress for their losses in Missouri.

1840. March 4. Mr. Joseph Smith, jun., returned from Washington to Nauvoo.

March 9. Elders Young, Kimball, P. Pratt, O. Pratt, Smith, and Hedlock, sailed from N. Y. for England.

April 6. The English mission from N. Y. landed at Liverpool.

April 15. Elder O. Hyde set out from Nauvoo on a mission to Jerusalem.

April 21. Commerce was finally named Nauvoo.

May 27. The first number of the "Latter-Day Saints' Millennial Star," was published at Manchester.

June 6. The first company of emigrating Saints sailed from Liverpool and reached N. Y. in July 20. About the 1st of June appeared the first English edition of the "Latter-Day Saints' Hymn Book."

Aug. 7. The first regular company of 200 emigrants, conducted by Elders Theodore Turley, a returning missionary, and William Clayton, an early English convert, sailed from Liverpool to N. Y.

Sept. 14. Mr. Joseph Smith, sen. died at Nauvoo.

Oct. 3. The Mormons began to build their Temple, and petitioned the legislature of Illinois for the incorporation of Nauvoo.

Dec. 10. The Municipal Charter of the City of Nauvoo became law.

1841. Jan. The first English edition of the "Book of Mormon" was published.

Feb. 4. The Nauvoo Corporation Act, passed in the preceding winter, began to be in force. The Nauvoo Legion was organised by Mr. Joseph Smith, who made himself its Lieut.-General.

April 6. The corner stone of the House of the Lord in Nauvoo was laid. A second mission, composed of Elders B. Young, H. C. Kimball, O. Pratt, W. Woodruff, J. Taylor, G. A. Smith, and W. Richards, left N. Y. on April 2, and landed at Liverpool on May 20.

June 5. Mr. Joseph Smith was arrested, under a requisition from the Governor of the State of Missouri, was tried at Monmouth, Ill., on the 9th, and was acquitted on the next day.

July 1. Messrs. Brigham Young and Heber Kimball returned from England.

Nov. 8. The baptismal font, in Nauvoo Temple, was dedicated.

1842. March 1. "Book of Abraham" translated and published in "Times and Seasons."

May 6. Attempt to assassinate Lieut.-Gov. Boggs, attributed to O. P. Rockwell.

May 19. Mr. Joseph Smith made Mayor of Nauvoo.

Aug. 6. Mr. Joseph Smith prophesied that the Saints would be driven to the Rocky Mountains.

Aug. 8. Mr. Joseph Smith arrested a second time under circumstances similar to those of the first.

Dec. 7. Mr. O. Hyde returned from his mission to Palestine.

Dec. 26. Mr. Joseph Smith, charged with assassination, was arrested a third time under a requisition from the Governor of the State of Missouri.

In this year polygamy began to be whispered about Nauvoo (J. H.).

1843. Jan. 5. Mr. Joseph Smith acquitted at Springville.

Jan. 20. Mr. O. Pratt received back into the Church.

May 6. Lieut.-Gov. L. W. Boggs (under Governor D. Dunklin), of Missouri (who had offended the Mormons by driving them from the State in 1838), was shot in the mouth through an open window, an act generally attributed to O. P. Rockwell, Chief of the Danites, "with the connivance, and under the instructions of Joseph Smith" (J. H.). In this year Mr. Joseph Smith became Mayor of Nauvoo, vice J. C. Bennett "cut off for imitating Smith in his spiritual wifedom" (J. H.). Anti-Mormons declare, that in 1843, polygamy was enjoined a second time, but not practised till 1852.

June 23. Mr. Joseph Smith again arrested, and released on July 2.

July 12. Revelation enjoining polygamy received.

Aug. 30. Gen. J. A. Bennett baptised.

Nov. 4. Mr. Joseph Smith sent his letters to the candidates for the Presidency of the U. S.

Nov. 28. Mr. Joseph Smith addresses a memorial to Congress respecting the transactions at Missouri.

1844. Feb. 7. Mr. Joseph Smith issued his address as candidate for the Presidency of the U. S.

May 17. Mr. Joseph Smith was carried in triumph through the streets of Nauvoo.

May 4. Francis M. Higbee, expelled for disobedience from the Church, prosecuted Mr. Joseph Smith for slander, and arrested him under a capias: the defendant then sued out a habeas corpus before the Municipal Court of Nauvoo of which he was Mayor.

May 6. Dr. R. D. Foster and Mr. William Law, having libelled, in the "Expositor" paper, Mr. Joseph Smith, accusing him of having taken to spiritual wife Mrs. Foster, were punished by the marshal

and municipal officers, who, with a posse, broke the press as a nuisance, and burned the types. The libellers fled, and took out a warrant against Mr. Joseph Smith and others, who resisted and repelled the officer in charge, whereupon the militia was ordered out.

June 18. The Gentiles armed against the Mormons.

June 17. Mr. Joseph Smith arrested and released.

June 24. Gov. Ford, of Illinois, persuaded the Smiths, under the pledge of his word, and the faith and honour of the State, to yield up their arms, and sent them prisoners under the charge of 60 militia men, the Carthage Greys, a highly hostile body, commanded by Capt. Smith, to Carthage, the Capital of Hancock Co., 18 to 20. miles from Nauvoo, where 5000 Mormons were in arms.

June 25. The prisoners were arrested by the constable on a charge of treason.

June 26. The governor again pledged himself for the personal safety of his prisoners.

June 27 (Thursday). A body of 200 armed Missourians, with their faces painted and blackened, broke into Carthage jail, and at 5 P.M. murdered, in a most cowardly and brutal manner, Mr. Joseph Smith and his brother Hyrum, and desperately wounded Mr. John Taylor; Dr. Willard Richards alone escaping.

Aug. 15. The Twelve Apostles, with Mr. Brigham Young at the head, assumed the Presidency of the Church, and addressed an Encyclical to "all the Saints in the world."

Oct. 7. Mr. Brigham Young, the President of the Twelve Apostles, came from Boston, and succeeded to the Presidency of the Church, defeating Sidney Rigdon, who was forthwith cut off, and delivered over to the buffetings of Satan.

Nov. 17. Mr. David Smith, son of the Prophet, born at the Nauvoo Mansion.

1845. Feb. The Mormon leaders determined to abandon Nauvoo.

May. The capstone of the Mormon Temple was laid, and endowments began.

Sept. 11. Twenty-nine Mormon houses burnt by the Gentiles.

Sept. 24. The Charter of Nauvoo was repealed by the State legislature. The authorities of the Church made a treaty with the mob to evacuate the "Beautiful City" on the following spring. Several places were proposed; Vancouver's Island by Mr. John Taylor, Texas by Mr. Lyman Wight, California by others: at last they chose some valley in the Rocky Mountains (J. H.).

1846. Jan. Baptism for the dead was administered in the Mississippi River; on the 20th a band of Mormon pioneers left Nauvoo, and "located" at Council Bluffs, Iowa.

Feb. The first Mormon Exodus began with this month: 2000 souls crossed the frozen Mississippi *en route* for Council Bluffs.

April 24. The Exiled Saints arrived at Garden Grove, Iowa T.

May 1. Dedication of the Temple at Nauvoo.

May 10. The Pioneer Camp of the Saints arrived at Mount Pisgah, Iowa T.

June — July. The Mormon battalion (500 men), on being called for by the general Government, set out for the Mexican campaign. "Mr. Brigham Young sells a company of his brethren for $20,000." (J. H.). "You shall have your battalion at once, if it has to be a class of our elders," said Mr. Brigham Young (Capt. H. Stansbury).

Sept. 10, 13. After three days of fighting the few surviving Saints were expelled from Nauvoo in a "cruel, cowardly, and brutal manner."

Sept. 16. The trustees of the Church in Nauvoo made a treaty with the mob for the surrender of their city, and its immediate evacuation by the remnant of the Saints. Towards the end of this year, and the beginning of the next, the Quorum of Three was reorganised at a special conferrence, held at Council Bluffs, Iowa, Mr. Brigham Young nominating his coadjutors. The "Twelve" delivered themselves of an epistle to the Saints, urging them to recommence the gathering.

1847. April 14. The pioneer band, 143 men, headed by Mr. Brigham Young, and driving seventy waggons, left winter quarters, Omaha Nation, on the west bank of the Missouri river, and followed Colonel Fremont's trail over the Rocky Mountains.

July 23rd. Messrs. O. Pratt, W. Woodruff, and a few others arrived at the valley of the Great Salt Lake.

July 24th. Mr. Brigham Young and the main body entered the valley on this day, which became a solemn anniversary in the Church. The Mormons proceeded to lay the foundations of the city.

Oct. 31. Mr. Brigham Young returned to Council Bluffs.

1848. Feb. 20. The emigration from England re-opened after a suspension of two years.

May. Mr. Brigham Young (whose appointment had been confirmed by a general conference held at Kanesville, Iowa), left winter quarters the second time, and followed by Mr. H. C. Kimball and the mass of the Saints, reached the Promised Land in September.

Sept. Some Mormons who had started from N. Y. for San Francisco, expecting to find the Church in California or Vancouver's Island, arrived in Great Salt Lake City from the west.

Nov. 10. The temple in Nauvoo burnt.

1849. March 5. At a convention held in Gt. S. L. City, the constitution of the State of Deseret was drafted, and the legislature was elected under its provisions.

July 2. Delegates sent to Washington, petitioned for admission into the Union as a free sovereign and independent state.

August. Captain Stansbury and Lieutenant Gunnison, T. E., by order of the Federal Government, surveyed Gt. S. L. Valley.

Sep. 9. A bill organising Utah Territory was signed by President Fillmore. The Perpetual Emigration Fund was organised. Five Yutas were killed in battle by Captain John Scott and his Mormons.

1850. April 6. The assembly met, and Utah Territory was duly organised.

May 27. The walls of the temple at Nauvoo were blown down by a hurricane.

June 14. The first missionaries to Scandinavia landed in Copenhagen, Denmark.

June 15. The first number of the "Deseret News" appeared under the editorship of Dr. Willard Richards.

August 12. The first baptisms in Denmark by legal authority in this Dispensation took place.

Sept. 9. The "Act" for organising the Territory of Utah became a law. Mr. Brigham Young was appointed Governor and Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Utah territory, by President Fillmore, who signed the Act. The judges, Brocchus, Day, and Brandeburg and Mr. Sec. Harris, arrived at Gt. S. L. City.

Sept. 22. Judge Brocchus insulted the people, and accompanied by the other Federal officers fled from the Territory.

Oct. 13. The first company of P. E. Fund emigrants arrived in Gt. S. L. City from the United States.

Dec. 7. The first branch of the Church in France was organised at Paris.

In 1850 was the Indian war. Mr. Higbee was the first white settler slain, and many of the Yutas were killed.

1851. Jan. 9. Gt. S. L. City was incorporated.

Feb. 8. Mr. Brigham Young sworn in as Governor of Utah.

April 5. Legislature of Provisional State of Deseret dissolved. The Legislative Assembly was elected under the Territorial Bill. A memorial signed by 13,000 names was forwarded to H. B. M's Government, proposing for a relief by emigration of a portion of the poorer subjects to colonise Oregon or Vancouver's Island, the latter being about the dimensions of England.

April 7. The Tabernacle was built, and at a General Conference in Gt. S. L. City, it was voted to build a Temple.

Sept. 22. Opening of the Legislature of Utah Territory. Great trouble with the Government of the U. S. fomented by the Federal officials' march. The Legislature forbade by ordinances the sale of arms, ammunition, and spirituous liquors to the Indians.

Dec. 13. Parovan City on Centre Creek, Iron Co., U. T. founded.

1852. June. Fifteen Frenchmen baptized in Paris.

Aug. 29. The revelation on celestial law of marriage, alias polygamy (bearing date 1843), was published by Mr. Brigham Young.

Sept. 3. The first company of Perpetual Emigration Fund converts from Europe reached Gt. S. L. City.

Dec. 13. The Legislative Assembly of Utah Territory met for the first time. The judges and the Secretary of State appointed by President Pierce, came to hand.

1853. Jan. 17. The Deseret Iron Company was chartered by the legislature of Utah Territory.

Jan. 25. The missionary elders O. Spencer and J. Houtz, arrived in Berlin, Prussia, and were banished 2nd February.

Feb. 14. Temple Block was consecrated, ground was broken for the foundation of the Temple, and the excavations began.

March 7. The first missionaries to Gibraltar arrived there.

April 6. Corner stone of new Temple laid with religious rites.

In the summer (July) and autumn of this year, were serious Indian troubles. At 6 A.M. Oct. 20th, Lieut. J. W. Gunnison and eight men of his party, including the botanist M. Creutzfeldt, were massacred on border of Sevier River, twenty miles N. of Lake Sevier.

Nov. 1. First number of the "Journal of Discourses" was published in England. This year Keokuk was made the outfitting place for emigrants.

1854. Jan. New alphabet adopted by University of Deseret.

April 7. Mr. J. M. Grant was appointed to the First Presidency, vice W. Richards, deceased on March 11th.

May 23. The patriarch John Smith died, and was succeeded by another John Smith, son of Hyrum Smith, and nephew of the Prophet.

June 28. John Smith, son of Hyrum Smith, was appointed Patriarch over the Church.

Aug. Colonel Steptoe, commanding about 1000 Federal troops, arrived at Gt. S. L. City.

Sept. 9. At the instance of Colonel Steptoe, who refused to resign his military commission, Mr. Brigham Young was reappointed Governor, and held the office until 1857. Even the Gentiles memorialised in his favour.

1855. Jan. 29. Walchor, alias Wakara, alias Walker, chief of Yuta Indians, died (was secretly put to death and buried by Jordan, Mr. Chandless).

May 5. Endowment House in Gt. S. L. City consecrated.

May 11. Treaty of peace concluded with the Yuta Indians.

May. Colonel Steptoe, after a stay of six months, marched with the U. S. cavalry to California.

August (July?). Joseph Drummond, Surveyor-General Burr, and other U. S. officials, arrived at Gt. S. L. City.

In the fall of this year one-third of the crops was destroyed by drought and grasshoppers.

Oct. A branch of the Church was organised in Dresden, (15th), Elder O. Spencer died on the 20th. The First Presidency of the Church proposed in a general epistle that Saints emigrating by the Perpetual Emigration Fund, should cross the prairies and Rocky Mountains with hand carts.

Dec. 10. The local legislature met for the first time at Fillmore, the territorial capital, and passed a bill authorising an election of Delegates to a Territorial Convention, for the purpose of forming a State Constitution, and to petition Congress for the admission of Utah into the Union. They also passed a bill authorising a census.

Most of the Mormons became polygamists. (J. H.)

1856. March 17. A convention of delegates met in Gt. S. L. City, and adopted a State constitution, sending Messrs. John Taylor and George A. Smith, Apostles, both as delegates to Washington, with a view to obtaining admission into the Union as a State. No answer was returned. During the very severe winter and spring half the stock perished by frost, and grain became very scarce.

May. Judge W. W. Drummond left Gt. S. L. City, after forwarded false charges of rebellion, burning the library and destroying the archives; these reports caused all the troubles with the U. S.

The practice of tithe-paying was introduced among the Saints in Europe. Iowa City was made the outfit point for the Plains.

June. Lucy Mack, the Prophet's mother, died.

Sept. 20. The first hand cart train crossed the Plains, and arrived at Gt. S. L. City.

1857. (The winter of Mormon discontent) March. Judge Drummond reported calumnies against the Mormons.

April. Surveyor-General Burr, and other U. S. officials, left Utah Territory and returned to the U.S.

The Territorial Legislature petitioned Congress to send better officers, or to permit the Mormons to appoint *bond fide* citizens and residents.

Mail communication with the States — the "Y Express" established by Mr. Brigham Young — was cut off, to keep the Mormons ignorant of the steps taken against them, and this continued for nearly a year. The Press in the U. S. generally opined that the Mormons were to be "wiped out."

May 14. Apostle Parley P. Pratt, killed by Hector Maclean in Kansas.

June 29. Brigadier-General W. S. Harney, commanding Fort Leavenworth, was ordered to take charge of the army of Utah. He was removed after declaring that he would "hang Brigham first and try him afterwards;" and was succeeded first by Colonel Alexander and afterwards by General Johnston.

Sept. 3, 4. Indians aided by white men massacred 115 to 120 emigrants at Mountain Meadow.

In this month 1400 men, artillery and liners of the 5th and 10th regiments, appeared upon the Sweetwater, followed by 1000 more, making the whole force amount to 2400 men, a kind of *posse comitatus*, to enforce obedience to the Federal laws.

Sept. 15. Mr. Brigham Young issued the remarkable document subjoined.* General Wells was ordered to occupy the passes in the

* *Proclamation by the Governor, proclaiming Martial Law in the Territory of Utah.*

Citizens of Utah,—We are invaded by a hostile force, who are evidently assailing us to accomplish our overthrow and destruction.

For the last twenty-five years we have trusted officials of the Government, from constables and justices to judges, governors, and presidents, only to be scorned, held in derision, insulted, and betrayed. Our houses have been plundered and then burned, our fields laid waste, our principal men butchered while under the pledged faith of the government for their safety, and our families

Wasatch Mountains, and 2016 Mormons prepared to defend their hearths and homes against the violence of the U. S. Captain Van Vliet arrived at Gt. S. L. City.

Oct. 5—6. The Mormons, who were "spoiling for a fight," burned, without the orders of their governor, two provision trains one of fifty-one and the other of twenty-three waggons, causing great want and violent exasperation in the army of Utah.

Nov. Army of Utah encamped near Green River.

Nov. 21. Proclamation of Mr. Cumming, the new Governor.

Dec. 15. Mr. Brigham Young's message to the legislature of Utah.

Jan. 16. Address of citizens of Gt. S. L. City sent to President Buchanan.

Feb. Col. Kane reached Gt. S. L. City.

1858. April 5. Governor A. Cumming appointed to Utah Territory after the thankless offer had been refused by sixteen or seventeen political persons; left Camp Scott, near Fort Bridger, and on the 12th April entered Gt. S. L. City. The "rebellion in Utah" found to be a pure invention.

driven from their homes to find that shelter in the barren wilderness and that protection among hostile savages which were denied them in the boasted abodes of Christianity and civilization.

The Constitution of our common country guarantees unto us all that we do now or have ever claimed.

If the constitutional rights which pertain unto us as American citizens were extended to Utah, according to the spirit and meaning thereof, and fairly and impartially administered, it is all that we could ask, all that we have ever asked.

Our opponents have availed themselves of prejudice existing against us because of our religious faith, to send out a formidable host to accomplish our destruction. We have had no privilege, no opportunity of defending ourselves from the false, foul, and unjust aspersions against us before the nation. The government has not condescended to cause an investigating committee or other person to be sent to inquire into and ascertain the truth, as is customary in such cases.

We know these aspersions to be false, but that avails us nothing. We are condemned unheard, and forced to an issue with an armed, mercenary mob, which has been sent against us at the instigation of anonymous letter writers ashamed to father the base, slanderous falsehoods which they have given to the public; of corrupt officials who have brought false accusation against us to screen themselves in their own infamy; and of hireling priests and howling editors who prostitute the truth for filthy lucre's sake.

The issue which has been thus forced upon us, compels us to resort to the great first law of self-preservation and stand in our own defence, a right guaranteed unto us by the genius of the institutions of our country, and upon which the Government is based.

Our duty to ourselves, to our families, requires us not to tamely submit to be driven and slain, without an attempt to preserve ourselves. Our duty to our country, our holy religion, our God, to freedom and liberty, requires that we should not quietly stand still and see those fetters forging around, which are calculated to enslave and bring us in subjection to an unlawful military despotism, such as can only emanate [in a country of Constitutional law] from usurpation, tyranny, and oppression.

Therefore I, Brigham Young, Governor and Superintendent of Indian Affairs for the Territory of Utah, in the name of the people of the United States in the territory of Utah,

1st:—Forbid all armed forces, of every description, from coming into this territory under any pretence whatever.

2nd:—That all the forces in said territory hold themselves in readiness to march at a moment's notice, to repel any and all such invasion.

3rd:—Martial law is hereby declared to exist in this territory, from and after the publication of this Proclamation; and no person shall be allowed to pass or repass into, or through, or from this territory, without a permit from the proper officer.

Given under my hand and seal at Great Salt Lake City, Territory of Utah, this Fifteenth day of September, A.D. Eighteen hundred and fifty-seven, and of the Independence of the United States of America the Eighty-second.

(L.S.) BRIGHAM YOUNG.

Mr. Brigham Young, followed by 25,000 souls, marched to Provo, with their stock, flocks, and chattels, even their furniture.

April 15. Governor Cumming officially reported a respectful reception, and the illumination of Echo Kanyon, also that the records of the U. S. Courts, then in charge of a Mormon, Mr. W. H. Hooper, Sec. *pro tem.*, the Territorial Library, in charge of Mr. W. C. Staines, and other public property were all unimpaired; the contrary report having constituted the *casus belli*.

April 24. Governor Cumming issued a proclamation that he would assume effective protection of all persons illegally restrained of their liberty in Utah. Few availed themselves of his office. The Indian agent, Dr. T. Garland Hurt, was accused of having incited the Uinta Indians to acts of hostility against the Mormons—a standing charge and counter charge in the U. S.

May 21. The Governor made a requisition that "no hindrance may be hereafter presented to the commercial, postal, or social communication throughout the territory."

May 29. The "Peace Commissioners" from Washington, Ex-Governor Lazarus, W. Powell, of Kentucky, and Major Ben. Macculloch, of Texas, the celebrated Indian fighter, arrived at Gt. S. L. City (where they stayed till June 2), and after proclaiming a general amnesty and free pardon, obtained permission for the army of Utah to enter the territory, and to encamp at a place not nearer than forty miles from New Zion.

June 12. Mr. Brigham Young treated with Peace Commissioners.

June 14. The President's pardon "for all treasons and seditions" was proclaimed by the governor, and accepted by the citizens.

June 26. The Federal troops, having left Camp Scott, passed through the deserted City of the Saints, led by Lieut.-Col. Cooke, who rode, according to Mormon report, with head uncovered: they remained for two days encamped on the Jordan, outside the settlement, and then moved 12 to 15 miles westward for wood and grass.

1859. The Legislature sat at Gt. S. L. City.

Judge Chas. S. Sinclair attempted to break faith by misinterpreting the amnesty, and nearly caused collision between the Federal troops and the Mormons.

The Hon. John Cradlebaugh, ex-officio judge of the Second Judicial District Court, U. T., quartered a company of 110 men in the Court-house and public buildings of Provo, thereby causing disturbances: Governor Cumming protested against the proceeding.

The Deseret currency plates were seized at Mr. Brigham Young's house.

Jan. 2. Religious service, interrupted by war, again performed in Tabernacle.

Feb. 28. Troubles between the citizens at Rush Valley and the Federal troops under General A. J. Johnson, commanding dept. of Utah.

March 25. Mr. Howard Spencer, nephew of Mr. Dan. Spencer, was severely wounded by First Serjeant Ralph Pike, Company I. of the 10th Regiment.

Aug. 10. Serjeant Pike summoned for trial to Gt. S. L. City, was shot in the street, it is supposed by Mr. H. Spencer.

In this month the citizens of Carson Valley declared themselves independent of U. T.

1860. Mr. Forney, Indian Superintendent, U. T., and highly hostile to the Mormons, was removed.

Troubles with the troops. Mr. Honeage, a Mormon citizen, was flogged at a cart's tail by two Federal officers, under a little mistake.

June 20. Major Ormsby (militia) and his force destroyed by the Indians near Honey Lake.

1861. The Federal troops evacuated the Land of the Saints.

INDEX.

ABORIGINES.

Aborigines, American. *See* Indians.
Absinthe. *See* Sage, wild.
Academy of the 7th Ward of Gt. S. L. City, 435.
Adobe manufactory, near Gt. S. L. City, 419.
—— of the Western world, 244.
—— origin of the name adobe, 244 *note*.
Adoption amongst the North American Indians, 144.
—— Mormon principle of, 327.
Adultery, Mormon punishment for, 306, 517.
Agriculture, present state of, in Gt. S. L. Valley, 346.
—— list of premiums awarded at the annual show, 346 *note*.
—— Agricultural Society of Deseret, 384.
Alamo. *See* Cottonwood tree.
Albino, rarity of so, amongst the Indians, 137.
—— amongst buffaloes, 63.
Alcohol distilled in Gt. S. L. City, 388.
Alexander, Colonel B., his hospitality, 112.
Algæ in Great Salt Lake, 395.
Algarobia glandulosa, or Mesquite tree, 8.
Alkali Lake, 190.
Alkali Lake Station, on the Platte River, 66.
Almanac, the, published in Utah, 308.
America, shape of the continent of, 7.
American Fork, 543.
"Americanisms, Dictionary of," Bartlett's, quoted, 21 *note*.
Animal life, absence of, on the Grand Prairie, 29.
—— in the American Sahara, 80.

ARMY.

Animal worship of the American Indian, 131, 133.
Animals, Indian signs for, 154.
—— small quantity of food required to fatten animals in the Rocky Mountains and in Somali Land, 173.
—— confusing trivial names for animals and vegetables in America, 175 *note*.
—— wild, of the Black Hills, 175.
—— wild, of the Rattlesnake Hills, 188.
—— wild, at Rocky Bridge, 197.
—— wild, in the wooded heights of the Wind River Mountains, 204.
—— of the Uinta Hills, 221.
—— wild, of Utah Territory, 339.
Antelope, the (Antilocapra Americana), 82.
—— its meat, 85.
—— its habitat, 83.
—— at Rocky Ridge, 197.
Antelope, or Church, Island, 391, 240. 397.
Antelope Springs, 565.
Ant-hills, 243.
Apadomey female warriors, 158.
Arapaho, or Dirty Nose, Indians, 176, 178.
—— visit of some from a neighbouring camp, 175.
—— their personal appearance, 176, 178.
—— their lodges, 107.
—— loose conduct of, 145.
—— sign of the tribe, 151.
Archery, Sioux skill in, 147.
Arikari, or Ree, Indians, 46.
Arms of the North American Indians, 71, 146.
—— ignorance of the lower grades of English of the use of, 216.
Army of the United States, remarks on the, 407.

ARMY.

Army, grievances of the, 540.
Arroyo, fumaro, or nullah, an, 97.
Arrow-points of the Indians, 586.
Arrows of the North American Indian, 146.
Arrow-wood (Viburnum denatum), 146.
Art in America, remarks on, 291.
Artemisia. *See* Sage, wild.
Asclepias tuberosa, common in U. T., 207.
Ash Hollow, 87.
—— General Harney's defeat of the Brulé Sioux at, 87, 111.
Ash Hollow Creek, 87.
Assiniboin Indians, 118.
—— their present habitat, 118, 192.
Assiniboin River, 131.
Aurora borealis, a splendid, in the prairies, 76.
Avena fatua of the Pacific Watershed, 172.

Badeau's Ranch, or Laramie City, 109.
Badgers at Rocky Bridge Station, 199.
Bartlett's "Dictionary of Americanisms," quoted, 21 *note*.
Bass-wood, 21.
"Bass-wood Mormons," 21 *note*.
Bath, the hot air and water, of the North American Indian, 148.
Bathing, and its dangers, 193.
Battle Creek, 543.
Beachum's Creek, 234, 235.
—— valley of, 234
Beachman's Fork, 234, 235.
—— station at, 234.
"Bear's Rib," Mato Chigukasa, made chief of the Brulé Sioux, 111.
Bear, the grizzly, 238.
—— of the Black Hills, 175.
—— flesh of, as food, 283.
—— in Cottonwood Kanyon, 422.
—— bear-traps, 422.
Bear Springs, in Utah Territory, 333.
Bear River Mountains, 215.
Bear River, 225, 227, 393.
—— coal found on the banks of, 226.
Bear Bay, 226.
Beavers in the torrent-bed of Echo Kanyon, 232.
—— tails of, as food, 285.
Bedstead, populousness of, 248.
Bee, a, on the topmost summit of the Rocky Mountains, 204.
Bee House in Gt. S. L. City, 301.
Beer, or Soda, Springs, 222.
Beer of Gt. S. L. City, 288.
Beet-root grown in Gt. S. L. Valley, 348.

BREAD.

Bell, Governor, of Gt. S. L. City, 264.
Bench-land of the Gt. S. L. Valley, 243.
Bennett, J. C., his work on the Mormons, 252 *note*.
Big Mountain, 235, 236.
—— pass of the, 236, 237.
Big Kanyon, 239.
Big Field, near Gt. S. L. City, 245.
Bighorn, or American mouflon, 189, 191.
Bill of fare at a supper in Gt. S. L. City, 282.
Birds near Fort Kearney, 59.
—— wild, of the South Pass of the Rocky Mountains, 205.
—— of Utah Territory, 340.
Bishops, the Mormon, 484.
Bison Americanus. *See* Buffalo.
Bissonette, M., the Creole, 171.
Blackfeet, or Sinahpa, Indians, 119.
—— their lodges, 107.
—— sign of the tribe, 182.
—— their friendliness to whites, 204.
Black Hills, the, 113.
—— geography of the, 164.
—— animals to which they afford shelter, 175.
Black Rock, near Gt. S. Lake, 392.
—— view from the, 399.
Black's Fork River, 215, 216.
Black's Fork, vegetation of, 220.
Bloomer dress, 114.
Blue River, Big, 30.
—— Little, 47.
—— fish of the Little Blue, 47.
Blue Earth River, Indians west of, 117.
Bluffs on the prairies, 36.
Bogus, origin of the term, 506 *note*.
Bonhomme Island, sand banks at, 19.
"Book of Mormon," the. *See* "Mormon, Book of."
Books necessary to the Western traveller, 12.
—— on Mormonism, list of, 250 *note*.
Botany of Utah Territory, 341.
Boulders, huge natural pile of, Brigham's Peak, 167.
—— in Great Cottonwood Kanyon, 420.
Bow and arrow of the North American Indian, 146.
Bowery, the, in Great Salt Lake City, 270.
—— visit to the, 314.
Box Elder Creek, 167.
Boys, Indian, 74
"Brass, City of," of the Arabs, 97.
Braves, Indian, 71.
Bread made in the prairies, 104.

BREAD-ROOT.
Bread-root of the Western hunters, 225 note.
Breakfast in the prairie, 105.
Brewery, Utah, 402.
Brick-making at Great Salt Lake City, 419.
Bridger Range of the Uinta Hills, 219.
Bridger, Fort, 220.
Bridger, Colonel James, the celebrated trapper, 221.
Bridle and bit used on the prairies, 35.
Brigham's Kanyon, 241, 256.
Brigham's Peak, 167.
—— the driver's story of, 167.
"British-English" Mormons on the road to Gt. S. L. City, 169.
Brulé Sioux Indians, their habitat, 120. *See* Sioux.
Brutisch, Giovanni, the Venetian, 589.
Bugs, bed, 196 note.
—— other bugs, 198 note.
Buffalo, absence of the, on the Grand Prairie, 22
—— herds of, 60.
—— wild as compared with tame meat, 60, 61.
—— number of buffalo robes purchased by the several companies, 61 note.
—— Indian mode of preparing the skins, 64.
—— former and present number of buffaloes, 62.
—— annual destruction of, 62.
—— three great families of, 62.
—— extinct westward of the Rocky Mountains, 63.
—— its habits, 63.
—— Indian mode of hunting it, 63, 65.
—— uses to which it is put, 64.
—— Britishers and buffalo-shooting,
Buffalo-berry, the, cultivated in Gt. S. L. City, 211 note.
Buffalo grass, 63.
Bullock, W. T., the Mormon, 510.
Bunch-grass, 171.
—— its geographical limits, 172.
—— proposed acclimatisation of, 172.
Bundling among the North American Indians, 142.
—— antiquity of the practice, 142 note.
"Bunk," the, at Lodge-pole Station, 62.
Burnt Thigh Indians, their habitat, 120.
Butte Station, 568.
Butte, Red, trading post of, 180.
—— meaning of the word "Butte," 180 note.
Butterfield, or American, Express, route of the, 3.
—— its receipts from government, 4.

CHEROKEES.
Cache Cave, 228.
Cache Valley, 406.
Cacti of the American wilderness, 79.
—— intoxicating cactus, 79 note.
Calidarium, the Indian, 145.
California, establishment of the mail coach route from Missouri to, 3.
—— slope and surface of the land of, 10.
—— time for setting out for, 169.
—— roads from Gt. S. L. City to, 548.
Calumet, the, regarded as a sacred instrument, 136.
Camel corps, proposal for establishing a, for American outpost duty, 57.
Camp Floyd, trip to, 401.
—— description of, 405.
—— hatred of the Mormons expressed at, 411.
—— the sick certificate, 415.
—— second visit to, 539.
—— position of the camp, 541.
Camp Scott, near Fort Bridger, 222.
Canadians, French, settled in the Far West, 188.
Canis latrans, the, 80.
Cannibals, how far the North American Indians are, 144.
Cannon River, Indians west of, 117.
Card-playing amongst the North American Indians, 144.
Carrington, Albert O., the Mormon, 295.
Carrington Island, 396.
Carson City, 597, 601.
—— lawless violence of, 549.
Carson House station, 234.
Carson, Kit, the celebrated guide and Indian interpreter, 221.
Carson Lake, 333, 524.
Carson River, 596.
Carter, Judge, and his store, 221.
Caswall, Rev. Henry, his works on Mormonism, 252 note.
Cattle, starved in some regions, 170.
—— numbers of skeletons seen, 170.
Cedar Island, the first, in the Missouri, 50.
Cedar, effect of climate upon the growth of the, 90.
—— gradually diminishing, 66.
—— the name "cedar" as used in the United States, 67 note.
Cedar Creek, 405.
Ceremony and manners, Indian want of, 144.
Chamiso, or grease-wood, 196.
Chandless, William, his work on Mormonism, 251 note.
Cherokees, their present condition, 43.
—— their lodges, 107.

CHEYENNE INDIANS.

Cheyenne Indians, the, 121.
—— their lodges, 107.
—— their chastity, 143.
—— sign of their tribe, 151.
Chieftainship amongst the Indians, 143.
Children, Indian fondness for, 126.
—— of the prophet, 502.
—— of the Mormons, 519.
—— Indian, 74.
Chimney Rock, the, 92.
China-town, Carson River, 600.
Chinche, or bug, the, 196.
"Chip" fires in the prairies, 60.
Chipmonk or Chipmuk, the, 197 *note*.
Chippeways. *See* Ojibwe Indians.
Chokop Pass, 583.
Choktaw Indians, their lodges, 107.
Chronology of the most important events recorded in the Book of Mormon, 497.
Chugwater, the, 118.
Church Butte, geological formation of, 218.
Churchill, Fort, 597.
Cities, formation of, in Utah Territory, 353.
City Creek Kanyon, 249.
Climate of Platte Bridge, 166.
—— of the country near Fort Bridger, 223.
—— of Utah Territory, 334.
Clothing necessary to the prairie traveller, 18.
Coaches, mail, from Missouri to California and Oregon, 5.
—— slow rate of travelling, 6.
—— the "Concord Coach," 15.
—— materials of which the coaches are made, 15.
Coal on the banks of the Platte River, 173,
—— in Nebraska, 174.
—— near Sulphur Creek, 225.
—— found on the banks of the Bear and Weber Rivers, and at Silver Creek, 226.
—— in Utah Territory, 342.
Cold Springs, in Kansas, 23.
—— squatter life at, 23.
Cold Springs Station, 592.
Cold Water ranch, 61.
Colorado, Rio, fountain-head of the, 201.
Columbia River, fountain-head of the, 201.
Comanche Indians, the, 75 *note*.
—— their lodges, 107.
Compass, the prairie, 60.
"Concord coach," description of the, 15.
Confluence, description of a Mormon, 367.

CREEK.

Constitution of the State of Deseret, 350 *note*.
Cookery, dirty, of Indian squaws, 98.
—— bill, in the prairies, 104.
Coon's Kanyon, 241.
Copperas springs, 224.
Corporation of Gt. S. L. City,
Corrals, mode of forming, 94.
Corrill, John, his work on Mormonism, 251 *note*.
Cotton grown in Gt. S. L. Valley, 348.
Cottonwood, the, 79.
Cottonwood Creek, 87.
Cottonwood Kanyon, Great, 417.
—— timber of, 346.
—— visit to, 420.
—— celebration of Mormon Independence Day at, 424 *note*.
Cottonwood Lake, Great, 423.
Cottonwood station, in Nebraska, 37, 61.
Cottonwood tree, the, or Alamo, 39.
—— its uses, 39.
Cougar, the, or Mountain Lion, 189.
Council Bluffs, the natural crossing of the Missouri, 68 *note*.
Council Hall of the Seventies, in Gt. S. L. City, 279.
Council, the High, of the Mormons, 485.
Counties, list of, of Utah territory, 353.
Coureurs des bois, or unlicensed pedlars, 100.
Court-house ridge, the, 89.
—— description of it, 90.
Court House, in Gt. S. L. City, 506.
—— interesting case tried in the, 507.
Cox, Daniel, his idea of a water communication between the Missouri and the Columbia rivers, 201 *note*.
Coyotes, or jackals of the Western World, 60.
—— at Rocky Bridge Station, 198, 199.
—— near Black's Fork, 219.
—— in Echo Kanyon, 233.
Cree Indians, their habitat, 121.
Creek, Ash Hollow, 87.
—— Battle, 548.
—— Bauchman's 234, 235.
—— Box Elder, 167.
—— Cedar, 405.
—— Cottonwood, 87.
—— Deer, 171.
—— Dry, 587.
—— Egan's, 227.
—— Grasshopper, 25.
—— Horse, 99.
—— Horse-shoe, 204.
—— Kanyon, Big, 237.
—— Kanyon, East, 236.
—— Kiowa, Little, 99.
—— La Bonté, 166.

CREEK.
Creek Meadow, 547.
—— Mill, 242.
—— Muddy, Little, 172.
—— Nemahaw, Big, 26.
—— Omaha, or Little Punkin, 89.
—— Pacific, 206.
—— Plum, 89.
—— Quaking Asp, 199.
—— Sandy, 48.
—— Sandy, Little, 206.
—— —— Big, 207.
—— Shawit, 585.
—— Shell, 565.
—— Silver, 226.
—— Smith's, 591.
—— Snow, 173.
—— Strawberry, 199.
—— Sulphur, 225.
—— Thirty-two-mile, 48.
—— Turkey, 97.
—— Vermilion, 84.
—— Walnut, 26.
—— Willow, 199.
—— Willow, 560.
—— Yellow, 227.
Creeks, or "eriks," in America, 25.
Crickets (Anabrus simplex?), scourge of, in Utah territory, 345.
Crops in Gt. S. L. Valley, 247.
Crosbie, Judge, 546.
Cumming, Hon. A. governor of Gt. S. L. City, 265.
—— his impartial discharge of his duties, 265.
Curriculum of the prairie Indians, 150.
Cursing and swearing in America, 18.
Cynomys Ludovicianus, or prairie-dog, 81.

Davies, Elder John, his Mormon works, 263, note.
Dakotas. See Sioux.
—— meaning of the name Dakota, 116
Dana, Lieut., compagnon de voyage, 10.
Dancing, Mormon fondness for, 280.
Danite band, account of the, 434.
Dark Valley, 74.
Davis, Hon. Jefferson, his estimate of the cost of a railway from the Mississippi to the Pacific, 3 note.
Dayton, Lysander, the Mormon bishop, and his wives, 544.
Dead, Indian mode of burial of the, 150.
Deep Creek Kanyon, 561.
—— —— Station, 562.
—— —— Valley, 562.
Deer, kinds of, found in the regions east of Rocky Mountains, 84.
Deer Creek, 171.
—— establishment at, 171.

DUST STORMS.
Delaware Indians, account of the, 46.
—— their lodges, 107.
Denmark ward, in Great Salt Lake City, 245.
Donner City, lawless violence of, 349.
Des Moines River, Indians west of, 117.
Deseret, the land of the honey-bee, 210.
—— agricultural society of, 34.
—— Store, in Gt. S. L. City, 302.
—— alphabet, the 510.
"Deseret News," account of the, 511.
Desert from Fort Kearney to the base of the Rocky Mountains, 8.
—— mostly inhabited, 8.
—— fertility of its eastern and western frontiers, 8.
—— the First, 207.
—— the Great, of Utah Territory, 538, 559.
Devil's Backbone, the, 181.
—— darning-needle, or dragon fly, 75.
—— Gate, the celebrated Kanyon of the, 186.
—— Hole, the, 556.
—— Lake, Indians of, 118.
—— Post Office, the, 191.
Diamond Springs, 74, 583.
—— tragedy at, 75.
Diseases of Utah Territory, 337.
—— to which the Indians are liable, 338.
"Divide," the, between the Little Blue and Platte rivers, 47.
—— between the Platte and Sweetwater Rivers, its sterility, 180.
—— between the Green River and Black's Fork, 215.
Divorce amongst the Mormons, 516.
Dogs, Indian, 72, 573.
Dog-Teutons in the prairies, 77.
Dolphin Island, 396.
Doxology, Mormon, remarks on the fourteen articles of, 467, et seq.
Dragon-fly, or devil's darning-needle, 75.
Dress, Indian, 70, 75.
—— of the Mormon fair sex, 277.
Drivers of mail coaches, their immorality, 6.
——, or "rippers," the, of the waggon-train, 28.
Drought, trials of, on the counterslope of the Rocky Mountains, 206.
Dry Creek, 587.
Dubail, Constant, the woodman, 566.
Dug-out, Joe, and his station, 405, 539.
Dust storms in the valley of the Platte, 93.
—— of Utah, 336, 547, 548.
—— on the counterslope of the Rocky Mountains, 206.

EAST KANYON.
East Kanyon Creek, 235.
Eau qui court, or Niobrara River, 49, 89.
Echo Kanyon, 220,
—— vegetation of, 232.
—— the Mormons breastworks in, 232.
—— beavers in the torrent-bed of, 232.
—— Station, 232.
Education in Gt. S. L. City, 512, 514.
—— in Deseret and England compared, 568.
Egan, Major Howard, 550.
Egan's Creek, 237.
—— Springs, 551, 552.
Eggs and bacon, a constant dish in the West, 47.
Eight Mile Springs, 564.
Eight Mile Spring Kanyon, 564.
Elder, rank of, in the Mormon hierarchy, 486.
Elk, the (Cervus Canadensis), habitat of the, 84.
Emigrants, Mormon, arrival of, at Gt. S. L. City, 275.
—— diseases to which they are liable, 339.
"Emigration road" in Kansas, 20.
Emigration, Kanyon, 240.
Emigration, Mormon, system of, 359.
—— statistics of, 360.
Endowment House, in Gt. S. L. City, 271.
—— mysteries of, 271.
Ensign Peak, spirit of Joseph Smith on, 243.
Evening in the prairies, 47.
Explorers, list of the principal, of the United States, who have published works on the subject, 212 *note*.
"Eye-opener," an, 65.
Eye of the Indian, 129.

Faces, Indian, 128.
Faith, articles of the Mormon, 467 *et seq.*
Farms, Indian, 579.
Farriery of the Indians, 145.
Febrile affections in Gt. S. L. City, 339.
Feet of the Indians, 127.
Fences, "snake," of the West, 234.
Feramorz, Colonel, 417,
Ferris, Mrs., her work on "The Mormons at Home," 254 *note*.
—— R. J., his work on Mormonism, 253 *note*.
Ferry, the Lower, over the Platte, 173.
Fête at Gt. S. L. City, account of a, 281—283.
Fetichism of the North American Indian, 131.

GAMMA GRASS.
"Fever, the prairie," 27.
Fingers, considered as a trophy by the Indians, 175 *note*.
Fish of the streams flowing from the Black Hills, 164.
—— of the Sweetwater, 186.
——, water of Gt. S. Lake fatal to, 295.
—— of Utah Lake, 405.
—— of the Wasatch Lakes, 423.
Fish Springs, 558.
Fir-trees of Great Cottonwood Kanyon, 420.
Fire-flies, or lightning-bugs, 74.
Fires, prairie, 26.
—— mode of stopping, 26.
Flumara. *See* Arroyo.
Floods of the Missouri, 19.
Flowers on the banks of La Grande Platte River, 51, 60, 66.
Fort Bridger, 220.
—— Churchill, 597, 599.
Forts, frontier, of the United States, described, 51.
—— remarks on the army system of outposts in the United States, 54.
—— a camel corps proposed, 57.
Folles Avoines Indians, 117 *note*.
Food prejudices, 80.
Foot of Ridge Station, near the Sweetwater, 196.
Fox River, the, or Rivière des Puantes, 24.
—— Indians, their tents, 106.
Foxes in Echo Kanyon, 232.
Frémont Slough, 65.
Frémont Springs, station at, 65.
—— the model verandah at, 65.
Frémont, Colonel, his travelling proprieties, 184.
—— his exploration of the Rocky Mountains, 208.
Frémont Peak, in the Rocky Mountains, 15-, 199.
—— its height above sea-level, 202.
Frémont Island, 397.
Frogtown, or Fairfield, 406.
Fruit in the gardens of the Prophet, 527.
—— wild, of Utah Territory, 544.
Funeral ceremonies of the Sioux Indians, 149.
Fustigator, the mammoth, of the American waggoners, 30.

Gambling, fondness of the North American Indian for, 144.
Game, abundance of, in the Wind River Mountains, 84, 204.
Gamma, or gramma, grass of the slopes west of Fort Laramie, 9.

GARDENS.

Gardens of the Prophet, in Gt. S. L. City, 326.
General Johnson's Pass, 551.
Geological formation of the Mauvaises Terres, or Bad Lands, 89.
—— at Fort Laramie, 112.
—— and westward of the fort, 113.
—— of the Black Hills, 164.
—— of the banks of the Platte at Snow Creek, 174.
—— of the Rattlesnake Hills, 189.
—— of the valley of the Green River, 209.
—— of Church Butte, 218.
—— of Echo Kanyon, 228.
—— of Utah Territory, 241.
—— of the gold diggings, 588.
Germans in the prairies, their behaviour, 77.
Gibraltar Gate, 593.
"Gift, an Indian," the proverb, 126.
Gilston, Jim, of Illinois, 554.
Girls, Indian, 74.
Gold found in the Wind River Mountains, 204.
—— mines near the Gt. S. L. City, 339.
—— found in Utah Territory, 342.
Golden Pass of Emigration Kanyon, 240.
Gospel, grotesque accounts of the manner in which the Indians of old received the, 133.
Government of the Mormons, 356.
Grain, quantity produced in the Valley of Gt. S. Lake, 345, 345.
Grand River, Necohe, or White Water, the Osages settled on the, 42.
Grand Island, in the Platte river, 49.
Granite Mountain, 551.
Granite Rock, 581.
Grape, the Californian, 419.
Grass, bunch, 9.
—— salt, 182.
—— grasses of the slopes west of Fort Laramie, 9.
Grasshopper Creek, 25.
Grasshoppers (Œdipoda corallipes), clouds of, in the prairies, 86.
—— ravages of, 86.
—— scourge of, in Utah Territory, 345.
Grattan, Lieut., his fatal fight with the Sioux, 110.
Graves of the Mormon emigration route, 216.
Grazing grounds of the west, their fertility and freedom from sickness, 9.
—— in Utah Territory, 345.
Grease-wood, the (Obione or Atriplex canescens), 196.

GREAT SALT LAKE CITY.

Grease-wood at Black's Fork, 218.
Great Salt Lake, account of an excursion to, 391.
—— history, and geography of, 392.
—— quantity of salt in, 394.
—— islands of, 396.
—— air on the shores of, 398.
—— bathing place on, 398.
—— buoyancy of, 399.
—— lands immediately about, 399.
Great Salt Lake City, first view of, 240.
—— eastern wall of Gt. S. L. Valley, 242.
—— admirable site of the city, 243.
—— houses of, 244, 246.
—— the bulwarks of Zion, 245.
—— public opinion in Gt. S. L. City, 245.
—— Denmark Ward, 245.
—— crops in the valley, 247.
—— no market-place in the city, 247.
—— Salt Lake House hotel, 247.
—— Governor Cumming, 265.
—— streets of the city, 266, 267.
—— supply of water, 266.
—— shops, 267.
—— Temple Block, 266—272.
—— the Tabernacle, 270.
—— the Bowery, 270, 314.
—— Endowment House, 271.
—— safety of the city, 273.
—— arrival of caravan of emigrants, 275.
—— Council Hall of the Seventies, 279.
—— Social Hall and fêtes, 280.
—— the river New Jordan, 284.
—— the prophet's house, 285, 300.
—— the public library, 296.
—— visit to the prophet, 299.
—— Lion House, 300.
—— the public and private offices of the prophet, 301.
—— the Bee House, 301.
—— newspapers published in the City, 309.
—— the Penitentiary, 329.
—— gold mines in Utah, 339.
—— foundation of the Gt. S. L. City, 350.
—— promulgation of the Constitution, 350 note.
—— corporation of Gt S. L. City, 383.
—— taxes of, 383.
—— industry in, 384.
—— Agricultural Society of Deseret, 384.
—— list of articles of industry at Gt. S. L. City, 384 note.
—— hand-labour, articles of, 388.

GREAT SALT LAKE CITY.
Great Salt Lake City, cheapness of the necessaries of life, 383.
—— prices, 383, 389.
—— excursions, 390.
—— murders committed in and near the city, 411.
—— schools in the city, 420.
—— principal schools in the city, 516.
—— militia of, 431.
—— coinage of, 432.
—— view of the city from the Wasatch Mountains, 436.
—— Academy of the 7th Ward, 435.
—— Court House, 506.
—— course of life in the city, 508.
—— Historian and Recorder's Office, 510, 517.
—— conduct of Federal officials in the city, 511.
—— education in Gt. S. L. City, 519, 514, 516.
—— departure from Gt. S. L. City, 536, 537.
—— roads from Gt. S. L. City to California, 548.
Green River Mountains, the, 189.
Green River, fountain-head of the, 201.
—— its tributaries, 206, 207.
—— formation of the valley of the, 209.
—— Macarthy's station on the, 210.
—— salmon-trout of the, 211.
—— Spanish and Indian names of the, 211.
—— its breadth and depth, 211.
—— its length, volume, and direction, 212.
—— wool-producing country in the basin of the, 245.
Green River Station, 210, 213.
Grounds, Bad, or mauvaises terres, of the United States, 8.
Grouse, pinnated, 175.
Guenot, Louis, his bridge over the Platte, 174.
Guess, George, the Cherokee chief, 48.
Gaittard's Station, 34.
—— the host at, 34.
Gunnison, Lieut., his work on Mormonism, 250 note.
—— murder of, 411.
—— his record of Mormonism, 489.
Gunnison's Island, 396.

Hair, Indian mode of dressing the, 70.
Half-breeds, English and French compared, 99.
—— women, 100.
Half-way House, halt at, 66.
—— the store at, 66.
Ham's Fork, 215, 216.

INDEPENDENCE DAY.
Ham's Fork, the wretched station at, 216.
Hand labour, articles of, in Gt. S. L. City, 388.
Hands of the Indians, 127.
Hanks, the redoubtable Mr. Ephe, the Danite, 237.
—— stories of, 239.
Hapsaroke Indians, or Les Corbeaux, 152.
—— sign of the tribe, 152.
Harney, General, his defeat of the Brulé Sioux at Ash Hollow, 87, 111.
Harrowgate Springs in the Wasatch Mountains, 435.
Hat Island, 396.
Hawkins's rifles, 11.
Hayden, Dr. F. V., his opinion on coal in Nebraska, 174.
Heat of the sun beyond Ham's Fork, 218.
Heath-hen, the, 175.
Hickman, Bill, the Danite, 237, 417.
Hierarchy of the Mormons, 483, 487.
High Mountain, 556.
Historian and Recorder's Office, in Gt. S. L. City, 510, 517.
Holmes, the ungenial man, 219.
Horse Creek, 99.
—— inmates of the station at, 99, 101.
—— breakfast at, 104.
Horse-stealing, punishment for, in the Western States, 111, 495.
Horse-shoe station, 113.
Horse-shoe Creek, gold found at, 204.
Horse-fly, a green-headed, 208.
Horses, Indian, 69, 71.
—— of the Dakota Indians, 191.
Hot springs, near Gt. S. L. City, 388.
—— analysis of the water of, 388 note.
Hotels in the Far West, 247 note.
—— in Gt. S. L. City, 247.
Houses, materials of, in Gt. S. L. City, 244, 246.
Howard, Mr., 553.
Humboldt River, 533.
Hunkpapa Indians, 119.
Hunkpatidan Indians, 118.
Hunter, President Bishop, 276.
Huntingdon Valley, 553.
Hurricanes of Scott's Bluffs, 96.
Hyde, John, his work on Mormonism, 255 note.

Ice springs, 195.
Ihanktonwan Indians, their habitat and present condition, 118.
Immorality of the mail-coach drivers, 6.
Independence Day, New, of the Mormons, 494.

INDEPENDENCE DAY.
Independence Day, New, celebration of, 424 note.
India, remarks on the army system of outposts in, 54, 56.
"Indian home," the, 40.
Indian summer, the, 98, 587.
Indians, how treated by the United States, 40.
—— the "Indian's home," 40.
—— distribution of the reservation, 40.
—— total number of Indians on the prairies and the Rocky Mountains, 41.
—— causes which rapidly thin the tribesmen, 42, 43.
—— best scheme for preserving the race, 43.
—— the American philanthropist's mode of civilising the Indians, 43.
—— difficulties attending this scheme, 44.
—— account of the Pawnees, 44.
—— Indian fighting, 53.
—— proposals for raising native regiments of Indians, 58.
—— Indian mode of hunting the buffalo, and preparing the skins, 63, 65.
—— the name Indian a misnomer for American aborigines, 68.
—— their Turanian origin, 68.
—— mistaken public opinion of them and of their ancestors, 68, 69.
—— description of the remove of an Indian village, 69.
—— Indian horses, 69, 71.
—— mode of wearing the hair, 70.
—— dress, 70, 73.
—— arms, 71, 146.
—— the squaws, 73.
—— boys and girls, 74, 122.
—— Indian kleptomania, 74, 125.
—— ferocity of Indians and Whites, 75.
—— the Comanches, 75 note.
—— Indian mode of stampeding animals, 95.
—— Indian prejudice against speaking, 98.
—— half-breeds, 100.
—— effects of alcohol amongst the various tribes of Indians, 101.
—— Indian villages and tents, 106.
—— languages of the north-eastern tribes, 117.
—— tribes and sub-tribes of the Sioux, 116.
—— Indian population in the middle of the last and present centuries, 120 note.
—— the Indians' future considered, 123.
INLAND.
Indians, the Indians' opinion of their own strength, 124.
—— their progress towards extinction, 124.
—— Indian character, 125.
—— form and dimensions of the Indian skull, 128.
—— Indian women, 129.
—— curriculum of the prairie Indian, 130.
—— religion of the Indian, 131.
—— grotesque accounts of the manner in which the Indians formerly received the Gospel, 133.
—— dancing, 134.
—— smoking, 135.
—— scalping, 137.
—— few rites and ceremonies of the Indian creed, 141.
—— Indian names, 141.
—— marriages, 142.
—— the dignity of chief, 143.
—— the Indian's course of life, 143.
—— Indian arts, 145.
—— management of the Indian departments of the United States, 163.
—— kindness of the Mormons to the Indians, 299.
—— Lieut. Weed's defeat of the Goah-Yutas, 571.
—— an Indian camp, 573.
—— the Indians of Utah Territory, 575.
—— Indian farms, 579.
—— the Yutas, 580.
—— their arrow-poison, 586.
—— their murder of Lossier and Applegate, 588.
Industry in Gt. S. L. City, 384.
—— list of articles of, 384 note.
Intoxicating drink, a new, 30 note.
—— one made from a cactus, 79 note.
—— mode of manufacturing "Indian liquor," 100.
Irish women in the West, 217.
Iron found in Utah Territory, 342.
Iron county, coal and iron found in, 342.
Island, Antelope, or Church, 240, 391, 397.
—— Bonhomme, 19.
—— Carrington, 396.
—— Cedar, the first, in the Missouri, 50.
—— Dolphin, 396.
—— Fremont, 367.
—— Grande, in the Platte River, 49.
—— Gunnison's, 396.
—— Hat, 396.
—— Stansbury, 396.

ISLETS.

Islets of La Grande Platte River, 50.
Itazipkó, Sans Arc, or No Bow Indians, their habitat, 119.
Itinerary, the emigrant's, 609.
—— of the mail route from Gt. S. L. City to San Francisco, 616

Jack, the Arapaho Indian, and his squaw, 181.
Jackal, the, of the Western world, 80. See Coyote.
Jacques, Elder John, his Mormon works, 261 note.
James River, Indians of, 118.
Jesuitism as a means of civilisation of the Indians, 43.
Jimson weed, 135.
Jo., St., city, 15, 16.
Johnson's Settlement, 547.
Jones, Elder Dan, his Mormon works, 262 note.
Jordan, New, the river in Gt. S. L. City, 394, 398.
—— its course in the Wasatch Mountains, 408.
"Jornada," or day's march, 207.
Junction House ranch, 65.

Kamas Prairie, 225.
Kane, Colonel T. L., his work on the Mormons, 250 note.
—— account of him, 250 note.
Kansas, rainy season in, 19.
—— "bleeding Kansas," 20.
—— prairies of, 21.
—— shanties in, 23.
—— a specimen of squatter life in, 23.
"Kansas gales," 26.
"Kansas-Nebraska Act," passing of the, 41.
Kanyon, the, of America, 171, note.
—— stupendous Kanyons of Northern Mexico, 171 note.
—— the Devil's Gate, 186.
—— near Gt. S. L. City, purity of the water of the, 402.
Kanyon Creek, Big, 237.
—— station at, 237.
Kearney, Fort, 51.
—— longitude of, 7.
Kelly, W., Esq., J. P., his chapters on Mormonism, 250 note.
"Keening" the dead practised among the Indians, 150.
Kennedy, the Ras Kuflah, 552.
Kennedy's Hole, 559.
Keomekuk, in Kansas, halt at, 24.
Kikapoo Indians, the, 24.
—— description of them, 25.
—— strength of the tribe, 25.

LARAMIE.

Kikapoo Indians, their mode of building their tents, 106.
Kimball, Heber C., the president, account of him, 295.
—— his address in the Bowery, 318.
Kinnikinik, the, 39.
Kinnikinik smoked by the American Indian, 135.
Kiowa Creek, Little, 99.
Kiowa Indians, or Prairie men, sign of their tribe, 152.
—— their lodges, 107.
Kiuiskadjiwan River, Indians on the, 121.
Kit, the traveller's, 11.
Kiyukas, or breakers of law, Indians, 118.
Kleptomania of the Indians, 74.
—— of the Sioux, 125.

La Bonté Creek, 106.
"Ladies" in the prairies, 114.
Lake Alkali, 190.
—— Carson, 338, 594.
—— Cottonwood, Great, 422.
—— Devil's, 118.
—— Great Salt, 240, 391.
—— of the Hot Springs, 242.
—— Little Salt, 333.
—— Miniswakan, 122.
—— Mono, 333.
—— Mud, 333.
—— Nicollet, 333.
—— Pyramid, 338.
—— qui Parle, 117.
—— Saleratus, 189.
—— Stone, 117.
—— Three, 199.
—— Traverse, 117.
—— Utah, or sweet water reservoir, 333, 403, 542.
—— Walker's 333.
—— of the Wasatch Mountains, 422.
—— Winnipeg, 121.
—— of the Woods, 122.
Lance, the, of the North American Indian, 146.
Land-tenure of the Mormons, 352.
Lander's Cut-off, 196.
Language, the, of the Sioux, 147.
—— its peculiarities, 148.
—— the pantomime of the Indians, or sign-system of language, 150.
—— men's first and progressive steps in, 148.
—— languages of the north-eastern Indians, 117 note.
Laramie, Fort, longitude of, 7.
—— vegetation of the slopes west of, 9.
—— formerly Fort John, 112.

LARAMIE, FORT.
Laramie, Fort, climate and soil at, 112.
Laramie City, 109.
—— prices of skins at, 109.
Laramie Hills, geography of the, 165.
Laramie's Fork, 112.
Laramie Peak, 98.
Lasso, the, 85.
Last Timber Station, 88 note.
Lawrence Fork, 89.
—— origin of the name, 89.
Leadplant (Amorpha canescens), the, of the American wilderness, 79.
Leaf-shooter Indians, 117.
Leather manufactured at Gt. S. L. City, 418.
Leeches, American, 566.
Legislative Assembly of Utah Territory, 377.
Lehi City, 542.
Liberty poles in the United States, 305.
Library, public, of Gt. S. L. City, 286.
Lightning-bug, or fire-fly, 74.
Lignite in Nebraska, 74.
Lion, the Mountain, or cougar, 189.
Lion House, in Gt. S. L. City, 300.
Letters, Indian, 72.
Little Mountain, 239.
Little, Mr., his tannery, 418.
Locknan's Station, 96.
—— vegetation of, 96.
Lodge-pole Creek, or Fork, 80.
Lodge-pole Station, 82.
—— its squalor and wretchedness, 81.
London, Mormon meeting-houses in and about, 365 note.
Long-chin, the Indian murderer, 105.
Long Valley, 571.
Lookout Fort, 118.
Louis, St., altitude and temperature of 196.
Loup Fork, ferry across, 88 note.
Lynch, Lieut. W. F., his proprieties of travel, 165.
Lyon, Catherine Lewis, her work on Mormonism, 253 note.

Macarthy, Mr., of Green River Station, 210.
—— his establishment, 210, 213.
—— his rough-and-tumble, 226.
Mail coach route from Missouri to California and Oregon, 5.
—— slow rate of travelling, 6.
Maize, or Whiskey Street, in Gt. S. L. City, 267.
Maize, question as to its being indigenous to America, 135.
Majors, Mr. Alexander, his efforts to reform the morals of his mail drivers, 6.

MINNEKANYE.
Mankhitah, or White Earth River, 89.
Manna in Gt. S. L. Valley, 348.
Manufactures in Utah territory, 384.
Marcy, Major, 91.
—— his "Prairie Traveller," quoted, 5.
Market-place, absence of a, in Gt. S. L. City, 247.
Marriage among the North American Indians, 142.
—— amongst the Mormons, 518, 525.
Marshall, James W., his discovery of Californian gold, 433.
Martin, Michael, his story, 215.
Marysville, or old Palmetto City, its trade, 26.
Materialism, Mormon, 463.
Matriya, the "Scattering Bear," his death, 110.
Maury, Captain, his remarks on a passage in Job, 185.
Mauvaises terres, or Bad Lands, extent of the, 89.
Mdewakantonwan Indians, their habitat, 116.
—— their civilisation, 120.
Meadow Creek, 547, 548.
Medical men in Gt. S. L. City, 338.
Medicine, the Indians' knowledge of, 145.
Medicine-man of the Indians, 131.
Medicines necessary to the western traveller, 12.
Menomene Indians, their tents, 106.
—— their habitat, 117.
Meteorology of Utah territory, 334.
Methodism, foundation of, 442.
Mexico, Northern, stupendous Kanyons of, 171 note.
Mesquite, or musket tree (Algarobia glandulosa), 8.
Midway station, 61.
Militia force of the United States, general abstract of the, 408 note.
—— of Gt. S. L. City, 421.
Military departments into which the United States are divided, 53 note.
Milk River, Indians of, 122.
Milk-weed (Asclepias tuberosa), common in U. T., 207.
Milk-sickness of the Western States, 345.
Mill Creek, 242.
Miller, Captain, of Millersville, 264.
Miller's Station, 599.
Millersville, or Smith's Fork, 219.
Mills, saw, in the Kanyons, 421.
—— a night passed in one, 423.
Miniwakan Lake, 122.
Minnesota Indians, 117.
Minnikanye-woshipu Indians, their habitat, 119.

MIRAGE.

Mirage, a curious, 59.
—— on the counterslope of the Rocky Mountains, 203.
Mississippi, the, 16.
—— Indians of the, 117.
Missionaries from Gt. S. L. City, 429, 430.
—— number of, in Great Britain, 366.
—— certificates supplied to, 430 *note*.
Missouri, River, the Great, 18.
—— navigation of the, 19.
—— sand-banks of the, 19.
—— sawyers and snags of the, 19.
—— winter season on the, 19.
Missouri River, the Little, Indians of the, 119.
Missouri, establishment of the mail coach route from, to California and Oregon, 5.
—— rainy season in, 19.
"Missouri Compromise," the, 41.
—— origin of the trouble which gave rise to it, 41 *note*.
Moccasins, use of, to the prairie traveller, 12.
—— Indian mode of making, 71.
Modesty, Mormon, instance of, 326.
Mollusks of Utah Territory, 340.
Mono Lake, 333.
Montagnes Rocheuses, Les, 189, 200.
Moonshine Valley, 333.
Moore, "Miss," and her rancho, 191.
—— her history, 192.
Moose deer (cervus Alces), its habitat, 84.
Moravianism, regarded as a means of civilisation of the Indians, 43.
Mormon, meaning of the word, 427.
"Mormon, Book of," 257 *note*, 444.
—— contents of the Mormon Bible, 446 *note*.
—— chronology of the most important events recorded in the, 497.
Mormons, their Emigration Road, 88.
—— trains of Mormon waggons on the road, 169, 218, 223, 224.
—— period for leaving the Mississippi, 169.
—— their quasi-military organisation on the march, 170.
—— estimate of outfit for the Utah route, 170 *note*.
—— a Mormon lad in the South Pass, 215.
—— fast at Simpson's Hollow, 209.
—— and near Green River, 215.
—— the Mormons' belief as to marriages between a Saint and a Gentile, 210 *note*.
—— the regular track of Mormon emigration, 215.

MORMONS.

Mormons, miseries of one of the emigrants, 216.
—— Dawvid Lewis and his dirty shanty, 216, 217.
—— emigrants, 169, 218, 223, 224, 226, 275.
—— dispensation of Mr. Joseph Smith, 226.
—— list of the Mormon scriptures, 257 *note*.
—— the saints' names, 277.
—— dress of the fair Saints, 277.
—— behaviour of the neophytes, 279.
—— fondness of the Mormons for sleighing, private theatricals, and dancing, 280.
—— balls and suppers at Social Hall, 281.
—— visit to the prophet, 290 *et seq.*
—— kindness of the Mormons to the Indians, 299.
—— their titles, 303.
—— how they regard the United States, 304.
—— their new Independence Day, 304.
—— their politics, 305.
—— their punishment for adultery, 306.
—— their newspapers, 309.
—— their sermons in the Bowery, 316, 320.
—— gift of tongues, 325.
—— Mormon modesty, 326.
—— account of Mormonland, 331.
—— foundation of their city, 350.
—— promulgation of their Constitution, 350 *note*.
—— their complaints against Congress, 350, 352.
—— tenure by which they hold their lands, 352.
—— system of Mormon emigration, 359.
—— list of Latter-Day Saints' Meeting-rooms in London and its vicinity, 365 *note*.
—— Mormon government, upon what it is based, 366.
—— description of a Mormon Conference, 367.
—— Mormon tolerance, 426.
—— political prospects of the Mormons, 427.
—— their Nauvoo Legion, 431.
—— sketch of the religion of the Mormons, 437.
—— contents of their Bible, 446 *note*.
—— their polygamy, 451.
—— their materialism, 463.
—— remarks upon the articles of their doxology, 467.

MORMONS.

Mormons, their hierarchy, 483.
—— their children, 513.
—— Mormon fugitives on the road, 553.
—— description of their Temple, 622.
—— chronological abstract of Mormon History, 670.
—— ism, list of works published upon the subject of, 250 note.
—— deep root Mormonism has taken in Great Britain, 566.
—— sketch of Mormonism, 437 *et seq.*
—— Mormon Bible, 444.
—— doctrines and covenants, 448.
—— lectures on faith, 448, 450.
—— polygamy, 451, 517, 520, 523, 525.
—— materialism, 463.
—— remarks on the fourteen articles of their doxology, 467 *et seq.*
—— Mormon agglomeration of all that is good in all sects, 480, 481.
—— Lieut. Gunnison's resumé of Mormonism, 482.
—— the hierarchy, 483.
—— what Mormonism is not, 488.
—— objections to Mormonism, 489.
—— chronology of the most important events chronicled in the Book of Mormon, 497.
—— final remarks on Mormonism, 535.
Morning on the prairies, 161.
Motherhood, how regarded in the Western States, 324.
Mouflon, the American, 189, 191.
Mountain Point, 242, 537.
Mountain Meadow Massacre, 411.
Mountain Springs, 561.
Mountaineers of the West, 101.
"Mountaineer," Mormon newspaper, 313.
Mountains, Bear River, 215.
—— Big, 235.
—— Black, 164, 175.
—— Ensign, 243.
—— Granite 551.
—— Green River, or Sweetwater Hills, 188.
—— High, 556.
—— Laramie Peak, 97, 105.
—— Laramie, 113, 165.
—— Little, 239.
—— Oquirrh, 236, 240, 390.
—— Quaking Asp, 224.
—— Rim Base, 225.
—— Rocky, 190 *et seq.*
—— Traverse, 402.
—— Uinta, 219, 221.
—— of Utah Territory, singular formation of the, 334.
—— Wásatch, 235, 242, 390, 400.

OGALALA.

Mountains White, 546.
—— Wind River, 54, 200, 202, 208, 206.
Mud Spring Station, 87.
Mud Lake, 338.
Muddy Fork, 215.
Muddy Creek, Big, 223.
—— Little, 172, 223.
—— —— wretched station at, 173.
—— —— the Canadian station master at, 223.
Mules of Central America, 16, 17.
—— their rate of progress, 17.
—— their obstinacy, 18.
—— in the West, 166.
—— recalcitrancies of, 195, 207.
Murder, Mormon punishment for, 517.
Murders in and near Gt. S. L. City, 274, 411.
—— and in Carson City, 274.
Murphy, Captain, his loyalty, 225.
Muskrat, the, 196 note.
Muskrat Station, 196.
Mustang, the, or prairie pony, 85.
—— of the Black Hills, 175.
Myers, Mr., the Mormon of Bear River Valley, 226.
Mysteries of Endowment House, in Gt. S. L. City, 271.

Names, Indian, 141.
—— of the Mormons, 277.
Nauvoo Legion, story of two warriors of the, 282.
—— account of the, 481.
Nebraska, Southern, rainy season in, 19.
Nebraska River. *See* Platte, La Grande.
—— meaning of the word Nebraska, 46.
Needle Rocks, 227.
Nemahaw Creek, Big, 26.
Neophytes, Mormon, their behaviour, 279.
Newspapers in Gt. S. L. City, 309.
Nicollet Lake, 333.
Niobrara, or Eau qui court, River, 45, 89.
Nullah. *See* Arroyo.

Oats, wild (Avena fatua), of the Pacific watershed, 172.
"Obelisks, the," 235.
O'Fallon's Bluffs, 59, 60.
Officials, Federal, their behaviour in Gt. S. L. City, 311.
Ojibwe Indians, their habitat, 121.
—— the name Ojibwe, 121 note.
Ogalala, or Okandanda, Indians, their habitat, 119.
—— village of the, 106.

OMAHA.

Omaha Creek, or Little Pumkin, 99.
Onions, wild, of the valley of the Little Blue River, 29.
Oohenonpa Indians, their habitat and numbers, 120.
Ophthalmia in Utah Territory, 328.
Opinion, public, in Gt. S. L. City, 245.
Oquirrh Mountains, 236, 240, 300.
Oregon, establishment of the mail coach route from Missouri to, 5.
—— boundary stone between it and Utah, 210.
—— origin of the name Oregon, 210 note.
Ormsby, Mayor, his death, 592.
Osages, the Indian tribe of, cession of their territory, 42.
—— account of the tribe, 42, 43.
—— their mode of building their lodges, 106.
Ottogamies, the Indian tribe of, 24 note.
Outfit, the traveller's, 11.
Outposts, remarks on the United States army system of, 54.
Owl, the burrowing (Strix cunicularia), 92.
Ox-riding, 30.
Oxen shod at Gt. S. L. City, 328.

Pahutes, or Cut Head, Indians, 116.
Pacific R. R., routes proposed for a, 3.
—— difficulties of a, 337.
Pacific Springs, 202.
—— station at, 202, 205.
Pacific Creek, 206.
Padouca River, 75, 78.
Pantomimes, the Indian, or speaking with the fingers, 150.
—— signs of some of the Indian tribes, 151.
—— preliminary signs for the traveller, 152.
—— various other signs, 155.
Parowan, 604.
Parley's Kanyon, 242, 418.
Patriarch, rank of, in the Mormon hierarchy, 489.
Pawnee Indians, account of the, 44.
—— their principal subtribes, 45.
—— sign of the tribe, 151.
—— their readiness to cut off a single traveller, 170.
Pedlars, licensed and unlicensed, 100.
Penitentiary, the, of Gt. S. L. City, 329.
Phelps, Judge and Apostle, his "Sermon on the Mount," 242.
—— visit to him, 308.

POPULUS.

Pigeons, a constant dish in Italy, 47.
"Pikespeakers," on the road, 74.
Pine-tree Stream, 215.
Pine Valley, 582.
Pinon tree (P. monophylla), of the West, 246.
—— fruit of the, 585.
Pipes of the Côteau des Prairies, 109.
"Pitch-holes, or chuck-holes," of the prairie, 22.
Placerville City, 602.
Platte River, La Grande, or Nebraska, 48.
—— beauty of its banks, 48.
—— its shallowness, 50.
—— timber on its banks, 50.
—— character of the soil beyond its immediate banks, 51.
—— the wild garden on its shores, 51.
—— noxious exhalations from, 59.
—— appearance of the river at Platte Bridge, 168.
—— Lower Ferry over the, 172.
—— coal found on the banks of the, 173.
—— farewell to the Platte, 180.
—— its division into the northern and southern streams, 75.
—— tender adieux at the upper crossing, 77.
—— fording the river, 78.
—— a dust storm in the valley of the 93.
Platte Fort, 112.
Platte Bridge, delicious climate of, 169.
Pleasant Valley, 580.
Plum Creek, 59.
—— Ranche, coil about, 60.
Poetry of the Sioux Indians, 149.
Point Look-out, 551.
Poison Springs, 559.
Poisons, animal and vegetable, of the prairie Indians, 146, 147.
Polar plant, the, 60.
Police, public, of Gt. S. L. City, 273.
—— private police of Mormon life, 273.
Polygamy amongst the Mormons, 451, 517.
—— revelation to Joseph Smith on celestial marriage, 451.
—— justification of polygamy, 463.
—— results of, 520.
—— views of women respecting polygamy, 523.
—— Mrs. Pratt's letter on, 525.
Pony Express, the, 34.
—— the riders, 35.
—— postage by the, 35.
—— on the road, 210.
Populus tremuloides, the, 224.

POPULATION.
Population of Utah Territory, 357.
—— excess of females, 366.
Postal system of the U. States, evils of the contract system, 214.
Powder River, Indians of, 119.
"Prairie Traveller," the, of Capt. R. B. Marcy, quoted, 5.
Prairie land of the United States, 7.
—— the grand, 21.
—— compass, the, 60.
—— wolf, or coyote, the, 80.
—— pony, or mustang, 85.
—— dog, the (synonyx Ludovicianus), 81, 82.
—— dog village, 81.
—— his associates, reptiles, birds, and beasts, 82.
—— hen, heath hen, or pinnated grouse, 175.
—— squirrel, the (Spermophilus tredecim-lineatus), 197 note.
—— turnip, the, 225 note.
—— or "perraireys," the Western, peculiarities of the, 21,
—— monotony of the, 22.
—— absence of animal life on the, 22.
—— "pitch-holes," or "chuck-holes" of the, 22.
—— a prairie storm, 26.
—— cause of the "prairie fever," 27.
—— the prairie saddle, 30.
—— the prairie fires, 36.
—— skeleton of the earth at the bluffs, 36.
—— the prairie wolf, 37.
—— an evening in the, 47.
—— "wood prairies," 60.
—— names of different kinds of prairies, 60.
—— blanched bones on the prairies, 60.
—— the buffalo, the "monarch of the prairies," 62.
—— monotony of the rolling prairie, 85.
—— progressive decay of the prairie trees, 85.
—— clouds of grasshoppers, 86.
—— alternate puffs of hot and cold winds in the, 98.
—— effects of prairie fires on the temperature of the air, 99.
Pratt, Orson, "the gauge of philosophy," his Mormon works, 260 note.
—— account of him, 429.
Pratt, Parley P., his Mormon works, 260 note.
—— murder of, 412.
Pratt, Mrs. Belinda M., her letter on polygamy, 525.

RIVER.
Prêle River, the, 167.
President, rank of, in the Mormon hierarchy, 483.
Prices in Gt. S. L. City, 388.
Priests, high, rank of, in the Mormon hierarchy, 483.
Prophecies of Joseph Smith and Brigham Young, 439 note.
Protestantism, origin of, 441.
Provo City, 404.
Provo River, 226, 404.
Puma, the, 189.
Punishments, Indian, 125.
Punkin Creek, Little, 88.
Pyramid Lake, 395.

Quaking Ash Creek, 190.
—— asp (Populus tremuloides), 224.
—— Asp Hill, 224.

Rabbit-bush, the, 196.
Racecourse Bluff, 222.
Railroad Kanyon, 583.
Rain-storms at Weber River Station, 238.
Rainy season in Kansas, Missouri, Iowa, and Southern Nebraska, 19.
Rancho, the, in Mexico and California, 6 note.
—— the "ranch" at Turkey Creek, 37.
Rattlesnake Hills, the, 187, 189.
Rattlesnakes, 193.
—— snake bites and their remedies, 193.
Red region, the, 167.
Red Butte, 242.
Reese's River, 590.
Reshaw, Mr., his bridge over the Platte, 173.
Reid, Captain Mayne, remarks on his "Wild Huntress," 237 note.
Religion of the Sioux, 125.
—— of the Indians generally, 131.
—— of the Mormons, sketch of the, 427 et seq.
Religions of the United States, list of, 439 note.
Remy, Jules, and Mr. Brenchley, their work on the Mormons, 257 note.
Revenge, Indian, 125.
Revolvers, value of, 11.
Reynal, M., of Horse Creek Station, 98.
—— sketch of him and his career, 100.
Rice, the wild (Zizania aquatica), 117 note.
Richland town, extinct, 27.
Rifles, Hawkins's, 11.
Riggs, Rev. S. R., his dictionary of the Sioux language, 148.
River Bank and Stream camping-ground, on the Sweetwater, 196.

RIVERS.

Rivers, Assiniboin, 121.
—— Bear, 225, 226, 393.
—— Black's Fork, 215, 218, 220.
—— Blue Earth, 117.
—— Blue, Big, 36.
—— —— Little, 38, 47.
—— Cannon, 117.
—— Carson, 596.
—— Colorado, 201.
—— Columbia, 201.
—— Des Moines, 117.
—— Fox, 24.
—— Fremont's Peak, 190, 199, 208.
—— Grand, Neosho, or White Water, 42.
—— Green, 201, 206, 211, 345.
—— Ham's Fork, 215, 216.
—— Humboldt, 593.
—— James, 118.
—— Kiesikadjiwan, 121.
—— Milk, 122.
—— Mississippi, 18, 116.
—— Missouri, 18, 118.
—— Missouri, Little, 119.
—— Muddy Fork 215.
—— New Jordan, 224, 393.
—— Niobeara, or Eau qui court, 49, 80.
—— Padouca, 75, 78.
—— Platte, La Grande, or Nebraska, 48, 75.
—— Platte, 201
—— Powder, 119.
—— Prêle, 167.
—— Reese's, 590.
—— Sandy, Big, 38, 209.
—— —— Little, 38.
—— Sioux, 118.
—— Smith's Fork, 219.
—— Snake, 201.
—— Snowy Peak, 208.
—— Sweetwater, or Pian Pa, 186, 196, 199, 201.
—— Timpanogos, 226, 404.
—— Weber, 226, 233, 235, 393.
—— White Earth, or Mankizitah, 89.
—— Wind, 201.
—— Yellowstone, 201.
Road from Fort [illegible]arney, 59.
—— from the Black Hills, 165.
—— Junction of the Gt. S. L. and Fort Hall Roads, 206.
—— roads from Gt. S. L. City to California, 548.
Robber's Roost Station, 568.
Robidoux, Antoine, notice of, 93 note.
Robidoux Fort, 93.
Robinson ("Uncle Jack"), 220.
Rock, or Turkey, Creek, 37.
—— the "ranch" at, 37.
—— Independence, 185.

SANDY CREEK.

Rock, names inscribed on, 183.
Rockwell, Orrin Porter, the Danite, 237.
—— account of him, 544.
—— his excellent advice, 545.
Rocky Mountains, heights of the, 9, 190, et seq.
—— surface of the land on the western slopes of the, 10.
—— first view of the, 190.
—— a humble-bee on the topmost summit of the, 204.
—— temperature on the counterslope of the South Pass, 208.
Rogers, Colonel, or "Uncle Billy," 572.
"Rooks" of the West, 23.
Ross, the apostate Jew and Mormon, 554.
Routes proposed for a Pacific R. R., 8.
—— Mr. Jefferson Davis's estimate of the cost, 8 note.
—— difficulties of, 537.
Ruby Valley, 571.
Russell, Mr. W. H., and the Pony Express, 35.
—— slowness of the transport, 168.
Rush Valley, 548, 550.

Sac Indians, the, 24.
—— their tents, 106.
Saddle, the prairie, 90.
—— the native Indian, 51.
Sage, wild (artemisia, or absinthe), description of it, 66.
Sage-hen, or prairie-hen, 175.
—— at Rocky Bridge Station, 199.
Sage Springs, 590.
Saleratus Lake, 182.
—— its startling appearance, 182.
Salmon-trout of the Green River, 211.
Salt grass, 182.
Salt Lake, Great. *See* Great Salt Lake.
Salt Lake City, Great. *See* Great Salt Lake City.
Salt Lake, Little, 593.
Salt Lake House Hotel,
Salt, quantity of, in the water of Great Salt Lake, 394.
Saltpetre not found in Utah Territory, 342.
San Francisco, 603.
Sand-banks of the Missouri, 19.
Sand-hills, the tract called the, 67, note.
Sand Springs station, 594.
Sandy River, Little, 38, 209.
—— Big, 38, 209.
Sandy Creek, 88.
—— Little, 205.
—— Big, or Wáshongopá, 207.

SANS.
Sans Arc Sioux Indians, their habitat, 119.
Sandstone at Grasshopper Creek, 26.
Sault Ste. Marie, Indians at, 121.
Saurians of Utah Territories, 340.
Sawyers and snags of the Missouri, 19.
Scalping, origin of the custom of, 137.
—— considered as a religious rite, 138.
Schools in Gt. S. L. City, 420.
—— principal, 516.
Scott's Bluffs, 96.
—— origin of the name, 96.
—— hurricanes of, 96.
Scythians, their scalping rites, 137.
Seasons, the, in Utah Territory, 336.
Seneca city, in Kansas, 27.
Seventeen-mile Station, 59.
Seventies, the, in the Mormon hierarchy, 484.
Sevier, Mr., the Mormon, 562.
Shanties, 23.
—— origin of the word, 23 note.
—— a shanty in Kansas, 23.
—— of Seneca city, 27.
—— the shanty at Pacific Springs, 205.
—— the dirty shanty of Ham's Fork, 216.
Shawnees, their lodges, 107.
Sheewit Creek, 585.
Shell Creek, 565.
Shops in Gt. S. L. City, 267.
Shoshone Indians, 575.
—— their friendliness to whites, 204.
Sibley, Major, his improved tent, 106.
Sichunga, Brulé, or Burnt Thigh Indians, their habitat, 120.
Sierra Nevada, the, 596, 597.
Sign-system of language amongst the Indians, 150.
Silva, Luis, and his wife, 191.
Silver found in Utah Territory, 342.
—— virgin silver found in the White Mountains, 546.
Simpson's Hollow, 208.
—— feat of the Mormons at, 209.
—— Road, 585.
—— Park, 589.
—— Pass, 590.
Sioux Indians, the Brulé, their defeat at Ash Hollow, 87.
—— their destruction of Lieut. Grattan and his party, 110.
—— their lodges, 107.
—— their dependence on the buffalo for subsistance, 63.
—— a Sioux "buck," 111.
—— their murder of M. Montalan, 113.
—— their present habitat, 116.
—— meaning of the name "Sioux," 116.
SNOW.
Sioux, principal bands into which the race is divided, 116—120.
—— their manners and customs, 120.
—— their future, 122.
—— their habits in former times and at present, 124.
—— their character, 125.
—— their revenge, 125.
—— their religion, 125.
—— their women, 125.
—— their constitution, 127.
—— their skill in archery, 147.
—— their language, 147.
—— books printed in their tongue, 148.
—— their sacred language, 149.
—— their poetry and songs, 149.
—— their funeral ceremonies, 149.
—— sign of their tribe, 152.
Sioux River, Big, 116.
Sisahapa, or Blackfeet, Indians, 119.
Sisintonwan Indians, their habitat, 117.
Skins, prices of, at Laramie City, 109.
Skull of the Indian, its form and dimensions, 128.
Skull Valley, 551.
Skunk, the, 295.
Slade, the redoubtable, 115, 214.
Slavery legalised in Utah, 297.
Sleighing in Gt. S. L. City, 280.
Smith, Captain John, the Mormon patriarch, 293.
Smith, Mrs. M. E. V., her works on Mormonism, 255 note.
Smith, Joseph, his works, 257 note.
—— his son Joseph of Nauvoo, 294.
—— his second son David, 294.
—— vindicated, 490, 491.
—— account of the martyrdom of, 625.
Smith, George A., the Mormon apostle, account of, 295.
Smith's Fork, 219.
Smith's Creek, 591.
Smokers, the fish so called, 188.
Smoking material of the Wild Man of the North, 59.
—— amongst the American Indians, 134.
Smoky Valley, 588.
Smoot, Bishop Abraham O., his address in the Bowery, 316.
"Smudge," a, before sleep, 205.
Snags and sawyers of the Missouri, 19.
Snake-roots, 193, 194, note.
Snake River, fountain-head of the, 201.
—— Indian name for, 207, note.
Snake Indians at Ham's Fork, 218.
—— their lodges, 107.
Snow Creek, 173.
—— country about, 174, 175.

SNOW.

Snow, Lorenzo, his Mormon works, 261 note.
Snowy Peak, 205.
Social Hall, in Gt. S. L. City, 279.
—— Sun st., 280, 281.
Soda, carbonate of, in Soleratus Lake, 182.
Soda, or Beer, Springs, 222.
Soil beyond the immediate banks of La Grande Platte River, 61.
—— near Plum Rambo, on the Platte River, 60.
—— at Fort Laramie, 112.
—— of the Valley of the Black Hills, 155.
—— of the country beyond the Warm Springs, 196.
—— of Big Sandy River, 209.
—— of the South Land of Gt. S. L. Valley, 243.
—— of Utah Territory, 243.
Soldiers, discharged, on the road home, 190.
—— disliked in the United States, 407.
—— at Camp Floyd, 539.
—— manners and customs of the soldiers of former times, 539.
—— army grievances, 540.
—— the U. S. soldier's dress, 541.
Songs of the Sioux Indians, 149.
South Pass City, in the Rocky Mountains, 200.
South Pass of the Rocky Mountains, 200.
—— its extent and height above sea-level, 200.
—— the dividing-land of some of the great rivers of America, 201.
Spencer, Elder Orson, his works on Mormonism, 261 note.
Spring Valley, 566.
Spur, the prairie, 33.
Squatter life in Kansas, a specimen of, 23.
—— difficulties and dangers of, 125.
Squaws, Indian, 73.
—— their dirty cookery, 90.
—— of the Sioux Indians, 125, 126.
Squirrel, the ground, 197.
—— the spotted prairie, 197 note.
—— the chipmonk or chipmuk, 197 note.
Staines, Mr. W. C., the Mormon, 236.
Stalking the antelope on the prairies, 85.
Stambaugh, Colonel, 283, 284.
Stampede, the great dread of the prairie traveller, 95.
Stansbury, Capt., his scruples as to the observance of Sunday on the march, 104.
—— his work on Mormonism, 250 note.

TENTS.

Stansbury Island, 266.
Stenhouse, Elder T. B. H., and his wife, 272.
Stirrup, the prairie, 82.
Store, a, in the valley of the Platte, 66.
Storm prairie, at Walnut Creek, 26.
—— of dust in the valley of the Platte, 93.
Stone Lake, Big, Indian tribes at, 117.
Stone used for the Mormon temple, 242.
Strawberries, wild, 199.
Strawberry Creek, 199.
Streets of Gt. S. L. City, 266, 267.
Sturgis, Captain, his chastisement of the Indians, 53.
Sugar House, S. Gt. S. L. City, 339.
Sulphur Creek, 225.
—— sulphurous pools in Gt. S. L. Valley, 254.
Summit, the, 39.
Summer, Brigadier General, his chastisement of the Indians, 53.
Summer, the Indian, 98, 587.
Sun-flower, the, in the valley of the Little Blue River, 28.
—— value of its seeds, 39.
Superstition of the Indian, 191.
Sweetwater River, or Pina Pa, 186, 196.
—— its water, 186.
—— its beauty, 190.
—— tributaries of the, 193.
—— McAshran's Branch, 190.
Sweetwater Hills, or Green River Mountains, the, 189.
Syracuse, in Kansas, 23.

Tabernacle, the, of Gt. S. L. City, 270.
Table Mountain, 200.
Tangle-leg, a new intoxicating liquor, 30 note.
Tannery of Mr. Little at Gt. S. L. City, 418.
Tar Springs, 225.
Taxes of Gt. S. L. City, 393.
Taylor, John, the Mormon apostle, 326.
Teachers and deacons in the Mormon hierarchy, 427.
Teats of the Indian, 129.
Temperature at Fort Ridge Station, 197.
—— on the mountain-slope of the Rocky Mountains, 206.
—— at Fort Laramie, 112.
—— of St. Louis, 196.
Temple Block, in Gt. S. L. City, 267.
—— description of the, 692.
Tents of the Prairie Indians, 106.

TENTS.
Tents, Major Sibley's tent, 106.
Tetrao pratensis, 175.
—— urophasianus, 176.
Thermal Springs, near Gt. S. L. City, 288.
—— analysis of the waters of, 288 *note*.
Thirty-two-mile Creek, 48.
—— the station there, 48.
Three Lakes, 199.
"Thunder, Little," chief of the Brulé Sioux, defeated and deposed, 111.
—— visit from him, 162.
—— description of him, 162.
Thunder-storms in Utah, 236.
Time, the Indian's notion of, 145.
Timber of the Mississippi, 19.
—— of Grasshopper Creek, 26.
—— of Loeknan's Station, 26.
—— of La Grande Platte river, 50, 66.
—— progressive decay of prairie timber, 86.
—— of the Black Hills, 165.
—— the Western man's instinctive dislike of timber, 211.
—— want of, in Utah Territory, 346.
—— of Great Cottonwood Kanyon, 430.
Timpanagos Water, 236.
Timpanagos, or Provo, River, 404.
Timpanagos Kanyon, visit to, 542.
Tithes paid by the Mormons, 302.
Tithing House, in Gt. S. L. City, 302
Titonwan Indians, their habitat and present condition, 119.
—— their sub-tribes, 119.
Tobacco, the traveller's outfit of, 12.
—— use of, amongst the American Indians, 134.
Toilette of the prairie traveller, 18.
Tolerance of the Mormons, 426.
Tongues, gift of, 325.
Tonkowas, their tents, 106.
Tophet, 551.
Totem, the, of the Indian, 132.
Towahamies, their tents, 106.
Townsend, Mr. the Mormon hotel-keeper, 249.
Traders, licensed and unlicensed, 100.
Trafalgar Square, barbarous incongruity of, 230.
Trapper, the, of sixty years ago, 104.
Travel, proprieties of, 134.
Travellers, mismanagement of inexperienced, 279.
Travelling, slow rate of, of the mail coaches from Missouri to California and Oregon, 6.
Traverse Lake, Indians at, 117.
—— Mountain, 402.

UTAH.
Trans formation of Saleratus Lake, 189 *note*.
—— of Alkali Lake, 190.
Troy, in Kansas, 23.
Turkey Creek, or Rock, 37.
—— the "ranch" at, 37.
Turnip, the prairie, 225 *note*.
"Twelve, the," in the Mormon hierarchy, 482.
"Twin Peaks" of the Wasatch Mountains, 242.
Twiss, Major, 171.

Uinta Hills, 219, 221.
Uncle John's Grocery, 54.
—— Indians at, 54.
United States, extent of the, 7.
—— eastern and western divisions of the, 7.
—— "Prairie land" of the, 7.
—— military departments into which the United States are divided, 52 *note*.
—— remarks on the army system of outposts in the United States, 54.
—— proposal for establishing a camel corps, 57.
—— present policy of the United States towards the Indian, 125.
Utah Territory, proposed route to, 3.
—— origin of the name, 231.
—— its boundaries, 231.
—— geography of Utah, 232.
—— configuration of the country, 232.
—— lakes, 232.
—— springs, 233.
—— singular formation of the mountains, 234.
—— climate, 234.
—— diseases, 237.
—— wild animals, 238.
—— geology, 241.
—— minerals, 242.
—— soil, 243.
—— scourges of crickets and grasshoppers, 245.
—— grazing, 245.
—— want of timber, 246.
—— present state of agriculture, 246.
—— principal value of Utah Territories, 248.
—— the past of Mormon land, 249.
—— cities and counties of Utah, 253.
—— population, 257.
—— Mormon government, 266.
—— United States officials in Utah Territory, 276.
—— Legislative Assembly, 277.
—— rights of the citizens, 277.

UTAH.

Utah Territory, bad effects of conflicting judiciaries, 378.
—— the Great Desert of Utah Territory, 552.
—— Indians of Utah Territory, 378.
—— the Indian bureau of Utah Territory, 378.
—— Lake, or Sweetwater Reservoir, 333, 403, 538, 542.
—— Indians, their lodges, 107.

Valley Home, in Kansas, 23.
"Valley Tan," origin of the name, 211.
Vegetables grown in Gt. S. L. Valley, 345.
Vegetation of Kansas, 20.
—— of Little Blue River, 38.
—— of the banks of La Grande Platte river, 51, 60, 65, 66.
—— of the valleys of the Black Hills, 165.
—— of the Wind River Mountains, 202.
—— of Big Sandy Creek, 207, 209.
—— at Black Fork, 218, 220.
—— at Quaking Asp Hill, 224.
—— of Big Mountain, 236.
—— of Big Kanyon, 239.
—— of Great Cottonwood Kanyon, 490.
Verandah, a model, 55.
Vermilion Creek, 24.
Viburnum dentatum, 146.
Villages, Indian, 107.
Violin, Mormon fondness for the, 219.

Waddington, Mr. the Mormon, 562.
Wâgthongopâ, or Glistening Gravel Water, 217.
Waggon trains of the great American Sahara, 27.
Waggons, — various uses of the waggons of the prairies, 68.
—— price of the waggons called ambulances, 91 note.
Wahpekute Indians, their habitat, 117.
Wahpetonwan Indians, their habitat, 117.
Wakon, their tents, 106.
Walker's Lake, 505.
Wallace, Mr., at the Bowery, 316.
Walla, the great, of Gt. S. L. City, 245.
Walnut Creek, 26.
—— prairie storm at, 26.
War-parties amongst the Indians, 177.
—— return home of a war-party, 177.
Ward, Mrs. Maria, her works, on Mormonism, 253 note, 254 note.
—— W., the Mormon sculptor and apostate, 301.

WIND RIVER.

Ward's Station, or the "Central Star," 115.
Wards into which Gt. S. L. City is divided, 267.
Warm springs, 195.
—— barren country beyond, 196.
Warren, Lieut. Gouverneur K., his report on Nebraska, quoted, 8.
Warriors, Indian, 71.
Wâsatch Mountains, 235, 242.
—— eternal snow of the, 320.
Washiki, the Shoshone chief, 204.
Washington County, Utah Territory, description of, 334 note.
Water communication, idea of, between the Missouri and the Columbia rivers, 201 note.
—— scarcity of, on the counterslope of the Rocky Mountains, 206.
—— none in the First Desert, 207.
—— supply of, in Gt. S. L. City, 266.
Wasikuts Indians, 118.
Weapons necessary to the Western traveller, 11.
—— of the North American Indians, 71, 146.
Weber River, 226.
—— rain-storms and cold winds of, 233.
—— its head and course, 235, 393.
—— valley of, 234.
—— tributaries of the, 255.
Weber River Station, 253.
Wood-prairie, the, 60.
Wells, General, the Mormon president, account of him, 295, 481.
Western man's home, description of a, 569.
Whiskey, a favourite with the waggon drivers, 30.
—— "Valley Tan" whiskey, 211.
White Earth River, or Mankizitah, 89.
"White Savages," of the West, 215.
White Mountains, 546.
White Knife Indians, 584, 585.
Wichetas, their tents, 106.
Wichiyela, or First Nation Indians, 118.
Wigwams, huts, or cabins, of the eastern American Indians, 106 note.
Wilderness, the American, 79.
—— animal life in the, 80.
Willow Island Ranch, 61.
Willow, the red, its bark smoked, 156.
Willow Springs station, 181.
Willow Creek, 199.
—— Canadian settlers at, 199.
—— Station at, 560.
—— a little war at, 560.
Wind River, fountain-head of the, 201.
Wind River Mountains, 200, 208, 209.
—— game in the, 84.

WIND RIVER.
Wind River Mountains, evening view of the mountains, 203.
—— gold found in the 204.
—— wild animals of the wooded heights, 204.
—— morning in the, 206.
Wind, alternate hot and cold puffs of, in the prairies, 98.
—— west, almost invariable at the South Pass, 202.
Wind-storms of the South Pass, 205.
Winds, cold, of Weber River Station, 233.
Winnebagos, Winnipegs, or Ochangras, Indian tribe of the, 24 *note*.
—— their tents, 106.
Winnipeg Lake, Indians on, 121.
Wright, Moss, 574, 585.
Wolves, the prairie, 37.
—— at Rocky Bridge Station, 198, 199.
—— near Black's Fork, 219.
Women, Indian, 73, 129.
—— the half-breeds, 99.
—— of the Sioux Indians, 125, 126.
—— Indian names of, 141.
—— marriage among the North American Indians, 142.
—— their separation from the men at meals, 144.
Women of the Mormons, 278, 522.
—— house of the wives of the prophet in Gt. S. L. City, 501.
—— excess of the female over the male population in Utah Territory, 366.
Mormon women's polygamy, 523.
—— Mormon marriage, 518, 525.
—— motherhood, how regarded in the Western States, 524.
Woodruff, Wilford, the Mormon apostle, 295.
—— his garden, 436.
Woods, Lake of the, Indians of the, 122.

ZIZANIA.
Woodson, Colonel S. H., his establishment of the mail coach route from Missouri to California and Oregon, 5.
Wool-producing country in the basin of the Green River, 345.

Yellow Creek, 227.
Yellow Creek Hill, 228.
Yellowstone River, fountain head of the, 201.
Yoke, the, of the great American Sahara, 28.
Yosemite, or Yohamite, Falls, 693.
Young, President Brigham, extract from one of his sermons, 21 *note*.
—— his opinion of woman's counsel, 254 *note*.
—— his alleged personal fear, 275.
—— his house, 285.
—— visit to him, 290.
—— his personal appearance, 291.
—— his character, 292, 300.
—— his mode of life, 293, 296.
—— his wealth, 296.
—— his remarks on the "Indian Wars," 297.
—— his wives and children, 302.
—— his address in the Bowery, 317.
—— his gardens, 326.
—— his address at the Conference, 371.
Young, Brigham, nephew of the prophet, 169.
Yuta Indians, "they who live on Mountains," sign of their tribe, 152, 580.
—— their graves, 150.
—— kindness of the Mormons to the, 299.
—— a little war with the, 560.

Zizania aquatica, 117 *note*.

THE END.